THE REIGN OF PEACE AT HAND

A Compendium of Articles

Published in the period from 2005 to 2024

- no copyright, only attribution -

Of which also a few in the compendium:
“Judaism - the Promise of Land and the Reign of Peace”

HUBERT LUNS

MARCH 2024
(revision April 2025)

These contributions by Hubert Luns and others (Michael Svigel, Neline Schipper, Henk Poot, Henk Dijkgraaf, Jan van Barneveld, Renza Giacobbi, Michaël Dekee, Roberto de Mattei en M. van Campen) explore various theological and historical concepts, primarily focusing on interpretations of Biblical prophecy related to the end times and the coming ‘Reign of Peace’, in short the ‘Millennium’. Looking at the Millennium from different perspectives, the text draws from Old and New Testament passages and interpretations by historical figures and modern commentators. It also examines important historical events, alleged conspiracies, and societal trends through a religious lens, often connecting them to prophecies about the Antichrist and spiritual deception. Furthermore, the sources touch upon God’s nature of being, humanity’s role as fellow servants in creation, and the importance of faith and discernment in the face of end-time challenges, we are now in the midst of.

INDEX

With contributions by Michael Svigel, Neline Schipper, Henk Poot, Henk Dijkgraaf, Jan van Barneveld, Renza Giacobbi, Michaël Dekee, Roberto de Mattei and M. van Campen. This does not imply that they agree with all the claims herein.

page

1 – Is belief in the Reign of Peace Optional?*

§ 01 The Personal Salvation goes together with the Collective 009
§ 02 The Consequences of Rejecting the Reign of Peace 011
§ 03 Papias and Irenæus about the Kingdom of God 013

2 – The Phantom Heresy (Michael Svigel)

Introduction 023
§ 04 The Issue at Hand 024
§ 05 Two Traditions 025
§ 06 Chasing the Heresy Down the Hole 026
§ 07 Implications and Conclusion 029

3 – The Time of God's Active Involvement*

§ 08 The Day of the Lord 033
§ 09 Lift up your Heads 035
§ 10 The Place of the Book of Revelation 036
§ 11 God does not 'fight' Man 037

4 – Would not God tell his Servants before Unleashing his Power?*

§ 12 The Most Important Sign 039
§ 13 The Deaf will hear the Words of the Book 041
§ 14 Proclaim a Holy Lent 043
§ 15 God back in Holland again! 044

5 – The Jewish Festive Calender of Redeeming Grace*

§ 16 The Unfinished One 045
§ 17 God's Cycle under the Magnifying Glass 047
§ 18 Shall a Nation be Born at Once? 050
§ 19 The Meaning of the Calendars of Israel 052

6 – Otton III was More than Emperor* 055

§ 20 The Prelude 056
§ 21 Something Divine is Revealed 057
§ 22 Otton's Death is the Turning Point in Time 058

07 – The Ancestries of Jesus & God's Kingdom on Earth*

§ 23	''Her' Seed shall Bruise the Enemy's Head	060
§ 24	Israel's archpaternal vicissitudes	061
§ 25	Two Requirements for the Messianic ancestry	065
§ 26	Why four women in Jesus ancestry?	067
§ 27	Is it Jechoniachim or Jechoniachin?	068
§ 28	The scarlet thread: the vocation to suffering	070
§ 29	God's curse on Chonia's descendance is a blessing in disguise	071
§ 30	I will raise unto David a Branch	073
§ 31	A generation tainted in sorrow	075
§ 32	The Coming of two Messiahs	078
§ 33	The House of David preserves the Promise until Shiloh comes	081

08 – On our Way to a New Earth*

§ 34	Our Judaic Heritage	085
§ 35	The World of the Making	086
§ 36	A New Dispensation	087
§ 37	Humanity has 'not yet' entered its Rest	087
§ 38	The Creating Against	089

09 – Book Review*

Discover your Inheritance – author: Johan Stringer 091

10 – The Samaritan Sect*

§ 39	A brief overview	093
§ 40	The historical framework	094
§ 41	A tricky issue	095
§ 42	The theological dispute	097
§ 43	The Samaritan Torah	099

11 – Real Israelites (Neline Schipper)

§ 44	Saints or Gentiles	101
§ 45	The Samaritane Synagogue	102
§ 46	Not Jewish...	104

12 – Come Holy Spirit, renew the Face of the Earth*

§ 47	The Primeval Chaos becomes Ordered and Regular	105
§ 48	The Erroneous Theory of Evolution	106
§ 49	A remarkable example: Scud Rockets Fired at Israel	108
§ 50	The very unusual number 2732	109

13 – Apophis and the Endtime Clock*

Preliminary Remarks 112
§ 51 God's First Judgement in Fast Cadence 122
§ 52 The NASA not always trustworthy 129
§ 53 The Chronology of Events 132
§ 54 The Great Tribulation or Time of Nations 136
§ 55 The Warning or the Illumination of Conscious 140

Note regarding the Biblical Deluge 147
Plato on the Atlantis and the Americas 153

14 – Creation is Recreation - a historiographic interpretation*

§ 56 A Rearrangement of what Existed already 163
§ 57 They are a Smoke in My Nose 164
§ 58 De Hiaat-theorie 165
§ 59 The Unity of the Anointed Couple 167
§ 60 The Paradise Curse 173
§ 61 In Christ More than Victorious 176

15 – The Expectation of the Jews*

§ 62 Even the Perfect King would by a Tyrant 180
§ 63 The Jewish Vision in the Pre-Christian Era 182
§ 64 The Missionary Drive, a Corollary of Messianism 184
§ 65 Jewish Messianism in our days 187

16 – The End or a New Beginning?*

§ 66 The Pantheon, an Ode to Human Ingenuity 189
§ 67 An End or a New Beginning? 191
§ 68 The Restoration of the Paradisiacal State 194

17 – The Decline of the Catholic Magisterium*

§ 69 A Devious Council... 198
§ 70 An Attack on the Legitimate Doctrine 201
§ 71 The 'End of the Times' Theology is based on a Misunderstanding 205
§ 72 After 1840 God has 'not' kept Silent 208

18 – Don Bosco's Dream about the Rescue of the Church* 216

19 – De Antichrist — The Coming One*

§ 73 The Mystery of Inequity 219
§ 74 Christ the King 222
§ 75 A Revival of the Egyptian Primitive Gnosis 225
§ 76 Dividing Line between Good and Evil 227
§ 77 Has entered its end times ... 230

20 – Exorcism – A Roman Catholic Tradition*

§ 78 Don Gabriele Amorth 245
§ 79 Exorcism, an extremely specific term 246
§ 80 The Protestant tradition 247
§ 81 How to protect against the Occult 248
§ 82 High demand for exorcists but little supply 251
§ 83 A little exorcism will never do any harm 253
§ 84 Tortured to death during a routine job 255
§ 85 The case of Anneliese Michel 256
§ 86 Satan's smoke has penetrated the Church 256

21 – The Question of Good and Evil*

§ 87 A depth psychological approach 260
§ 88 To what extent does man have a Free Will? 261
§ 89 Does God create Evil? 263
§ 90 An abysmal evil... 264
§ 91 Justice and Mercy are inseperable 265

22 – God far away ...and yet Nearby*

§ 92 Forgive them for they know not what they do! 267
§ 93 The Unique Essence of a Human Being 270
§ 94 As long as there is Life, there is Hope 272
§ 95 A lamp for my feet is Your Word 274

23 – The Limits to Freedom*

§ 96 On the same Balance Beam 280
§ 97 When Everything Comes to a Climax 283
§ 98 What lies ahead 286

24 – APOCALYPSE NOW!!*

§ 99 The things that have to be done 289
§ 100 Harvest Cycle of Mourning, a Mirror-Image of that of Joy 290
§ 101 Call to Repentance 292
§ 102 Prayer is not Useless 292

25 – The God of Vengeance*

§ 103 The Playing Field 294
§ 104 It's Camp Love versus Camp Hate 295
§ 105 Declaration Day 298
§ 106 If the Reign of Peace were to begin now... 301

26 – As Silver is Refined - About the Judgements of the Lord (Henk Poot)

§ 107 At night I cry aloud in Your Presence 320
§ 108 God's Wounded Heart 322
§ 109 From the Perspective of the New Testament 324

27 – The Sleepwalkers: about Abortus Provocatus*

§ 110 The Apostasy 327
§ 111 The 'Zeitgeist' 328
§ 112 We don't lose sleep over that! 330
§ 113 Conclusion 332

28 – The New World Order, a Template for the Antichrist*

§ 114 Novus Ordo Seclorum 343
§ 115 Only when the Reign of Peace is nigh, the Antichrist arises 344
§ 116 By the Magic of Language and Delusion 347
§ 117 Step-by-Step Plan of the Great Reset 349
§ 118 On the way to the Technocratic Age 351
§ 119 The Genesis of Modern Day Central Banking 353
§ 120 The Current Situation of Banking 358
§ 121 The Naked Capitalist 367
§ 122 Social Engineering 369

29 – Is Donald Trump the New Gorbachev?*

§ 123 A small child on her knees praying 402
§ 124 The Fat Man of the Establishment 404
§ 125 Donald Trump has been inaugurated - what next? 406
§ 126 Trump's 2024 Reelection 408

30 – The Law of Organisational Stupidity*

§ 127 The Bureaucrat is a man 'without' a Soul 411
§ 128 The Hell State Cambodja 413
§ 129 The God of the Philosophers 414

31 – The Good versus the Evil Doctrine (Don Gobbi)

§ 130 The Marian Movement of Priests 416
§ 131 The Black Beast is Freemasonry 418
§ 132 The aim of Masonry: blaspheming God 418
§ 133 A remarklable approach (Hubert Luns' commentary) 419
§ 134 The seven vices, antithesis to the seven virtues 421
§ 135 How to turn the seven vices into virtues 423
§ 136 Conclusion 425

32 – Melanchthon's Ideal of Piety & Erudition (Henk Dijkgraaf)

§ 137 Back to the sources of the Ancient Civilisation 427
§ 138 Doctrina et disciplina: the basis of education 428
§ 139 No Eruditio without Holy Script 429

33 – Atheism - a Sign of the Time*

§ 140 Atheism, a Curse 430
§ 141 The gradual emergence of Atheism as a Movement 432
§ 142 Atheism, the Root of Evil 439
§ 143 The Ideal of the Atheists: a 'New Earth' 442
§ 144 About semi-Atheists, the God haters 443
§ 145 Nietzsche, Heidegger and Sartre 446

34 – Revival or Judgment (Jan van Barneveld)

§ 146 Hope for the Netherlands 452
§ 147 Putin as a 'prophet' 457
§ 148 In Retrospect: thirty years hence 457
§ 149 Biblical Models 457
§ 150 Grace upon Grace 460

35 – Hide your Light under a Bushel*

§ 151 Christ's resurrection reduced to a metaphor 461
§ 152 Modernism, a many-branched and accurséd tree 463
§ 153 A trumpet call to penance for the country 465
§ 154 Belief is the firm foundation of our Salvation 468

Appendix 01:	Justice and Peace	019
Appendix 02:	The Early Christian Expectation regarding God's Kingdom	031
Appendix 03:	God tries to alleviate The Chastisement (BOT Aug. 2, 2011)	158
Appendix 04:	The Second Judgement (BOT Dec. 4, 2014)	159
Appendix 05:	The Panin Bible Statistics (PBS)	160
Appendix 06:	A New Species, using the Uterus as an Incubator... (Renza Giacobbi)	178
Appendix 07:	The Marian apparitions of 1830 do not count	214
Appendix 08:	Significant Bible quotes about the Antichrist	233
Appendix 09:	Spiritual Warfare – Wrestling against Principalities and Powers	237
Appendix 10:	War on the Saints (a review)	239
Appendix 11:	From Messages of the Book of Truth	278
Appendix 12:	A wound by words is worse than a wound by sword	288
Appendix 13:	God's judgment on Martinique	302
Appendix 14:	Who listens to the rescue plan? (Book of Truth)	303
Appendix 15:	The Judgement of God in History (Professor Roberto de Mattei)	305
Appendix 16:	About a Magician and his Toad (Bridget of Sweden)	316
Appendix 17:	Atheism, the Root of all Evil	333
Appendix 18:	Cardinal Eijk: "To take Abortion-tainted Covid-19 vaccine is moral duty."	335
Appendix 19:	How the Council managed to subvert the FBI	374
Appendix 20:	The Business Plot to overthrow the US-Government	375
Appendix 21:	World Control via Personal Numbers & the Smartcard	377
Appendix 22:	How the Mark of the Beast is introduced and what it is doing	381
Appendix 23:	The Age of Transhumanism via Artificial Superintelligence	388
Appendix 24:	An Essay on Shaping the Mind of the Crowd	395
Appendix 25:	He who created the Universe, did it Perfectly	451
Appendix 26:	Darwin is actually right after all... (Michaël Dekee)	452
Appendix 27:	Theodorus van der Groe – An Elder's Guide to Israel (M. van Campen)	470

Is belief in the Reign of Peace Optional ?

Belief in the Millennial Reign of Peace is seen by many as optional: "After all, it is about the salvation of your soul and that of your neighbor. The rest is a side issue. That empire has nothing to do with the experience of faith. When the Reign of Peace arrives, we will know…" This writer thinks differenty, thinks that whether or not to believe in a real Kingdom of Peace is extremely important for our deposit of faith. It is certainly not an optional subject. The New Testament is laced with references to the Kingdom of Peace, often simply called the kingdom or the Kingdom of God, building on an abundant Old Testament tradition. The beginning of the Book of Acts says that Jesus had spoken to the apostles for forty days before his ascension and then taught them about the kingdom of God. If it was so important in Jesus' day and in the years thereafter, why wouldn't it be to us? The fact that we have now been waiting for two thousand years for its fulfillment should not be a reason to put the theme aside. Ancient Israel also had to wait an untold time for their messiah to arrive (two thousand years ago now), and the Jewish people still believe He must come, and they still are looking forward to it with ardent anticipation. The first Christians longed for Jesus' return in glory, praying: "Come, Lord Jesus, come – Maranatha!" (Mar. 13:24-32, Rev. 22:20) Let that be our prayer too.

1.1 – The Personal Salvation goes together with the Collective

Neglecting the theme of the Kingdom of Peace, or bluntly denying it, as if it were only on an allegorical stage, has to do with a characteristic feature of Christian theology in which the redemption of the individual is the beginning and the end of existence. From that perspective, the Old Testament is a sleep-inducing book.

The Old Testament is the book in which especially the nations are discussed, first of all the people of Israel. Only with the so-called pre-evangelist Ezekiel does this noticibly change. Chapter 18 of his book begins as follows: *"What do you mean when you use this proverb concerning the land of Israel: the fathers have eaten sour grapes and the chil-*

dren's teeth are set on edge? As I live, says the Lord God, you shall no longer use this proverb in Israel. Behold, all souls are Mine. The soul of the father as well as the soul of the son is Mine. The soul who sins shall die." In other words, from now on each person will be personally responsible.

However, personal versus collective salvation is not a contradiction, not even a sequentiality, for it may be clear to everyone that the nations in the Reign of Peace only have the right to be there if the citizens within those nations are made of the good stuff, if they are mature believers clothed with Christ. It is a maturization process. The letter to the Romans does not say that we are now dead to sin and alive to God in Christ Jesus, but that we must 'consider' ourselves as such. (Rom. 6:11) In verse 8 it says that we 'shall' live. The contemplation of that state is the goal to which we strive and which will one day be fully given to us in the Reign of Peace. Only then will the prediction of the Prophet Jeremiah be fulfilled that everyone will know their God under the then existing condition that God's law is written in everyone's heart – which is not the case today, even for the zealous Christian. Let me put it this way: I've never met someone like that.

The Dezionization of the Bible

In November 1938, shortly after Kristallnacht, plans were made for the establishment of the "Institut zur Erforschung und Beseitigung des jüdischen Einflusses auf dat Deutsche kirchliche Leben" (to investigate and remove the Jewish influence on German ecclesiastical life). A group of German Christians convened a meeting exactly on the date on which Luther arrived at the Wartburg in 1521, to establish this Eisenacher Institute, building on a long tradition within the Christian communities, which was not unrelated to the persecution of the Jews through the ages. It is therefore not surprising, but regrettable nonetheless, that Professor Notger Slenczka of Humboldt University in Berlin suggested in an article of April 2015 that the Old Testament should no longer be regarded as canonical, but rather as belonging to the Apocrypha, that is, valuable books that speak to us from the cradle of our civilization, but absolutely not as the infallible Word of God. According to Slenczka, we can derive valuable insights from these writings without basing our belief on them. For Palestinian Christians, such as the Anglican Naim Ateek, the Lutheran Mitri Raheb and the Catholic Yohanna Katanacho, who published the controversial Kairos Palestinian Document in 2009, in which they rallied behind the 'suffering Palestinians' in the so-called 'occupied territories', the issue is, just as with the 'German Christians movement', about the erasing of the Jewish elements from the Bible. In the first instance it's about the dezionization of the Biblical message.

It may be clear that for this kind of people the Reign of Peace is only a metaphor. Does not Christ tell Pilate: *"My kingdom is not of this world"*? However, that was at that particular moment in time and cannot be seen as absolute. How else could we look forward to the complete victory over evil and the restoration of the paradisial state? One day we will be delivered from original sin, which is in fact the inherited genetic burden of original sin.

Usually, Jewish tradition speaks of the Millennial Kingdom of Peace as the coming reign (olam haba), although the term Millennial Kingdom of Peace will not sound strange to them. The word olam for reign also means universe or mystery. From our worldly brokenness it is impossible to visualize the reality of the Reign of Peace or the Kingdom of Heaven clearly – the splendor of it escapes us completely, is hidden from us. The lion

will eat grass and the baby will put its hand into the hole of an asp and not be hurt. (Is. 11:6-9) That image is majestically drawn in the next prophecy of Isaiah:

> «« For behold, I'll create new heavens and a new earth! And the former shall not be remembered or come to mind. But be glad and rejoice forever in what I create. For behold, I create Jerusalem as a rejoicing, and her people a joy. I will rejoice in Jerusalem, and delight in my people. The voice of weeping shall no longer be heard in her, nor the voice of crying. The infant of a few days shall not die. The old man will not go unless he has fulfilled his days. For one dies in the prime of one's life even when one reaches a hundred years old, and whoever fails to reach a hundred years shall be accursed. They shall build houses and inhabit them; they shall plant vineyards and eat their fruit. No, they shall not build and another inhabit; they shall not plant and another eat. For as the days of a tree, so shall be the days of my people, and my elect shall long enjoy the work of their hands. They shall not labor in vain, nor bring forth children for trouble. For they shall be the descendants of the blessed of the Lord, and their offspring with them. It shall come to pass that before they call, I will answer, and while they are still speaking, I will hear. The wolf and the lamb shall feed together. The lion shall eat straw like the ox. And dust shall be the serpent's food. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain, says the Lord! »» (Is. 65:17-25)

These are prosaic images that may be taken literally, but are nevertheless a weak shadow of what the world will soon look like. Nevertheless, our expectation remains an earthly expectation. Those who are scornful about it are guilty of super-spiritualization. As if God is only interested in our spiritual well-being. Jesus was taken up to heaven with both soul and body. He did eat fish after his resurrection, which is a very earthly thing.

The expression 'Kingdom of Heaven' is taken from the second chapter of the Book of Daniel. After foretelling that there should arise four empires, the last of which a reign of iron, he goes on to say:

> «« And in the days of these kings shall the God of Heaven set up a kingdom which shall never be destroyed, and that kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces, and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand forever. (In another passage it states:) I saw in the night a vision, and behold, one like the Son of Man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of Days, and they brought Him near before Him. And there was given unto Him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages should serve Him. His dominion is an everlasting dominion, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed. »»

1.2 – The Consequences of Rejecting the Reign of Peace

Martin Luther, with whom the great Reformation began in 1517, lived in tense anticipation of the coming Kingdom of Peace, so much so that in his opinion the time was too short to establish an institutional church as an alternative to the Roman one; there was no need either to engage in the training of pastors for this new schismatic movement. In response to this somewhat exaggerated expectation, organized Protestantism has distanced itself from the reality of the Kingdom of Peace, predicted in the Bible. The Augsburg Confession of 1530 (Article 17), as well as the second Swiss Confession of 1566 (Article 11), as well as the 1561 Creed of the Netherlands (Article 37) and the Heidelberg Catechism of 1563 (question 52), declined unanimously a realistic Millennial Reign.

And as far as the Roman Church was concerned, there was a similar approach, going back all the way to Augustine's views on this matter.

The first consequence of an allegorical interpretation of the Reign of Peace is that it leads to a rejection of the Jewish people and their books. Justin Martyr, one of the second century Church Fathers, was categorical in condemning this interpretation:

> «« For I choose to follow not men or men's doctrines, but God and the doctrines delivered by Him. For if you have fallen in with some, called Christians, but who do not admit this truth, and venture to blaspheme the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob, who also say that there is no resurrection of the dead, and that their souls, when they die, are taken [for ever] to Heaven [to be together with the angels], do not imagine that they are Christians. (…) But I and others, who are right-minded Christians on all points, are assured that there will be a resurrection of the dead, and a thousand years in Jerusalem, which will then be built, adorned, and enlarged, as the prophets Ezekiel and Isaiah and others declare. »» (Dialogue with Trypho, Ch. LXXX)

Interestingly, Justin speaks about blaspheming the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, which is a definition of antisemitism. Indeed, if there are no earthly promises then the Jewish people is a remnant of the past. Then I join the historian Arnold Toynbee who called Judaism an empty shell (he didn't even speak of a people!), and branded the Jew as a fossil of the Syrian civilization.

When there is talk of the New Paradise, it automatically evokes the memory of the first one. Ancient opinion locates the first Paradise where now lie the sunken cities of Sodom and Gomorrha, that is, the Dead Sea, into which the Jordan flows in and out, forming the eastern border of the present-day State of Israel. It should be noted that Gennesaret, a little more to the north, is derived from the Hebrew Gansar meaning 'garden of the prince', that is, of Adam, the prince of humankind. The Jewish commentator Flavius Josephus gives a nice description of it: (War of the Jews, Book 1:3, ch. 9 §8)

> «« Its nature is wonderful as well as its beauty! Its soil is so fruitful that all sorts of trees can grow upon it, and the inhabitants accordingly plant all sorts of trees there. The temper of the air is so well mixed, that it agrees very well with those several sorts, particularly walnuts, which require the coldest air, flourish there in vast plenty. There are palm trees also, which grow best in hot air. Fig trees also and olives grow near them, which yet require an air that is more temperate. One may call this place the ambition of nature, where it forces those plants that are naturally enemies to one another to agree together. It is a happy contention of the seasons, as if every one of them laid claim to this country; for it not only nourishes different sorts of autumnal fruit beyond men's expectation, but preserves them a great while. It supplies men with the principal fruits, with grapes and figs continually, during ten months of the year and the rest of the fruits as they become ripe together through the whole year; for besides the good temperature of the air, it is also watered from a most fertile fountain »»

The second consequence of rejecting the reality of the Kingdom of Peace is that the run-up to it with all its horrors will not be recognized as the messenger of salvation. (Mt. 24:31) Moreover, the final judgment will not be taken seriously either, for both are in the Book of Revelation. As the introductory statement to the 1975 Catholic Willibrord Bible Translation in Dutch teaches, the Book of Revelation *"in spite of its often bizarre form, is not geared to sensation but rather to the encouragement and comfort of the*

pious minority persecuted by the official powers of the world." In short: we don't have to take this bizarre exposition seriously and foremost not literally!

The foregoing shows that by rejecting a real Kingdom of Peace, not only the Old Testament and 'its people' are a thing of the past, but also the Book of Revelation and the other prophecies in the New Testament that point to it. The Antichrist and the False Prophet fit into those excentric convictions and are therefore not taken seriously as well. And what about Jesus' resurrection from the dead and his deity? Is that an allegory too? When we set out on this path, anyone can take whatever he sees fit. I do know Christians who do not take the Kingdom of Peace literally and yet they are very good Christians. My argument is that this weakens the line of defense against heretical ideas. After all, the prophetic perspective disappears. It is overlooked that God's plan is unfolding throughout the ages in order to restore humanity and each individual to their original state. In summary, the Kingdom of Peace is the restoration of the paradisial state.

The Reign of Peace can only to take shape in the larger context after it has also taken shape in each individual separately. (Mt. 6:33, 1 Tim. 4:8, Ps. 37:9) Anyone looking for God's Kingdom must first seek it within himself! Melker, the priest of the Synagogue of Bethlehem, wrote in his report to the Higher Sanhedrin on account of the strange events surrounding the birth of Jesus in his town:

> «« We, as Jews, place too much confidence in the outward appearance. While the idea we get of the Kingdom of Heaven is all of a carnal nature, consisting of forms and ceremonies, the prophecies referred to, and many other passages that I could mention, all go to show that the Kingdom of God is to begin within us, in the inner life, and rule there, and from that inner nature all outward actions are to flow in conformity with the revealed and written teachings and commands of God. (…) The whole government [of the Kingdom of God] has to find its authority in the prophetic vision as set forth by the commands of God, meant to regulate human life commencing in the inner life and working outwardly, until the outward is like the inward, and thus advancing on from individuals to nations. The messianic prophecy has no other justification than this. On this rests the Church, and on this rests the theocracy. On this rests the glory of the future Kingdom of God upon earth. »»

1.3 – Papias and Irenæus about the Kingdom of God

Papias (60-163) is a church father who personally had met John the Baptist. He was a friend of St. Polycarp, the bishop of Smyrna, who was well versed in the early teachings. His theology is therefore on the mark. In the following he paints a grandiose picture of the Reign of Peace, which he would not have done if he had not believed a literal fulfillment of the Reign of Peace: [1)]

> «« When the elders, who had met John the Lord's disciple, remembered hearing him say how the Lord was going to speak of those times, they foretold: The days will come in which vines shall grow, having each ten thousand branches, and in each branch ten thousand twigs, and in each true twig ten thousand shoots, and in every one of the shoots ten thousand clusters, and on every one of the clusters

1) "Ante-Nicene Fathers", edited by Alexander Roberts, James Donaldson, and A. Cleveland Coxe. # Christian Literature Publishing, Buffalo NY # 1885 (Vol. 1) Revised and edited for New Advent by Kevin Knight (www.newadvent.org/fathers). The original writings have been lost, but a number of fragments have been preserved thanks to the writings of Irenæus and Eusebius. The quote is from fragment 4.

ten thousand grapes. Every grape when pressed will give 25 metretes of wine [a metrete was about 40 liters]. And when any one of the saints shall lay hold of a cluster, another shall cry out: "I am a better cluster, take me; bless the Lord through me." In like manner, a grain of wheat will produce ten thousand ears, and that every ear would have ten thousand grains, and every grain would yield ten pounds of clear, pure, fine flour. And as for the apples and the seeds and the grass, they will yield accordingly. And all animals, nourished solely on the produce of the earth, will become peaceful and harmonious and in perfect submission to man. And he added the following: Now these things are credible to believers. And Judas the traitor, not believing, asked the question: *"How shall such growths be accomplished by the Lord?*" Whereupon the Lord answered: *"They shall see Him who shall come to them. These, then, are the times mentioned by the Prophet Isaiah: And the wolf shall lie down with the lamb, etc."* »»

The first message from God the Father:

"The time has come now for Me to reclaim my Glorious Kingdom."

Book of Truth:
Message 124 of June 25, 2011 to Maria Divine Mercy.

My children let Me explain. The time has come for Me to reclaim the Paradise I lovingly created so that we can, again, become one family. A family that will become close because of the powerful bounds of love that will hold it together. This New Paradise on Earth is now being planned for all of my children.

It will last 1,000 years on earth and no one must be excluded for that would break my Heart. My beloved Son, Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit are trying hard to bring you back into my loving fold so that the Paradise, created in the beginning can, once again, emerge as the greatest gift of all, for my children to enjoy

This Paradise will be a place of love, beauty, glory and will be home to all who are pure of heart and soul. It is for every single soul on earth and is the goal that is contained within each and every single soul on earth, including those who do not realise this.

My Son speaks to the world and prepares to show his great mercy during The Warning [the enlightenment of the conscious] to give all sinners a chance to enjoy the New Paradise on Earth.

You must hear my voice. I call on all of you to pay attention. Turn back to Me. Accept that I exist. That I am the source of all life, all creation, all glory. When you do you will be welcomed into my Paradise on Earth which offers everything you could ever dream of. Listen to my Son and the message He gives to the world to convert you all. For those who will not listen, even then, or who continue on the path of heinous sin, no mercy will be shown. (...)

I am your God, your Creator. My love never dies. It is aflame and full of deep tenderness for you to bring you back to Me, to the inheritance I so lovingly created. Because of sin many of my children will have to forfeit their right to this inheritance and step back to allow those who truly love Me to enter the doors without hindrance.

Please children do not dismiss my plea to mankind. Accept the Mercy now being offered by my beloved Son. Accept it with open arms.

God the Father,
Creator and Maker of All Things

Another famous Church Father, Irenaeus (ca 125 - ca 200), who was the bishop of Lyons, speaks about the Reign of Peace in his "Adversus Hæreses" (Book V). Born in Smyrna, he too had listened to the sermons of Polycarp. I end with a series of quotes: [2)]

«« Ch. 32:1 : Inasmuch as some opinions of certain persons are derived from heretical discourses, it can be said that they are ignorant of God's division into ages [dispensations] and of the mystery of the resurrection of the righteous and also of the [earthly] Kingdom, which heralds the commencement of the incorruptibility. Under this reign those who shall be worthy, will be gradually brought into the participation of the divine nature. It is necessary to tell them that they should respect those things, that it behoves the righteous to receive as the first ones the promise of the inheritance, which God promised to the fathers, and to reign in it after the resurrection and to behold God in this renovated creation – and that the [last] judgment takes place afterwards [when the reign has ended].

Ch. 32:2 : Thus, then, the promise of God, which He gave Abraham, remains stedfast. For thus He said: *"Lift up thine eyes, and look from this place where now thou art, towards the north and south, and east and west. For all the earth which thou seest, I will give to thee and to thy seed, even for ever."* And again He says: *"Arise, and go through the length and breadth of the land, since I will give it unto thee; and [yet] he did not receive an inheritance in it, not even a footstep, but was always a stranger and a pilgrim therein."*

Thus did he await patiently the [fulfillment of] God's promise, and apparently he was unwilling to receive from men, what God had promised to give him, when He said again to him as follows: *"I will give this land to thy seed, from the river of Egypt even unto the great river Euphrates."* If, then, God promised him the inheritance of the land, yet he did not receive it during all the time of his sojourn there, it must be, that together with his seed, that is, those who fear God and believe in Him, he shall receive it at the resurrection of the righteous. For his seed is the Church, which receives the adoption by God through the Lord, as John the Baptist said: *"For God is able from the stones to raise up children to Abraham."* Thus also the Apostle says in the Epistle to the Galatians: *"But ye, brethren, as Isaac was, are the children of the promise."* And again, in the same epistle, he plainly declares that they who believe in Christ do receive Christ (according to) the promise to Abraham, thus saying: *"The promises were spoken to Abraham, and to his seed. Now He does not say: And of seeds, as if of many, but as of one: ...and to thy seed, which is Christ."* And again, confirming his former words, he [St. Paul] says: *"Even as Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness. But the Scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, declared to Abraham beforehand: In thee shall all nations be blessed. Thus, then, they who are of faith shall be blessed with faithful Abraham, and these are the children of Abraham."* Now God made promise of the earth to Abraham and his seed. Yet neither Abraham nor his seed, that is, those who are justified by faith, do now receive any inheritance in it, but they shall receive it at the resurrection of the righteous. For God is true and faithful. And on this account He said: *"Blessed are the meek, for they shall inherit the earth."*

Ch. 33:2 : And again He says: *"Whosoever shall have left lands, or houses, or parents, or brethren, or children because of Me, he shall receive in this world an hundredfold, and in the coming [reign] he shall inherit eternal life."*

What are the hundredfold [rewards] in this world, the entertainments given to the poor, and the suppers given as a reward? These are for the times of the

Kingdom, that is, upon the seventh day, which has been sanctified, [and thus that day] in which God rested from all the works which He created, which is the true sabbath of the righteous. During those times they shall not be engaged in any earthly occupation, but shall have a table at hand prepared for them by God, supplying them with all sorts of dishes.

Ch. 33:3: The predicted blessing, therefore, belongs unquestionably to the times of the Kingdom, when the righteous shall bear rule upon their rising from the dead, when also the creation, having been renovated and set free, shall fructify with an abundance of all kinds of food – thanks to the dew of heaven and the fertility of the earth.

Ch. 34:1: Isaiah himself has plainly declared that there shall be joy of this nature at the resurrection of the righteous, when he says: *"The dead shall rise again. Those, too, who are in the tombs shall arise, and those who are in the earth shall rejoice. For the dew from Thee is health to them."*

And again with Ezekiel saying: *"Behold, I will open your tombs, and will bring you forth out of your graves. When I will draw my people from the sepulchres, and I put my breath in you ye shall live. I will place you on your own land and ye shall know that I am the Lord."* And again the same [writer] speaks thus: *"These things saith the Lord, I will gather Israel from all nations whither they have been driven, and I shall be sanctified in them in the sight of the peoples of the world: and they shall dwell in their own land, which I gave to my servant Jacob. And they shall dwell in it in peace. They shall build houses and plant vineyards and dwell in hope, when I shall cause judgment to fall among all who have dishonoured them, among those who encircle them round about. Then they shall know that I am the Lord their God, and the God of their fathers."* Now I have shown a short time ago that the Church is the seed of Abraham. And so it is that we may know that He who in the New Testament raises up from the stones 'children unto Abraham', is He who will gather, according to the Old Testament, those that shall be saved from all the nations.

Hfst 35:1: *"For, behold [says Isaiah], the day of the Lord cometh past remedy, full of fury and wrath, to lay waste the city of the earth, and to root sinners out of it."* And again he says: *"Let him be taken away, that he behold not the glory of God."* And when these things are done, he says: *"God will remove men far away (...) and those that are left shall multiply in the earth." "And they shall build houses, and shall inhabit them themselves, and plant vineyards and eat of them themselves."* All these and other words were unquestionably spoken in reference to the resurrection of the righteous, which takes place after the coming of Antichrist, and the destruction of all nations under his rule, and then [when the resurrection has taken place] the righteous shall reign the earth.

Hfst 35:2: Now this is what has been said by the Apostle: *"For the fashion of this world passeth away."* To the same purpose did the Lord also declare: *"Heaven and earth shall pass away."* When these things, therefore, pass away on this earth, according to John, the Lord's disciple, *"the New Jerusalem above shall descend (...) as a bride adorned for her husband",* [saying] *"this is the tabernacle of God, in which God will dwell with men."* Of this Jerusalem the former one is an image, that Jerusalem of the former earth in which the righteous are disciplined beforehand for [the purpose of] the incorruptibility and [are thus] prepared for

2) The Biblical quotations are translated directly from the writings of Irenæus.

[their] salvation. And of this tabernacle [or temple] Moses received the scheme on the Mount [Horeb].[3)]

Nothing is capable of being allegorized [unless the text itself indicates otherwise], but all things are stedfast and true, they are on solid ground, having been given by God for righteous men's enjoyment. For as it is God who truly raises up a man, so also does man truly rise from the dead, and not allegorically, as I have shown repeatedly. And as he rises actually, he shall be actually prepared for the incorruptibility, and shall go forward and flourish in the times of the Kingdom, ready to receive the glory of the Father. Then, when all things are made new, he shall truly dwell in the city of God. For it is said: *"He that sitteth on the throne said: Behold, I make all things new."* And the Lord says: *"Write all this, for these words are faithful and true. And He said to me: They are done."* And indeed this is the truth of the matter.

Hfst 36:3: John did distinctly foresee the first resurrection of the righteous and [their] inheritance in the Kingdom of the earth. What the [Old Testament] prophets have prophesied concerning this, harmonizes [with his vision].

Hfst 38: For in as many days as this world was made, in so many thousand years shall it be concluded. And for this reason the Scripture says: *"Thus the heaven and the earth were finished, and all their adornment. And God brought to a conclusion upon the sixth day the works that He had made. And God rested upon the seventh day from all his works."* This is an account of the things formerly created, as also it is a prophecy of what is to come. For the day of the Lord is as a thousand years. And as in six days the created things [the material objects] were completed, it becomes evident that they will come to a [spiritual] conclusion at the end of the six thousand years [after Adam]. »»

Digression

There is a unfortunate tendency to dismiss the 'opinions' of the Early Church Fathers, if not by neglect, as if they would be less enlightened than our present generation. Polycarp of Smyrna, for instance, claimed to have known at least one apostle, and met many who could tells things they had heard from the actual disciples of our Lord. And these Church Fathers would be less enlightened! The younger generation, into which Polycarp lived on, naturally recognized him as a peculiarly trustworthy source of information about the first era of the church, which was still untouched by the later speculations that were arrogantly put forward as if they came from the 'secret doctrines' of the apostles. Irenaeus tells us that, besides Polycarp, he had had instructors whom he referred to as mediate or immediate disciples of the apostles. (Source: "A Dictionary of Early Christian Biography" by Wace & Percy.)

The errant ways following the first age of the earliest church – to which belonged Polycarp, Irenaeus, Justin Martin and Papias – were based on an introspective routine that found its expression in the so-called 'Greek thinking'. To understand what that means, we can turn our gaze to present day Zen Buddhism. Zen teaches that enlightenment is achieved through the profound realization that one is already an enlightened being and

3) On the 18th Sept. 2007 Jesus says to J.N.S.R. (Je Ne Suis Rien, or: Jésus Notre Seigneur Revient – I am nothing, or: Jesus our Lord returns): "The Third Temple is the very expression of God's Rest after He has gathered all his children. It will see the day, the 'Great Day of the Lord on Earth', erected in all minds in which God's Holy Spirit dwells. It is the Heavenly Jerusalem descended amongst you."

that truth can be attained through introspection. In general, all thinking begins with conceptions to a certain extent generalized, and thence it is developed in two directions: first, generalizations become broader, binding together common features observed in the world of facts. Secondly, thinking approaches more closely the meeting point of conceptions, which moves from the general to the specific.

Those who think that this approach is purely rational are wrong, for the pre-conceptions are created by inspiration, they are in fact non-rational presuppositions. In this line of thought 'Greek thinking' makes no exception. Through a quick look on the Internet, we learn that Greek thinking can be regarded as the faculty of intellectual understanding and of intuitive thought (a form of inspiration); applied more narrowly, it is distinguished from discursive thinking and applies to the understanding of eternal intelligible substances and first principles. End of definition. It is this kind of thinking that has taken hold of Christian religious thought, which is based on the Modernistic premise that the visible and the rational precede the invisible, and that the foundation of truth lies within each individual and that each and everyone has access to it if concentrated thereon.

Greek thought focused on the problem of baptism in the aftermath of the very beginning of Christianity. The central question was, which still torments us today: how can a baby, who has done nothing wrong, have his sins forgiven through baptism? On the one hand, there was Irenaeus, who said that under the Reign of Peace, those who are found worthy will gradually be brought to participate in the divine nature, implying that perfection in this, our body, is unattainable for now. On the other hand, there was the much later Pelagus who assumed that perfection in this body is possible and that baptism is therefore unnecessary for a child born of that kind of 'perfect parents'. The Pelagian heresy was condemned by Augustine in his discussion of God's grace, predestination and free will.

Regarding the immense wickedness of present humanity, we have now reached the point where the wounds must be cut up to let the pus flow out. This is a depth psychological issue. The apostles were of course familiar with the mysteries of the kingdom of the dead, by which a 'corrupted inheritance' is passed down the line of generations. From this conviction, they practiced baptism not as a magical formula, but as a salvation, a power of reconciliation of what burdens us – already from our first breath. Thus equipped, they went forth to the ends of the earth. The essence of this was soon lost to the rationality of Greek thought; who among us knows what baptism for the dead is, of which the apostle Paul speaks? (1 Cor. 15:29) No one. Since Augustine, the question of grace and free will (related to baptism) became embroiled in endless discussions. It flared up again in the 16th century under Molinism, a Jesuit movement, which frontally attacked the works of that famous Hulst-born bishop, who wrote an impeccable work on the thoughts of Augustine. Louis Molina (1535-1600) declared that man is the first instigator and principal agent of his own salvation. Molinism, thus formulated, is thus a kind of neopelagianism.

With this digression I hope to have convinced the reader that the Early Church Fathers and their admonitions can and should be taken seriously.

APPENDIX 1

« Justice and Peace »

Isaiah Scroll (1QIsaa) Written in Hebrew - Qumran, Cave 1. Ca. 120 BCE Parchment
© Photo The Israel Museum, Jerusalem

TEL AVIV - On the occasion of the 60th anniversary of the State of Israel, the Israel Museum presented two major sections of the Great Isaiah Scroll – the most complete biblical Dead Sea Scroll document ever found and one of the world's greatest archaeological treasures – in a special installation in the "Shrine of the Book". For the first time in over 40 years the public had the opportunity to view the longest sections of the Scroll, featuring Isaiah's celebrated and timeless message of peace stated in chapter 2: ***"They shall beat their swords into plowshares"***. Swords into Plowshares presents the longest sections of the scroll: a 260 cm-long section comprising chapters 1 to 28, and a 238 cm-long section comprising chapters 44 to 66. The scroll and its message of peace were on view at the Museum from May 19 through August 30, 2008.

Introduction

On 17th April 2002, as guest of "Christenen in Brugge 2002" (Christians in Bruges 2002), Cardinal Jan Schotte (1925-2005) gave a speech in the context of Bruges as Cultural Capital of Europe. Cardinal Schotte was a well-known personality, resident in Rome, where for 19 years he was responsible for the organisation of the extraordinary synods of bishops. He was also president of staffing matters in the Vatican and a judge with the courts of cassation of the Catholic Church and of Vatican City.

His speech was given against the background of the occupation of the complex of the Church of the Nativity in Bethlehem, the bitter sequel to an escalation of the Palestinian-Israeli conflict. The occupation was a previously unknown and dramatic violation of the centuries-old custom of mutual respect between the belief groups going back as far as the Ottoman Empire. At the time there were 250 people in the complex, the majority being armed Palestinians, and kept hostage 30 Franciscans, 4 Franciscan nuns, 5 Greek

Orthodox and 9 Armenian Orthodox monks. Terrorism, Schotte stated to his audience, must always be condemned since no-one can condone terrorism in any form. There are no grounds for terrorism: from an adder's brood no peace can come! But a condemnation of this kind 'must' be uttered without losing sight of any unjust circumstances and oppressive humiliations suffered by the people from which that terrorism springs.

It should be stressed that there are many peoples and individuals on earth suffering from horrible oppression and injustices without breaking out into heinous acts against their fellow men. The one does not explain the other. Hatred can spring up anywhere and is the prevalent condition of humankind from which it should try to liberate itself. And here we are talking about the ways of getting there.

Our cultural heritage has been trapped

In the past, Cardinal Schotte was for five years Secretary and Vice-Chairman of the Papal Commission "Iustitia et Pax" (for Justice and Peace). Thus he knew what he was talking about. His speech began as follows:

> «« The true treasure of Europe lies in its patrimony of Christian principles. That is what enriches us, what binds us together in Europe, much more so even than geography. At present the Christian patrimony of Europe is being questioned. We only have to think about the discussions surrounding the drawing up of a European Constitution. Two days ago, in Rome, the Vice-Chairman of the group charged with drawing up the constitution promised to do his best to include the cultural patrimony of Christian origin in the constitution. But he was unable to make a firm promise in that regard. (In the end, the principle of the defence of our Christian heritage was not given a place in the drafting of the European Constitution.) [a)]
>
> The values of our Christian patrimony are being questioned, for a variety of reasons. Thus, for instance, secularisation is making swift progress, secularisation which, in an age of apparently unlimited technological progress, finds many of our historically-based values superfluous or which pretends that technology and science must be allowed to solve all the problems that we humans are having to confront. In a certain sense we have reached the point where a new edition or a reprint of rationalism is required, that system of thought that sets Man up as the only criterion of our entire existence. We too, Christians and Catholics, are living under the pressure of this culture shift. »»

The equality between people is not on center stage

Then the Cardinal delved into the meaning of the concept of justice and peace, so beautifully expressed in Psalm 85:11: *"I will hear what God the Lord will speak, for He will speak peace. (...) Mercy and truth meet each other; justice and peace kiss each other."* The God of the Covenant is a God of peace, whose benevolence as expression of his graciousness begs for peace against the truth that requires justice as an expression of God's supreme righteousness and judgement. This ultimate good, called peace, has been promised to us on different levels: as the inner good of our conscious, as the good that permeates our human communities, and finally as a social and international good in the relations that exist within and between the nations. Because of this ideal condition, once to be accomplished in the Reign of Peace, the term justice appears trice in the last four verses of this Psalm. That points at the state of absolute sinlessness of our Redeemer and King, to be part also of his beloved companions.

Seen differently, both twin concepts 'mercy & truth' and 'justice & peace' can each be considered as one entity. The twin concept mercy and trust is found again in John 1:17:

"The law was given by Moses, mercy and truth came (to this) by Jesus Christ." This is no antithesis as some would like to see it, as if truth stands against the Jewish system of law (de Torah). Schotte continued:

> «« 'Justice and Peace' is what is known in Latin as a binomium, a double term: a concept consisting of two components. This particular binomium is derived from the prophecy of Zechariah 9:9-10: *"Tell the daughter of Sion: Behold, your king is coming to you; He is just and having salvation, lowly and riding on a donkey, a colt, the foal of a donkey. (...) He shall speak peace to the nations; his dominion shall be from sea to sea, and from the river to the ends of the earth."* And yet in the Middle Ages, and even long afterwards, justice and peace were mainly seen as separate entities. This can be seen in various tracts written by the Church's moral theologians. But by the end of the 20th century we can say with certainty that the undeniable relationship between 'justice and peace' has been more and more accepted, something that can be seen in Church doctrine on the subject. In the tradition of Catholic morals we find principles related to personal justice, of distributive justice in our relationships with others, and also in relationship to international justice as regards the relationships between countries.
>
> (…) That link between justice and peace in the relationships between different countries is now very generally accepted. It was clearly stated by Benedict XV after the First World War after the establishment of the League of Nations. Pius XII had as his motto: "*Opus Iustitiæ Pax*": Peace is the work of Justice. Under Pope John XXIII the connection was given strong emphasis and from Paul VI we have the expression *"development is the new name for peace"*. »»

A certain tension built up from the present emphasis on the equality principle as the conditio sine qua non for equitable living conditions. However, it is obvious that in Biblical ethics the equality principle between people is not on the forefront; on the contrary, because a human society can only fulfill its calling in 'grace' and 'justice' in permanent interaction with 'truth' and 'peace'. In this sense every-one is 'equal' but not 'identical', **something that cannot be found in the dealings of nature. It is neither the result of intelligent thinking, but it can only thrive by exploitation of the Love of God**. The human status is not measured by being equal or unequal or in function of utility. A human is not made for its own sake, but he is a social creature meant to be in a relation to God and to one another. In Biblical perspective it is the relation that is on center stage, not the autonomy of the indiviual or some kind of economic gain. That explains why in the Christian approach it is not the individual that counts, but the relation to his fellow being. In the Jewish-Christian culture it is not the autonomous man, but the conscientious man that takes the lead.

William Bilderdijk (1756-1831), the Dutch leading man of the Réveil (French for revival or awakening), was one of the first who claimed that the revolutionary equality principle, from which evolved 'having right to something', would result in an ever greater unequality in our modern democracies, with a gradual fading away of the sense of duty. Typical for the focus of attention given to the human rights issue is the absense of the word 'duty' in the French revolutionary constitution from 1791, with a subsequent removal from all new constitutions, also here in the Netherlands and Belgium. Not surprisingly, because duties are very unpopular and as concerns a sense of duty people happen to be very unequal! [b)]

Schotte also stated the following. Within the Church the binomium has become a single concept; justice and peace now always go together. This has also happened in the world of international politics. When the United Nations was established in 1945, the link was laid from the start with the establishment of the Security Council, where political matters

are dealt with in relation to security in peace in the various nations, and with the founding of the Economic and Social Council that was set up to deal with problems of justice. The same combination – justice and peace, peace and justice – has been set as the basic assumption in the other bodies of the United Nations, the International Labour Organization, dealing with problems in the field of work, and the International Atomic Energy Agency, where security is sought with regard to nuclear energy.

Finally I would like to draw your attention to a third binomium, that of righteousness and a fair verdict. *"I will make justice the measuring stick and a fair verdict to the plummet"* the Lord declares through his prophet. (Is. 28:17) Abraham was chosen to teach his posterity*"to be just and fair in one's dealings"*. (Gen. 18:19) *"God desires righteousness and proper verdict*" (Ps. 33:5), *"which is even more so acceptable than sacrifice."* (Prov. 21:3) His throne is founded upon them, for it is written in Psalm 97:2: *"Righteousness and a proper verdict are the foundation of his throne."* When the Queen of Sheba met King Solomon she exclaimed: *"Blessed be the Lord your God who delighted in you to set you on the throne of Israel, because the Lord loves Israel forever. Therefore He made you a king in order to act justly and fairly."* (1 Kings 10:9)

Conclusion

Today the binomia 'justice & peace, 'righteousness & fairness' and 'mercy & truth' have entered the collective conscience. These twin concepts have become inseparable. And for us, believers, this ought to become a part of our thought processes, and that despite the fact that in today's world we can observe everywhere a situation in which a lack of peace and the presence of injustice prevail, as well as a lack of righteousness and the presence of lawlessness, and a lack of mercy and the presence of trickery. This presents the Church with the challenge to present the message of the Gospel by way of contrast. In the difficult and apparently impossible task of turning the current situation into one of righteousness, peace and mercy, we can find solid ground in the text from Zechariah 9 already quoted. The same text is repeated in the Gospel of Matthew at the glorious entry of Jesus into Jerusalem. Then, as now, the world was branded and shocked by a lack of peace, righteousness and mercy, and the presence everywhere of terrible injustice, lawlessness and trickery.

[The complete speech was published in the Bruges Diocesan Newsletter – Ministrando 38-6.]

Ilana Mercer stated: *"The Jewish perspective pivots on the 'passion for justice', wrote my father Rabbi B. Isaacson in the International Jewish Encyclopedia. Justice always precedes and is a prerequisite for mercy (...); mercy without justice is no mercy at all."*

(a) The European Constitution was rejected in 2005 after various national referenda. Turnout for the referendum on a European constitution was high, as was the margin of defeat for a measure pushed by the governing elite. *"There is no longer a constitution"*, commented Philippe de Villiers, leader of the "Le Mouvement pour la France" (The movement for France), a nationalist party that had warned that France would suffer if the European Union continued to expand its borders for such countries as Islamic Turkey.

(b) Source: "De missie van een genie – de spirituele wereld van orangist Willem Bilderdijk" (The mission of a genious – the spiritual world of Orangist William Bilderdijk) by Bert Engelfriet – Buijten & Schipperheijn, Amsterdam # 2010 (p. 53).

Introduction to "The Phantom Heresy" by Michael Svigel

Recently I talked to a priest who charged that my belief in a literal millennial reign is heretical, to which I inquired of him where that is stated in Denzinger, because if this is not ealt with by this great reference work it cannot possibly be heretical. He could not answer, but yet he was not convinced. He who does not want to hear, cannot be convinced. I also referred him to the Catechism of the Catholic Church (the CCC), published in its definitive edition in 1997, which was edited under the personal supervision of Pope John Paul II. In its discussion of the "Thy Kingdom Come" of the Lord's Prayer, the Catechism states that this prayer *"refers primarily to the final coming of the reign of God through Christ's return."* (No. 2818) As to be expected that could not convince him either. Michael Svigel concludes his discourse by suggesting that an unconscious antipathy to the coming of the reign of God may underlie that foolish opinion that it's heretical.

Unfortunately, this priest is not an isolated case. Since World War II, a nearly unanimous opinion has prevailed among Catholics and Protestants alike, as if the Council of Ephesus in 431 had condemned a belief in the reality of the Millennial Reign. But that opinion turns out to be completely wrong, is in itself heretical. How that opinion has managed to spread like an virulent virus is explained in minute detail by Svigel, by going back step by step to the original sources. And what emerges? People have blindly adopted an injudicious opinion of a highly learned theologian and this was repeated again and again, in reference upon reference, so that it was finally accepted as an established fact, as something that requires no further discussion. Quite a serious matter, which Svigel's research has conclusively debunked.

Attached to Svigel's discourse is a summary of the early Christian expectation regarding the Coming Reign, which, as is well established, stands diametrically against the general opinion as of present.

The Phantom Heresy

Did the Council of Ephesus (431) condemn faith in the reality of the Thousand Years' Reign (Chiliasm)?

By: Professor Michael J. Svigel, Master of Theology, PhD – winter 2001.[4)]
Was written while being a student at the evangelical Dallas Theological Seminary.

Coptic Acts of the Council of Ephesus in the Collection of P. Vindob (K. 381)
The only contemporary evidence in existence

2.04 – The Issue at Hand

One popular Catholic apologetic resource states [as concerns theological deliberations]: «« As far as the millennium goes, we [Catholics] tend to agree with Augustine[5)] and, derivatively, with the amillennialists [who see the Reign of Thousand years as unreal]. (…) In the 1940s the Holy Office [in 1965 renamed The Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith] judged that premillennialism[6)] *"cannot safely be taught"*, though the Church has not dogmatically defined this issue. »» [7)] On the other hand, one writer commenting on the history of millennial thought notes: «« Following Augustine, the Church had long

4) Original title: "The Phantom Heresy: did the Council of Ephesus condemn Chiliasm?"

5) [After Jesus was risen to heaven, 40 days after the Crucifixion, there was a lively expectation among his followers of an early return as the impetus for the Millennial Kingdom of Peace, according to their question, after being taught by Jesus all these days: "Lord, will You at this time restore the kingdom to Israel?" (Acts 1:6) The New Testament letters can be read from that expectation. When, in the days of Augustine (354-430), the Second Coming was still awaited for, a re-ordering was called for, and it is from this perspective that Augustine came to his ideas about the reality of the Millennial Age of peace]

6) [Premilleanisme expects Christ's Return at the threshold of the Millennium, thus at the start of the thousand years Kingdom of Peace.]

believed that the reign of the saints foretold by Revelation was already in operation through its own good offices, and shown little enthusiasm for the idea that Christ would return imminently to set up an earthly kingdom: indeed, the Council of Ephesus declared such a belief heretical in 431. »»[8)] The problem here should be immediately evident. Did the Council of Ephesus in 431 AD condemn Chiliasm as heresy or not? Surely, the truth of the matter must lie somewhere between "the Church has not dogmatically defined this issue" and "the Council of Ephesus declared such a belief heretical".

2.05 – Two Traditions

The student of the [theological] history of millennialism will soon learn that two separate traditions regarding this issue are currently being propounded. The oldest [written] tradition of writers on the [theological] history of millennialism appears to be ignorant of any alleged condemnation of Chiliasm in any official and dogmatic capacity in early Christian history.[9)] Any mention of an official condemnation at the Council of Ephesus is conspicuously missing from those in what appear to be otherwise thorough works on the history of millennialism.[10)] Although Daniel Thompson Taylor suggests that Pope Damasus "formally denounced Chiliasm" at Rome in the year 373, he refers to no condemnation by the third ecumenical council.[11)] Likewise, Diedrich H. Kromminga makes no mention of the alleged condemnation in his standard work on millennialism, but rather describes a *"gradual subsidence of Chiliasm in the ancient Church"* and writes further-

---

7) The decree by the Holy Office in July of 1944 was in answer to the following: "What must be thought of the system of mitigated Millenarianism (Chiliasm) that plainly teaches that Christ the Lord before the final judgment, whether or not preceded by the resurrection of the many just, will come visibly to rule over this world?" (Quid sentiendum de systemate Millenarismi mitigati, docentis scilicet Christum Dominum ante finale iudicium, sive praevia sive non praevia plurium iustorum resurrectione, visibiliter in hanc terram regnandi causa esse venturum?) The response by Pope Pius XII was short: "The system of mitigated [or mild] Millenarianism cannot be taught safely." (Systema Millenarismi mitigati tuto doceri non posse.) Denzinger 43rd ed. 2012 (3839). The vagueness of 'mitigated' and the qualifier 'safely' renders the official position susceptible to interpretation [as if the Pope himself did not know what to think of it, whether mild or not]. [Denzinger contains all Creeds, Definitions and Declarations by the Catholic Church as from its early beginnings; if not defined or condemned in Denzinger it cannot be a by the Church sanctioned heresy.]

8) "Millenarianism in the Reformation and the English Revolution", in Christian Millenarianism: From the Early Church to Waco" by Andrew Bradstock (ed. Stephen Hunt) - Indiana University Press, Indianapolis IN # 2001 (p. 77).

9) Indeed, apart from isolated papal or magisterial opinions as in the note above, the first 'official' and 'dogmatic' condemnation of Chiliasm appears to be that of the Lutheran Augsburg confession of 1530, when the notion of an earthly kingdom was condemned in the following terms: "They condemn others also, who now scatter Jewish opinions, that, before the resurrection of the dead [when God pronounces the Last Judgement], the godly shall occupy the kingdom of the world, the wicked being everywhere suppressed." (Damnant et alios, qui nunc spargunt Judaicas opiniones, quod ante resurrectionem mortuorum pii regnum mundi occupaturi sint, ubique oppressis impiis.) Original Latin and English translation are taken from "The Creeds of Christendom with a History and Critical Notes" by Philip Schaff , as concernss "The Evangelical Protestant Creeds with Translations" in the "Bibliotheca Symbolica Ecclesiae Universalis" - Harper & Brothers, New York # 1877; rev. and enlarged 4th ed. Baker, Grand Rapids MI # 1977 (vol. 3 p. 18). Following suit, Bullinger's Second Helvetic Confession of 1566 condemns "Jewish dreams that there will be a golden age on earth before the Day of Judgment, and that the pious, having subdued all their godless enemies, will possess all the kingdoms of the earth." (Damnamus praeterea Judaica somnia, quod ante judicii diem aureum in terries sit futuram seculum, et pii regna mundi occupaturi, oppressis suis hostibus impiis.) (vol. 3 p. 257)

more: *"Of suppressive efforts against chiliasm no trace appears."*[12] C. Cooper notes: *"From the third to the fifth centuries Chiliasm was vigorously fought and ruthlessly put down, although it was not officially declared a heresy. It was all really rather awkward, because previously nearly everybody of note had been a Chiliast. (...) In between Chiliasm and the charge of heresy stands the [restraining] canonization of Justin the Martyr and Irenaeus."*[13] In another work on the history of millenarianism, under a subsection entitled: "The Church Turns Against Millenarians", Michael St. Clair makes no indication of any condemnation at the Council of Ephesus.[14] Finally, [famous historian professor] Frederic Baumgartner appears to be in utter ignorance of any official condemnation at Ephesus when he writes: *"The solution to millennial anxiety offered by Augustine of Hippo quickly became the accepted one for Latin Christianity, while by 400 for the Greek Church, more concerned with disputes over Christ's nature, the absence of Donatism reduced the sense of millennial urgency."* [15]

On the other hand, a newer tradition, since the late 1950s, alleges that the third ecumenical council of Ephesus did, in fact condemn millennialism in some fashion. Norman Cohn writes, *"This [view of Augustine] at once became orthodox doctrine, and so definitively that in 431 the Council of Ephesus condemned belief in the Millennium as a superstitious aberration."*[16] Similarly, Robert Clouse states: *"This doctrine [of St Augustine] was so fully accepted that at the Council of Ephesus in 431, belief in the millennium was condemned as superstition."*[17] Peter Toon, progressing in tone from condemnation as simply a *"superstitious aberration"* to nearly a charge of heresy, writes: *"This teaching [of St Augustine] soon became accepted as orthodoxy and has in general been so regarded in both Catholic and Protestant Churches ever since the Council of Ephesus in 431 condemned belief in a literal, future millennium as superstition"* (…) *"[while] the same council accepted amillennialism as orthodox eschatological teaching [the teaching of the end time]."* [18] By 2001 Andrew Bradstock claims: *"that the Council of Ephesus declared heretical in 431 such a belief [that the Christ would return imminently to set up an earthly kingdom]."* [19]

2.06 – Chasing the Heresy Down the Hole

A perusal of works on the history of the ecumenical councils and the Council of Ephesus in particular reveals that a condemnation of Chiliasm is far from obvious and certainly

---

10) Cf. "The Hope of the Early Church: A Handbook of Patristic Eschatology" by Brian E. Daley - Cambridge University Press, Cambridge # 1991.

11) "The Voice of the Church on the Coming and Kingdom of the Redeemer", or: "A History of the Doctrine of the Reign of Christ on Earth" by Daniel Thompson Taylor - rev. ed. H. L. Hastings - Peace Dale RI # 1855 (p. 115).

12) "The Millennium in the Church: Studies in the History of Christian Chiliasm" by Diedrich H. Kromminga - Eerdmans, Grand Rapids MI # 1945 (pp. 102, 113).

13) "Chiliasm and the Chiliasts" by C. Cooper, in the "Reformed Theological Review" nr 29 # 1970 (p. 12).

14) "Millenarian Movements in Historical Context" by Michael J. St. Clair - Garland Publ., New York # 1992 (pp. 85-87).

15) "Longing for the End: A History of Millennialism in Western Civilization" by Frederic J. Baumgartner - St. Martin's Press, New York # 1999 (p. 47).

16) "The Pursuit of the Millennium: Revolutionary Messianism in Medieval and Reformation Europe and its bearing on modern totalitarian movements" by Norman Cohn - Harper & Row, New York # 1957 (p. 14).

17) "The Apocalyptic Interpretation of Thomas Brightman and Joseph Mede" by Robert Clouse, in "Bulletin of the Evangelical Theological Society" nr 11 # 1968 (p. 182).

18) "Puritans, the Millennium and the Future of Israel: Puritan Eschatology 1600 to 1660" van Peter Toon - James Clarke, Cambridge MA # 1970 (Introduction, pp. 14, 17).

not in the category of common knowledge, as would be, say, the condemnation of Arius at Nicea.[20] In fact, a reading of the primary sources available on the Council of Ephesus reveals little more than the Nestorian controversies and its ecclesiastical effects.[21]

Moreover, when one attempts to start with the various secondary sources that make mention of a condemnation of Chiliasm by the Council of Ephesus and work backwards to the primary source, one is disappointed by what is ultimately found. In 2001, Stanley Grenz and John R. Franke refer to *"the condemnation of premillennialism at the Council of Ephesus."*[22] Although they cite no primary or secondary source for this statement in particular,[23] the authors do rely on other secondary sources in this chapter that make the same claim, like Peter Toon's "Introduction to Puritans, the Millennium and the Future of Israel,[24] and Stan Grenz's "Millennial Maze".[25] In the same year, Bradstock claims that the Council of Ephesus declared Chiliasm *"heretical"*.[26]

Bradstock himself relies on an earlier secondary source, that of Richard Kyle, who writes in 1998: *"In 431 the Council of Ephesus condemned as superstition the belief in a literal millennium."*[27] Kyle apparently relies on Paul Boyer's work of 1992 in which he asserts: *"With the condemnation of millennialism by the Council of Ephesus in 431, Augustine's views became orthodoxy."*[28] Boyer relies on Peter Toon's "Introduction" from 1970 as his own secondary source for this assertion. Stanley Grenz, in his popular and influential work "The Millennial Maze", appears to rely upon both Peter Toon's 1970 work and an earlier one by Norman Cohn from 1957, when he writes that at Ephesus the Church *"condemned as superstition the belief in a literal, future thousand-year reign on the earth."*[29] In 1977, in his introduction to a widely-read book on the subject of the millennium, Robert G. Clouse states: *"Augustine's teaching was so fully accepted that at the Council of Ephesus in 431, belief in the millennium was condemned as superstitious."*[30] For this statement Clouse relies upon Toon's "Introduction".

Although several authors above relied on Peter Toon's assertion in 1970 that *"the Council of Ephesus condemned belief in a literal, future millennium as superstition",*[31] Toon

---

19) ibid "Millenarianism in the Reformation" by Andrew Bradstock (p. 77).

20) "Le dogma d'Éphèse" by Adhemar d'Alles - Éd. Beauchesne, Paris # 1931; also: "The First Seven Ecumenical Councils; their history and theology" by Donald Davis in "Theology and Life Series" nr 21 - Éd. Beauchesne, Wilmington # 1987 (pp. 325-787).

21) More thorough translations of the primary texts include "The Third World Council" by James Chrystal, that is: "The Third Council of the Whole Christian World, East and West, which was held at 431 AD at Ephesus in Asia" in 3 vols. - Authoritative Christianity, Jersey NJ # 1895; also: "Les Actes des Conciles d'Éphèse et Chalcédoine (Première traduction française)" by André-Jean Festugi and Charles Kannengiesser - Éditions Beauchesne, Paris # 1982.

22) "Beyond Foundationalism: Shaping Theology in a Postmodern Context" by Stanley Grenz and John Franke - Westminster John Knox, Louisville KY # 2001 (p. 242).

23) De schrijvers schrijven hun conclusie neer alsof het algemeen aanvaard is.

24) ibid "Puritans, the Millennium and the Future of Israel" by Toon (pp. 14, 17).

25) "The Millennial Maze: Sorting out Evangelical Options" by Stanley J. Grenz - InterVarsity Press, Downers Grove IL # 1992 (p. 44).

26) ibid "Millenarianism in the Reformation" by Andrew Bradstock (p. 77).

27) "The Last Days are Here Again: a history of the end times" by Richard Kyle - Baker, Grand Rapids MI # 1998 (p. 39).

28) "When time shall be no more: Prophecy belief in modern American culture" by Paul Boyer - Harvard University Press, Cambridge MA # 1992 (p. 49).

29) ibid "The Millennial Maze" by Grenz (p. 44).

30) "The Meaning of the Millennium: Four Views" by Robert G. Clouse - InterVarsity Press, Downers Grove IL # 1977 (Introduction, p. 9).

himself relied upon the original 1957 edition of a work by Norman Cohn entitled "The Pursuit of the Millennium", in which he wrote: *"This [view of Augustine] at once became orthodox doctrine, and so definitively that in 431 the Council of Ephesus condemned belief in the Millennium as a superstitious aberration."* [32] It is this same 1957 first edition that Robert Clouse relied upon in a 1968 article in which he states in similar terms: *"This doctrine [of Augustine] was so fully accepted that at the Council of Ephesus in 431, belief in the millennium was condemned as superstition."* [33]

Norman Cohn's 1957 and 1961 editions of his "Pursuit of the Millennium" both contain this same assertion. In those books, Cohn refers to a 1904 work in French by Léon Gry. In Gry's work on the history of millennialism, he writes regarding the eventual unfavorable opinion towards Chiliasm: *"They did not talk about anything else during the Council of Ephesus of 431."* [34] In a footnote at this point, he explains: *"At the Council of Ephesus the Easterners asked this question to Saint Cyril: "If there is a second revolution that will, of course, affect the economy, will it be then that the strange millennium teaching of Apollinarus is invalidated?"* [35] Gry thus uses the original Latin quotation to illustrate the attitude toward the notion of a Thousand Year Reign among the Eastern bishops, not bothering to inform indicate what Cyril's answer to the question was.[36] He is not asserting that the Council at large was making an official condemnation of the doctrine. Cohn apparently realizes this by the time he publishes in 1970 the revised and expanded edition of his "Pursuit", for the reference to the [alleged] condemnation at the Council of Ephesus is conspicuously missing.[37]

Finally, what of the Latin source quoted by Gry in his footnote? This original source is not easy to track down,[38] but an examination of the context in which the passage is found, reveals that the question posed by the Eastern bishops to Cyril is not indicative of any sort of official condemnation of Chiliasm at the Council of Ephesus. In fact, the context of the question as well as the failure of Cyril to even respond to the matter of Chiliasm makes this clear.[39] Yet it was not Gry's contention that Ephesus officially condemned Chiliasm. Rather, he was demonstrating the attitude of the Eastern bishops concerning

---

31) ibid "Puritans, the Millennium and the Future of Israel" by Toon (pp. 14, 17).

32) ibid "Pursuit of the Millennium" by Cohn # 1957 (p. 14).

33) ibid "The Apocalyptic Interpretation" by Clouse (p. 182).

34) "Le Millénarisme dans ses origenes et son développement" by Léon Gry - A. Picard, Paris # 1904 (p. 106): "On ne parlat pas autrement au Concile d'Ephèse de 431."

35) "Au Concile d'Ephèse, les Orientaux posèrent cette question à saint Cyrille: «Num iterum erit secundum revolutionem et naturae consequentiam dispensationis opus, juxta deliramenta, fabulosique mille annorum infausti Apollinarii dogmata?»"

36) Those familiar with the proceedings at Ephesus will immediately realize the problems with reading Gry as concerns his referral to an official condemnation of Chiliasm. Most Eastern bishops were at odds with Cyril throughout the whole Council and were not reconciled until after the proceedings. Any question posed to Cyril [during the council] by the Eastern bishops would not have been legally binding in establishing the dogmatic and universally-binding doctrine on the matter.

37) "The Pursuit of the Millennium: Revolutionary Messianism and Mystical Anarchists of the Middle Ages" by Norman Cohn - Oxford University Press rev. and exp. ed., New York # 1970 (p. 29). Any excision from an 'expanded' edition ought to attract attention, though it did not seem to have had much of an effect on those who have continued to repeat the allegation in the 1957 and 1961 editions.

38) I must at this point extend tremendous gratitude to Amanda Saville of the Queens College Library in Oxford, and also to my longtime friend and sometimes research assistant, Jason Lina, as well as the staff at Southern Methodist University's Bridwell Library for their gracious assistance in my pursuit of the original Latin volumes containing the passage cited by Gry. This work would have been impossible to complete without their assistance.

the concept of the earthly millennium in the early 5th century. This is likely why it appears that Cohn's misunderstanding or mistranslation of the comments by Gry was subsequently – though quietly and justifiably – removed by him in his later edition.

As can be seen from the reconstruction of the history of the claim that the Council of Ephesus of 431 condemned Chiliasm, the original source records no such condemnation, anathema, decree, or declaration. Cohn appears to have misunderstood or mistranslated his source in Gry (or failed to check Labbe directly!) and made the false assertion in his 1957 and 1961 editions of "The Pursuit of the Millennium", but, apparently being corrected of his error, removed the statement from his 1970 edition. However, by then it was too late, for already others who had relied on the earlier editions were doomed to repeat the error without consulting either Gry or, more importantly, Labbe. Having been made by able scholars with a far-reaching influence in popular volumes, this error has now reproduced itself at the popular level with no hope for restraint.[40)]

2.07 – Implications and Conclusion

The purpose of this article was two-fold. First, by tracing the error to its source, I hope to have succeeded in sending the claim that the Council of Ephesus condemned Chiliasm in the year 431 to the realm of speculation. In light of the conclusions of this article, any continued assertion of this nature must satisfy a weighty burden of proof with reference to primary source evidence. Given the plentitude of untranslated, unedited, or perhaps even presently non-extant and lost material on this subject, the case will of course never be finally closed [among those theologians who take Justinus Martyr and Irenaeus little seriously, on the basis of the foolish evolutionary notion that later theologians always know better than the earlier ones]. Nevertheless, the burden of proof has been reshifted to those who wish to maintain an official ecumenical condemnation of Chiliasm.

Second, this article has illustrated a methodological problem to which all researchers and writers are prone. The temptation is always great to 'trust' a secondary source when we believe the author to be quoting a primary source accurately, or to have done his work correctly on the primary sources to authorize a claim, or that he simply has sufficient expertise in a particular area of study to avoid gross inaccuracies. I may add that all of us have likely succumbed to this temptation at times, especially under the pressure of 'deadlines'. However, if proper methods of source verification are not followed, it is wisest to simply leave out the minor point that has not been corroborated. I suspect, though, that the phantom condemnation of Chiliasm at Ephesus is not an isolated case,

---

39) "Sacrosancta concilia ad regiam editionem exacta" by Philippe Labbe and Gabriel Cossart - Societatis typographicae Librorum Ecclesiasticorum jussu Regis constitutae, in 16 Vols, Lutetiae Parisiorum # 1671-72 (Part 3: col. 834-37).

The questions posed to Cyril in challenge of his third anathema focused on the divine and human natures of Christ. I will quote the passage at length here to set forth the Eastern bishops' barrage of questions preceding the final question excerpted by Gry: "Quomodo igitur, quasi oblitus suorum verborum, ad unam hypostasin cogit, naturas confundens, naturalem divinam unitionem nominans? Et quis unquam admittet naturalem divinam unitionem in sacramento dispensationis? Si enim naturalis unitio, ubi gratia? Ubi divinum sacramentum? Naturae enim, ut edocti sumus, semel ab ordinante Deo ordinatae, necessariis consequentiis serviunt. Num etiam iterum erit secundum revolutionem & naturae consequentiam dispensationis opus juxta deliramenta, fabulosaque mille annorum infausti Apollinarii dogmata?"

In Cyril's defense of the Anathema against the Eastern bishops' objection, he makes no mention of Apollinarius's Chiliasm, focusing his discussion entirely on the Christological issues at hand. Certainly, there was no official condemnation of Chiliasm in this passage and the opinions of Eastern bishops especially held no authority at the Council.

but that our fields of research may be riddled with similar shortcuts that give rise to unwitting inaccuracies and errors.

Yet few errors of scholarship are as literally damning as the alleged condemnation of Chiliasm at the ecumenical Council of Ephesus. For the growing number of evangelicals who take seriously the authority of the Tradition of the church, its rule of faith, and the expression of these in especially the first four ecumenical councils,[41)] an assertion that one of those councils has condemned a particular doctrine is a serious and sobering charge. Naturally, one may be tempted to consider whether the proliferation of the unwarranted assertion of an early ecumenical condemnation of Chiliasm is sometimes motivated by a modern anti-premilennialist view from which an unconscious desire arises that the early Church had universally condemned Chiliasm after all.

Nay, it seems both ancient and contemporary orthodoxy will still need to make room for premillennialists!

40) An examination of both professional and amateur internet web sites will reveal the pervasiveness of the assertion. For just a sampling, see:
http://www.preteristarchive.com/StudyArchive/pc_millennial-reign.html;
http:// www.christinyou.net/millennium.html;
http://latter-rain.com/escha/millen.htm;
http://www. religion-online.org/cgi-bin/relsearchd.dll/showchapter?chapter_id=141;
http://www.bostontheological.org/colloquium/bts/btsrichardson. htm;
http://www.bible.org/docs/author/allen.htm;
http://w3fp.arizona.edu/mesassoc/Bulletin/Pres%20Addresses/ Stowasser.htm.

41) For a contemporary expression of this growing movement, see for instance: “Retrieving the Tradition and Renewing Evangelicalism: a primer for suspicious Protestants” by David H. Williams - Eerdmans, Grand Rapids MI # 1999.

APPENDIX 2

The Early Christian Expectation regarding God's Kingdom

Let's see what Philip Schaff has to say about the expectation of the Millennial Reign as it lived among the early Christians. Was this expectation then real or symbolic? Revelation 20 depicts the end times as foreshadowing the Millennial Reign. Chiliasm, a word derived from the Greek for thousand, is the theology that addresses this issue. The great historian Philip Schaff writes: [42)]

> «« The most striking point in the eschatology [end-time theology] of the ante-Nicean age [i.e., before the year 325] is the prominent Chiliasm or Millenniarism, that is the belief of a visible reign of Christ in glory on earth with the risen saints for a thousand years, before the general resurrection and [final] judgment. It was indeed not the doctrine of the church embodied in any creed or form of devotion, but a widely current opinion of distinguished teachers [from the early Church], such as Barnabas, Papias, Justin Martyr, Irenaeus, Tertullian, Methodius, and Lactantius; while Caius, Origen, Dionysius the Great, Eusebius,[43)] as afterwards Jerome and Augustin, opposed it. »»

Weary of the long wait and thinking that Roman Emperor Constantine had brought the expected Kingdom on earth, Augustin of Hippo dated the '1000 Years' Reign' from the time of the writing of the Book of Revelation, or the beginning of the Christian era, to the end of the first millennium of the Christian church. It was the existential fear of the Last Judgment that subsequently led Augustine to revise his earlier opinion and conceive of the Millennial Age in symbolic terms.[44)] He was not the first to think that way, but certainly the most prominent. This point of view later became the common coin of theology, especially of Roman Catholic theology, and later it was also accepted in Protestantism, but not at first, for Luther, who stands at the beginning of the Reformation lived in the expectation that the Millennial Reign was already at hand and he therefore saw Pope Leo X (1475-1521) as the False Prophet, as foretold by the Bible.[45)]

Augustine soon gained a dedicated multitude of followers. A dichotomy thus emerged. Just as the Old Testament is peppered with material promises and Judaism had always in mind a material future that was to take shape in the 'Coming World', so Christianity since Augustine looked almost exclusively to a spiritual and heavenly future, which to a

---

42) "History of the Christian Church - II" door Philip Schaff – Electronic Bible Society # 1882, the 2002 Internet version is based on the 3rd revised edition. (§158: p. 443).

43) Zie also as concerns the early Christian expectation the "Collana La Sacra Biblia" – Marietti # 1947-1960 (p. 844), under the guidance of Salvatore Garofalo, Professor in Sacred Scripture at the Pontificia Università Urbanian.

44) Such a fear of God's judgment, which leads one to conceive the Millennial Reign and God's Judgment in a metaphorical sense (so that in final resort, Hell is no longer believed in), could only take root from an insufficient understanding of God's mercy. Only when God has exhausted all means of grace to put man on the right path, only then will God intervene, 'must' intervene, to prevent worse. The heavenly messages to Sister Jozefa Menendez (1890-1923) and those to Sister Faustina (1905-1938) opened the way to the knowledge, worship and supplication of God's infinite mercy. This deepened knowledge could have dissipated the ill-conceived fear of God's judgments. The supplication of the divine mercy leads to averting impending calamity. After all, prophetically announced upheavals are always conditional. Even at the last, God is ready to withdraw his punishing hand if the Church deploys the means of grace assigned to her. How powerful is the prayer that implores God's mercy, how beneficial for the world! The Church has been called God's lightning rod. The Church and her believers are the salt of the earth, but if the salt has become saltless... Yes, then things go from bad to worse.

certain extent harmonizes with the New Testament, while the truth lies somewhere in the middle. After all, according to Revelation 21:2, at some point heaven descends upon the earthly scene, answering the Lord's Prayer: *"Thy will be done on earth as it is in Heaven",* a prayer that has so far remained a sweet dream.

Lactantius, also called Lucius Cælius, was the advisor to Constantine the Great and the mentor of his son Crispus. The following quotes are from his most famous work, the "Institutiones Divinae", which was written between the years 303 and 311, and illustrates that even a generation before Augustine came to prominence – his conversion took place in the year 386 – the Millennial expectation was still very much alive.

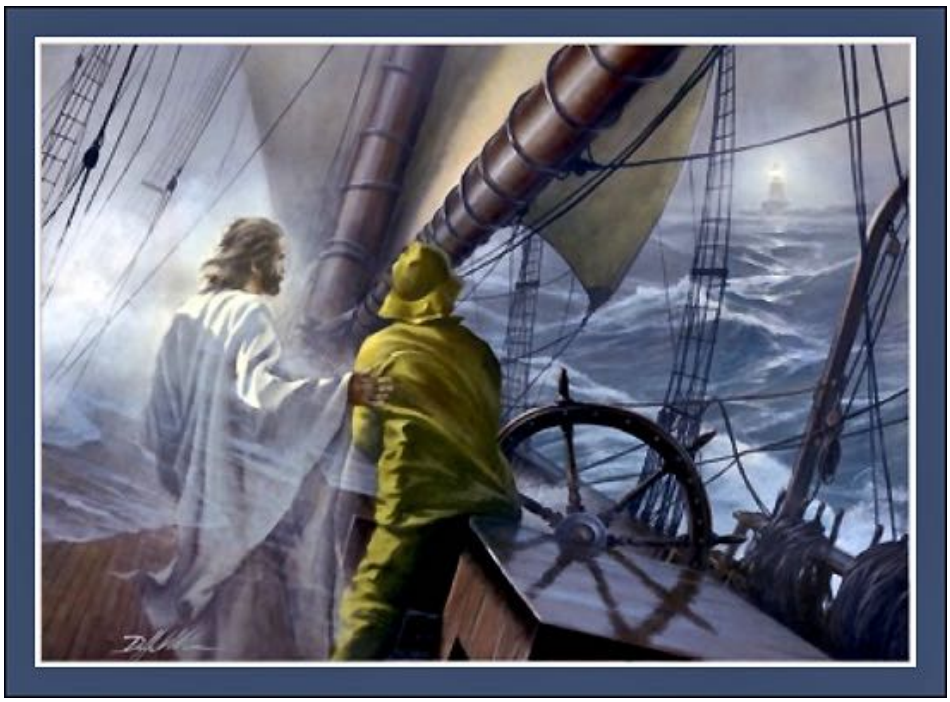
> «« God completed the world and this admirable work of nature in a time span of six days, as stated in the mysteries of Holy Scripture, and He sanctified the seventh day when He rested from his works. But this is the Sabbath day, which in the language of the Hebrews derives its name from the number itself [Sabbath is actually derived from the word 'cease'], so that the seventh is rightly the complete number. For there are seven days of which the successive revolutions of the annual circles consist; and there are seven stars that do not set and there are seven beacons of light called planets, whose different and unequal movements are thought to determine the variations of the times and their conditions.
>
> Therefore, since all God's works were completed in six days, the world in its present state must pass through six ages, which is six thousand years. For the great day of the Lord is enclosed by cycles of a thousand years, as the prophet indicates, saying: *"In your sight, O Lord, a thousand years are as one day."* And since God worked during those six days to create such great works, his religion and truth should work during those six thousand years while wickedness prevails and rules. And again, since God, having finished his works, rested on the seventh day and blessed it, at the end of the six thousand year, every [human] depravity must be banished from the earth, and righteousness will reign for a thousand years; and there will be peace and rest from the troubles that the world has long suffered. (Book VII: "On a Happy Life", ch. 14; hereafter a quote from ch. 26.)
>
> We said a little earlier that at the beginning of the holy reign it will come to pass that the prince of devils will be chained by God. But he will be released again when the millennial kingdom, which is the seventh 'thousand' of the world, will come to its end. Since he has been released from captivity, he will go around and unite all the nations that will then be exchanged against the rule of the righteous, and they will wage war on the Holy City. From all over the world an innumerable crowd from [all] nations will be gathered to besiege and surround the city.[46)] »»»

45) To this end, see "Luther - Mensch zwischen Gott und Teufel" (Luther - a man between God and the Devil) by Heiko A. Oberman - Wolf Jobst Siedler Verlag, Berlin # 1981. Luther's anti-papal attitude has translated into a general anti-papal attitude among Protestants in which no distinction is made between the end-time pope and popes in general.

46) The saints of the old dispensation who are admitted to the Millennial Reign receive bodily immortality (Rev. 20:6), but nowhere does it say that the newborn receive the same gift (see also Is. 65:20). Therefore, the rebellion at the end of the Millennial might very well have been caused by the desire to drink from the elixer of life that the saints would keep hidden in Jerusalem.

The Time of God's Active Involvement

The Book of Revelation in the Light of the Old Testament



At the Helm, by Danny Hahlbohm (www.inspired-art.com)

God is not only a God of individuals, but of families too. Yes, God is a real family man. But here we are going to talk about how, in a recognizable way, God deals with nations. The drama of history is that during terrible events God did not intervene, or did not appear to intervene. Where was God during World War II when the Satanic powers prevailed and the Jewish people were led like cattle to slaughter? That question haunts many, and likewise many are haunted by the question of why God is now watching patiently at the abortion hecatombe. I will not try to answer that. It fits in with the exclamation of Psalm 94: "How long, Lord, how long may the wicked, the wicked, how long triumph, boast in themselves and speak insolent things?" In this article I'll focus on the circumstances under which God does visibly intervene. I do not feel entitled to explain why God averts his gaze under certain circumstances, which is all too common. In Hebrew this is called the 'hester panim': God hiding his face. If someone has never experienced the utmost despair, he must remain silent and not try to answer. That's why I'm silent. I do think that God's 'concealment' during certain catastrophes was not self-evident even to God Himself, and even that this caused Him great sorrow.

3.08 – The Day of the Lord

God's (apparent) inertia has led some to conclude that God never intervenes in world affairs because - so the reasoning goes - it is up to us to do and then God will bless our endeavours. Sounds pious, but this denies the reality of God's intervention during Israel's flight from Egypt and their long and adventurous wanderings afterwards, which ended in their miraculous conquest of the Promised Land. In an unbroken series these are testimonies of God's active involvement. These are not just any stories, and this is equally true for what we learn in the testimony of John, when he is a witness in the spirit, while on the island of Patmos, of *"the battle of the great day of the Almighty God"* (Rev. 16:4,

see also 2 Pet. 3:12), which means the same as the Day of the Lord.[47] The 'Day of the Lord' stands for God's active involvement and is first used by the two contemporaries Amos and Isaiah and later, in particular, by the prophets Joel and Zephaniah and of course also with Malachi in chapter 3. In Isaiah we find the expression in 2:12, 13: 6, 9 and 34: 8, and dozens of times it is simply called *"that day"*. We find the same approach with Amos. Joel and Zephaniah, however, mainly use the expression of 'the Day of the Lord'.

While the flight from Egypt points to the past, the Book of Revelation points to the future. God's punishments may be conditional, and so it may be the case for God's blessings, but as regards the predetermined times by God, those are unshakable. (Acts 17:26) Throughout the millennia, the divine schedule has been fixed with, at each turning point, no more than a few years earlier or a few years delay. While the Exodus points to the journey towards the Promised Land, the other points to the journey towards the Reign of Peace. While the one points to a single people God had chosen to be his own among all the peoples of the earth, the other points to all the peoples of the earth that God will chose to be his own among all the selfconscious humanoids of the Universe. After all, according to Hebrews 1:2, the Son is the appointed heir of everything. The hierarchy remains: first Israel, then the nations of our planet called World, first the land promise (now called Israel), and then the world promise under Christ's kingship, that will give shape to Christ's kingship over the whole Universe. (Ps. 2:8, Rev. 11:15)

Revelations are Foundation Rocks of the Holy Church

Supernatural visions and revelations are foundation rocks upon which the Church was established and upon which it stands. The whole Bible, Old and New Testament, is a supernatural revelation from God. (...) The New Testament, likewise, claims to be a 'superhuman' revelation. Paul said of the Gospel he preached: *"Neither did I receive it from man, nor was I taught it, but it came to me through 'revelation' of Jesus Christ."* (Gal. 1:12) What he wrote in all his epistles was simply a part of this supernatural 'revelation of Jesus Christ'. Without such working of the Holy Spirit and without such visions and revelations (as were given Adullam) there would be no [true] Christianity at all. The true Church, begun in this manner, [and continues to] exists to the present day because just such supernatural manifestations formed the cradle in which it was born and nursed into vigorous life.

"Visions beyond the Veil" by Harold Armstrong Baker (p.6).
Baker served as a missionary in Yunnan, China, between the two world wars.

Hebrews 1:2 refers to God's intervention: *"But at the end of these days He has spoken to us in his Son, whom He appointed heir of all, through whom He created* ***the universe / ages****."* Nearly all versions translate the Greek 'ayon' in this verse with only 'world' instead of the all-encompassing 'universe' or 'ages', while 'ayon' is there in plural form and the Greek 'cosmos' is a better word for the usual 'world'. Ayon appears a number of times in the New Testament, such as in Ephesians 2:6-7, where it is translated 'centuries' (so in the limited sense), but 'ages' is also correct: *"God raised us up together with Christ, and made us sit together in the Heavenly places in Christ Jesus, that in the ages to come He might show the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness toward us in Christ Jesus."*

47) In Acts 2:20, 1 Thessalonians 5: 2, 2 Peter 3:10, the term 'hemera kurios' is used for 'the Day of the Lord', in which God intervenes in world affairs. Revelation 1:10 deviates from this with the Greek term 'en teh kuriakeh hemera', which is the day in the weekly observance of the early Christians that was especially devoted to the Lord and from which the Sunday observance was finally derived.

This verse ties in with the theme of God's creative and active involvement. Just as an important episode ended two thousand years ago, an important episode (or age) will come to an end in the run-up to the Reign of Peace. Just as God's active involvement was shown during the public life of Jesus Christ, but especially during his atoning sacrifice, which indeed has a universal meaning, so upon the approach of the Reign of Peace, God will come into action too – with, as always, far-reaching consequences.

Prayer to Attenuate God's Judgment

The seer Vassula Ryden gave us a prayer, given to her on Nov. 28, 2009, to temper God's Judgment:

Tender Father, lash not your wrath on this generation, lest they perish altogether.

Lash not on your flock distress and anguish, for the waters will run dry and nature will wither.

All will succumb at your wrath leaving no trace behind them.

The heat of your Breath will put aflame the earth turning it into a waste!

From the horizon a star will be seen.

The night will be ravaged and ashes will fall as snow in winter, covering your people like ghosts.

Take Mercy on us, God, and do not assess us harshly. Remember the hearts that rejoice in You and You in them!

Remember your faithful and let not your Hand fall on us with force, but rather in your Mercy lift us and place your precepts in every heart.

Amen

3.09 – Lift up your Heads

God's active involvement is not, as the term suggests, only judgment, but it is also salvation, for says Psalm 76:8: *"When God arose to judgment, to deliver all the oppressed of the earth."* Psalms 75 and 76 are pre-eminently those that point to God's active involvement. Says Psalm 75:2: *"When I choose 'the proper time', I will judge uprightly."* That time was not during the Second World War and not during the abortion plague. Or should I say 'not yet' regarding the latter? As the great 19th century preacher Charles Spurgeon commented on this verse (Treasury of David): *"He determines the period of interposition, and when that arrives, swift are his blows and sure are his deliverances."* And a little further: *"The boastful power (...) will be humbled (...) and roll their glory in the mire for ever"* And also: *"The foolish dream that God is not, ...but He 'is', near even now. (...) Even now He is actually judging. (...) The punishment of the wicked is prepared; God Himself holds it in readiness."* And his commentary on Psalm 76:6: reads thus: *"God of the struggling Israelites, who, like their forefathers, are again pushing out their enemy. The God of the covenant and the promise, You have fought in this gracious capacity for your chosen people."* And thereafter: *"Let men and devils rage as they may, they cannot do otherwise than subserve the divine purposes."*

As we study Biblical history of the Jewish people, as we study Christ's life, it appears that God's direct involvement in world affairs is always related to something great, the point of entering into a glorious period with each subsequent period lifted on a higher plane, until the fulness of times has been reached, and every knee in heaven, on the earth, and under the earth, will bow and every tongue will confess that Christ is Lord. (Phil. 2:10) Therefore, when the Evangelist Luke speaks of the wars, persecution of the faithful and natural disasters that our world will experience, he writes: *"Now when these things begin to happen, look up and lift up your heads, because your redemption draws near!"* (Luke 21:28) To this I add: knowing that God directs everything from his great Mercy with only one immediate goal in mind: the salvation of souls. That is why Joel says after describing the fearful day of the Lord:

> «« Now, therefore - says the Lord - turn to Me with all your heart, with fasting, with weeping and with mourning. So rend your heart and not your garments. Return to the Lord your God, for He is gracious and merciful, slow to anger, of great kindness and relents from doing harm. Who knows if He will turn and relent and leave a blessing behind Him. »»

The choice is ours - for or against God - and that freedom of choice remains unaffected. God never compels. If it is not from faith, people will will come to accept God from the devastating circumstances that they themselves have provoked. And then the good will suffer from the bad. In a message given to Mary Divine Mercy on April 15, 2013, Jesus says: *"Once they realise the horror being created – because the Light of God will have been extinguished and in its place there will have come darkness, emptiness, hunger and lack of love – only then will Man cry out for God's Mercy. I will be there, waiting to give them comfort and salvage their poor frightened souls."*

And finally comes the terrifying judgment, the total casting away of the wrongdoers. But there is comfort from the hopeful and comforting assurance that one day the entire creation, from the highest to the lowest sphere, will be freed from its endless tribulation and its countless calamities and be relieved of its burden, so as to gain the freedom and glory of the children of God. Does not the Prophet Daniel say: *"There is to be a (blessed) kingdom which the God of heaven shall set up, which shall never be destroyed. (…) But it shall break asunder and consume all these (evil) kingdoms, and it shall stand forever."* (Dan. 2:44)

3.10 – The Place of the Book of Revelation

The Book of Revelation consists of allegorical images, the exact meaning of which is revealed under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit. Since all the different Bible books share the same divine author, they should not be read as separate works but as a whole, despite the fact that they were written down by writers who often had little in common in terms of time, place, and culture. Thus, for the study of Revelation, we may as well turn to the Old Testament apocalyptic literature, and that is done here. Due to the difficulty of Revelation, there are voices arguing that the rendering is purely a 'figment of the mind' and merely illustrates the relentless struggle between good and evil that will one day - in a nonexistent future - end in God's avenging justice (nemesis). This strips the message of its sacredness and prophetic meaning. As if God speaks empty words! Of course, the content is terrifying and we rather prefer not to think about it. But whether that is wise, is debatable, as right in our time it might be that the foretold day of darkness and gloominess comes, a day of clouds and thick smoke! (Zeph. 1:15) There is a feeling, even more so, that that day is near. Says Franklin ter Horst in his newsletter:

> «« The Bible tells how humankind can discover from a number of specific signs that the end of the present age is drawing near. Towards judgment! All indications are that those signs are realizing themselves right now! As of present there is an

ideal breeding ground for chaos, collapse, and war. Soon it will all collapse, in God's appointed time, like a house of cards. That will be the final downfall of the conspiring elite! »» (Uit het Nieuws/From the News, 7-4-2013)

God is Known by his Judgments

Why is [the Great] Judgment unavoidable? Know that the very last work of God is Judgment, after which He has no need to do anything else. On the seventh day God rested, for the work of creation was finished. After Judgment, the tabernacle of God, we are told, shall dwell among men forever. (Rev. 21:3 ff.) Whereas the work of creation does not prevent that sin will ever enter, Judgment guarantees that sin will be gone forever. While the work of creation fails to prevent the world from rebelling, Judgment makes certain that thereafter rebellion will be no more.

"The Spirit of Judgment" by Watchman Nee - Christian Fellowship # 1984 (Part 1.1)

3.11 – God does not 'fight' Man

As for God's revenge - but is revenge the right term? - we can turn to Jeremiah 46, which ends with a word of comfort for Israel. Or we can read Isaiah chapters 24 through 26, with words of comfort being uttered after judgment, this time to Judah. In the last two verses, the whole thing is compared to a woman in the throes of labor. She is suffering, but is expecting something beautiful. God is not just out for revenge, but for 'creation'. After the announcement of the terrible judgment, Isaiah chapters 34 and 35 end with words of comfort, this time for Israel. See 35:4: *"Say to those with fearful hearts: Be strong, do not fear. Your God will come, He will come with vengeance, with divine retribution [against all the arrogant and proud of heart, against all who exalt in boastfulness - cf. Is. 2:12], but you, yes you, He will come to save."* In verse 6, which paints a beautiful picture of the messianic reign, I find thirteen references to the New Testament: *"Then will the lame leap like a deer, and the mute tongue shout for joy. Water will gush forth in the wilderness and streams in the desert."*

God loves all of his children and has shed his Blood for each individual. The word child says it all. So why would God seek revenge? As God will deliver Israel, He will deliver his adopted children, I mean the Christians out of the nations. If vengeance is involved, it is against God's real enemy, not Man, but against Lucifer and his acolytes, including the ruling elites, those who have forged a common cause with the devil. The elites say to themselves: "I am a god and what I say happens", while they are merely human, a pile of dust. (Ez. 28:2)

In Isaiah 13 and 14 we see another cycle of God's active involvement, followed again by the broad perspective. Then it becomes clear who works behind the scenes, who is God's real enemy. After all, our fight, siding God's, is not against people of flesh and blood, but against the heavenly princes and rulers of darkness. (Eph. 6:12) The Prophet Isaiah hits the nail on the head: (Is. 14:12-19)

«« How you are fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How you are cut down to the ground, You who weakened the nations! For you have said in your heart: *"I will ascend into Heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God. I will also sit on the mount of the congregation. On the farthest sides of the north. I will ascend above the heights of the clouds. I will be like the Most High."*

No! You shall be brought down to the abode of the dead (Sheol), to the lowest depths of the Pit. Those who see you will gaze at you and consider you, saying: *"Is this the man who made the earth tremble, who shook kingdoms? Who made the world as a wilderness and destroyed its cities - who did not open the house of his*

> *prisoners?"* All the kings of the nations, all of them, sleep in glory, everyone in his own house. But you are cast out of your grave like an abominable branch, like the garment of those who are slain, thrust through with a sword, who go down into the Pit and are buried with stones. You are like a corpse trodden underfoot.

That ties in with Isaiah 27:1: *"In that day the Lord with his severe sword, great and strong, will slay Leviathan the fleeing serpent, Leviathan that twisted serpent, the monster that is in the sea."* See also Isaiah 24:21-22: *"It shall come to pass in that day that the Lord will punish on high the host of exalted ones (demonic powers), and on the earth the kings of the earth. They will be gathered together as prisoners, gathered in the Pit, shut up in the prison."*

May that provide the certainty that for us humans God's mercies will never be exhausted. Don't forget to pray for the wrongdoers. May God break open their hardened hearts and reveal to them his Love, because for every crime, no matter how terrible, there is forgiveness, provided they are still in the land of the living. In fact, devils are working through people and blocking them from coming to the knowledge of the truth. Only God can lift that blockage, but He asks for our prayer to do so.

Would not God tell his Servants before Unleashing his Power?

Shall the Lion Jump and not Roar?

**Unlike an ordinary lion, God warns his prey by roaring in advance.
This gives the prey, us humans, the opportunity to evade the jump
by repentantly turning to God's mercy.**

4.12 – The Most Important Sign

Does a lion ever roar in the thicket when it has its eye on prey? Will the Lord do something great without announcing it? The future may be covered for us, but for God it is different. He appropriates the future in advance. And that is why the LION (GOD) roars. Doesn't the Prophet Amos tell (3:4,7): *"Does a lion roar in the forest unless it has caught a victim? (...) Whatever the Lord God plans to do, He tells his servants, the prophets [beforehand]."* Normally a lion roars only after it has caught its prey, but the Lord, through his prophets, roars in advance, giving the signs and warnings of what is to come. That gives us, the human prey, a chance to evade it through penance and repentance. Therefore, the disasters God roars, which He has in mind for his people, is a merciful roar. See verses 12 through 15 (abbreviated):

> «« Only a few will escape who made it out alive and they have with them some broken pieces of their beds and couches. Just as a shepherd does not manage to salvage from the maw of a lion more than a few bones or a piece of an ear, neither will any of them be saved who hang on their beds and recline on their divans. Listen to these words and be warned: *"The day is coming when I will punish the land for its crimes with total devastation and destruction."* »»

By the prophesied signs we little people can understand the times. The Bible is our travel guide, especially as far as the end times are concerned, which the majority of Bible prophecies are dealing with. World events in the wake of the officially recognized establishment of the State of Israel, make it abundantly clear that end-time prophecies are rapidly being made true. What few thought possible has happened in 1948: Israel returned to the land of their fathers! The Jewish people are back in the land that was given to them by God! But their legitimate taking of possession is now being contested by the chorus of nations, as prophesied by the famous Rabbi Malbim (1809-1879), even by nations that have never had anything to do with the Jews. Exactly as foretold, Israel's enemies are pounding on the walls of the land and on the gates of the eternal city. In fact, they are God's enemies, for Israel was formed into God's possession among all the nations. (Deut. 7:6, 14:2; Mal. 3:17) Whoever touches Judah touches the apple of God's eye. (Zech. 2:12) The Lord builds a wall of fire all around, an unassailable fortress. (Zech. 2:9) The world is stone-blind and overlooks the real factors. It has no eye for God's loftiness. (Is. 26:10 ff.) Who is like God? (In Hebrew: Michael)

What times, firmly foretold, of great forgiveness,
Of for all this earth's full revival!
When Israel shall see, Whose heart its hardness broke,
Whose side it pierced with the spear of the Gentiles,
And then – Christ's murder grieving at His feet,
Hearing Himself from His own mouth one day greet,
As the firstborn again of the nations!

Isaac da Costa

May the establishment of the state in '48 have been a great sign, an even greater sign would be when in Ha'aretz ('the' Land) God will have torn down the walls of hatred that stand between the Jews and the Arab inhabitants living there, as an additional handout after the Jews have recognized Jesus as their Messiah. Predictably, in that situation, Hamas and Al-Fatah will have become increasingly isolated, and it is not illogical that they would then clash, for the lesson of the past is that in times of crumbling power they will be at each other's throats.

That Israel is going to repent is beyond question. In his commentary on the last three verses of the letter to the Romans, Isaac da Costa (1821-1905), this fiery prophet for our time, this erudite Christian coming from Judaism, said:

> «« That the Jews will be converted is every Christian's wish, that they will be converted at the last, many Christians believe, but that they will do so independently of the Christian church, in a separate miraculous and glorious way, which God has reserved for them, and that they will thus immediately be restored to glory by God, is still an annoyance, yes, a folly to many Christians. »»

A folly perhaps for many, but not for scribe!

The well-known saying of Isaiah 40:1-2 goes like this: *"Comfort, yes, comfort my people, says your God. Speak comfort to Jerusalem and cry out to her that her misery has ended, that her iniquity is pardoned, for she has received from the Lord's hand double for all her sins."* Commenting on this, Da Costa announced:

> «« Soon when Israel is converted, the whole world will be flooded with the light of the good tidings. Yes, the promise to Israel includes all the promises to the nations. So Israel retains the inheritance right not to the detriment but to the

benefit of the nations. The promise to Israel is the capital of which the nations have the usufruct. Enjoy the latter, but keep your hand off the former. The annuities are more than abundant to make you immeasurably rich. Then leave the capital to Israel, for God has bestowed it on Israel. »»

4.13 – The Deaf will hear the Words of the Book

God's plan for the world involves the deep common destiny of the material world and Man, which is eagerly awaited; yes, creation itself will one day be freed from its bondage to decay! End-time theology and that of the Last Judgment are not a contradiction, but are seamlessly connected, with glorious promises ahead. Laetitia, rejoice! Still we live in the evangelical momentum, and for two thousand years. And thus we are on the way to a new and glorious chapter in God's plan of salvation for the blue planet, according to the Great Commission defined by God (Mt. 28:18-20): [48)]

«« [After his resurrection] Jesus drew near [to his disciples] and spoke to them: *"All authority has been given to Me in Heaven and on Earth. Go therefore and make disciples out of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, teaching them to observe all things I have commanded you. And lo, I will always be with you, even to the 'end' of the age (dispensation/period)."* »»

The Greek word 'sunteleia'is used for the term 'end', which indicates a coming to completion, not a cutting off. The end time, which elicits such panicky reactions, is therefore not the end of 'the time', but the end of 'an age'. God divides his plan with the world into phases or seasons, each of which draws to an end, such as: *"...the hour to reap has come".*

Jedid Néfésj — beloved of my soul

Shabbat song by Rabbi Elijah Azikri
16th century (last stanza)

Will yet make You feel and spread, my Beloved,
the shelter of Your peace upon me,
illuminate the earth with Your glory.
Glad and full of joy shall we be with Thee.
Hurry, show love, for the time has come.
Show us Your grace as in the days of old.
Hurry, show us Your love,
for the hour has come,
favor us as in the days of old.

How can we know if the end of an era is near? Will God not want to prepare his children, as He did when the Messiah was born? The prophet Daniel predicts in chapter 9 that 69 weeks would pass, or 69 x 7 = 483 years, from the beginning of the rebuilding of the

48) The Great Commission refers to several passages in the Gospel of Matthew, where Jesus exhorts his apostles to make "disciples in all nations" and to "baptize them in the name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit". And so the Great Commission is usually explained as spreading the message of salvation in the repentant recognition of Christ's atoning sacrifice on the Cross.

Temple until the times of the Messiah. Well, that coincided with the coming of Jesus Christ. There were more clues, such as from the three kings from the east when in Jerusalem they asked King Herod where the prophesied Messiah was. Their arrival must have been the talk of the town.

In our time, too, God will not remain indifferent when the dawn breaks through. The establishment of the State of Israel in 1948 is reminiscent of Jesus' prophecy in Luke 21:29-32: *"Look at the fig tree [an image of Israel], and all other trees. When they are already budding, you see and know for yourselves (...) that the Kingdom of God is near. (...) This generation will by no means pass away till all these things have come to pass."* The coming of the Kingdom of God, also known as the Reign of Peace, in addition to signifying the return of the ancient people to the land of their fathers, means that the prophecy of Isaiah 29:18 has come to fulfillment: *"In that day the deaf shall hear the Words of the Book, and the eyes of the blind shall see out of obscurity and out of darkness.",* which abrogates the prophecy of verse 10 taken up by Paul in his Letter to the Romans (11:8): *"God has given the Jews a spirit of stupor, eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear, up to this very day."* It is a matter of waiting for the the Jewish people to accept Jesus as their Saviour and Lord, so that from the State of Israel, which has hitherto been a terrible hotbed, peace may flow as from overflowing honeycombs. Is that perhaps too bold an assumption?

The thinking of the Theological Modernist

For the Theological Modernist, the divine exists as a separate construct alongside the material reality, and that would be self-evident. Consequently, we should respect and, possibly, conform to worldly realities. From his perspective, the divine and the material represent two realities that coexist in the sense that the material is the only objective measure available to us. That Jesus' incarnation proves the opposite eludes the Modernist. The Biblical prophecies which speak of the redemption of creation in a return to the paradisiacal state are for him only beautiful imagery, in fact babble in space.

See St. Pius X's 1907 encyclical on Modernism:
"Pascendi Dominici Grecis"

A traditional view is that Jesus Christ came to earth around 4000 AM (Anno Mundi: after Adam). And this is what the Panin chronology indicates.[49)] So we would now be in about 6000 AM, on the threshold of the seventh day, that of the Reign of Peace. After all, to God a thousand years count as one day. (Ps. 90:4) I do know that not a few have an aversion to Bible chronology. Too much has been predicted in the past, too much fiddling in that area. Therefore, I will keep it short and go to the parable of the Good Samaritan, which only becomes clear in retrospect. (Luke 10:25-35) The Samaritan here is the image of Jesus, who mercifully passes through the land. In this parable, the innkeeper is given a prepayment of two denarii to care for the wounded traveler, who represents the image of our tormented world – until He, the Samaritan, returns just as He left. (Acts 1:11) The innkeeper in turn represents Christendom. The denarius, accor-

49) Ivan Panin (1855-1942) was a Russian immigrant to the United States. When, in the 1980s, as a well-known Atheist, he confessed to have converted to Christ, it was immediately front-page news. His language skills allowed him to read the Bible in its original languages. His continuous Bible chronology is solely based on the internal logic of the Bible itself – an enormous feat. Each calendar year is logically underpinned. He was able to solve a number of unsolvable chronological problems in the Old Testament based on clues from the New Testament. According to Panin's Bible chronology, Jesus was born in the year 3,999 after Adam!

ding to the parable of Matthew 20:1-16, is the wages of a day laborer. And thus this narrative indicates that Jesus would return after 2000 years (2 daily wages). This is only an indication, no more, as is true of the prophecies in the famous prophecy of Matthew 24 (in paraphrase).

> «« You will hear of war and impending war, though that is not the end. One country will take up the sword against another. There will be famines everywhere and earthquakes, then here, then there. But that is only the beginning of woe. Christians will suffer excessive persecution. Philosophers, political scientists and social reformers will call the shots (the root text says *"numerous false prophets"*). And the deep moral decay will cause the love of neighbor to cool in many. Only when the Gospel has been proclaimed throughout the world will the end come. »»

4.14 – Proclaim a Holy Lent

The Prophet Joel says: *"Blow the trumpet on Zion. Sound the alarm on my Holy Mountain."* A day of darkness and sadness dawns, of worldwide destruction from which there is no escape. Yes, the heavens tremble and sun and moon lose their luster. But first, yes first, Joel announces a time of mourning:

> «« Gird yourselves and lament, you priests. Wail, you who minister before the altar. Come, lie all night in sackcloth, you who minister to my God, for the grain and drink offerings are withheld from the House of your God. Proclaim a Holy Lent, call a sacred assembly, gather the elders and all the inhabitants of the land into the House of the Lord your God, and cry out to the Lord. (…) [Near is the Day of the Lord; the day of destruction,] for the harvest in the field has gone waste. The vine is withered, the fig tree withered; pomegranate, date palm and apple tree, yes, all the trees are withered. Withered is also the joy among men. »»

When the staff of bread breaks [50)] that's an irrefutable sign that the Day of the Lord is near. That day is coming! Tribulations are many, always have been, but then 'the great tribulation' announces itself. Even then it is not too late, because God allows Himself te be besought, as is shown by the history of the covenant people. The Prophet Jeremiah confirms that it sometimes happens that God speaks to a people to say that He is going to uproot, demolish and destroy them. And when at these words the people turn away from their evil deeds, God regrets the disasters He had in mind for them. Now is the time for a national mourning and this is not entirely new either. Before the French Revolution, following the Old Testament example, the States of Holland were used to write out days of prayer and fasting:

> «« The king arranged himself to a fast, had loudly proclaimed days of penance. He abandoned his throne, stripped himself of the royal garments, and after covering himself with sackcloth, threw himself to the earth before the Heavenly Lord. And the Lord looked down graciously on the Ninevehs, heard their supplications and sighs. »» Paraphrased from a sermon by Reverend Joannes Vollenhove (1631-1708).

Joel also made himself heard from:

> «« Now, therefore - says the Lord - turn to Me with all your heart, with fasting, with weeping and mourning. So rend your heart, and not your garments. Return to the Lord your God, for He is gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great

---

50) Ezekiel 4:16 : "Moreover He said: Son of man, behold, I will break the staff of bread in Jerusalem: and they shall eat bread by weight, and with care; and they shall drink water by measure, and with troubled mind." In Sweden, as in ancient Israel, people make round loaves with a hole in the middle, which are pushed onto sticks at the baker's. A broken breadstick thus signifies famine.

> kindness, and relents from doing harm. Who knows, He might revoke his sentence and leave a blessing behind, so that you can again offer grain and wine offerings to the Lord your God. »» (Joel 2:12-14)

4.15 – God back in Holland again!

The crop failures in the vein of the Prophet Joel are no other than an exhortation to stand in penitence and repentance before God's throne in the style of Daniel 9: *"Lord, spare your people; do not let your inheritance be sneered at. Restore your Glory. A total ruin, thát your great Name will not tolerate! Remember your Covenant, firmly sealed with Jesus' Blood!"* In an entire reading of the Book of Joel, one of the short books, this theme emerges clearly.

Do not think that this prayer will be fruitless. God has a plan for the Netherlands. Whether humanity in a larger context will take God's exhortations to heart remains to be seen. But for the Netherlands, that low country by the sea, there is no doubt. Is it not written on Da Costa's tombstone in the Nieuwe Kerk (New Church) in Amsterdam: *"O Holland! Thou shalt one day again become the Israel of the West! God will gird thy Church with light, thy kings with David's honor!"* Da Costa even went so far as to verse: *"Once more all will bow to Holland under Jesse's vane."* For him, the God of Israel was also the God of Holland; for him, both nations had their own place in God's salvation history. And from that position he saw *"a three string cord that could not easily be broken"* – also known as God, Fatherland and Orange!

A national mourning for the national sins against God, will also include a clean-up of the Dutch governmental system, where lawlessness is the order of the day. The call for law-enforcement is just froth, an empty cry! A certain Nico wrote on a blog:

> «« To me, politics and justice are like soaps, an occupation mainly occupied by corrupt members of our society. But then again, that is nothing new… For me, this explains why Jesus did not want to engage in politics, for He said: *"My kingdom is not of this [present] world."* (John 18:36) He was and is concerned with what is found in people's hearts. Ultimately, that's where every revolution begins, so that people's lives, families and even entire societies will change in their inner being. »»

In about the year 1930, Reverend Hermanus Hofman wrestled concerning the condition of our country and people before God. In a famed dream, he saw a new Holland resurrected, where law and justice dwelled and God's Word again took its place, as God wills, in state, church and society. And, overcome with joy, he cried out: *"God back in Holland again; Christ's royal office restored; our people one again!"*, so that the saying was fulfilled in due time:

> «« Then it will happen that I will pour out My Spirit on all that lives. Your sons and daughters will prophesy, old people will dream dreams and young people will see visions; even over slaves and bondwomen I will pour out My Spirit at that time. »» (Joel 3:1-2)

The Jewish Festive Calender of Redeeming Grace!

Mandelbrot fractaal

God's programming of the ages is called dispensationalism, a term that is based on the English translation of the Greek 'oikonomia', which indicates distinct stages. In the story of the unjust steward, that same word is usually translated stewardship. Oikonomia is derived from 'oikos' (house) plus the verb 'nemein' (to distribute, manage).[51] ***Oikonomia is the economy of grace, to be understood as the organization and allocation of God's means of grace and the time-bound manner of God's action. Each person has received a portion of grace for the position in which God likes to see him, of which God says: "My grace is sufficient for you." (2 Cor. 12:9) That too is dispensation. The dispensation in our discussion spans the 'centuries'. In its programming for the purpose set by God, it also spans the nations, especially Israel, in whom all the families of the world will be blessed, for God's election is irrevocable. That is our subject, here focused on the Millennial Reign of Peace, known from the Book of Revelation. When one unit of time changes to another, some attributes will be retained, some will disappear and new ones will be added. The capital of the knowledge of faith, built up in the past stages, is only cumulative. Should be, for through negligence knowledge has been lost ready to be cleared of dust.***

5.16 – The Unfinished One

It is implicitly assumed that the Bible describes universal history. In Isaiah 46:10 it says: *"[I am God] declaring the end from the beginning".* Which end? There is no end of all

51) Ephesians 1:10 states: "That in the dispensation of the fullness of the times He might gather together in one all things." In Ephesians 3:2: "You have heard about the dispensation of God's grace that was given to me." In Colossians 1:25: "...according to the stewardship from God which was given to me." In Ephesians 1:10, instead of dispensation, the word 'stage' can be used, and in verse 3:2 'administration'.

things or the end of all ages of ages. God undoubtedly has in mind all ages of the ages, but that does not implicate that He immediately proclaims this in detail. Because insufficiently understood, people have come to see the judgment from the Book of Revelation as the last one and the destruction as literal and total. But that it would be total is not so obvious and may well be a point of discussion. The Talmud teaches that the Bible only deals with the 'seventh day', the day of making (Olam Assia), in which God transferred the task of completing the work of creation to man (Adam means man). Remember that Jesus is also human and in that quality was co-creative (in the meaning of assia), which is in line with God's covenant with Adam. Of course, Jesus the Anointed One is also God, and his completing the work was because of this perfect and without blemish.

Dispensationalism often uses a division into seven periods, supported by various Biblical references. Indeed, the number seven occurs frequently in the Bible. Check your concordance. The most important point of reference is found in the creation account, in which the seventh day of creation, is a kind of 'Unfinished One'. The original text of Genesis 2:3 reads: "[In the previous 6 days] God created in order to be able to make [during the 7th still in progress]." This special day is still going towards its final destination. The end of it announces the 8th day. This can be compared to the harmonic octave. The eighth note is the first of a new octave. About the coming octave in God's plan for the world, the Bible remains almost silent.

The seventh-day Sabbath is reminiscent of the world to come in which, in a new dispensation, God's people will lie in green pastures by the waters of rest (menuhot). (Ps. 23: 1) Menuha is the basic theme of the Sabbath, which proceeds from an intrinsically positive demand from which joy, peace and perfection spring, in short: holiness. The perfected world belongs to the world to come, *"for humanity has not yet entered its rest and does not rest from his works as God did from his. (...) If the people of God had already been able to rest in the Promised Land, God would not have spoken later of another day."* (paraphrase of Hebr. 4:10, 4:8)

The Bible shows that God divides history into periods. In fact, He defines time in terms of hours, months, years. It is therefore not illogical that God carries out his plan for the world in phases that each time comes to an end, such as, *"...the hour to reap has come."* (Rev. 14:15) How God arranges these phases is something that theologians cannot agree upon, which does not mean that the principle is wrong. Here the saying applies: "So many heads, so many opinions", while there can be only one explanation, the one intended by God, whereby it is quite possible that different schemes overlap each other; there is for instance a division in three: the time of the law, the time of grace, and that of the Heavenly Kingdom. Essential to the schemes of Dispensationalism, and thus also for our article, is the Reign of Peace of a thousand years (the Millennium), which raises the question of whether Jesus comes before or after the Reign of Peace. There are pre- and postmillennialists. And even amillennialists, mostly Roman Catholic, who assume that the Biblical Reign of Peace should only be seen on a symbolic plane, representing the time in which we now live. I call that intellectual acrobatics. Where is the peace? Peace in this sublunary world leads a wretched life.

Strangely enough, all agree on the 'final' judgment, although the Bible nowhere speaks of the latter. And the elements that melt with fervent heat, you might put forward, mentioned in the second Epistle of Peter? 2 Peter 3:10-13 reads: *"The day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night, in which the heavens will pass away with a great noise, and the elements will melt with fervent heat; both the earth and the works that are in it will be burned up. (...) [That day] the heavens will be dissolved, being on fire, and the elements will melt with fervent heat. Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new Heavens and a new Earth in which righteousness dwells."* Why do 'elements' necessarily have to be a material world? In this letter, the Greek for elements is 'stoicheion'. Stoi-

cheion indicates ‘an ordered system’ or ‘coherence’, but also a ‘principle’, even ‘spiritual principle’. Its verb (stoicheo) in early colloquialism meant something like ‘to be in line’. Stoicheion has several derived meanings such as ‘the length of a shadow of the sundial’ and ‘the main constituents of the cosmos’, but those are not applicable here. There is therefore sufficient reason to distinguish an intangible in ‘elements’ as well. To say that Peter is speaking in these verses of a day that equates the final end of the world is incorrect. As outlined in another article of mine ‘the day of the Lord’ refers to the time that precedes the Reign of Peace. This does not precede the final Biblical judgment, as described in Revelation 20:11-12: *“The Earth and the heaven fled away from his Face. And there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before God (…) and the dead were judged according to their works.”*

What is the foundation of our existence? The spiritual. So why should not the saying of Peter be understood as pointing at the restoration of the paradisiacal state? The earth will be turned upside down but will not be destroyed! Only the elementary basis regarding the inclination to evil will perish or cease to exist, after which there will be a new arrangement. Before the Reign of Peace starts, the evil inclination, in Hebrew the Jetzer ha-Ra, must first be annihilated. How otherwise could there be a perfect world? The spiritual, our psyche, in which the Jetzer ha-Ra resides, represents the elements. Job 26:7 says: *“God hangs the world on the intangible (b’lee mah).”* Since the invisible is the basis of the tangible, the elementary particles, atoms and the like, are actually not truly elementary. After our inner reformation, better a transfiguration, we can look forward to a continuation of life, a better life, for God loves the world and seeks its salvation. (John 3:17)

Noah must have known the creation account

Noah must have known the creation account as written by Moses. In folk traditions, creation stories were passed on orally from generation to generation. For example, it is assumed that the Illyas and Odyssey by Homer have been recorded after a centuries long chain of troebadoers. So they were not invented by him. There are also too many elements in these stories that deviate from the typical Greek culture. The ‘discovery’ of Troy in 1873 by Heinrich Schliemann is therefore a joke, as is Agamemnon’s mask. Troy never existed because Troy is the city of every war! The Battle of Stalingrad was also Troy. There may be a Troy-like scenario that served as a model, but certainly it wasn’t Schliemann’s Troy. It is therefore perfectly plausible that the Biblical creation account was known before Moses recorded it. The story was known, but it has been written down with God’s words.

5.17 – God's Cycle under the Magnifying Glass

After Israel became God’s special partner in the work of creation, God instituted the Sabbath. Abraham Joshua Heschel, a leading Jewish theologian of the last century, explained that the creation story has received this form to fulfill the Sabbath ideal. Noah and his ancestors must have already known its schematic layout. Yet they will not have kept a Sabbath in the manner known to us.

The creation account tells that when the highest beings - Adam and Eve - were called into existence and the creation initiative was done, that from then on the Creator was allowed to keep his own Sabbath. Then also the human work began to steer history towards the goal set by God. In Genesis 2:2 it is written: *“… and God ended his work which He had done, and rested on the seventh day.”* However, the work of creation did not end there. It was transferred from God to man and sealed by a covenant at Mount Horeb. I wish to emphasize that the Sabbath ordinance, then at Horeb, was completely new and was not common in Israel and the surrounding cultures of the time, and so it

may be considered a precious gift to humanity, a foretaste of something greater, He who instituted this ordinance not for Himself but for us. (Mk. 2:27) At the time of Horeb, Israel's festive cycle was also instituted. On closer inspection, the regular work week represents a mini-festive cycle in analogy with the seven-day creative process that is irresistibly heading towards the eighth day.

A key to the duration of the human labor in the divinely determined seventh day of creation is found in the chapter where it says that the elements will melt with fervent heat: *"With the Lord one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day."* (2 Peter 3:8) Yes, but since Adam, forerunner of the seventh day of creation, thousands of years have passed and not 1 x thousand. Yet there is a solution. We recognize a fractal set in this (see Wikipedia under Mandelbrot). In such a set, any part has the same pattern, only on a smaller scale, something that is common in natural manifestations such as in the branches of a tree. The first impression is different, but a closer look reveals that the structure of the small is the same as the large. There is a Biblical feast that points to this: the Jubilee of Leviticus 25, the eighth great feast. There is a thorough study on this topic by John Sietze Bergsma.[52)] I was happy with that, because there is hardly any literature about it. He shows that the practical application of the feast has gradually faded into the background in favor of an end-time theology.[53)]

As known, there is a Jubilee celebration every 50th year, following 7 x 7 years. Then all people will be restored to their rights, debts forgiven and slaves freed. A fine endeavor, but already at an early stage of Israel's existence that celebration fell into disuse because the demands turned out to be too harsh for an urbanized and sedentary society. No sources indicate that the Jubilee was ever put into practice obeying all the provisions of the Book Leviticus. It is therefore pure speculation that early in Israel's existence this feast was respected. In fact, there are indications that this was never the case. Bergsma points to a Jewish source (Bab. Ned. 61a), on page 151, that the Jubilee was counted at 49 years after the beginning of the Exodus and 50 before (the Jubilee provisions were not entirely new). Because the 50th year was not correctly celebrated, it was skipped in the counting. The 49th applied to a temple dedication (if appropriate).[54)] This explains why the Prophet Daniel fits the coming of Christ the King (the messiah prince) into a frame of seven sevens (for the rebuilding and dedication of the Temple), and 490 years: 49 + 434 plus one seven. (Dan. 9:24-26) The underlying symbolism is not difficult to decipher, although it is usually not realized that the very last temple consecration will be that of our body, and not of a few devout Christians, but the apotheosis of all mankind, the by then wholly consecrated humanity. Contrary to the foregoing, the passage discussing the dedication of Solomon's Palace and the Temple argues that the first period of Israel's

52) "The Jubilee from Leviticus to Qumran (a history of intepretation)", by John Sietze Bergsma - Brill Academic Publishers, Leiden # 2007.

53) Ezekiel 46: 7 indicates familiarity with the workings of the Jubilee in this historical period. His vision of the restored temple, in analogy with the restoration of the paradisiacal state (Ezekiel 40-44 especially 43:1-7), begins in the first verse (40:1) with a reference to half a Jubilee year.

54) For this Bergsma refers to "Sabbatical, Jubilee, and the Temple of Solomon" by Lee W. Casperson - Brill # 2003 (pp. 283-96).

national existence the Jubilee was respected, which occurred exactly 500 years after the beginning of the Exodus, as an accurate reading of 1 Kings chapter 6 to 8 seems to indicate. Bergsma concludes his studies with:

> «« In Second Temple Judaism [therefore after the Babylonian exile] (…) the association of the Jubilee [Year] with liberation is not lost, but eschatologized. The liberation that the Jubilee represents becomes identified almost exclusively with the dawning of the Eschaton [the end of the world]. Even at Qumran (…) there is little or no evidence that the Jubilee Year was observed legally and economically, even if the Jubilee cycles were calculated.[55)] Increasingly in the Second Temple period, the arrival of the eschatological Jubilee is associated with the coming of a messianic figure (…) Finally, a shift occurs in Second Temple literature concerning the type of debt the Jubilee addresses. While the original legislation was clearly concerned with monetary debt, the later texts apply the Jubilee to moral-spiritual debt, namely sin. (…) These general observations may be of assistance in evaluating the significance of jubilary allusions or motifs in the New Testament. »»

There is a point of criticism here. Since the Jubilee begins after the 7 x 7 years have completely elapsed, the Jubilee can never be identical to the Eschaton, as ancient Judaism thought, but symbolizes what follows. The fiftieth (7 x 7 plus 1) is therefore equal to the eighth (7 plus 1). And the number eight points to the eighth day of creation. Paradoxically, this indicates that the Jubilee is the most important celebration. To be in disuse now is transient. In our dispensation it forms the picture frame for all other religious festivities, the finishing touch. Perhaps those other festivities (those of the current church year) will one day become the picture frame for the Jubilee… I do not want to withhold from you a quote from the Jew converted to Christianity, Isaac Da Costa, commenting on the seventh day of creation:

> «« The sanctification of the first day of the week was typically foreshadowed by the day on which a little boy from Israel had to be circumcised. That was on the ‘eighth’ day after his birth. Why the eighth day? Because the first week, the first seven days, represent natural life; but with the [subsequent] first day something new begins that does not belong to the first, but to the second creation - the new Man. Circumcision set him apart, sanctified him before God. What that sign of the new birth doesn’t imply! The shedding of blood points to justification: the cutting off and throwing away of something that can be missed, to putting off and putting away the old human, in short sanctification. »»

You can object that nothing can surpass Jesus’ Easter Sacrifice and that, therefore, Passover can never be the picture frame for what should become the Jubilee. But what was ‘the’ Sacrifice for? To return Man to his original state. The Sacrifice was not only made for reconciliation but also for renewal. (Col. 3:10) That is the crux of the Jubilee: everyone’s restoration to his original and glorified state; you may say: paradisiacal state. What is worth more: the payment or the item purchased? Always the item, which is the new human being, because otherwise it would not have been paid. Indeed, God so much loves the world, loves us!

Romans 8 speaks of the sharing of the children of God in the glorification of Christ’s body and not only that: the creation too will be redeemed from the bondage of corruption

---

55) The Qumran texts (at the Dead Sea) don’t reflect the views of a small community having lived in Qumran. They refer to various groups or communities scattered all over Palestine and elsewhere in the Greco-Roman world, as the internal evidence shows, for the texts reveal a range of beliefs that must have belonged to a great number of Jewish communities. It was not until much later that, under the influence of the Talmud and a strict education, that a uniformity of thought and action emerged within Judaism.

and share in it. Johan Stringer knows how to interpret that superbly in his well written book in Dutch “Discover your Heritage” (Ontdek je Erfdeel # 2009 - p. 84):

> «« As Paul presented it thus far [in the Letter to the Romans], our inheritance [in Christ] has everything to do with a restoration of creation, including the Earth. The freedom and glory - or inheritance - of the adopted sons of God is manifested first of all in a renewal of creation. The *“sons of God”* are delivered from death and destruction in this creation. This does not mean that they are torn away from creation and leave creation behind, or that creation is ‘dissolved’. No, creation itself participates in this renewal. The creation itself has been waiting since the Fall for the day that the sons of God will receive their inheritance, for on that day the creation itself will also be jubilant and radiantly renewed from the iron grip of [pernicious] death. All creation is like a woman groaning and giving birth, who nevertheless endures her suffering full of hope: she expects new life. We sigh along in that travail. When our glory is revealed, creation will share in this glorious reality without submission to corruption. Thus, we will celebrate our inheritance with and in a creation that will share the same glory with us, yes, in the same material creation that we know now, but greatly renewed. By material I mean ‘material’, ‘tangible’, made up of atoms and molecules. »»

Sukkoth at the Kotel (Temple Wall in Jeruzalem)

5.18 – Shall a Nation be Born at Once?

Having determined that the seventh day of creation, when closely examined, is again a self-contained weekly cycle of seven dispensations (a so-called fractal), let’s dive into the details. We’re going to strengthen the magnifying glass. And guess what? Each creation day is typified ‘in the beginning’ by the birth of a characteristic figure: creation day 1 – Let there be light; day 2 – firmament; day 3 – dry land; day 4 – heavenly lights; day 5 – floating souls; day 6 – earthbound souls; day 7 – sanctifying blessing. That last day does not come to an end until its sanctification is completed. That day is in the present tense. Since to God one day is equal to a thousand years, the seven dispensations within the seventh creative day are equal to seven millennia. In the unfolding millennia we recognize the same theme in the arrival of characteristic persons. However, they are more than a signpost and have creative responsibility together with God. God will in blessing us continue to bless us, provided that his partner, humankind, will open itself up to Him. It

follows that God's seventh day rest is not an inactivity, but an activity that is put into practice in a different way. God's interference never ceases (Ps. 121:4), is even essential.

Genesis 2:4 begins with.: *"These are the births of heavens and the earth when they were created."* The distinctive figures of the seven millennia are therefore births and not events. The first Reign of the seventh creative day begins with Adam dying in 930 AM (Anno Mundi).[56] The second with Noah's birth in 1056 AM; he dies in 2006 AM. The third millennium begins with the birth of Abraham in 2008 AM; he 'only' becomes 175 years old. The fourth begins with David at 2944 AM; he dies in 3013 AM. Its meaning is evident. The fifth starts with the birth of our Lord and Savior in 3997 AM or 8 BC; He dies in 26 AD.[57] The sixth millennium begins in then Christianized Europe, where there were great expectations on the threshold of the new millennium, but also fear. If one man deserves the nomination, it is Emperor Otton III, called the mirabilia mundi (the wonder of the world). Born 4985 AM he dies at the age of 21 in the year of our Lord 1002 AD. He died without the hoped-for Kingdom of Peace or its preconditions being created. His mission actually failed, not by his own doing, as with Adam, but because the people did not want to follow him. This does not detract from his special calling and place in history. The pair of Otton and Pope Sylvester symbolize the coming Reign of Peace, of which the unified cooperation between the secular and spiritual authorities is the special feature. It is still too early to make a definitive assessment of Otton's unique significance, for the past millennium has not yet been properly mapped out with regard to the spiritual aspect.

For the seventh millennium, the crucial question arises: who is the figure for that? This millennium started chronologically with the Twin Towers debacle in New York. It has not yet gotten to the fulfillment of its joyful promises. Not yet. Will that figure be the Prince of Peace known as Shiloh, the one sent? (Gen. 49:10) According to an established prophetic tradition within the Roman Church, this Prince of Peace, referred to as the Great Monarch, will not be Jesus Messiah, but an ordinary man who will be covered by Jesus with a special grace, and who from that moment on has little to do with the person he once was.[58] This covering would be so complete that, prophetically, this figure flows over into the Messiah; they can hardly be distinguished from each other! To the truthfulness of this prophecy some may doubt, but even if correct, there is in my view an even more important candidate for the Millennium, not a person but a nation. You have guessed right: the State of ISRAEL, date of birth December 9, 1917, which is the day when General Edmond Allenby captured Jerusalem without having to fight.[59] Does not Isaiah

---

56) The chronology used is that of Ivan Panin (1855-1942), an American of Russian descent who succeeded in making a continuous Biblical chronology thanks to a number of solutions offered in the New Testament.

57) Jesus was working opposite to Adam in everything. It has been suggested (the source eluded me) that Adam was 33 years old when he fell in disgrace because, as a matter of fact, Jesus' atoning sacrifice was in his 33rd year. Genesis 5: 5 says: "And all the days that Adam lived were 930 years." For the eight other patriarchs in that chapter the word 'lived' is missing. The undersigned explains this 'lived' as Adam 'living on earth after the fall', which means that Adam lived to be older than 930 (actually 930 + 33). And so the Anno Mundi calendar starts immediately after Adam and Eve's exile.

Jesus was born in 8 BC when the great census was taken and so He was crucified on 26 AD. Consequently a lot of dates shifted with regard to the conventional chronology. To illustrate, because of this John the Baptist's mission lasted not several months but three and a half years in preparation to Jesus' public mission. The underlying evidence can be found in "Proofs of the Life and Death of Jesus", written by undersigned.

58) See: "Demain...?, d'après les Concordances frappantes de 132 Prophéties anciennes et modernes" (Tomorrow... ?, based on the striking similarities of 132 ancient and modern prophecies), by Baron de Novaye - Ed. Lethielleux, Paris # 1934. This does not mean that such prophecies are taken seriously in the Catholic Church. Actually, they are at a loss what to do with them, even if those who uttered them enjoy a certain authority.

66:7-8 says: *"Before she was in labor, she gave birth; Before her pain came, she delivered a male child. (...) Shall a nation be 'born' at once?"* Sure enough! And in the next verse (cf. Vulgate): *"Shall I, God, who lets others have children, don't have children Myself? Shall I, who give offspring to others, remain sterile Myself?"* After this list of exceptional births, the question arises: who will be the eighth day figure that emerges after the final stage? In the same vein that again will not be a person, not even a nation, but all nations. It will be the whole world in the apotheosis of the inner state!

5.19 – The Meaning of the Calendars of Israel

The liturgical calendar of Israel is based on the harvest cycle, with a symbolic interpretation for each event. The harvest season spans seven months with festivities running from Nissan 15 to Tishrei 22. The Passover Festival (Easter) is in the month of Nissan and celebrates the liberation from Egyptian slavery and the birth of Israel as a nation, even more so as God's chosen people among the nations. On the second day of Passover, the freshly harvested barley is offered. Various harvests continue throughout the season, with finally the wine harvest during Sukkoth (Feast of Tabernacles), which falls in the seventh month, the month Tishrei, the Sabbath-month of the year. Sukkoth is to the other festivals what the sabbath is to the other six days of the week. This completes the harvest cycle, and a number of cropless months follow before a new cycle starts. One interpretation of this arrangement is that the harvest cycle points to the old world with its sweat and tears and weakness of the flesh. Sukkoth, as a final festival, is thus the end of the old dispensation and at the same time a fitting foreshadowing of the coming age when each and everyone will live in peace and brotherhood under the reign of the Great Monarch. Sukkoth is in Jewish practice the pre-eminent borderline festival. It is the Great Festival, the culmination and object of all the appointed times. Just as the weekly sabbath is a foretaste of the Millennium of Peace, this also happens to be the case with Sukkoth.

The other cycle that merits our attention starts at the Jewish New Year, known as Rosh Ha-shana, on Tishrei 1. We call this new cycle, the cycle of the new world. It is important that in the month of Tishrei, the seventh month of the old world overlaps with the first month of the new world. Thus an intermezzo arises, a kind of interregnum, which does not yet know the perfection of the new world, but is already much more perfect than the previous periods. In this we recognize the Millennial Reign of Peace. This overlap explains why the annual reading cycle begins immediately after Sukkoth - on Tishrei 23 - and not on Rosh Ha-shana (1 Tishrei), as would seem more logical. This particular day, the Simkhat Torah, is amongst the most joyous of the Jewish calendar.[60)] The annual reading cycle starts, as can be expected, at Brei'sheet, as the Jews call Genesis, but the youngest day, when humankind will have been set free definitely, starts at a different scroll not yet written. Sukkoth is the seventh and last festival that immediately precedes Simkhat Torah and Sukkoth thus nicely fits the Millennium Age. It is no accident that

---

59) Usually, the proclamation of the State of Israel on May 14, 1948, is seen as the birth of the State of Israel that was later ratified by the United Nations, but the Bible states otherwise. After all, Isaiah says that before she went into labor she had to give birth. Political independence has been accompanied by much struggle. The shaking off the Turkish/Ottoman yoke has been easy. That's why I prefer Dec. 9, 1917 for its birth date.

60) A cycle that has often shown its ugly face accounts for the saddest day in Jewish history. That is the 9th of the month of Ab (July-August), date of destruction of the first Temple (559 BC) and the second one (70 AD) and date of the expulsions from England (1290) and Spain (1492), and also the day in 1942 that the Treblinka gas chambers were started, and that marked the beginning of the Holocaust (the Nazis may have chosen this date deliberately). The Talmud says that the 9th of Ab is cursed because on that day the spies returned from the Promised Land bringing desperate tidings (Num. 13 and 14). Here too, on the Simkhat Torah, according to the prophecy of Zechariah 8:19, the day of mourning will turn into joy.

Sukkoth, whose very name indicates its temporal significance, has an additional attribute – in addition to being a harvest festival: that of commemorating the Exodus from Egypt, which also stands central with Pesach, also on a fifteenth of the month. We eagerly look forward to the great day that this exodus from Egypt will allegorically become an exodus for the whole of humanity!!

It is typical that New Year's Day, on the first day of Tishrei, is also known as the Day of Judgment. The first and the tenth day of the month of Tishrei developed into official days of repentance and also, in the course of time, became known in the synagogue as the Yamim Nora'im, the frightful-fearful days with, in between, an intermezzo of peace. In the pre-exilic time, New Year's Day was on the equinox of Tishrei 10, when day and night are of equal length. After the exile, however, a backward adjustment was made to Thisrei 1 with an eight-day gap in between, which marks the interregnum, the intermezzo of peace. On these issues, see "Proofs of the Life and Death of Jesus" under "The Sun Miracle" (pp. 332-46), which is available on the Internet.

Strikingly, after just seventy years of exile the festive cycle of Israel has been reversed, also with regard to the liturgical significance of certain feasts. The cheerfully tinted Feast of Tabernacles was placed after the Rite of Azazel (scapegoat), when in former times it used to stand before it. And Yom Kippur replaced the Rite of Azazel. Originally, New Year's Day was observed for the inauguration of Temples and originally followed Sukkoth immediately, as it was still observed under Ezra and Nehemiah. It later merged with the day named in Lev. 23:24 and Num. 29:1, known in the Bible as Yom Teruah, which means 'the day of the blowing' (of the Shofar trumpet). Teruah was a simple ceremony that may have marked the difference between the lunar and solar year, the one being about eleven days shorter than the other. The changes in the liturgical calendar were many and evolved over a long period of time. How exactly and why these changes were introduced is still poorly understood. Formerly Israel had followed a solar year in which both equinoxes, at Easter and Tabernacles, played the essential part. After the Babylonian exile the Jewish nation gradually adopted the nineteen-year lunar-solar Babylonian cycle.

Despite the deviations from the original calendar, the undersigned assumes that these are directed by God and have a prophetic character. In an attempt to give substance to this, results in the following conclusions. The Exodus, to which Sukkoth refers, lasted for forty years. Sukkoth (tent) indicates by its name temporality. Sukkoth has an additional feature: in addition to being a harvest festival, it commemorates the Exodus from Egypt, when Israel's enemy was given a taste of their own medicine. A similar situation evolved at the end of the Exodus, known as Baal Peor. (Num. 25) Israel then had to fight against Midian. That was the episode with Balaam, the great magician, who tried to but failed to curse Israel.

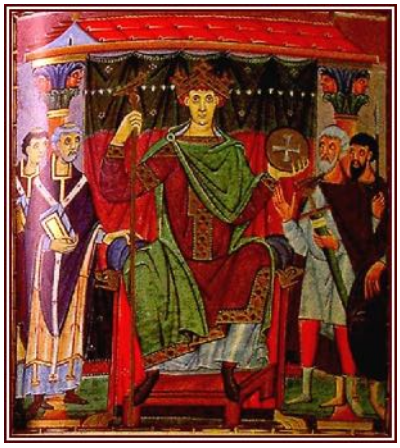
At an early stage the messianic kingdom was already seen by the ancient Israelites as the reign of a thousand years. According to Maria Divine Mercy's prophecy of May 28, 2012, this should be taken literally: *"Know that the thousand years referred to in the Book of Revelation means just that."* By the seventh day, the self-repeating degenerative cycle will not be broken yet, except for those who went through the great tribulation. Revelation 20:6 reads: *"Blessed and holy is he who has part in the first resurrection. Over such the second death has no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years."* The Saints, who will rule with the Twelve Apostles, will from the very beginning have been exalted in the paradisiacal state.

According to prophecies from various sources, like those from Marie-Julie Jahenny, Sœur Nativitas, Abbé Voclin, Josef Stockert and those from the children of La Salette, the definite and total turn-around will only take place 'after' the 7th day in what is the

restoration of the paradisiacal state, which then applies to all. The prophecy of La Salette of September 19th 1846 goes as follows: *"This peace among people will be short-lived: 25 years of plentiful harvests will make them forget that the sins of men are the cause of all the suffering that appears on the earth."* As well as Marie-Julie Jahenny (Jan. 27th 1881): *"When the king of kings, that is to say the earthly king (thus the Great Monarch), who will have laid the foundation for that beautiful peace, a peace that will disappear after he dies, to turn again into a bloody crisis, then…"*

When things turn sour at the end of the 7th day, as those prophecies indicate, a new and most terrible Antichrist will enter the scene, but his reign is to be short-lived. At that time another great apostasy will occur because Satan will be allowed to deceive the nations, although the tendency toward evil will have ceased to exist. He then drags along those who have feigned submission and are probably jealous of the immortality of the saints who would not have wanted to share their elixir of life with the others. Then the rebels will encircle the camp of the saints, Jerusalem, the beloved city: *"But fire fell from heaven and consumed them."* And then, after that, comes the Last Judgment. (Rev. 20:7-15)

Finally, I would like to draw your attention to J.N.S.R.'s message of Sept. 18 2009, in which Jesus says that, as with his people then, He will open the Red Sea to lead each and everyone to the Promised Land, here referred to as the Civilization of Love. And then Jesus continues: *"After a concerted effort, then the Kingdom of God on Earth will be ready to begin."* Since I assume that the 'Civilization of Love' is equivalent to the Millennial Reign of Peace and I see the Last Judgment as the herald of yet another new era, I feel free to conclude that the 'Kingdom of God on Earth' follows the Last Judgment. The battle here on earth will then have been fought once and for all, for Lucifer and his henchmen, being the ultimate instigators of evil, have then been definitely plunged into the abyss – after humankind has been purified seven times in the blazing crucible, like silver. (Ps. 12:6) All the slag had to go out and that took time, seven thousand years. Of general judgment there need be no more.



'Otton III was more than Emperor'

based on:

ANNO DOMINI 1000 - ANNO DOMINI 2000

The Thousand Years under the Aegis of the Dead GOD
And the Secret of World History

This treatise is an anthology from the first chapter of Frank de Graaff's book "Anno Domini 1000 - Anno Domini 20000" (Publisher J.H. Kok - Kampen # 1977), and can be considered a supplement to the preceding article: "The Jewish Festive Calender of Redeeming Grace".

Emperor Otton III can be regarded as a figure of the one who is to come, referred to in Old Testament tradition as Silo (the sent one), the coming Prince of Peace, who is eagerly anticipated. After Adam, each time someone of great historical importance was born on the threshold of a new millennium, and so it must be around the year 1000 AD. The second millennium since Adam begins with the birth of Noah, the third of Abraham, the fourth of David and the fifth with the birth of Jesus. Finally, the sixth millennium with that of Otton III, who was born in the year 980 of our era.

Emperor Otton III, whose life and era cannot be understood with the usual historical rhetoric, was attributed the epithet of Mirabilia Mundi or "miracle of the world". This ruler represents the perfect image of the king of kings, foretold in the Bible, the sovereign ruler of God's nation on earth, who will govern the world in close political and ecclesiastical agreement, in a way no one had ever witnessed. The opening words of one of Otton's documents are quite revealing: "Otton, slave of the Apostles and according to the will of the Lord Saviour, August Emperor of the Romans. We proclaim Rome capital of the world. We recognise that the Latin church is the mother of all churches." [61] ***But it was of no avail. Not yet! His aspirations were still premature, but that does not mean that they were devoid of realism. In certain ways, Norman Cantor says, we may consider the Ottonian period a microcosm of the later vicissitudes of our Western civilization. Dr. De Graaff comments (p. 16): "Never before a child has been brought into this world in whom the Christian culture was more invested. At a time when the people awaited God's final judgement and the fearsome destruction of our Christian civilization, but also seriously tried to prevent such a thing, Otton III is born, like a divine disposition and last opportunity to save the Christian body."***

What follows is from "Anno Domini 1000 - Anno Domini 2000", except for what appears in parentheses. Amendments by Hubert Luns. (citations pp. 62-63, 66-67, 69-71, 78)

6.20 – The Prelude

[After his victories the sovereign Otton I descends in 961 to Italy to receive the imperial crown]. The [persona[62)] of the] Emperorship [of East and West], restored in him, makes a vigorous attempt to renew the unity of ecumenism. Otton largely restores Charlemagne's Empire. (…) The papacy is liberated, (…) Islam is beaten back. All this is connected with the great spiritual reformation of Cluny, which aimed to restore the bond between Heaven and Earth. Otton I actually put himself at the head of this reformation. His efforts to forge the unity of Christian civilization are carried by a [lofty] spiritual principle. (…) The sinful conflicts [in Christian civilization] must be dissolved. Justice, righteousness, and mercy must reign throughout ecumenism. Otton I tirelessly sought to accomplish all this. He was a high-minded, impressive genius. The last thing that still stood in the way of Christian unity was the pretense of Byzantium, for the Eastern Romans did not recognize the Emperorship of Otton. The Hellenistic gods (celestial rulers or angelic princes) wanted to supplant the direct influence of the god (or celestial prince) of ecumenism. (…) [With great difficulty the emperor managed to arrange a marriage between his son and the Byzantine princess Theophano that was concluded in 972]. That fulfilled the aim of Otto I's pursuit and allowed him to witness the basis for the renewed unity of ecumenism. In this painstakingly arranged marriage shines the apotheosis of the reign of Otton I. Already one year later he dies at Quedlinburg.

The brilliant Otton II follows the calling of his father Otton I. The life of Emperor Otton II also clearly reveals that the god of ecumenism acts in him. The Emperor knows how to subdue rebellions everywhere, in which the old powers want to regain their independence. (…) Superbly, the god in the Emperor imposes his authority on the powers that resist the unity of ecumenism. The Hellenistic gods, however, resist more than ever. They seek to remove Byzantium from the god's immediate authority. They are doing this in a way that has had great consequences for the Eastern Roman Empire, yes, which ultimately led to the downfall of Byzantium. Their rebellion against the god of ecumenism drives them into a [syncretistic] alliance with the Islam, which is led by a newly emerged 'celestial ruler', the Archangel of Arabia. In this act it appears that Hellenism dominated Byzantium more than Christianism. In the course of history it has become clear what a fatal act was perpetrated. Byzantium betrayed ecumenism. It refused to accept the god of ecumenism other than indirectly [by means of an outer form]. To obstruct its immediate regime, Byzantium allies itself in a monster alliance with Islam. This results [in the passage of time] that Byzantium will be losing territory upon territory to Islam…

(…) Despite its victories, despite a true spiritual recovery being revealed, the reformation of Otton I and Otton II was not strong enough to avert impending judgment. The god of the West, the guardian angel of Christian civilization had heeded the admonition of Israel's God: *"Defend the poor and the orphan; do justice to the afflicted and needy, snatch them out of the hand of the wicked."* In both emperors, the god had truly sought

61) "The Civilization of the Middle Ages", Norman F. Cantor - Harper Collins Publ. New York # 1993 (completely revised and expanded). Previous editions of this book were entitled: "Medieval History: the Life and Death of a Civilization" # 1974 (revised), 1968 (revised), 1963. Quote p. 216.

62) Someone's persona is the aspect of their character or nature that they present to other people, perhaps in contrast to their real character or true nature.

to obey this command. However, the hardening of Christendom had become so great that conversion did not happen. Despite the mighty and resplendent restoration of the Ottonian reformation, in which the god of the land of the descending sun sought to save his culture, Christendom itself did not convert. Rome, Germania, Byzantium destroyed the unity of ecumenism by throwing off the yoke of the god of ecumenism. The amazing thing happened: [the personification of] the god converts; his culture, however, does not. [In this sense one can speak of a failed mission, as with Adam, although with him there were not yet a people and culture. Adam's failure had profound consequences for the course of history, as did Otton's failure and that of his son afterwards; the disastrous developments in the second Christian millennium cannot be separated from this.]

6.21 – Something Divine is Revealed

From the marriage of Otton II, the Emperor of the West, and Theophano, the daughter of the East Roman Emperor Romanus II, a son was born in 980, the later Otton III, who by birth already represents the unity of the entire Christian body. (…) [It can rightly be said that] Otton III was the incarnate unity of the Christian culture. Otton I and Otton II were instruments of the god. Was Otton III more than an instrument? (…) The facts of Otton's III life give rise to this conjecture. It is obvious that he had been taken over by the god. His high moral life, his brilliant deeds at a very young age, his high sense of vocation, his seclusion in life, all point in this direction. (…) Pope Silvester II touched on this secret by seeing something divine in young Otton: *"Something divine is revealed, I do not know what, when someone by birth Greek and by authority Roman who, as it were, by inheritance takes possession of the treasures of Greek and Roman wisdom."*

(…) [Otton II dies when his son is three years old.] Not yet fifteen years old, Otton III himself takes the reins of government into his own hands. All his actions are aimed at restoring ecumenism and making manifest the City of God on earth. Then it seems, …that just before the breaking of the year one thousand, that then the City of God on earth stands to be revealed. [As a final preparatory act] Otton manages in 999 to appoint his beloved teacher Gerbert of Reims as Pope Silvester II [with whom he wants to achieve his goal in concerted action]. [The choice of the name Sylvester represents a conscious effort to associate with the papacy of Saint Sylvester I (314-325), whose pontificate had long been considered a model of papal and imperial cooperation.[63)]]

More than any of his predecessors, Otton III brought near the moment of the realization of the State of God. His deeds are of an almost unearthly radiance. While he is only a boy by age, he is leading the entire Empire. By then he is already a great general. His way of life recalls the otherworldly. He lives in ascetic purity. Though he is gracious and generous to all who are near him, he cannot be among them all the time. At meals, for instance, he used to sit alone at a semicircular table that was higher than the table of

63) "Lives of the Popes", Richard P. McBrien - HarperSanFransisco # 1997. The quote is from Pope nr. 139.

his guests. He did this not out of vanity but so that the radiance of his being would not be too intolerable to those around him. Not only by his great deeds does he want to bring the City of God on earth. As the head of ecumenism, he wants to atone for the iniquity of Christendom. Otto practices the utmost asceticism in which he does not shrink from self-flaggalation. It is remarkable that at these occasions he never shed the imperial attributes. In this way he expresses that he is not doing penance for himself personally, but as Emperor for Christendom, whose head he is, (…) in order to suffer vicariously the judgment that should have fallen on Christendom. (…) It is for this reason that he calls himself [for some time]: *"Slave of Jesus Christ and Emperor Augustus of the Romans, according to the will of God, who is our Redeemer and Deliverer."*

(…) The notion of vicarious sacrifice belongs to the deepest notions of human nature. Know that the universal judgment and punishment are never expressions of vengeance from the highest God [for those are petty terms]. They are conditions of restoration and re-creation, and they are thus irrevocable. God, who is Love, does not want his Creation – being called into being out of love – to be ruined by sin. Therefore, judgment and punishment are connected with the love of God. Punishment is intended as an act of re-creation. Since [mankind is one family and] the punishment is not retribution, but an act of re-creation, it can also be undergone vicariously. [And if borne in the right frame of mind] it is a mighty act of restoration. There is also something else. In this vicarious suffering, the restorative power of [brotherly] love is mightily revealed.

(…) All these things [and much more] make it increasingly plausible, that the assumption is correct: Otton III was more than Emperor! The god of the West, the patron angel of Christendom, incarnated himself in Otton III shortly before the divine sentence of the year 1000. For us late-born people, this assumption is difficult to fathom. Accepting the assumption, however, makes very much insightful what otherwise would remain totally imcomprehensible.

6.22 – Otton's Death is the Turning Point in Time

(…) [By his vicarious intercession], the god of the Occident brought upon himself the death sentence that otherwise had to be executed on his culture. The execution of the death sentence becomes manifest in history in the sudden death of Emperor Otton III, on Jan. 23 of the year 1002. Apparently, the execution of the sentence could no longer be delayed. With the death of Otton III, the ecumenism of East and West was violated forever. (…) Generally, [his contemporaries] intuitively understood that in Otton's death a metahistorical event revealed itself. The following poem by Leo of Vercelli, a contemporary of the Emperor, discloses this quite eloquently. The poem was written immediately after Otton's death and goes as follows:

> **That the world mourn, that Rome mourn, that Christendom mourn.**
> **That no song may sound in Rome, that the imperial palace may shriek!**
> **Under the absence of the Emperor, the centuries are in confusion.**
> **While our Otton dies, death rises in the world.**
> **The sky has changed its face and the earth its appearance.**
> **The wolves will devour the people, the end of everything will be.**
> **Soon the sky will collapse and the elements will perish**.

The death of Emperor Otton III is experienced as an event that moves heaven and earth. Because her fate is determined by that death, it follows that the whole world must mourn. Rome, the capital of ecumenism, must mourn. Christendom must mourn, because the

one who had come into the world to save it has died. Therefore, the singing in Rome must fall silent, the singing that once expressed the joy of the expectation of the universal salvation. The palace must shriek because no emperor will be head anymore of Christendom [as a body]. In the Emperor's absence, the ages will be confused. Otton's death is the great turning point in time. When he dies, death as general ruler invades the Christian culture. Otton's death has cosmic import. Heaven has changed its face and the earth its appearance. The wolves that devour the people is an image borrowed from the Germanic past. According to mythological lore, the wolves are the incarnated demons that break loose when the gods die, dooming the world to its destruction.

These are completely and utterly out-of-the-ordinary pronunciations at the death of an emperor. When Charlemagne died, even then, such things were not said. The poem again clearly points to the secret of Otton's III life. Intuitively, it was understood that Otton's death meant more than the death of an emperor. It was sensed that in his death a metahistorical event took shape. Only when a god dies is the cosmos moved, does death rule in a cultural realm. Then the connection between Heaven and Earth is broken, effecting the faces of heaven and earth to change their appearance.

Dr. Frank de Graaff (19128-1993) was a Dutch Reformed reverend in Well and Ammerzoden, Apeldoorn, Rotterdam and Hattem. He wrote eleven books, the best known of which is: "Als goden sterven, de crisis van de westerse cultuur" (When Gods die, the Crisis of Western Culture) # 1969.

General Remark: Repeatedly, Frank de Graaff uses the phrase "unity of ecumenism" or "god of ecumenism". He also speaks of "the unity of all Christendom" and of "unity of the Christian civilization". There is nothing wrong with these last two concepts. With ecumenism, however, I have my doubts. At the very least, this word leads to misunderstandings. Ecumenism means "inhabited world" and used to refer to the Roman Empire. In the 18th century it was given the meaning of rapprochement between the churches, but only in the 20th century did it become a common term. The pursuit of unity according to Ephesians 4 is not contained in it! In the year 1000 there had not yet been any reformation and considerations about this did not play a role then. Therefore, Otton III could not have thought of anything resembling today's ecumenical movement, but he must have envisioned the unity of church and state. Therefore, instead of unity of ecumenism I prefer as a characterization for the Ottonian period the term "unity of the Christian Church and World" - a kind of Urbi et Orbi, and in other places I prefer instead of ecumenism the term church unification (in contrast to church division), and I choose for the god of ecumenism the term "the god of church unification and entente cordiale" (worldly agreement to what has been decreed). In one place I would leave ecumenism because it is undeniably used in the classical sense: *"Justice, righteousness, and mercy must reign throughout ecumenism."*

The Ancestries of Jesus & God's Kingdom on Earth

This is about the reestablishment of God's kingdom on earth. Adam with the golden gloss of kingship represents the type of the priestly king. Then arose the beginning of God's visible history and his revelation to this struggling world. The great Conspiracy, plotted against the ranking order of kings, is against the throne and the altar, by these proud and headstrong people who do not want the Kingdom of God but wish to create their own institutions and define their own laws. "Let Thy Kingdom come" is one of the most remarkable prayers. It is about the fulfillment of God's kingdom on earth, for the establishment of the messianic Reign of Peace, when the swords will have been forged into plow-shares. Then nation shall not lift up sword against nation and neither shall they learn war anymore. But there is no kingdom without a king! The Lord, king of kings, will appoint this king who will have come from a blessed line, an elected line that can be traced through its ancestry. Genealogies are important. The Bible has many genealogical lists and for good reason! As the priest Zechariah prophesied: "The Lord, the God of Israel, has established in the House of David, his servant, a horn of salvation."

7.23 – 'Her' Seed shall Bruise the Enemy's Head

The Virgin Mary, from whom the Messiah was born, was the election par excellence, while at the same time she could claim a royal lineage. She certainly was not a simple commoner. She fulfilled the Messianic protopromise, pronounced shortly after the snake had seduced Eve: *"The Lord God said to the snake: I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your seed and* ***her Seed*** *and* ***He*** *shall bruise your head."* The Messiah Jesus happens to be the prophesized Seed of the woman, designated in this prophecy in the singular form. He would be the coming One to bruise the enemy's head. *"Her Seed"* is strange wording, as seed normally belongs to the man. But here Mary conceived by the Holy Spirit; no man was involved. In this particular verse 'Seed' (zera) is often translated by 'offspring', but in the whole King James edition, from 1611, there

further is no instance where zera is translated in this way. In Isaiah 44:3 both words are used with different Hebrew terms: *"I will pour My Spirit on your Seed (zera) and My blessing on your offspring (tse'etsa)."* The first part indicates Isaiah 42:1, referred to in Matthew 12:18 when speaking of Jesus: *"My Elect, on whom I have put my Spirit."*

In "The Ancient Book of Jasher", in an English edition directly from the Hebrew, there is an expression that justifies translating the Hebrew for seed into 'male offspring', making it refer exclusively to a boy, because – in Hebrew practice – a girl will be given up for adoption to the family to which she is married off and by that fact does not count in a genealogical list. The reference here is to Jasher 16:30-34:

> «« And when Sarai saw that Hagar had conceived by Abram, Sarai was jealous of her handmaid, and Sarai said within herself, this is surely nothing else but that she must be better than I am. And Sarai said unto Abram, my wrong be upon thee, for at the time when thou didst pray before the Lord for children why didst thou not pray on my account, that the Lord should give me 'seed' from thee? (…) And Sarai afflicted Hagar, and Hagar fled from her to the wilderness. And an angel of the Lord found her in the place where she had fled, by a well, and he said to her, do not fear, for I will multiply thy 'seed', for thou shalt bear a son and thou shalt call his name Ishmael. »»

Adam and Eve failed because of the transgression of the command, but their mission remained untouched according to the protopromise that was renewed in Abraham. That explains why Jesus' genealogy from Matthew starts with *"son of David son of Abraham",* which is also the first sentence in the New Testament book. Galatians 3 formulates this renewal as follows: *"All who are from faith are sons of Abraham to whom the promises were spoken – and to his Seed; not to 'seeds' as of many but as of one, which is Christ."* A similar image is called up in Acts 2:29-30 but here as regards David: *"Let me speak freely to you of the patriarch David, that he both died and was buried, and his tomb is with us to this day. Therefore, being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him that of the fruit of his loins he would set one upon his throne, he, foreseeing this, spoke concerning the resurrection of the Christ."*

Adam was a sinner and David, son of Abraham, might have been a worse sinner. People who want to find an excuse for adultery like to point to his scandalous conduct with Bathsheba, Uriah's wife, who became later the mother of king Solomon. Nevertheless, he came from an ancestral lineage with a mission for humanity. He was appointed for the good of his people, just as his people were appointed for the good of the world. The psalms written by King David bear witness that in the Mikveh baptism he vouched for his people and thus brought them into the sole sacrifice of the Son – which is God's hidden name. (The Mikveh, in Jewish practice, is a bathhouse for ritual immersion.) Because the Son had not yet come, it was a 'pre-emptive' baptism in his Name. The Davidic line is the beginning of the royal line carried by the line of reconciliation or blood-line of intercessors with the prayer of supplication: "Let Thy Kingdom come!" The Bible often mirrors the Messiah in David, not that he was perfect, far from that! Yet like Adam he is a model (a tupos) of 'the' to come. And so it happens to be with the 'imperfect' Biblical law, modeled after the perfect Heavenly example, imperfect in the sense that the required animal sacrifices could not wrought true atonement.

7.24 – Israel's archpaternal vicissitudes

Hosea calls the Northern Kingdom Israel and the other Judeah. Strictly speaking, Judeah is also part of Israel, but it has been the common practice to reserve the term Israel for the Northern kingdom of the ten tribes. The context shows whether the Israel of the 12 is meant or that of the 10. Ephraim, the other term for the Northern Kingdom, was the

youngest son of Joseph and Asenat, erstwhile the diviner of the house of Potiphar, who was head of Pharaoh's guard and also priest of On. (Compare Gen. 39:7 with 41:45) We will look in this section at the causes and conditions that led to Ephraim having such a special place in God's plan for the redemption this world. After all, Ephraim Israel was meant to be a blessing. (Gen. 48:20) As Onkelos notes: *"Ephraim's descendants will be rulers of nations."* And the Genesis prophecy continues: *"That God may make Israel like Ephraim and Manasseh!"*

The marriage of Joseph and Asenat was arranged through a series of unlikely events and was the way God fended off the curse that the people of Israel had brought upon themselves as a result of treacherous alliance with Shechem. Case in point, Asenat (belonging to the god A'nath) was the illegitimate child of Joseph's sister Dinah. Shechem the Hivite prince had fathered that child, called 'Zelicha' (cunning). (Baraita Elijah 38, Book of Jasher 44) In revenge for their sister's brutal rape, Jacob's sons made a treacherous covenant with the Shechemite people, yet valid in the eyes of God: for they had sworn an oath in the Name of the God of Israel that stated that they would become identical to Israel in everything. Because of the importance of the events leading to the slaughter of the Shechemites, I'll quote the main part of it from Gen. 34:

> «« Now Dinah the daughter of Leah, whom she had borne to Jacob [the grandson of Abraham], went out to see the daughters of the land. And when Shechem the son of Hamor the Hivite, prince of the country, saw her, he took her and lay with her, and violated her, [which Jewish tradtion agrees was outright rape]. But because he was irresistibly attracted to Dina and in love with her, he did his best to win the young woman over. So Shechem spoke to his father Hamor: *"Get me this girl as a wife."* Then Shechem's father went out to Jacob to talk with him.
>
> As soon as Jacob's sons heard of the event, they immediately went home. They felt deeply aggrieved and were furious because Shechem had had intercourse with their sister and were guilty of something that was a shameful and intolerable offense to the Israelites. But Hamor spoke with them: *"The soul of my son Shechem longs for your daughter. Please give her to him as a wife. And make marriages with us; give your daughters to us, and take our daughters to yourselves. So you shall dwell with us, and the land shall be before you. Dwell and trade in it, and acquire possessions for yourselves in it."* Then Shechem said to her father and her brothers: *"Let me find favor in your eyes, and whatever you say to me I will comply. Ask me ever so much dowry and gift, and I will give according to what you say to me; but give me the young woman as a wife."* Jacob's sons gave Shechem and his father a crafty answer. They did so because Shechem had defiled Dinah their sister [who despised him]. *"We cannot do this thing",* they said, *"to give our sister to one uncircumcised, for that would be a reproach to us. Nonetheless, on this condition we will consent to you: If you will become as we are, if every male of you is circumcised, then we will give our daughters to you, and we will take your daughters to us; and we will dwell with you, and we will become one people. But if you do not heed us and not be circumcised, then we will take our daughter and be gone."* And their words pleased Hamor and Shechem, his son. So the young man did not delay to do the thing, for he delighted in Jacob's daughter. Shechem was held in the highest esteem among his tribesmen, so he went with his father, the tribal leader, to the city gate. To the men gathered there, they said: *"These people have peace-loving intentions. Therefore let them dwell in the land and trade in it. For indeed the land is large enough for them. Let us take their daughters to us as wives, and let us give them our daughters. Only on this very condition will the men consent to dwell with us, to be one people: if every male among us is circumcised as they are circumcised. Will not their livestock, their property, and every animal of theirs be ours? Only let us consent to them, and they will dwell with us."*

> All who had gathered to the city gate heeded the call of Hamor and Shechem – and so all of the male who were gathered there were circumcised. Three days later, when the men of Shechem were feverish, two of Jacob's sons, Simeon and Levi, who were full brothers of Dinah, took up their swords and plundered the city, where no one was looking out for danger. They killed all the men. They also killed Hamor and his son Shechem. They took their sheep, their oxen, and their donkeys, what was in the city and what was in the field, and all their wealth. All their little ones and their wives they took captive; and they plundered even all that was in the houses. [We may assume that according to the custom of the time, their wives and children were sold as slaves.] »»

The conditions of the covenant between the people of Israel and the Shechemites are mentioned in verse 15: *"If you will become as we are, if every male of you is circumcised, then we will give our daughters to you, and we will take your daughters to us; and we will dwell with you, and we will become one people."* Rambam (Maimonides) brings out that this condition was the cause of Jacob's later turmoil, the exile to Egypt. They had committed breach of contract! Regardless of the misdeeds of the city people, they should never have acted this way. Here is an example showing that Israel cannot make a covenant and break it, just like God who cannot make a covenant and break it. Israel is God's partner and must obey his ways, hence this requirement. Illustrative is the covenant with the Gibeonites during the conquest of the Promised Land, shortly after the Exodus.[64)] Apparently, they had learned their lesson:

> «« The chiefs of Israel neglected to ask the Lord for counsel [a great omission]. Their leader Joshua made a peace treaty with the Gibeonites and promised them that their lives would be spared. But three days after this treaty was made, they discovered that the Gibeonites lived just nearby and not far away [as they had been told]. The children of Israel did not attack the Gibeonites [although they would have liked to do so] because their chiefs had sworn to them. They said: *"We have sworn to them by the (Name of the) Lord God of Israel; now therefore, we may not touch them. We must keep our oaths and let them live, otherwise we will call God's wrath upon us by breaking our oath."* »» (Josh. 9:14-20)

According to the Augustinian nun A.K. Emmerick, who lived in the early nineteenth century and had visions of Old Testament episodes, it happened that after this slaughter, Dinah was married off to a prince of the Jebusites in the vicinity of the future Jerusalem. And she reveals that in order to avoid trouble she gave her little daughter along with the midwife to a passing caravan. Even today, in this part of the world with its Islamic presence, which is strongly based on the patriarchal family unit, a child born out of wedlock leads a precarious existence. To protect such a child from the malice of the community, it may be placed in an orphanage, which is the modern equivalent of a passing caravan. Through a confluence of circumstances, quite a few years later, Joseph, who is Dinah's uncle, and then seventeen years old, is given to a passing caravan, and so both ended up in Potiphar's home, …only to marry each other thirteen years later. At the outset, Asenath must have been unaware of her illustrious lineage. (Gen. 39:14) This is consistent with the Bereishis of the popular ArtScroll Tanach Series where it states that according to Rabbi Eliezer's Pirkei (38) Dina had borne a daughter out of Shechem's overpowering, whom she named Asenath (or Asenah), an Egyptian name meaning: 'she belongs to her father'. Rabbi Eliezer continues: *"The brothers were opposed to keeping the child so that people would not speak of licentiousness in Jacob's tents."* To ensure her safety, Jacob engraved the tetragrammaton on a metal plate (the Lord's Name) and hung it around her neck and then left her in the field under a bush (bush refers to senah). Both stories are broadly similar, but I prefer Emmerick's because she can be depended upon. Providence brought the child into Potiphera's house, the priest of On in Egypt, who unfortunately was childless. The Book of Jasher (ch. 44) tells that she had an eleven-

month-old baby at the time of Joseph's imprisonment, that is, fathered by Potiphar (or Potiphera). He and his wife will have adopted that child. Later, when Joseph had become viceroy of Egypt, he married Asenath, originally called Zelicha.[65)]

With this narrative comes the very unusual patriarchal final blessing to Israel's grandson Ephraim, son of Joseph, in logical context, with which blessing God made him the first-born amongst the nations of the earth. (Gen. 48:5-6) This also explains why not Joseph but Ephraim, along with his brother, inherited the piece of land that Joseph's father had bought from Asenath's father Shechem. Thus, despite the seemingly successful genocide,

---

64) The Gibeonites are known as the Hivites or troglodytes (cave dwellers), because that is what the Hebrew means (Strong's 2337/40). Hivites were the descendants of Cham, son of Noah, and, like the Israelites, spoke a Semitic language. So, at least in the early stages, they could converse with each other without difficulty. The land of Canaan, as the land was then called, is a land of caves, some of immense size in which entire villages could easily fit. Because the Hivites were not exterminated according to God's instruction, they led Israel's 12 tribes into fornication. The Canaanites were notorious for their child sacrifices (in a variation on our contemporary abortions). The great Prophet Elijah challenges the prophets of the pagan god Baal at the time of King Ahab and his wife Jezabel. This woman symbolically represents the practice of mixing Christianity with idolatry, now called ecumenism: "I hold this against you, that you tolerate the woman Jezabel, who calls herself a prophetess, to mislead my followers to play the harlot and to eat food sacrificed to idols." (Rev. 2:20) After Elijah proved on Mount Carmel that YHWH is the true God, he killed all Jezabel's idol worshippers. She must have been of Hivite descent as she worshipped Baal-Melkart, the Phoenician god of Tyre and Sidon. The Phoenicians, by the way, were linked to the Minoan civilization of Crete of which, by the late 15th century BC, the center of gravitation shifted to Kanaan. "The heyday of the ancient intercontinental mariners was, according to the evidence as it now stands, around the middle of the 2nd millennium BC, when the Minoan thalasso-crats (sea lords) ruled the waves." (See "Before Columbus" by reknown Minoan expert Cyrus H. Gordon #1971, pp. 43-9, 206) "The Greeks lumped all the Northwest Semites together as Phoencian. (p. 194) Gaza, one of them, is called on a Greek coin Gaza Minoa." (p. 108) After Tyre (Lebanon) was destroyed in the 6th century BC, they migrated to Carthage, where evidence has been found of human sacrifice. Phoenician may have been derived from the Greek φόνος (phonos). In Greek mythology, the Phonoi (plural) were the 'hideous faces', being the personification of murder. The Jezabel episode clarifies that there was cross-pollination. Not only had the Israelites adopted their ways, but also vice versa, even to the extent that the Mayas (acc. to the Popol Vuh) had made the genesis of the people of Israel their own (in fact Joseph's two sons were 25% Hivite). The Popol Vuh recounts the Exodus from Egypt and settlement of the Mayas in the Promised Land. Until Carthage was utterly destroyed by the Romans in 146 BC, the Phoenicians regularly sailed to the Americas. In Guatamala, they established the Quiché-Maya civilisation, calling themselves the kHiwym (Hivites). Their epic, the Popol Vuh, was written down in their own language, the Quiché, typified as creolised Hebrew or pidgin, which actually is a bastardised Hebrew.

David Allen Deal incontrovertibly proved the Hebrew root in "The Nexus - the link between the Mayan and Semitic during pre-Columbian times" # 1993 (with a foreword by the great linguist Cyrus H. Gordon). See the synopsis on pp. 95-97, as well as pp. 11-12, 38, 52-56, 118, 124-26. See also "The Discovery of Ancient America" from 1984 by David Allen Deal. Also "Before Columbus" for an account of the Popol Vuh. An important translation of the Popol Vuh is by Adrián Recinos from 1947, retranslated from Spanish into English in 1951. A masterpiece is the 2018 English translation by Michael Bazzett, directly from the Quiché (K'iche'). To this end, he made grateful use of Allen Christenson's 2007 translation. Bazzett talks about the discovery in 2009 in the Tiger Complex of El Mirador of a stone panel with a text from the Popol Vuh, that was dated to 200 BC.

God still fulfilled the solemn Hivite covenant. And thus the associated curse was lifted. This was very important, for out of 'blessed' Israel would be born the Messiah.

7.25 – Two Requirements for the Messianic ancestry

We are now going to delve into genealogical chronicles of Jesus provided to us by the Gospels. The Messianic Jew Arnold Fruchtenbaum writes about the two lines of Jesus' ancestors.[66)] To understand why two chronicles are necessary, he says, we have to know what was required for kingship. Two union states, each with its own requirement, had come into being after Solomon's death, after which both boasted a monarchy: the northern kingdom of the ten tribes with Samaria as its capital and the southern of Judeah and Benjamin with Jerusalem as its capital. Jesus had to fulfill the requirements of both union states. We have thought a lot about this issue, and the article before you here can be considered an extension of Fruchtenbaum's, which is over thirty years old.

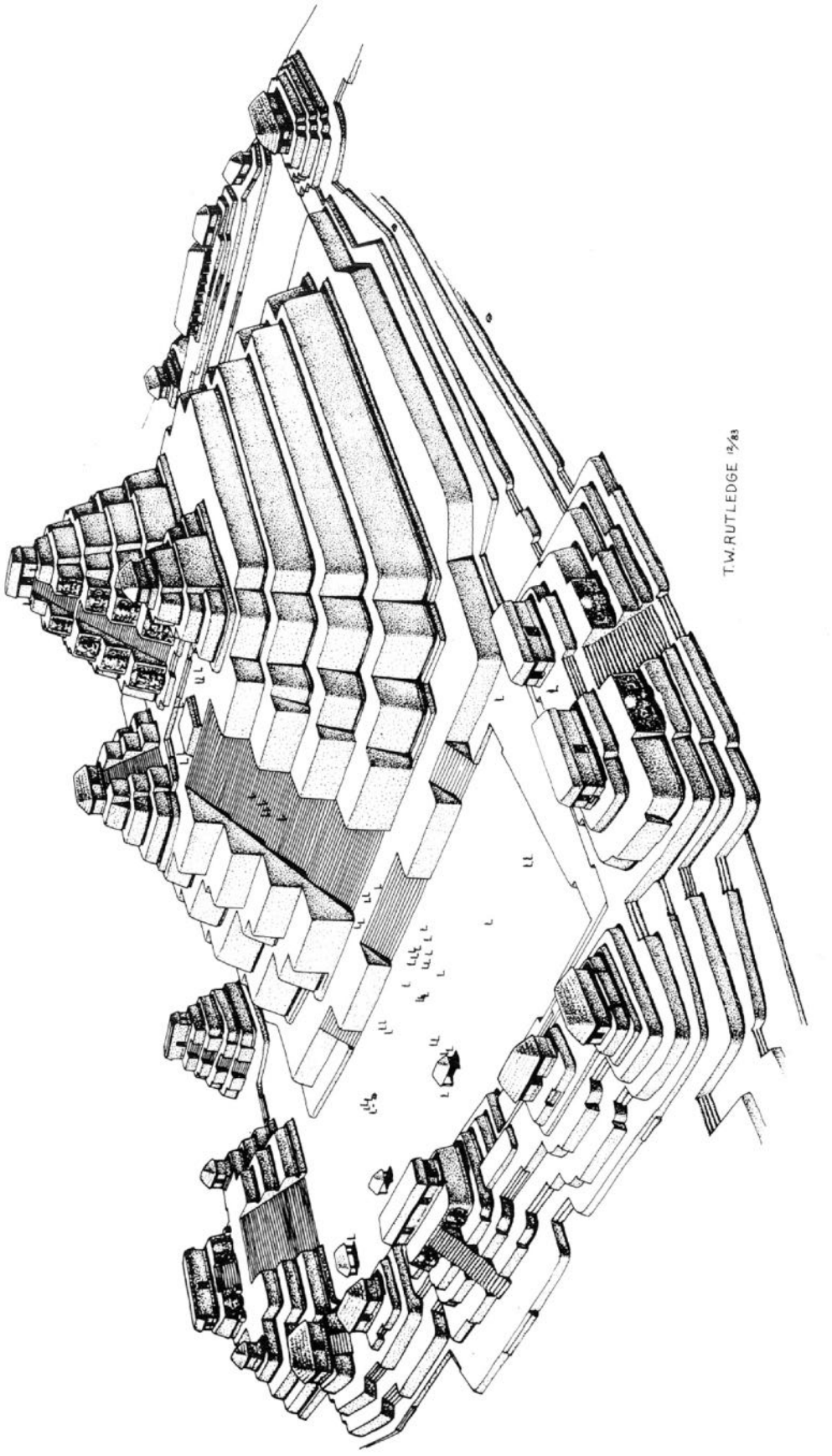
For the northern ten tribes no particular ancestry was required for kingship. It had to be placed under the approval and confirmation of prophets. By way of contrast, for the two southern tribes a descendant of David was a must. No one else was allowed to ascend the Judean royal throne of what was to become at one time the Jewish people. A conspiracy against these requirements came into being, a conspiracy of which God says that it was doomed to failure.[67)] This, according to Fruchtenbaum, is the background of the different biblical requirements for kingship and these are addressed by the two New Testament genealogies. These are related to both calling and blood-line. Fruchtenbaum also points out that the list in Matthew's gospel breaks with a Jewish tradition in that it includes the names of four women. This is unparalleled, for the Talmud says that the family of the mother, of the wife, shall not be regarded as family. And for a simple reason. The woman merged into the family of her husband in a way comparable to our legislation for an adopted child, and only through bond of blood she would relate to the family from which she issued. Consequently, those four women are related to calling in the same way as for the other genealogy, which is that of Mary, who by calling became the mother of the Messiah. That Matthew shows the genealogy of Joseph is evident from the context. In that narrative Joseph plays an active role and Mary a passive role, while the other narrative tells the same story from Mary's perspective. The ancestry of Mary has an added clue that it belongs to her, explains Fruchtenbaum, as it follows the Jewish custom to use the definite article 'the' before each proper name (in the original Greek). Conversely, those definite articles are missing in Joseph's ancestry.

---

65) These so-called 'traditions' may surprise, but there are more traditions that are not at the forefront of our religious experience but are still true. For example, in Jude verse 9 there is the somewhat strange passage: "Even the archangel Michael did not dare to accuse and condemn the devil when he disputed with him about the body of Moses. He only said: May the Lord punish you."

66) "Issues: A Messianic Jewish Perspective" by Arnold G. Fruchtenbaum (nr 5:6, Nov. 1987). Issues is of "Jews for Jesus", one of the best-known evangelistic movements among the Jewish people. They are based in San Francisco, California.

67) The conspiracy against the kingship established by God relates to Isaiah 8. Verse 6 reads: "While this people despise the waters of Silóah that go gently…" The Midrash Rabbah explains this verse as a rejection of God's Word. This is an extension of the usual explanation that these waters represent the Messiah. One of the titles of the Messiah is Shilo or Sent One. This explains why Christians have come to call the outlet of the spring vein the 'Well of the Virgin' rather than the Gihon Well (leading to Silóah). The trigger for Isaiah's prophecy was the Assyrian invasion under Hizkiah's reign, the 15th Davidic king. He prepared for confrontation with the Assyrians by securing the water supply to Jerusalem, which was to feed the pond of Shilóah. The Gospel of John (9:7) suggests that the pond was probably also used as a mikveh bath (ritual bath).



Tiger Complex of El Mirador in Guatamala

7.26 – Why four women in Jesus ancestry?

The four women in Matthew's list, Thamar, Rachab, Ruth and Bathseba, are included to highlight the unique reasons of each one's election, which in the divine plan would eventually lead to the birth of the Messiah. With Thamar God had to bend the circumstances because, in the first place, Judah should never have married Batshua. Just as Judah had married a Canaanite, so now he found a Canaanite wife, Thamar, for his firstborn son. In this way, Judah intermingled his family with the Canaanites, which proves that he was going his own and distorted ways without consideration for the ways of God. Thamar means palm, indicating endearing beauty. Surprisingly, Thamar becomes a heroine in the Bible. Judah is rather the anti-hero. Thamar is acceptable, Batshua not.[68)] By means of a fascinating chain of events (told in Genesis 38), Thamar becomes the mother of the twin sons of Judah, called Zerah and Perez. Like Rachab, the second woman in the genealogical list, she stands model for the heathen peoples, because in Abram all families of the earth would be blessed. Their son Perez was to become the ancestor of Jesus. His twin brother Zerah, who received the right of the firstborn is another story to be discussed later. They are both mentioned in the Biblical genealogy. (Mt. 1:3) That in itself presents a problem. Because, if Zerah is no forefather of Jesus, why would he be mentioned? Neither the firstborn Ruben is mentioned, for it says: *"Jacob begot Judah (from whom Jesus descended) and his brothers (the tribal elders of the people of Israel)."*

68) This proves that racial mixing in itself was not wrong, even then, except for the line that had to be brought forth in sorrow and pain and from which the Messiah had to be born. Solomon's thousand wives came mostly from the surrounding nations and will have produced for him some six thousand children, and these will thus have intermingled with the then small Jewish population. As a form of Jew hatred, it is decried that the Jews represent nothing because they would be the most mixed race in the world. And indeed, even in the Diaspora, Gentile girls (not Jewish) were married, although this was strictly rejected by the rabbis, but also from the Christian side. Even if the Jews were the most mixed nation, which is unprovable and about which I have my doubts, the cultural element of a people is of overriding importance. A group arises from a sublime bonding, like a flight of birds, so much so that one may speak of hypnotic connectivity. A family burdened by a long generational curse, because of its deep involvement with demonism, as with the Rothschild family, a union with such a scion should be avoided at all times!

When Joshua captured Jericho, the spoils and souls of that town were devoted as a first-fruits offering to God. Only Rachab, the second woman in the list, a harlot and the inn-keeper from Jericho, was saved. This is somewhat similar to Israel's fate, whose firstborn were dedicated to God after God had smitten the firstborn of Egypt (with the exception of Pharaoh, who was also a firstborn). Yet his people, God spared. And thus, as a first-fruit from the heathens, Rachab was by God's grace included in the line of ancestors of the Messiah.

The third woman, Ruth, was a descendant of Haran, Abram's oldest brother, who had been killed by Nimrod, 'the mighty hunter'.[69] Nimrod's hatred against Abram and his attempts to exterminate the seed of promise are described in a delightful story every Jewish child knows, to be found in "The Talmud" by Hymen Polano, first published in 1876, which is still being reprinted. Abram survived Nimrod's fiery furnace while Haran died, *"...for his heart was not perfect with the Lord".* As the story goes, the good side of Haran felt inclined to follow the ways of Abram, but he kept it within himself, thinking - and that was his fault: *"...if Abram prevails, I will follow him, but if the king prevails, I will go after the king."* The Book of Jasher also tells this. The Midrashic literature describes Ruth, this Moabite girl, as the good side of Haran's seed (the Moabites descended from Lot, son of Haran), which explains why God re-inserts her into the sacred line of descendance, and this in spite of the Biblical prohibition.[70] Incidentally, Abram's wife Sarai was a daughter of Haran, and Isaac's wife Rebecca a great granddaughter.

The fourth woman, Bathsheba, with whom David committed fornication, is mentioned because the election of her offspring compensates for his murder of her husband Uriah, to keep secret that he had taken her. In Matthew's list she is simply called *"the of Uriah".* It is by this election and subtle way of mentioning it, that the curse, that would have otherwise have burdened David's offspring, was cancelled out.

7.27 – Is it Jechoniachim or Jechoniachin?

As said, in Jewish practice the name of a woman does not appear in the line of descendance. Nevertheless when a Jew wishes to trace a female descendance he would go about it by looking up the genealogy of her spouse. Fruchtenbaum quotes Ezra 2:61 as an example of the search for the maternal line. He also says that the translation from Greek leaves open the possibility that Jesus descends from Joseph, but that appear not to be the case. Nevertheless, Joseph is closely related because Joseph and Mary have the same grandmother, named Phanuel of the tribe of Asher, a woman of great renown.[71]

---

69) After Esau had killed Nimrod when stumbling upon him during a hunting party, he came into Jacob's tent, and completely exhausted and hungry to the bone, he then traded his firstborn right for a plate of lentil soup. (Ancient Book of Jasher 27:4)

70) Deuteronomy 23:3-7 reads: "Ammonites and Moabites shall never, ever be admitted to the service of the Lord, even to the tenth generation, because [being involved in Satanism] they did not provide you with food and water on your journey out of Egypt, and because they hired Bileam son of Beor from Petor in Aram-Naharaim to curse you. Nevertheless, the Lord your God did not give ear to Bileam, but turned the curse into blessing, because the Lord your God loves you. Therefore, as long as you live, do not contribute in any way to their prosperity and happiness."

She was married twice, first to Mattan, the grandfather of Joseph, and next to Levi, the great-grandfather of Mary. Levi begot Mattat whose son was Heli. The Jerusalem Talmud recognises that Luke's genealogy is that of Mary and not of Joseph. The beginning of his list can be read as follows: *"Jesus, as was supposed, the son of Joseph (but in reality the son of Mary) son of Heli, etc."* The same Talmud confirms that Mary is a daughter of Heli (Hagigah 2:4), whereas the father of Joseph was Jacob, son of Mattan. So it is the couple **'**Phanuel x Mattan**'** who begets Jacob, who begets Joseph, and it is the couple **'**Phanuel x Levi**'** (Phanuel's second marriage), who begets Mattat, who begets Heli, who begets Mary. Mary's ancestor is Nathan, king Solomon's brother. She also came from David but not via Joachim, which illustrates that in both instances Jesus descends from the required line for kings.

Matthew's genealogical list has another peculiarity. It omits certain names, as far as we know, those of: Ahaziah, Joash and Amaziah, which follows the restrictive primogeniture requirement to include only firstborns, also called the first fruits of vigour. This is defined as the first child and son of his father who first opened the womb of his mother unless by exception, and that for a variety of reasons, someone was designated to receive important rights and blessings that normally belonged to the firstborn pretender, as was the case with Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Judah, David, Perez, Solomon and Jechonia(chim), and therefore those names are mentioned in the list of descendance. The primogeniture existed in many ancient cultures and is here a notion that is directly related to the biblical practice of bringing the first fruits offering to God. Starting with Abraham, Matthew's genealogical list follows the line to David. Out of his many sons, Solomon succeeds and the line passes to Jechoniah. Matthew's list leaves open the possibility that Jechoniah is short for Jechoniachi**m** or alternatively Jechoniachi**n**.

Jechoniachi**m**, son of Josiah, was one of the last kings before the Babylonian captivity. He was the father of Jechoniachi**n** and the brother of Zedekiah, the last in line of the Davidic dynasty, who was left to rot away in prison. In Jeremiah 22 we read that this Jechoniachi**n** (with an «n», not an «m») was proscribed. God refuses to grant him an heir to the throne of David. Even though he might have sons, the prophecy held that his descendants would never sit upon his throne. Hundreds of years later the curse still remained in force. So it is important to know whose blood Joseph had in his veins, of which on the basis of this line of descendance we cannot be sure.

It is remarkable that in the earliest Christian traditions Mary's father is called Joachim, derived of course from Jechoniachim, while in reality her father was Heli. I rather follow the Christian tradition instead of the Talmudic, mentioning *"Jechoniachin the cursed"* from whom Jesus' would have descended, a tradition less trustworthy because the Jews had a vested interest in discrediting the descendance of Joseph from which, in their eyes, Jesus came. The virgin birth of Jesus was not yet known during his public life. We Christians believe in the virgin birth of the Messiah. But this was not known during his public life. Considering that Joseph descended from the required line of kings, the priests could not have disqualified Jesus as the Messiah on the mere ground that Joseph was not a suitable father. In the Gospels this accusation is nowhere to be found. The much later Talmud is therefore no dependable source. For the expected Messiah of Israel, Joseph happened to be both a suitable adoptive father and a suitable natural father. This gives added weight to the assumption that Joseph descended from Joachim and it explains why Mary's father is called Joachim, while actually it was Heli.[72)]

---

71) The conclusion that Phanuel, mentioned in Luke 2:36, is Mary's grandmother as well as Joseph's, is based on the pseudo-epigraphic "Gamaliel's interview of Joseph and Mary and others concerning Jesus", which is discussed in "Proofs of the Life and Death of Jesus" by Hubert Luns, thus found on the Internet. See ch. 6 (pp. 20-26): "A Discussion of Gamaliel's Interview (the Pseudo-Gamaliel)".

7.28 – The scarlet thread: the vocation to suffering

We have pointed out that the ancestry shown by Luke is that of Mary, following the tradition that she had merged into the family of Joseph in a way comparable to an adopted child. It always works from both sides: the adopted child also has to adopt the family. Joseph accepts Jesus as his son and Jesus accepts Joseph as his father (via his mother's line of descendance). Through his mother, then, Jesus adopts Joseph's family. In the genealogy of Luke, He even adopts all the generations of humankind – all the way back to Adam son of God, where the ancestry ends.

In Luke's genealogy a number of names are omitted, but yet the list is much longer. It has 77 names and goes back until it reaches Adam, who was the anointed son of God. In the original Greek text, the term 'son' is used only in the first verse: *"Son of Joseph, son of... etc."* In the following verses it was not deemed necessary to repeat this word in order to focus the attention on Jesus, the outstanding example of a martyr. The scarlet line of God's sons is depicted in this passage. Could it refer also to the line of ancestry of Zerah, the firstborn who got the scarlet thread on his little hand, and thereafter disappears in the womb? (Gen. 38:30) It seems to be a double ancestry that consists of the visible line of Perez and the invisible one of Zerah! (Zerah disappears almost totally from sight.)

The great mystery of the sonship as related to standing in for the benefit of the people seems to be shown in Luke's genealogy. This refers to all the anointed ones, to those called 'in fire', who have to suffer unnoticed and in utter loneliness, as if God does not exist. Let me clarify. The Nobel lauriate Elie Wiesel, a survivor of Auschwitz, spoke of this fire in a television broadcast.[73)] The vocation to suffering is in the image of suffering in fire. Moses' vocation to lead his people out of Egypt and to receive the Law (the Torah), and the Ten Commandments, began with a confrontation with fire. He saw a burning bush not consumed by the fire. Then God revealed Himself, telling Moses that the ground by the burning bush was holy. Wiesel considered this ground to be holy, since the suffering of the just is so excessive and indescribable, that it may only be trodden in bare feet. Then, of course, he was not only speaking of the ground of the burning bush, but in particular of the grounds of the German destruction camps. And as the burning bush revelation began with fire, the Law too began with fire, in fiery letters. The Law too must be approached with awe in bare feet, for it is related to this suffering. Luke's

72) See also my article "The Panin Bible Statistics (PBS)" in which I discuss the statistical method of Ivan Panin (1855-1942). Panin proved that the statistical phenomena in the Old and New Testament canons were based on a design that could not possibly be duplicated by human hands. As Panin once remarked: "I would gladly (at least if the spirit permitted it, for the flesh is weak) cut off one of my fingers than to allow a single word to be deleted forever from the Authentic Original." The PBS concludes in favor of Jechonjachim, its rationale being explained here.

genealogy deals with those persons who, like Moses, were permitted to come near, but are not remembered. It is the scarlet thread (or line) of the Jonah service, who was immersed, a martyrdom, of the victims who, in their vocation through suffering have become similar to Jesus 'son of…'. It is not only a blood-line, but also and especially a bloody line. They went under to stand against the practice of going under. This seems to be the meaning of *"son of..."* from the Gospel of Luke. Various theories have been advanced regarding Luke's genealogical list and this guesswork will continue until the veil is torn away.

7.29 – God's curse on Chonia's descendance is a blessing in disguise

In Jeremiah we read that Jechoniachin (with an «n») was proscribed. God refuses to grant him an heir to the throne of David. Even though he might have sons, the prophecy held that his descendants would never sit upon his throne. Related to this question, Professor Arthur J. Zuckerman has conducted a joint study with other historians regarding the presence of a prince (or nasi) of the houses of David and Judah in Southern France during the early Middle Ages.[74)] This amazing episode echoes the messianic expectation of the Jewish people. His book represents a somewhat bold attempt to throw light on this dark period of time. From his book we learn exciting facts. During the era of the Frankish kings one of them sent a representative to Babylon to invite a prince to take up residence in France. It was insisted that he be from the royal house of David. He happened to come from a small Judean principate within the Babylonian empire.

Why should a Frankish monarch show so much interest in a descendant of David? By letting their children intermarry he may have wished to obtain additional assurance that his offspring were the object of divine choice. Additional assurance, for the Frankish kings were already aware that their forefathers had come from the East, via Zerah, the firstborn of Thamar. In early times people at least knew something! [75)] The prince who accepted the invitation came from a principate known at the time as an exilarchate. In Hebrew an exilarch is called Rash Gulath or prince in exile. The Muslims called these exilarchs jaluti or 'those who belong to the exilarchate'. They had great respect for their illustrious descendance. Nevertheless, the tribute paid was purely honorary because the real administrative power over the rabbinic community was exercised by the gaon, the person who as the leader of the Jewish Yeshiva (academy) was known in Arabic as the 'ra's al mathiba' or Head Talmudist.

There is an 8th century chronicle, the Seder Olam Zuta, that kept a record of the line of exilarchs. It notes that Jechoniachin (son of Joachim) is the ancestor of these exilarchs,

---

73) Elie Wiesel was the recipient of the Nobel Peace Prize in 1986 in recognition of his unceasing efforts on behalf of human dignity. Though primarily known as a writer, it was not awarded for literature. The Nobel committee saw his writings and actions on behalf of the Holocaust as an appeal to world consciousness to prevent these kind of calamities from happening again. Wiesel continuously struggled with the agonizing question of God's silence during the persecution of His people. In "Night" (1966) he portrays the evolution of his despair during his time in Auschwitz. He declares: "The Eternal, Lord of the Universe, the all-powerful and terrible was silent. Why should I bless His name? What had I to thank Him for?" In the cantata "Ani Maamin" (1973) he writes: "What kind of Messiah is a Messiah who demands six million dead before He reveals himself?" But in the end of the cantata God does not remain silent. God weeps and whispers: "My children have defeated Me, they deserve My gratitude." The expression "they have defeated Me" is not a literary invention by Wiesel, but a typical piece of Hasidic philosophy based on a Cabalistic reinterpretation of a famous rabbinic discussion found in the Talmud. (Baba Meziah 59b)

74) "A Jewish Princedom in Feudal France" by Arthur J. Zuckerman in a joint study with other historians - Columbia University Press, U.S.A. # 1972.

via Zerubbabel, his grandson, who led the group of exiles that returned from the captivity in order to rebuild the Temple.[76] The following is written about Jechoniachin in the last verses of the second book of Kings: *"It happened in the 37th year of the exile of Jechoniachin that Evil-Merodach king of Babel, in the year that he became king, raised up 'the head' Jechoniachin, king of Judeah, from prison. And he spoke to him in friendly terms and set his throne above that of the kings who were with him in Babel."* The Hebrew for head is rash, which also means monarch, leader or prince. Thus though Jechoniachin was the first-born of the cursed yet he became ancestor of exilarchs!

Pepin III (the Short)

The curse of Jeremiah 22:30 reads: *"No man of Choniah's seed shall prosper while sitting upon the throne of David and ruling in Judeah."* That is neither in contradiction with being the ancestor of exilarchs, nor in contradiction with the different requirements for kingship (blood-line or calling). This would put the curse in a special setting indeed! We can take it one step further. I call your attention to the prophecy:[77] *"God will make Judah and Ephraim one nation in the land upon the mountains of Israel; and one king shall be reigning them; and they shall be no more two nations, neither shall they be divided into two kingdoms, any more at all."* If this king were to be a descendant from Choniah and not living in Judeah, but have residency elsewhere, in Ephraim-Israel - whose whereabouts outside the region of the Mid-East are still to be revealed - then the curse would not be invalidated. As is well known, the present State of Israel is mainly inhabited by the tribe of Judah, to whom the priestly service has shifted, for Jesus, the highpriest for ever, descends from the tribe of Judah.

Actually, the curse happens to be a blessing in disguise, which is already hinted at in the last verse of Haggai: *"In that day, says the Lord of hosts, I will take you, Zerubbabel My servant, and will make you a wearer of God's seal ring, for I have chosen you".* This reverses the Jeremiah verdict saying (22:24): *"As I live says the Lord, though Choniah son of Jechoniachim, king of Judah, were the signet on My right hand, yet I would pluck you off."* Because Choniah's misdeeds provoked the curse, and in light of the aspirations at the time that inextricably bound up the region of Judeah with the Davidic kingdom, there was only one possible explanation then.

---

75) That the Frankish kings were aware that their forefathers had come from the East from both the Zerachitic and Davidic lineage, the first one directly, is abundantly clear from the old chronicles. Marquis de la Franquerie has written on this subject in "Ascendances davidiques des rois de France et leur parenté avec notre Seigneur Jésus-Christ, la très Sainte Vièrge Marie et Saint Joseph" (Davidic ancestry of the kings of France and their kinship with our Lord Jesus Christ, the Most Holy Virgin and Saint Joseph) - Éditions Saint-Rémi, Cadillac, France # 2002. In "Calendar of Saints: Whose Lineage is Known" by Brian Starr - BookSurge Publishing # 2006 (p. 56), I read under King Ethelbert of Kent (560-616), married to Bertha of the Franks: "Saint Ethelbert's ancestry traces back to Zerah thru the Kings of Troy. His wife Saint Bertha also is traced back to the lines of the Frankish Kings to Zerah whose father is Judah. Saint Bertha's ancestor is Saint Clotilde who converted the Frankish King Clovis to Christianity. Also included is Joseph of Arimathea. (Ethelbert is listed as Aedilbert by St. Bede.)"

76) 2 Kings 25:27-28 and Jer. 22:24. Jeremiah 52:10 reads that all the princes of Judeah were killed in Ribla. The text leaves open the possibility that in another place a princely descendant of Jechonjachin remained alive.

77) Ezekiel 37:22. See also Isaiah 11:12; Jeremiah 3:18; 50:4 and Hosea 1:11.

It is significant that Pepin III (the Short) brought an exilarch to Europe, something that so far did not attract much attention. To quote from Zuckerman's book:

> «« The coronation of Pepin the Short to the throne of Frankland in the year 751 was especially distinguished by the 'biblical' rite of anointing. This was apparently a deliberate attempt to suggest that the Frank monarchy was a replica, if not actually a continuation, of the biblical archetype. In phrases reminiscent of the Bible, Pope Stephen II declared that Pepin had been chosen for royalty from his mother's womb, that the first of the apostles had elected him for his own possession out of all kings and peoples, that his right to royal sway was a gift from God; and he drew comparisons in particular between Pepin and David. »» [78)]

Maybe Pepin believed that the theocracy of 'Thy Kingdom come' had come already or that he should safeguard it at the approach of the second millennium (beyond the year 1,000) for which chiliastic expectations then reigned supreme on the general assumption that the Millennial Reign was already being counted down in anticipation of God's Final Judgement about which the Book of Revelation recounts in chapter twenty:

> «« Now when the thousand (chília) years have expired, Satan will be released from his dungeon and will go out to deceive the nations which are in the four corners of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to wage battle, whose number is as the sand of the sea. They went up on the breadth of the earth and surrounded the camp of the saints and the beloved City. And fire came down out of heaven and devoured them. The devil, who had deceived them, was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone where the Beast and the False Prophet are. And they will be tormented day and night, forever and ever. Then I saw a great white throne and Him who sat on it, from whose Face the earth and the heaven fled away. And there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before God's Throne. The books were opened. And another book was opened, which is the Book of Life. And the dead were judged according to their works, by the things which were written in the books. »»

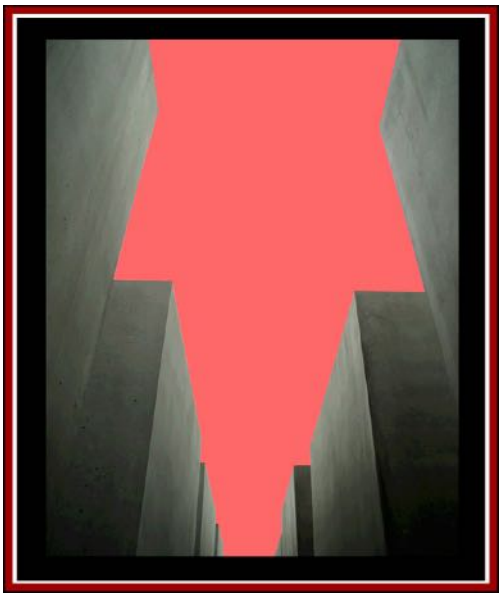
Whatever the case, the Frankish sovereign considered it so important that a Davidic prince be brought to Europe that he made every effort to achieve it, a fact confirmed by the Jewish encyclopaedias. The story of an exilarch brought to Europe, to become an ancestor of the European kings, is fascinating and could bear on events at the inception of the third millennium. This is a clarification of Zuckerman's book that deals with the invitation extended by the Frankish king. It addresses the question of whether it has anything to do with the descendance from Choniah, who in the fracture of times happens to be in a fortuitous position. Certainly it has something to do with God's Kingdom on earth. I expect more to be said on this issue.

7.30 – I will raise unto David a Branch

I have talked about the hidden line of ancestry of Zerah, the firstborn who had the scarlet thread on his hand, whose twin-brother Perez was to become the ancestor of Jesus. And I also talked about the fact that the Frankish kings knew already that their forefathers had come from the ancestry of Zerah. Both Zerah and Perez, born from the patriarch Judah, lay claim on a royal lineage. Except for his birth we curiously enough hear nothing more of Zerah, who was given the blessing of the first-born because he was the first to extend his hand (from the womb). Yet, immediately after he retracts the hand, but not before a scarlet thread had been put around the little wrist as a sign of recognition. The hand went back into the birth canal, which would be a physiological impossibility for

78) ibid. Zuckerman refers to "Jahrbücher der frankischen Reiches unter König Pippin" by L. Oelsner (pp. 132, 155-160, 259).

the body, but not for a little hand: *"But it came about as he drew back his hand, that behold, his brother came out. Then his mother said: 'What a breach you have made for yourself!' So he was named Perez. Afterward his brother came out who had the scarlet thread on his hand; and he was named Zerah."* (Gen. 38:29-30) Zerah bursts the womb but then hides in it, which is the perfect image of his line of descendence. Perez, who did not break the womb, breaks out first to become the ancestor of the kings of the tribe of Judah, starting with David, nearly 700 years later. Perez, whose name also means breaker, represents the Messiah in his first coming. He is the trailblazer for the kingdom of Heaven. In the Midrash Rabbah, Tamar names him Perez to indicate that the Messiah-King, 'the Breaker', would one day come forth from him. (Gen. Rabbah 85:14)



What a Breach !!

Zerah, whose name means 'dawning', represents the Messiah in his second coming. Here it applies that the first will be the last. Before the final redemption could dawn, Jesus Messiah had to set the preconditions. Zerah, the first one, will become the last king of Israel and its most glorious one, known as the Great Monarch or Prince of Peace. The great redemption of the messianic age is spoken of in the prophets as the dawning, according to Isaiah 60:1-3:

> «« Arise, shine, for your light has come, and the glory of the Lord has risen (zarach) upon you. For behold, darkness will cover the earth and deep darkness the nations, but the Lord will rise upon you and his glory will appear upon you. Nations will come to your light, and kings to the brightness of your rising (zarach). »»

If the Prince of Peace is of Zerachitic descent, why in prophecies is he called Son of David, who is from the Perez line? That is because he will be entirely clothed with Christ. Because of this clothing by the One who is the outstanding example of the Son of David, the line of blood has become secondary. That there is question of two different persons, and not of one person with two functions, appears from the prophecies of Jeremiah and the Psalms, which also point at the restoration of God's people in the land of Israel, which now, in our days, we see happening as surest sign of the forthcoming Reign of Peace. Jeremiah 23:5-8 read:

> «« Behold, the days are coming, says the Lord, that I will raise unto David a righteous Sprout. A king shall reign and prosper, and excute judgement and righteousness in the earth. In his days Judah will be saved and Israel will dwell safely. Now this is his name by which he will be called: *"the Lord our Righteousness"*. Behold, the days are coming, says the Lord, that they shall no longer say*: "As the Lord lives who brought up the children of Israel form the land of Egypt",* but: *"as the Lord lives who brought up and led the descendants of the House of Israel from the northern country and from all the countries where He had driven them"*. Because they shall dwell in their own land! »»

Why all this secrecy? Why are these prophecies so difficult to understand? God hides his intentions not only for us, but also for his adversary. He also protects the Zerachitic

descendents against assaults by putting them under a cloak of secrecy. The secrecy surrounding the Zerachitic descendance has to do with the conspiracy through the ages against the divinely ordained kingship, according to famous Psalm 2: *"The rulers of the earth set themselves and they take counsel together against the Lord 'and' his Anointed (the Great Monarch), saying: Let us break **'their'** bonds in pieces and cast away **'their'** cords from us."* In these verses the Lord and his Anointed are two distinct persons, a fact normally overlooked, as if it is a kind of poetic language.

Agnès-Marie, a Roman Catholic woman with the gift of prophecy, writes in Christ's message given to her on December 5, 1999: *"At the act of anointing the soul of My Viceroy is by special grace entirely clothed with Christ and (his soul) has from that moment on little to do with its former condition."* Thus, the Zerachitic king granted by God is rightly called a Sprout raised to David, which agrees with the promise of Jeremiah in verses 23:5 and 33:15. I like to point out that there is no mention here of a Sprout raised 'from' (the root of) David, but *"I (God) will raise a branch 'unto' David"*, which is a different thing. This man is also called *"the Sprout of the Lord"* in Isaiah 4:2 and *"My Servant, the Sprout"* in Zechariah 3:8, or just *"the Sprout",* according to Zechariah 6:12. These texts are normally understood as pertaining to our Lord Jesus Christ, which seems right, for the man who is entirely clothed with Christ and Christ Himself are acting with One accord, as the one being clothed will have become the perfect servant. And so the last one will have become the first one!

7.31 – A generation tainted in sorrow

Let us consider the battle at Ai, described in Joshua 7, which is the only place where the Bible mentions a descendant of Zerah. Joshua, leading the people of Israel into the promised land, first conquered Jericho. Then he goes on for the town of Ai. This was not as easy as with Jericho. His men first took a severe beating and Joshua could not understand why. It was then found out that Achan, the son of Charmi, son of Zabdi, son of Zerah – the twin brother of Perez, had taken from the banned (herem). With Jericho despoliation had been expressly forbidden because the first spoils of the promised land were dedicated to God in accordance to the prescription of Exodus 23:19. As punishment, Achan of the house of Zerah is taken off to be stoned together with his whole family. The ban, not the punishment itself, is extended from the house of Achan to the house of Zerah. Up to this day the ban holds on the house of Zerah. It follows the rule that whoever takes from the banned and associates with the treasures of the enemy that were 'dedicated' to God, joins the people lost and is banished too. To be understood in the meaning of the Hebrew term herem, which is either a curse (bar-ak) because of a separation from God, or a blessing and an election (bar-ak again) because of a separation from the human community with the purpose of a consecration to God, a meaning found back in the Arab for women's quarters: haram.

The Talmud teaches (Sanh. 6:2) that the free confession of Achan was a victory over his evil inclination; the reward for his confession was that his soul was saved for the coming age while it was lost for the present age. The Sandhedrin tract goes in full, taken from Rodkinson's translation of the Talmud:

> «« When he [the guilty one] was far from the place of execution – at a distance of ten ells – he was told to confess, as so is the custom, that all who are to be executed should confess, and they who do so have a share in the world to come. And so do we find with Achan, to whom Joshua said: *"My son, give (...) and make confession."* And Achan answered Jehoshua [is Joshua]: *"Truly, I have sinned, and thus and thus have I done."* And whence do we know that he was atoned after his confession? From: And Joshua said: *"How hast thou troubled us! So shall the Lord trouble thee this day."* This day – but not in the world to come.

Had he known he was innocent of this crime, he could have said: My death shall atone for all my sins except this one. Rabbi Jehudah said: If he knew that he was innocent of this crime, he might say: My death shall atone for all my sins, except this one. And Rabbi Jehudah was answered: If it were so, all those who were to be executed would say so, to the end that they should be innocent in the eyes of the people. (…) But why was Achan [and his whole family] punished – for his crime was in secret? Because his wife and children were aware of it. (…) Atoned after confession etc. The rabbis taught: Whence do we know that his confession has made atonement for him from Joshua: *"How hast thou troubled us! So shall the Lord trouble thee this day."* This day, but not in the world to come. And it is also written (1 Chron. 2:6): *"And the sons of Zerach: Zimri and Ethan, and Heman and Calcol and Dara, in all five."* To what purpose is it written 'in all five'? It means all five have a share in the world to come. Here it reads Zimri and in Joshua (7:1) he is named Achan (alternatively Zabdi). For Rab and Samuel, for at least one of them, his name was Achan. Why then is he named Zimri? Because his acts were according to [the evil acts of] Zimri of the Pentateuch. And according to the other his name was Zimri. And why is he named Achan [which means circle, but also trouble]? Because he caused the sins of Israel to rest upon them as by a circle [from which there is no escape] »»

Now we can explain Joshua 7:25 as follows: "The Lord shall trouble thee this day, but thou wilt not be troubled in the age to come." The Bible passage itself reads: *"The Lord will trouble you 'this day'. So all Israel stoned him with stones, and they burned Achan and his family with fire after they had been stoned. Then they raised over him a great heap of stones, still there to this day."* His herem should not be viewed as being doomed but as a consecration to God, 'a separation in view of sanctification', a so-called kedushah in favour of the future generations humankind. Both kind of separations look similar, at least during this age, this 'olam' or 'ayon'. A seperated person takes on the image of the town of Jericho, which was forbidden ever to be rebuilt. Why Jericho in particular? It is built with endless layer upon layer, each time rebuilt, and offers an archaelogical picture of all those human generations that turned against God and are in need of redemption. It may even be the oldest town on earth. Achan was buried in the valley of Achor. It is as deep as a ravine can be, more than anything else. The Zerachites have sunk so deep that they have become a generation 'tainted in sorrow', completely lost and out of sight. Who

wants to see the beggar and leper? They are the lamed-waw, which is a typical Jewish expression to indicate such a thing. If these holy and suffering men did not exist, the Jewish lore teaches, the world would perish.

The Talmud tells that the world is sustained by the presence of at least 36 justified ones or saints. But nobody knows who they are! In Hebrew the letter lamed stands for 30 and waw for 6. Those are therefore called the lamed-waw or 36 justified ones, with the number 9 (3+6), antitype to the number of the beast, who is said to carry the number 6 or 666 (6+6+6=18; 1+8=9). They have sunk so deep, to the limits of human endurance, that they have become completely isolated. They are so far away that no one speaks their language. No one truly understands what they have gone through. Whatever may be the case, they were never without the company and compassion of the Son. The legend that there are always at least 36 justified ones, through whom the world continues to exist, is based upon the following passage in Sanhedrin 97b and Sukka 45a: *"Abaye said: There are in the world no less than 36 justified ones in every generation upon whom the Shekinah rests, for it is written: 'Blessed all that wait for Him' (Is. 30:18)."* The last word has a numerical value of 36. Around this idea exists a whole series of legends. They are commonly represented as hiding their vocation and usually practice a humble profession like an artisan, unrecognized by the community, and denying their identity if accidentally discovered.

The living dead of Buchenwald - 1945, photo taken by Margaret Bourke-White

Let us consider the meaning of Achor, a word derived from aacher, which means trouble, difficulty, sorrow, pain, to hurt, to be attacked, and lastly: tainted generation. Tainted generation is a typical Hebrew expression and points at people who are 'blemished with the taint of sorrow', an image so eloquently described in Psalm 88. I thus wonder if in the line of descendance of Zerah a connecting line is revealed of a tainted generation brought forth in sorrow and pain. Should we not say that this is a saintly line, the line of God's lamed-waw singled out to bring about liberation from the curse of expulsion that weighs on humankind? Just think about it, a sort of royal line, though not that of a literal kingship as the Frankish kings, but of a priestly service of reconciliation that cries for the restoration of God's theocracy; in the Lord's prayer we implore *"Thy kingdom come"*. The lamed-waw stand in a line of descendance in opposition to the other line of cursed and evil councillors.[79)] Collectively the lamed-waw have contributed against the other group while metaphorically lifting up the Son's Cross. In this act of raising they have

raised the Lord - of all times - in his disfigured and suffering position to the heights of the Almighty. These heights are set against the lowness of the deep ravine of Achor. In this raising they reached the high place of refuge under the protection of the Almighty, which is offered to all foregoing generations who have lived in the mist of gloomy indetermination and loneliness. The Son will draw this line of God's lamed-waw forth from the valley of Achor with the multitudes who sojourn there, who are captured there up to the present day. (Rev. 6:9) When the Almighty stands revealed, eyes will be opened to those who have dwelt around Him. It will then appear that the Zerachites, who exalted the Son, have worked to the benefit of the Covenant and for the restoration of the kingdom under the enduring dynasty of the Sun-King. (Ps. 89:36-37) That is the implication of Achor!

Alternative translation of a genealogical list

If we look at the first verse of 1 Chronicles, it starts with a number of names: "Adam, Seth, Enosh, Kenan, Mahalalel, Jared, Enoch, Mehuselah, Lamech, Noah." If translated from Hebrew as if there were no names, we get: "Man (is) appointed mortal sorrow; (but) the blessed God shall come down to teach (that) his death shall bring rest to (the) desperate." Here is a summary of God's plan of redemption, deeply hidden in the genealogical list of the book Chronicles.

7.32 – The Coming of two Messiahs

Jewish tradition expresses the common belief in the coming of two Messiahs. The sacred writings give such a contrasting picture of the Messiah (rejected and slain versus triomphant and reigning as a king), that there are supposed to be two messiahs. The complete Talmudic passage of the Sukka tractate or Tabernacle tractate, goes in full, taken from Rodkinson's translation: (51B, 52A, 53A)

> «« What was the mourning for? R. Dosa and the rabbis differ: One holds that it was for the Messiah, the son of Joseph, being killed; and the other that it was for the evil angel being killed. It would be right according to one who holds that it was for the Messiah the son of Joseph, because he explains as supporting him the passage (Zech. 12:10*): "And they will look up toward me whom they have thrust through, and they will lament for him, as one lamenteth for an only son, and weep bitterly for him, as one weepeth bitterly for the firstborn."* But according to one who says that it was for the death of the evil angel, (the question arises) why mourning? Must it not be, on the contrary, an enjoyment? Why then weeping? This can be explained as Rabbi Jehudah lectured: In the future the Holy One, blessed be He, will bring the evil angel and slaughter him in the presence of both the upright and the wicked. To the former he will look like a high mountain, and to the latter like a thin hair. Both, however, will cry. The upright will cry, saying: How could we overpower such a high mountain? And the wicked will cry, saying: How could we not subdue such a thin hair? And also the Holy One, blessed be He, will join them in wondering, as it is written (Zech. 8:6, but here in a different

79) The lament of evil councillors is also found in ancient English history: "Whereas, through bad and deceitful counsel, our lord the king and all his men have everywhere been dishonoured and his crown in many ways has been debased and ruined, while his lands of Gascony, Ireland, and Scotland are on the point of being lost unless God improves the situation, and his realm of Eng-land has been brought to the verge of rebellion through prises and (other) oppressive and des-tructive measures (...) Therefore we (...)" From: "Sources of English Constitutional History: A Selection of Documents from A.D. 600 to the Present" by Carl Stephenson & Frederick George Marcham # 1937 (ch. 56).

> and questionable translation): *"Thus hath said the Lord of hosts: If it should be marvellous in the eyes of the remnant of this people in those days, should it also be marvellous in my eyes."* Rabbi Assi said: In the beginning the evil angel appears as insignificant and thin as a cobweb to finally become as thick as a wagon-rope, as it is written (Is. 5:18): *"Wo unto those that draw iniquity with the cords of falsehood, and as with a wagon-rope, sinfulness."* The rabbis taught: When the Messiah ben David appears in the near future (as we hope), the Holy One, blessed be He, will tell him: Ask something of Me and I will give it to thee, as it is written (Ps. 2:7-8): *"I will announce a decree. (...) Ask it of Me, and I will give."* etc. But as the Messiah ben David will have noticed that the Messiah ben Joseph, who preceded him, was killed, he will say before the Lord: Lord of the Universe, I will ask nothing of Thee but life. And the Lord will answer: This was prophesied already for thee by thy father David (Ps. 21:5): *"Life hath he asked of Thee and Thou gavest it to him."* »»

The first Messiah would be Messiah Ben Joseph (ben = son of), known as the suffering servant. In Sukka two Messiahs are mentioned in the order the Christians are familiar with: the suffering Messiah and the glorious one under his sign (the Cross). Great mourning is required, says the Talmud, because of the killing of the first Messiah, Son of Joseph. He would be the predecessor of the good one, Son of David. Sukka refers to the suffering servant Messiah when it speaks about the mourning for the only son, the pierced one. In this text the appearance is so bad that He looks like the embodiment of the evil inclination (the 'yetzer ha-ra'), known as the original sin in Catholicism or 'peccatum originale originatum' (the original sin with its effects from the origin). This is right, for Isaiah 52:14 says of Him: *"So marred was his visage unlike that of man and his form unlike that of the sons of men."* Jewish traditon recognises in the Son of Joseph whom the Prophet Zechariah describes as *"the mourning for Him who was pierced".* (Zech. 12:10) In full: *"(In illumination of conscious) I will pour out on the House of David and on the inhabitants of Jerusalem the spirit of grace and supplication, so that they will look on Me whom they have pierced, and they will mourn for Him as one mourns for an only son, and they will weep bitterly over Him, like the bitter weeping over a first-born."* To this the rabbis responded: *"This is Messiah Ben Joseph, the slain one."* (Yalkut Shimoni)

Actually it reads: *"They shall look upon Me,* ***the Alpha and the Omega****, whom they have pierced."* Alpha and the Omega is the translation of Aleph-Tau immediately after *"upon Me",* which is normally left untranslated (aleph is the first, and tau is the last letter of the Hebrew alphabet). The aleph-tau (et) is a linguistic device, which occasionally can be a hypocatastasis – often used with a connector-bar, designating a hidden metaphor that expresses a superlative degree. This is again found in the very first sentence of the Bible after the two words *"bara Elohim"* (God created), where it reverts to: *"God, the Alpha and the Omega, created".* (Is. 44:6 and Rev. 22:13) We could also call it a Nomen Sacrum (Holy Name), an abbreviation to indicate: this is not just some lord, but 'the' LORD. The same rethoric is found seven times in the first Genesis chapter, each time designating the God of creation, the One who is the origin of all life. We have it also in Zecharia 12. No doubt: **Jesus our Saviour is God. Yes, He is the One who was pierced!** [80)]

According to Sukka, the second, Messiah ben David, would come as a triumphant authority and saviour of his people. The first one, Christians have recognised as the God-man Jesus Christ. The second one could be a normal human being and this was also the conviction of the Frankish king, who was a devout Christian. Had he not believed this,

---

80) Taken from "The Bible in Shorthand?" by Chuck Missler – (Personal Update) NewsJournal, Koinonia House # januari 2000.

In the mist of gloomy indetermination and loneliness

the installation of a nasi (monarch) in his area would have been a charade. Perhaps the famous prophecy of Saint Remy played a part in it, pronounced in 496 during the baptism of king Clovis. Looking forward to the coming of a second Messiah, who is a man and not God, fits not only within the Jewish tradition, but also within the prophetic tradition of the Roman Catholic Church with truly an abundance of prophecies. This messiah is commonly referred to as 'the great monarch' or 'king of kings', but also under titles, like: *"the man of God, the noble exile, the white lily, the prince granted by God, the king sent by providence, the finger of God, the chosen one by God, the one sent by God, the one predestined by God, the instrument of God",* but also *"messiah", "lieutenant or viceroy of Christ",* and even *"son of man".*[81)] That the earthly ruler during the Millennial Reign is not Christ Himself seated on a throne in Jerusalem, as many believe, is evidenced by the temporality of that kingdom with a concluding resurrection at its end. After all, Christ's kingdom is not supposed to come to an end, as the Angel Gabriel informed the Virgin Mary. (Luk.1:33 Rev. 20:7-10, 21:1) Professor William Ouweneel comments in his book "De Toekomst van God" (The Future of God): [82)]

> «« Evidently, there will be a viceroy, called the 'prince', someone from the lineage of David, who will rule over Israel on earth in the name of the King [Jesus Christ]. That this 'prince' cannot be Christ Himself is evident from, among other things, the fact that He also brings sin offerings for Himself and that He has sons. (cf. Ez. 44:3; 45:9-46:24; cf. Jer. 30:20 and Ez. 45:22; 46:16-18) »»

The prophecy of Saint Remy (Remygius), archbishop of Reims, the city named after him, is comparable to that of Moses (Deut. 11:22-32), when the people of Israel were going to cross the Jordan on their way to the promised land. The river Jordan is in the image of the Mikveah bath at the beginning or renewed beginning of the great dedication in life. The Pope's visit to France in 1996 was celebrated under the theme of: *"France, have you remained faithful to your baptism?"* [83)] Of course the sacrament of baptism of 31-year-old Clovis, presumably in 496, who converted from paganism to Christianity,

---

81) From "Christenen Ontwaakt" (Christians Wake up) by B. Bahlmann, a little known work from 1986. Better known are the French publications of Marquis de la Franquerie, highly recommended for further study, as well as the French publication of Baron de Novaye, entitled: "Demain...? D'après les concordances frappantes de cent trente-deux prophéties anciennes et modernes" (Tomorrow...? According to the remarkable correspondence between 132 ancient and modern prophecies) - Editions Lethielleux, Paris # 1934. Several important prophecies in relation to our subject are from St Francis of Paola (1416-1507), Nostradamus (1555), the parish priest Holzhauser (1613-1658), Bernard Rembort alias Spielbähn (1689-1783) and Marie-Julie Jahenny (1850-1941).

82) "The Future of God - Design of an Eschatology" by Professor William J. Ouweneel - Medema Uitgeverij # 2012 (p. 534). Elsewhere he does not rule out a literal reign of Christ on earth, aided by a second-in-command or viceroy.

83) It was during his first trip to France in 1980 that Pope John Paul II asked this question: "France, eldest daughter of the Church, are you faithful to your baptismal promises?" He himself gave the answer in his sermon at Reims on 22 Sept. 1996: "You can keep the power of the Gospel message, or you can lose it (...) You can be the light that illuminates others, like a city on the mountain, or you can become the opposite of that light that illuminates others."

was just a personal matter, but it had a universal meaning that transcended him, as the words of Remygius confirm:

> «« Listen, my son, God has predestined the realm of the Franks to defend the Roman Church, that is the only true Church of Christ. One day this realm will be great under all the realms on earth; it will include all territories of the Roman Empire and will subject all other kingdoms to its sceptre. It will last until the end of times; it will be invincible and prosperous as long as it remains faithful to the Roman creed and is not guilty of the crimes that destroy the other nations; but it will be severely punished, each time it neglects its vocation. »»

7.33 – The House of David preserves the Promise until Shiloh comes

The promise holds that *"The **scepter** shall not depart from (the house of) Judah, nor a **lawgiver** from between his feet, until Shiloh (the one sent) comes, so that tribute shall come to him by the people."* (Gen. 49:10) These were Jacob's last words to his son Judah before he died. Shiloh is a place in the Ephraim or 10-tribe area in the Northern part of Palestine. It was the religious center of the twelve tribes in the period of the Judges (14th-12th century before Christ). "The Torah: A Modern Commentary" states in the footnotes concerning Genesis 49:10: *"One Jewish tradition, taking Jacob's blessing to be a prophecy for the end-time interpreted Shiloh to mean the Messiah, a new David who would come out of the house of Judah (…) If we abide by the Masoretic text it may be best to interprete: 'Until Judah will come to worship at Shiloh', that is UNTIL THE NORTHERN AND SOUTHERN KINGDOMS WILL BE REUNITED."* [84)] Shiloh means the person sent out and is seen in this prophesy as the Messiah. We also recognize here the Viceroy, the Great Monarch or Messiah-king, who according to this tradition will be ruling both realms from a place in the 10-tribe or Northern area. Yet, because we know that at the end of times an imposter will arrive on the scene, typified as the Antichrist, in opposition to the Great Monarch we may speculate that both the Great Monarch and the Antichrist will be in the same age bracket. The sceptre handed over is the emblem of royal authority. We have arrived at another image! The Christians say that the sceptre of Judah (the Jews) has had its day because Jesus has come already. This is partly true. Indeed, He has come as the suffering servant Son of Joseph, but we are still awaiting the glorious appearance of the Son of David when the Messiah-king will have vanquished everything and everyone. The great Messiah-king, Prince of Peace and King of Kings, has been foretold throughout the ages and reputedly comes from the lineage of exilarchs via Pepin II [85)] from a branch 'believed' to be extinct.[86)]

We have come at a point that it is useful to explain a few things about the nature of the Antichrist. In principle, the Antichrist does not want to destroy Christianity, but tries to take Christ's place and from there tries to transform true Christianity. Antihistamine

---

84) "The Torah: A Modern Commentary" by W. Gunther Plaut and David E. S. Stein - Union for Reform Judaism # 2005. We should realize that the ten tribes or Ephraim-Israël were lost in the Babylonian exile. They did not disappear or merged with other peoples. When God cancels the banishment, they will be found again and find their final destiny.

85) Charlemagne was the great-grandson of Pepin II, who is the patriarch of the House of Bourbon. It would appear that six generations earlier Pepin II's ancestor was Clodion, from whom king Clovis descends. Clovis is the one who was baptised on Christmas Day in the course of a 'biblical' rite. His baptism was immediately followed by an anointing ceremony in the course of which a dove descended with a bottle of unguent, a miracle recognised by the Church, as is apparent from the officium of the French rite of anointing and the preparation of the holy chrism. (see also Thomas Aquinas: "De Regimine Principum" II-16.) Clodion is allegedly a descendant of Zerah via the legendary Antenor, king of the Cimerians.

medication does not destroy histamine; the antihistamine occupies the cellular receptor sites to which histamine molecules normally attach and because the histamine molecules have had their attachment places stolen, the allergic reaction ceases and the body is healed. Within the spiritual realm the very same thing happens. The Antichrist is a Christ substitute who wants to make the true faith cease. The Christian faith is replaced within the earthly realm by the 'religious spirit', also called the Jezebel spirit. Within Christianity, the false religious spirit, which can be likened to Satanism (in one of its many appearances), has replaced most of the positions that the true faith should have occupied. If we look at the statistics of numbers of believers within certain denominations, we get the wrong impression. How many preachers and priests have not fallen in this trap? Yes, the Jezebel spirit knows the Bible inside out and exerts a kind of hypnotic spell on its listeners, for it replaces individual free will and thinking by mandatory group thinking, the thinking that is dictatorially imposed by the religious leader, but without love nor compassion. And some people like that! The 'religious spirit' can be detected when someone casts an admonishment and applies it to others, but not to him or herself. When a person feels that he has sinned, the 'religious spirit' will propel him to make a sacrifice or do a good work that supposedly will cover the sin. However, that zeal stems from the Antichrist spirit, not the Holy Spirit of God. Selfrighteousness to cover sin is unacceptable to the Almighty God. Black-and-white thinking is also an element of the anti-Christian spirit that pervades surrogate religion. Perfectionism and unloving idealism certify that if a person cannot be perfect, he will not be loved by God. Its mirror image of: 'sin does not exist and God accepts everyone', amounts to the same thing and is part of the feel-good-religion, which as always has an enormous mass appeal.

Until the cleansing of the cosmos, the battle continues to rage. We can say that victory has been secured, but the enemy has not yet capitulated. The underground resistance continues its reign of terror. It is now our underground resistance against theirs. We may assume that the main chieftain will come from Judah while the royal house of David preserves the promise of the sceptre *"until Shiloh comes".* The tradition indicates that the Shilohan banner is to be found in the North with, around it, the saved ones of the lost tribes, of those who did not return after the Babylonian exile and were scattered among the nations. The banner will be raised there, partly by Judahites, so that in the North the Covenant will be sealed again between God and the two split apart: of Ephraim (son of Joseph) and his brother Judah - the patriarchs of both kingdoms. From the scarlet thread of Zerah, son of Judah, the chain reaction and reconciliation will follow. There in the North the letter of separation will be torn to pieces, mending the breach between God and Israel (the 10 + 2) and at one stroke many others too: breaches between individuals, between families and between peoples and nations.

In the sixth century before Christ, the Davidic kingship over Israel ended. When, after the return from the Babylonian exile in 488 BC, the kingship over Judeah was not restored, the Jewish nation experienced an existential problem regarding the sceptre-promise, to which they found the following solution. They said: "As long as the lawgiver faculty belongs to the nation, the scepter has not receded, which is to be defined as the faculty to hand out capital punishment." J. Dérenbourg discusses that according to a Baraita and the Talmud of Jerusalem this faculty was taken away more than forty years before

86) Henri V of France, best known by his title comte de Chambord, was disputedly King of France and Navarre from 2 to 9 August 1830 and afterwards the Legitimist pretender to the throne of France. He told the Count Henri of Vanssay, his great confident: "Now I am convinced of the existence of my nephew Louis XVII. I shall never ascend the French throne. But God wishes us to keep the secret. He alone reserves to Himself the right to restore the monarchy. I am convinced of the fact that they (the family of the Count of Vanssay) keep alive particularly the hope that one day God will restore the descendants of he beheaded Lily to the throne of France. And that our beloved fatherland, once more the Eldest Daughter of the Church, shall recover her greatness and glory."

the destruction of the Temple. But in fact this happened much earlier; only, it took the priestly caste some time before they fully realized that not only the 'execution' of the death sentence was taken away, but also its 'pronunciation'. (Aboda-zara 8b, Rosch Haschana 31a, Antiq. 20:9:1) Tacitus wrote: *"The Romans have reserved themselves the jus gladii (the sword of justice) and neglect the other things",* and this principle applied to all the provinces that were put under the Roman yoke. When the authority to hand out capital punishment was taken away, Rabbi Rachmon informs us that the members of the Sanhedrin covered themselves with ashes and lamented in sackcloth*: "Woe to us because the sceptre is taken from (the nation of) Judah and yet Shiloh has not come!"* [87)]

So we should look elsewhere for the fulfilment of the sceptre promise, bearing in mind that this can only happen in an unbroken male line of royal descent. A prince in exile will not do. This excludes the royal house of Britain that purportedly relates to a female branch of the House of David. Besides, between 1649 and 1660 the monarchy in Britain was abolished under Oliver Cromwell, which violates the scepter-promise, and, more importantly, as from 1689 onwards England has known a constitutional monarchy – like, subsequently, all the other European countries – which violates the second part of the promise concerning the lawgiver, and those countries have even been deprived of the veto right to stop democratic laws, coming into effect, that violate the Ten Commandments. I only see one solution: the royal house of Ethiopia, which, remarkably, has a large number of mother co-regents in its dynasty, called candaces, which reminds of the relation between Jesus and his mother Mary. In article 2 of its constitution the emperor of the Ethiopian royal house was called the victorious lion from the tribe of Judah and God's elected one. From regional records we learn that Queen Bilqys of Sheba (1 Kings 10), daughter of the legendary Angabo, begot a son from King Solomon, named Menelik; we also learn that Solomon had their son anointed king in Jerusalem, no doubt accompanied by words of prophecy from the officiating priest, but that the records do not tell. Haile Selassie, the direct descendant from this Menelik, was dethroned by the marxist regime of Mengistu in 1974. If here the kingship-promise applies, this means that in 1974 Shiloh had come, born from the tainted line of Zerah,[88)] but his whereabouts are unknown up to this present day.

The fulfilment follows Ezechiel 17, last verse: *"And all the trees of the field shall know that I, the Lord, will have brought down the high tree and exalted the low, dried up the green tree and made the dry tree flourish."* Done what? Brought down the HIGH from the throne and exalted the LOW on the throne, as these trees represent persons, the descendents of the royal branches of Israel. This means that God, in our time, has taken the crown off the Davidic or Perez line, and will place it upon the head of the Prince of Peace from the Zerachitic line. In the aftermath, the proverb is annulled concerning Israel (next three verses 18:1-3): *"The fathers have eaten sour grapes, and the children's teeth are set on edge."* Thus, now, in our present generation we will witness the glorious revelation of Shiloh. And we know his approximate age: he will have been born before 1975.

As said, both the Great Monarch and the Antichrist will be in the same age bracket. Both are 'the sent one'. The general public is made to believe he is the promised messiah, in fact Christ himself. We must heed the Bible prophecies that first the antipode will appear on the scene and only when he has been taken care of (thrown in the abyss) the way has

---

87) Source: Le Chevalier Paul Drach.

88) The uninterrupted descendance in male line accords with the transfer of the Y-chromosome, which is unique for men and remains unchanged in the line of inheritance. This can be used to prove someone's original paternity until many generations in the past. In a research project that tried to establish the Y-chromosome of Adam (and thus of Jesus), a DNA test was done with a descendant of Haile Selassi with a view to establish the Y-chromosome of King Solomon.

been cleared for the others to arrive. There will also be, albeit for a short time, a great monarch who will come from Lyons (according to the writings of Marie-Julie Jahenny), but he too is a false one.

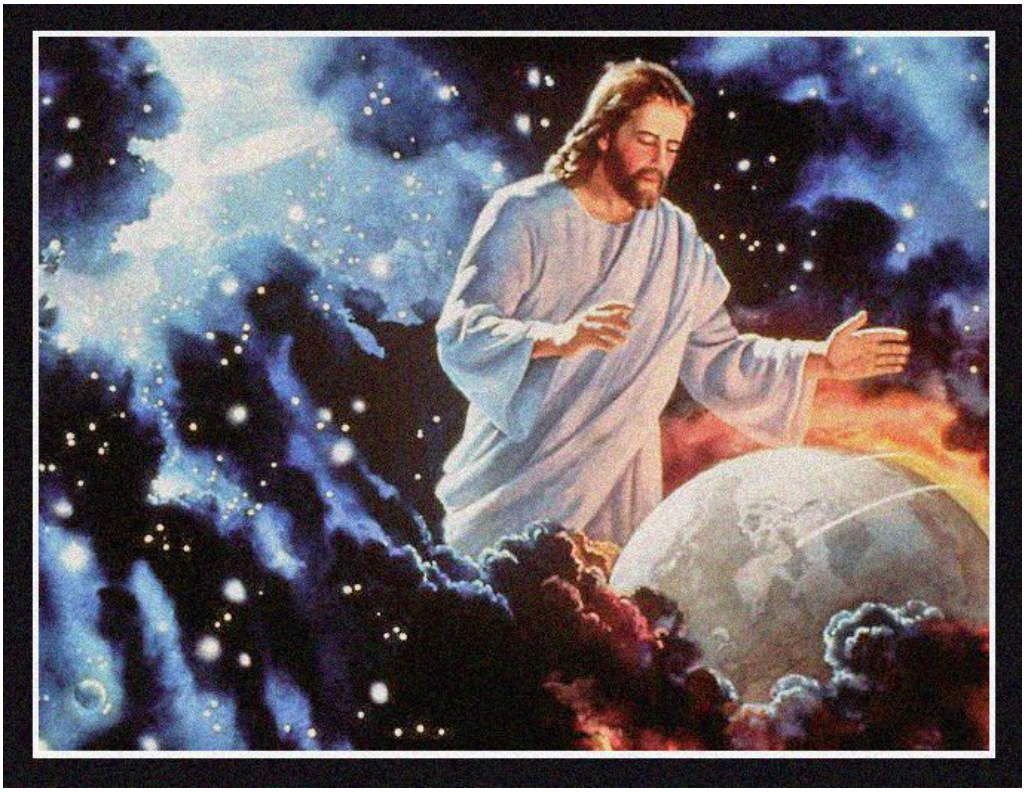
The proud heads, who now are preparing the New World Order, are braced to present to the masses the great impostor. It seems that the Prieuré de Sion (Priory of Sion) will play its part in this crafty scheme. Their focus of attention is the blood line purported to belong to Jesus of the House of David. Several orders of Freemasonry, as well as the Black Nobility, are preoccupied with the lineage of the House of David. Officially, the Priory of Sion was founded in France in 1956, but the cult goes back to ancient times. In year 1986, Lincoln, Baigent and Leigh published "The Messianic Legacy", which was a sequel to "Holy Blood, Holy Grail: The secret history of Christ and the shocking legacy of the grail". The authors claim that the Priory of Sion is the repository of the cultural legacy of Jewish messianism destined to put an end to the *"crisis of meaning"* in the Western world by providing a Merovingian holy king as the long-awaited messianic figure in whom the West and, by extension, humanity can place its trust. The Jewish bloodline, stemming not only from the House of David but also from the bloodline of Jesus, would have been preserved by this secret order. It seems that the Priory of Sion recruits it members from the upper echelons of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry, of those who have been initiated in the Rite of Mizriam. Though their members are generally Jewish, a few non-Jewish members have been admitted. The purpose of all this is that people are made to believe in the purported descendence of the great impostor from the bloodline of Jesus Christ, who would have fathered children! This and other outrageous lies have been presented, soon after the apostles started to create a following. The story line of the Priory of Sion that they have guarded the illustrious blood lines has enough antiquity to fool the gullible masses. It is and will be one of the best orchestrated hoaxes in history. By rallying both Christians and Jews behind the false messiah, they can rule the world, both economically and religiously, having secured the hysterical backing of the populace. But we know better!

• Thanks to Jacqueline Wels for putting the writing of this manuscript on track in 1986, which step by step has come to its final form over the span of many years.

• A supplement to this article is "The Messiah-Monarch" in the compendium "Judaism - the Promise of Land and the Reign of Peace" (ch. 12).

• The photograph "What a Breach !!" was taken at the holocaust memorial site at Berlin by P. M. van Til from the Netherlands on September 12, 2005. It shows the tombs from a special perspective.

'On our Way to a New Earth'



THE WORLD OF THE MAKING

We are still in the Olam Ha-Assia

The end of the Bible, called judgement day, is not necessarily the end of the world. It is just the closing chapter of an important episode and end of the world as is known today. It is undoubtedly this existential fear that the world will end, which drives many to reject a literal interpretation of the Reign of Peace. A radio priest in the Netherlands even dared to call believing in this a sin against the Holy Spirit, an unpardonable sin. He cursed me to Hell. What's wrong with those priests? They must bless!!

8.34 – Our Judaic Heritage

The Christian church is a continuation of the Synagogue. It is cause of concern that with such an important question as the end-time prophecies, whole theories are dished up without reference to our Judaic heritage. As if no eschatological expectations existed in Israel! Brad Young confides in the first chapter of his book "Paul the Jewish Theologian": *"As Christians, we have accepted Paul's teachings about Jesus while rejecting his love of the Hebrew Bible as well as his Judaic heritage."* An unfortunate approach, for we may safely state that there is nothing in his teachings that does not fit with his authentic Judaism. Paul's unconscious witness to the predominance of Jewish culture in the Church is also well pointed out by Professor Brandon in "The Fall of Jerusalem and the Christian Church". He explains:

«« Although Paul is so vividly conscious of his role of Apostle to the Uncircumcision and although his Letters are clearly addressed to communities which are predominantly Gentile, he uses with an apparently unthinking familiarity concepts and examples which are thoroughly Jewish. In striking contrast to the later Gospel writers, he seeks to instruct, or exhort, or to demonstrate a point to his readers, by some quotation from the Old Testament, employed in a thouroughly rabbinical manner, without any kind of explanation. (…) Whatever may have been the antecedents of the Gentile Christians before their conversion, whether they had been proselytes or Godfearers or completely heathen, their entrance into the Christian Church brought them at once within the ambit of Jewish theology. They were introduced by their preceptors to a well-established and impressive corpus of belief and practice, which demanded their reverence and respect. »» (pp. 21-22)

In Brandon's view it was the fall of Jerusalem that marked the turning point away from a typical Judaic-Christian interpretation of Scripture, which deviation - in my view - became decisive with the repudiation of Origen some 150 years later. Origen (ca. 185 - 253/254) was a great connoisseur of the Jewish world of thought, but made the mistake of wanting to explain too much. For the rest, he has been an extremely valuable apologist (defender of the faith) and his writings are still worth reading.

8.35 – The World of the Making

Central to Jewish thinking, about our world heading towards its end times, is the view of the Olam Assia. We are now in the 'world of the making', not just a making, but a creative making. A certain Rabbi Bemporad concludes in his analysis of the dialogue of Job with his friends:

«« The world is unfinished and man must strive to elevate himself for he is not yet its centre [as it was meant to be]. It is only in an unfinished universe, one that is in the making, one that is not yet won for God and man, that man can indeed have a task and a function. Yet the good suffer and the best suffer most, because it is the just and true and righteous that take upon themselves the task of bringing justice and truth in the world. (…) The friends deny the very nature of man's task.

For them man has no self-transcending, nature transforming historical task. They thus deny what is at the heart of the prophetic concept of man, that he is the instrument for the realization of the messianic goal. They make trivial the suffering and agony, the tragic pathos endured by the just man who is the agent for the realization of the good. The friends want God to do man's work and thus they have not spoken correctly as Job who recognizes injustice, yet sticks to his tasks and to his ideal despite the utmost agony and the most intense suffering. Job is the servant of God par excellence, and he symbolizes to us the historic transformations that nature and man must accomplish if God's world is to emerge, to be brought into being. »»

This is very nicely formulated. If man is considered an active agent of change, a partner in the process of creation, this proceeds from and independent decision by God. (Is. 43:7-10) In this sense we may hold that God needs man for the realization of the messianic goal, a goal that evolves in the 'world of the making' or 'olam assia'. It could also be said that God really wants to involve man. He wants to involve us, humans, in his plan of salvation, even though He could carry it out without us. Having said this, we should take care not to succumb to wilful pride, which is very dangerous because it denies man's need for God's help. Pride of any kind is deadly for the realization of the messianic goal. This is recognized in the Aleinu prayer, thrice a day, at the closing of the Jewish prayer service, entreating God's help to perfect the world. I only partially

agree with Rabbi Bemporad when he says that *"only in an unfinished universe man can have a task and a function".* It is conceivable that in a 'finished' universe - on the eighth day perhaps? - man functions as a kind of custodian, an assertion, it seems to me, the rabbi doesn't wish to contradict. It would be more accurate to state that "in an unfinished universe man's existence can only be explained if he indeed has a task and a function". Otherwise, the purpose of life would only be derived from a selfish self-centeredness. The inward quest for peace and perfection would then become his sole purpose of being, as is the case in the New Age movement.

8.36 – A New Dispensation

What is the Biblical foundation of this reasoning? This is to be found in Genesis 2:2-3. According to a current interpretation of the original text, the third verse ends with: (in the 6 days before) "God created in order to make" (in the 7th still going on). The verse can be presented as follows: *"By the seventh day, God completed his work (malachah) which He had done, and He abstained on the seventh day from all his work (malachah) which He had done. God blessed the seventh day and sanctified it because on it He abstained from his work (malachah) which God created to make."* The last words are puzzling. Did God create to create? (asher-bara Elohim la'asot) Who has to do that creating? Indeed, it is 'our' purpose in this world to complete the creation that God almighty accomplished. We are God's partners in the work of creation! The Almighty intentionally did not create a perfected universe, which means that, according to the teleological principle, the creation is heading towards a predetermined and very distant goal. He did create a perfect but not perfected universe, to prevent idleness. Otherwise, the world would not be 'perfect' any more.

Actually, the collection of Bible scrolls is about the 7th day or 'world of the making (against)', called in Jewish parlance 'the Olam Assia', after which there will be another day, the 8th or 50th day (7x7 plus 1). The weekly mega-cycle still runs its first course. There are three intervening cycles: the weekly or lunar cycle plus the annual cycle, which is solar, and there is also the harvest cycle. Each infringement of God's creative act whereby his creative work is cursed, assaulted, and destroyed, is a violation of the sanctification of the seventh day. At judgement day its sanctification will be complete. Then, our space of time will have been consummated, in Greek 'sunteleia tou Ayonos', and from then on a new era will take hold (ayon is the same as the Hebrew olam and both mean space of time, period, era, age, or world). This Greek expression is used five times in the Gospel of Matthew (Mt. 13:39, 40, 49; 24:3; 28:20) and once more in Hebrews 9:26. The last mention is interesting, because there the consummation is accomplished at the Crucifixion, hinge point of all times. Certainly this was not the end of our physical world, but the beginning of a new dispensation. Therefore, the 7th day Sabbath is a reminder of the world to come under a new dispensation, when God's people will lie down in green pastures beside the waters of rest / menuhot (Ps. 23:1), which again does not equal idleness. There will be things to do, even in that day, but on a different plane.

8.37 – Humanity has 'not yet' entered its Rest

One interpretation is that the story of creation is told for the sake of the Sabbath ideal. It tells us in symbolic language that when the creation of the world was completed with the calling into life of the highest beings - of Adam and Adamah - the Creator from that moment on celebrated his own sabbath, for millennia onwards. Then began the human workday of history in the making. As noted: *"Job, God's servant par excellence, symbolizes the historic transformations that man must accomplish if God's world is to emerge, to be brought into being."* I like to point out that the Sabbath ordinance at Horeb was

totally new then and without parallels, neither in Israel nor its surrounding cultures of the time, and should therefore be regarded as a precious gift from God to humankind, a foretaste of greater things, He who made this institution not for his own sake but for ours. (Mk 2:27) Rabbi Aryeh Kaplan said in his small and widely read booklet on the Sabbath: [89)]

> «« Judaism contains many ritual laws, rules that strengthen man's relationship with G-d. These include the holidays, the Kashrus laws [purity laws], and such things as [the ornaments of] Tallis, Tefillin and the Mezuzah. It is, in large part, these rituals that separate Judaism from all other ethical systems. Among the many rituals of Judaism, we find one prime ritual that stands above the rest. That is Shabbos - the Jewish Sabbath. (…) Think about it for a moment. Of all the many rituals of Judaism, only one is mentioned in the Ten Commandments. (…) As long as Judaism exists as a vibrant, vital force, the Sabbath is its most outstanding ritual practice. »»

Menuha is rest, the leading principle of Sabbath, which is an intrinsically positive requirement denoting gladness, peace and perfection, in short holiness. Its fruition is in the world to come, *"for humankind has not yet entered its rest and ceased from its works as God did from his; if in the promised land the people of Israel had already been given rest, then God would not afterward have spoken of another day."* (Hebr. 4:8-10) This world to come with its rest is not to be found in the heavenly spheres but here on earth. As God rested on the 7th so Israel was allowed to rest each 7th day once it had become God's 'slave' in the labor of perfecting this world. Once God freed Israel from its bondage in Egypt, they became bonded to God (Deut. 5:15) who had stolen them from the hand of pharaoh, their previous owner, which explains why the legal requirement for the Sabbath dates from that period, though its theological basis goes back much earlier, in a so-called prolepsis, [90)] for Genesis 2:2 mentions: *"and God ended his work of creation and rested on the 7th day"*. However, the work of creation itself did not end then: it was transferred from God to Man and sealed through a covenant Covenant on Mount Horeb.

Yet it is not that God rested from 'all' his works. He rested from the work (malacha) that involved 'creative' action. And it is also in this way that man ought to respect the seventh day. But God by no means rested from his works of mercy, reconciliation, sanctification, and justice, nor did He stop his work for maintaining the accomplished work of creation. A chair is a work of human creation; God's creative work resulted in the universe and all life. Without his supportive Love in affinity and agreement it could not continue to exist, not even for a split second. Only when humankind has entered its day of rest, allegorically the 8th day, they will at last have understood the meaning of the works of mercy and be able to continue to exist in them together with God, who is truly a father.

The conclusion about the kind of work that God continues to do on his sabbathical rest, fits with the Midrash Genesis Rabbah 11:5 and 10, here quoted from the translation of Rabbi H. Freedman and Maurice Simon (1939):

> «« Then he went back to Rabbi Akiba and said to him: If it is as you say that the Holy One, blessed be He, honours the Sabbath, then He should not stir up winds or cause the rain to fall on that day. (…) R. Phinehas said in R. Oshaya's name: Although you read: BECAUSE THAT IN IT HE RESTED FROM ALL HIS WORK WHICH GOD CREATED TO MAKE, He rested from the work of

---

89) "SABBATH - Day of Eternity" by Rabbi Aryeh Kaplan - National Conference of Synagogue Youth and the Union of Orthodox Jewish Congregations # 1984 (ch. 1).

90) Prolepsis is the representation of something in the future as if it already existed or had happened. An example of this is that Adam's wife is called 'Eve', because she is the mother of all living, while her first child did not exist then.

> [creating] his world, but not from the work of the wicked and the work of the righteous, for He works with the former and with the latter. »»

8.38 – The Creating Against

The perfecting of the world is no neutral affair. It goes along with much struggle against them who do not want the Kingdom of God on earth; who are not satisfied with a mere custodianship and try to appropriate the titles that belong to the owner, our Lord and Master. The symbolic representation of this blasphemous practice is Esau, the hairy and sturdy bloke who thirsts for action, the bragger. How closely this name resembles Asa! Therefore, God says in Malachi 1:2 : *"Jacob I loved, but Esau I have hated."* to be rendered as "How I hate this making!" This hating is the same word that is translated elsewhere with unloved, like in Genesis 29:31 (NKJ): *"When the Lord saw that Leah was unloved, He opened her womb."* The King James version says hated. Verily, God cannot hate. Each soul lost is as precious in the eyes of God as all the others together!, so the saying goes.

The collection of Bible scrolls known to us deals with the creation and making (asa/esau) of the mystery cults, so much hated by God, that work to stop the perfecting of the world, called by me the 'creating-against', which is tolerated until the gates of the Reign of Peace are unlocked. Only in this light may we truly understand its message. The Bible recounts the vicissitudes of the children of the light, heirs to Adam and Eve. So, the end of the Bible, called judgement day, is not necessarily the end of the world. It is just the closing chapter of an important episode and the end of the world as known today. 'World' may be understood as a moral entity or as a composition of matter. The meaning of the second letter of Peter 3:10-12 is then placed in a very different light:

> «« The day of the Lord will come in which the heavens will pass away with a great noise, and the elements will melt with fervent heat; both the earth and the works that are in it will be burned up. (…) Whilst the saints are eagerly looking for and hastening the day of God, because of which the heavens will be dissolved, being on fire, and the elements will melt with fervent heat. »»

This approach tallies with Revelation 2:

> «« I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away. I saw the New Jerusalem coming down out of Heaven. The tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be his people. And all tears were wept away. »»

And thus the first world will perish but the second remains, waiting to be adorned in the inner room as a more beautiful bride as ever: And then, in the early morning of the eighth day, the K'bod Hashem (the Glory of God) shines forth …and a flame comes forth from his fiery countenance and consumes the sacrifice of praise in the beauty of our holiness. There He comes! He comes with intent to take up permanent abode in the Beit ha-Mikdash (Temple): in the purified sanctity of our souls. There He comes, quenching our thirst like the dew on tender shoots!

One should not be surprised as if, here, we propose a completely new theology, for already Origen (185-252/254),[91)] the greatest teacher of Christian doctrine of his time,

---

91) In the writings known to us, Origen makes no mention of the doctrine of Christ's return, which aspect at the time was prominent in most of the schemes of the Christian belief. He treats Christ's coming in glory as the spiritual revelation of his true nature, though he says that he by no means rejects "the second presence of the Son of God more simply understood".

looked forward to a fiery ordeal, through which men should pass in the world to come. Every one already baptised with water and Spirit should, he thought, if he needed cleansing, be baptised by the Lord Jesus in a river of fire, and so purified enter paradise. In this sense also he looked forward to a (spiritual) conflagration of the world, by which all beings in need of such discipline should be 'at once' chastised and healed. No doubt he had undergone this purification by fire from own experience.[92)] How else could he have spoken about this? In that sense, he was looking forward to a (spiritual) world fire, whereby all souls in need of such a correction would be 'immediately' chastised and healed, and whether immediately for everyone remains to be seen. From the height of Tabor to the height of Golgotha! And from Golgotha to the heights of Pentecost!

92) The theological term for this purificative fire is transverberation. This term comes from the Latin 'transverberare' and means to pierce or to penetrate into. In mystical literature it is also known as 'ferita', an Italian word meaning 'wound' or 'heartbreak'. It is often referred to as the seraphic attack because it is usually accompanied by a vision of an angel inflicting the wound - a love wound that ignites the soul with love for God. At the same time it is a purification which causes suffering, otherwise the soul could not be raised to that special state of union with God. There is the world-famous marble statue of Gian Lorenzo Bernini in the Cornaro Chapel in Rome where Saint Therese of Avila undergoes the transverberation. The transverberation reveals our own sinfulness seen with God's eyes, so that even our daily supposedly insignificant sins lead to great heartbreak and an overwhelming sense of great deficiency, under which important saints such as Padre Pio suffered greatly throughout their lives.

BOOK REVIEW

Discover your Inheritance !

— Johan Stringer

Publisher Vastvoedsel.nl - Sept. 2009
isbn 978-90-814626-1-7
247 pages, paperback, Euro 18,50
To order through publisher's website.

"Discoveer you Inheritance" offers a refreshing perspective! It is a surprisingly profound and easy-to-read book that I recommend to everyone. Our God-promised legacy, so to speak, inheritance, is much more concrete and "earthly" colored than people usually realize. How is it possible that this concept, so often found in the Bible, means so shockingly little to us? A recalibration was called for. New horizons are being opened by Johan Stringer. He is an offshoot of the well known Theological College, then in Veenendaal, and worked for eight years with his wife as a missionary in the interior of Africa. So we are assured of a decent piece of theology.

I quote from the introduction:

«« Paul prays in Ephesians 11:15-23 for a special revelation of the Spirit so that our spiritual eyes might be opened. So that with these enlightened eyes, filled with wonder every day, we might taste, feel, know deeply spiritually, how wonderfully rich and glorious God's promised inheritance is. That our inheritance is the core of our calling, we see from this prayer. So we are not talking about just another interesting topic or some kind of a spiritually luxurious dessert for later on. We are talking about the core of our faith. »»

After discussing at the beginning of the book what inheritance meant for the primitive peoples - which is something quite different from ours - the author draws a comparison with what it meant for the patriarchs within the traditions of the Canaanite culture. The author then addresses the inheritance promise within the New Testament dispensation and its practical application to our life of faith. This is a learning process. Stringer therefore also brings the book as a study book. What emerges? Being co-heir in Christ is not just a slogan, but of a decisive nature.

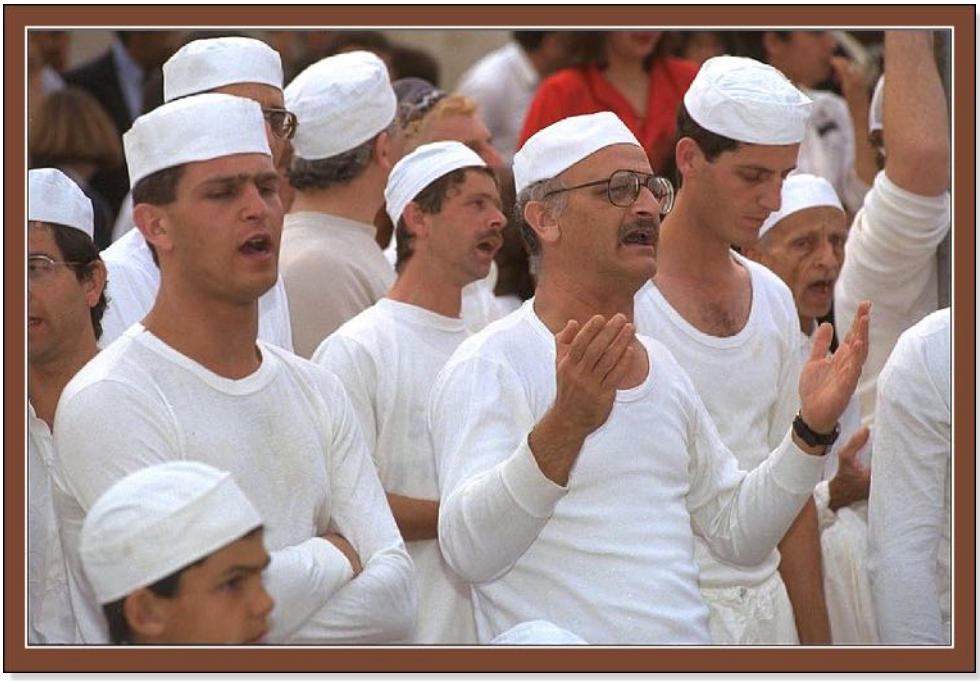
At the end of Stringer's book, the focus is on the future, which is a speculative but necessary exploration. Indeed, the appropriation of the promise makes us realize what the battle is about and what the ultimate victory will bring, albeit not yet sharply defined. Receiving the inheritance - listen carefully - leads to the praise of God's glory, and that now is the climax of all God's work for us.

This should be viewed primarily in terms of nations and family property, not individuals. Yes, our salvation and redemption as individual Christians is guaranteed! We know that. Yet the individual cannot be separated from the larger context for if, at the time, individual family members lost their inheritance, it could be redeemed (bought back) by family members which fits the Biblical standards. And our redeemer, that is Christ! He has become family, a brother. In Christ we have been adopted and we are therefore children of God. The letter to the Romans (8:17) testifies that in this capacity we are co-heirs with Christ. Sharing in his sufferings, we will share in his glorification too.

This glorification is expressed first of all in a renewal of creation. Now do not think that only the nation of Israel is in question when speaking of inheritance. The whole world needs to be redeemed, for in Abraham, again according to the letter to the Romans (4:13), we are heirs of the 'world', that is, here on earth and not in Heaven. Yet it is something worth thinking about. It is not for nothing that one of the last chapters is called: *"The New Heaven and Earth"*.

I hope your curiosity has been aroused. There is only one way to satisfy this urge: Read the book!

The Samaritan Sect



Samiritan Eastern at Kiryat Luza atop Mount Gerizim

This story is about the history of the Samaritan sect with whom the Jews in Jesus' day had a hateful relationship. Today they are a respected part of Israeli society. Their survival through the ages, the only surviving separatist movement of Judaism, must have a purpose to God, a mystery that I am trying to unravel here.

10.39 – A brief overview

One of the most astonishing historical facts is that despite millennia of diaspora, Judaism has preserved their identity when the recurring persecutions should have hastened their assimilation and disappearance. It is equally surprising to me that the Samaritan sect has also survived. The Samaritans were no match for the intellectual brilliance and vitality of Judaism during the first centuries of our era. By the end of the first millennium, she and other Jewish sects had almost completely disappeared. They have often been persecuted. I am thinking especially of the massacres by Pilate and the terrible massacres in the sixth century in reprisal for their persecution of the Christians. But they suffered most from the fanatical Ottomans. During those persecutions almost all of their writings were lost, which is very unfortunate.[93)] Nowadays hey are the oldest and only surviving sect of the many Jewish sects of Christ's time. In the beginning of 1919 there were only 140 Samaritans left, while in the fifth century there were more than a million. The general expectation in the early 1900s was that they were on the verge of disappearance as an independent community. When the State of Israel was formed, they returned to the Promised Land from Gaza, Damascus, Aleppo, Cairo and Alexandria, and their numbers have now grown to more than 800 in two places, almost half of them in Nablus and the remainder in Holon, a suburb of Tel Aviv, where they also have vacation cottages and where the Israelite Samaritan Information Institute is located. Their successful integration is evidenced by the fact that the Orthodox Judaism allow their wives to be married

off to Samaritans. Their High Priest Aabed-El ben High Priest Asher, son of the High Priest Matzliach, is the 134th linear descendent of Aaron, the brother of Moses. Yes, Moses's blood great-grandnephew is alive and well!

To learn something about the common life of the Samaritans, I quote from an article by Helena Merriman on BBC News on January 3, 2011:

> «« For hundreds of years, the Samaritans have been caught between warring groups. Some say the Samaritans must open up to the outside world. Before, they would take sides, but now they are trying a new approach - neutrality. They are building good relations with their Palestinian and Jewish neighbours and are unique in the region for having both Israeli and Palestinian identity papers. This means they can travel between Israel and the West Bank with ease.
>
> Many Palestinian businessmen there export goods to towns in Israel, but because they have to go through Israeli checkpoints, deliveries can be slow. An exporter of car parts to Nazareth and Haifa, Ibrahim, pays the Samaritans to take some of his goods to Israel. *"The Samaritan drivers help us because they can take goods to Israel in one day",* he tells me at his shop. *"If you want a Samaritan driver, you call them, they take the goods in their cars and return back to Nablus without the checkpoints."*
>
> Mr Cohen tells me that since there are many more men than women, they have to look outside their own community to find potential wives. Some Samaritans have been using the Internet to find brides from other countries, and he introduces me to Alexandra from the Ukraine, who converted to the Samaritan faith and married his cousin. More recently, an American woman has made history by becoming the first person to convert to the Samaritan faith without marrying in. Originally from Michigan, Sharon Sullivan now lives with her four children within the Samaritan community. She says it is sad that more people do not know about this ancient religious sect. *"The good Samaritan story is about a Samaritan who is caring for someone not of their own religion",* she says*."* »»

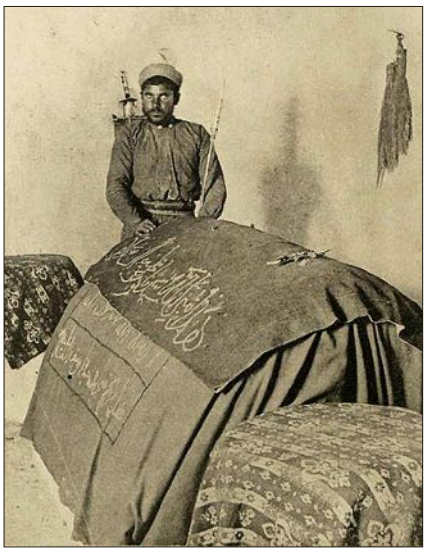
10.40 – The historical framework

The area where the Samaritans reside is between the mountains Gerizim and Ebal, the mountains on which, according to Deutenomium 11:29, on the one hand rests the blessing and on the other hand the curse. It is located halfway between Lake Genesareth and the Dead Sea and almost midway between the Jordan River and the Mediterranean Sea.

---

93) According to their own chronicles, the Samaritans have three old scrolls, each used on different festive occasions. Of these scrolls, the Abisha scroll is clearly the most sacrosanct. It was the Sephardic Jew Federico Pérez Castro who managed to have a com-plete set of photographs taken in the 1950s. After lengthy negotiations by both Castro and the Spanish consul in Jerusalem, Castro got the extraordinary permission to photograph the scroll. After a fairly thorough examination of the text, he decided to publish only the older part of the scroll, that is, from Numbers 35 to the end of Deuteronomy. Though he recognized that even this part was conflated from several even older fragments, it became apparent that the first part of the scroll, from Genesis to Numbers 35, had only a few small segments that were old. The rest was very recent and not worth publishing in full. The older parts were published in his "Sefer Abisha". In a cryptogram embedded in the text is written: "I am Abisha, the son of Pinchas, son of Eleazar, son of Aaron the Priest, on them be the favor of the Lord and his glory – I wrote this holy book in the door of the tent of meeting on Mount Gerizim in the 13th year of the dominion of the Children of Israel over the land of Canaan to its boundaries round about. I praise the Lord." Alan D. Crown writes: "On the face of it – if we accept the fact that a cryptogram like this cannot be forged – this scroll is approximately 3,300 years old, making it the oldest Torah scroll in the world!" (Source: "The Abisha Scroll – 3,000 Years Old?" by Alan D. Crown, Bible Review 7, 5 # 1991)

So it was in the center of the Northern Kingdom (after Israel was split in two). The place that lies between those two mountains is Shechem, which is now in the so-called West Bank, which the Arabs are trying to appropriate. There, Abram arrived as an immigrant, coming from distant Haran. There God first promised him that the land would belong to his descendants, and there he built his first altar. Shechem is now an archaeological site known as Tel Balata, from the Arabic balut, meaning oak (from Moreh). Close by is Nablus, a corruption of the Roman Neopolis. Nablus is now a predominantly Arab city, where the Samaritans have their own synagogue.



Grave of patriarch Joseph

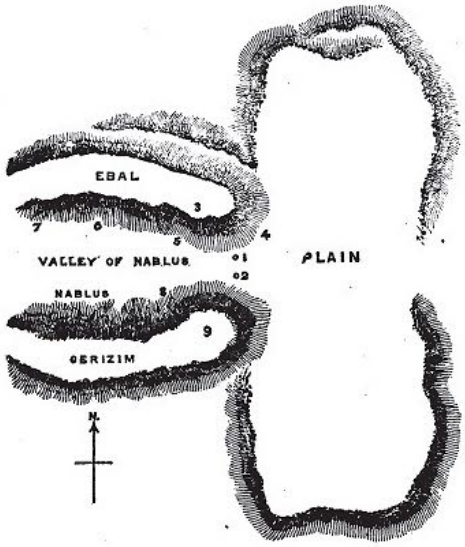
Shechem is also the place where Patriarch Joseph is buried on the plot of land his father bought from Hamor. His tomb is the third most sacred place in Judaism, in which also lie his two sons. Until the year 2000, Israel maintained an army-protected enclave around the tomb and provided free access for Jewish believers. The outbreak of the Al-Aqsa Intifada on September 28 of that year sparked a large number of riots across the country. Joseph's tomb, for example, was besieged by Palestinian gangs. When there were deaths, Prime Minister Ehud Barak agreed to hand over control to the Palestinian police with guarantees that the tomb would be protected by them. Already two hours after the withdrawal of the Jewish security service, on October 10, the Palestinians began to assault this place. They called it an Islamic shrine… that smelled like urine because of their doing! Since then, the grave has been the subject of an endless series of conflicts and aggressions between the Palestinians and faithful Jews, led by the Breslov Hasidim. Repeatedly, the Palestinians caused destruction and time and again there were repairs.

Shechem, of course, is also the place of the son of Hamor who was called Shechem. He had violated Jacob's daughter Dinah, after which her brothers murdered the entire tribe through a treacherous plan. (Gen. 34) The great Maimonides points out that this was the cause of Jacob's later turmoil (the exile to Egypt). From the Talmud (Baraita Eliezer 38) and the Book of Jasher (Ch. 44) we learn that Dinah, who had since been married off, gives her illegitimate child Zelicha (meaning: 'cunning') to a caravan and so she ends up in the house of Potiphar, where she would become his private fortune teller (housewife).[94)] Her Egyptian name Asenat means 'belonging to the god A'nath', but can also be read as Asenah, or 'she belongs to her father'. It is not until much later that she learns of her illustrious parentage through heavenly revelation. And it is known that she later married Joseph, in fact her uncle. She became the mother of Ephraim and Manasseh, whose grandfather was Shechem. It is no coincidence that Shechem is located on the border between the tribal areas of Ephraim and Manasseh. The Jewish chronicles never mention the Northern Kingdom but speak instead of the land of Ephraim, or Ephraim and Manasseh (Manasseh, the much smaller tribe). The Samaritan sect could therefore also be called the Ephraimite sect, after Ephraim, the darling of the Lord. (Gen. 48:20)

10.41 – A tricky issue

Why are the Samaritans not called Shechemites? The usual explanation is that the area where they lived was named after the capital Samaria (meaning watchtower), the great fortified city less than 5 miles northwest of Shechem. I take it that Samaritan is a derivation

from ‘shamerim’ or ‘those who keep the commandments’. The Samaritans call themselves, as the people of Nablush, the Bene-Yisrael or ‘Children of Israel’.[95] The Jews in Christ’s day cursed the Samaritans with the name Cutheans. (cf. Josephus) This refers to one of the cities from which Sargon II had mustered the people to fill the places in the Northern Kingdom that were half deserted because of the deportation of the Samaritans or Omrids (as the Assyrians used to call the Israelites).[96] This deportation is commonly known as the Assyrian captivity. Cutha’s tutelary deity was Nergal (2 Kings 17:30), the god of the underworld. So, Cuthaan wanted to say that they were sons of devils. Sometimes they were openly called that. See John 8:48 where the Jews say to Jesus: *“Are we not rightly saying that you are a Samaritan who is possessed with the devil?”* Sargon also sent a priest to Bethel (south of Shechem) to teach them *“how to worship the God of that land”.* He was urged to do so because God had sent lions that made many victims among the inhabitants. After all, it is God’s land, chosen from all the countries of the world, and that must not be desecrated. Yet they also continued to worship their own idols. (2 Kings 17:24-41) A mixed religion emerged, which meant that out of political opportunism they professed either the God of the Bible or an idol. They limped on two legs. With the current Samaritans that has vanished.



Nehemiah knew who he was dealing with and therefore declined their offer to work on the new temple building, which led to enmity and obstruction. That was right after the Babylonian captivity, more than 200 years after the beginning of the Assyrian captivity. Little is known about this interim period. Thanks to the “Antiquities” of Josephus (Ch. 11), we know how the Shechemites or Cutheans have behaved from the moment of the ‘return’ (aliyah) of the Jews under Nehemiah. By the way, the Book of Nehemiah also tells about this. (Ch. 4 & 6) From then on, the Samaritans began to build their own temple on the Gerizim, which Alexander the Great later officially recognized. From their ambiguous attitude it is understandable that the Jews rejected them. As they traveled across

---

94) According to the book of Jasher, Asenath had an 11-month-old daughter when Joseph was wrongly accused of an adulterous relationship with her. That must have been Potiphar’s child. So, in a sense, she was his wife.

95) The Samaritans themselves reject the name ‘Samaritans’ or ‘Samarians’. These terms in our language are a transcription of the Semitic Shomronim, the plural of Shomron (the Biblical name for the area we call Samaria). Shomronim is therefore the people of Samaria (Hebrew שומרונים). In Arabic لسامريون or: as-Sāmariyyūn. Instead, the Samaritans, as the people of Nablus, call themselves Bene-Yisrael or “Children of Israel”, and consider their name to be ‘Shamerim’, from shomrim, the plural of shomer (guardian, watchman or observant one). According to their etymology, they are ‘guardians’ of the Law. This etymology, incidentally, was already known to the Church Father Jerome (†420), who was the writer of the most important Latin Bible translation, known as the Vulgate.

96) King Omri founded the capital Samaria. The Northern Kingdom was called the House of Omri by the Gentiles or, but less so, the Samaritans. The term Israel rarely occurs in the ancient non-Israeli writings.

the land, they took a detour to get around Shechem. It was mutual, for when Jesus was on the way to Jerusalem the Samaritans refused Him shelter 'because' He was on the way to Jerusalem, upon which the disciples wanted to devour them with fire. And Jesus then sternly rebuked his disciples. (Luke 9:51-55) With the destruction of their temple on the Gerizim by the Maccabean John Hyrcanus in 112/111 BC (about 370 years after the Babylonian captivity) the rift between these two populations became complete. Jesus himself had no bad feelings about the Samaritans, as all the New Testament passages in which they are mentioned demonstrate. Jesus did not view them as Gentiles, nor as the lost sheep of the House of Israel, and that was his priority. (Mt. 10:5-7)

Pelgrimage on Mount Gerizim on October 27 2015 (Ayman Nosani)

10.42 – The theological dispute

After returning from the Babylonian captivity, many changes were introduced in Israel's liturgical calendar. Then the Aramaic font style, the so-called square script, was also introduced. But the Samaritans oppose all this. That is why they also have their own liturgical calendar. They also stuck to the archaic spelling known as Paleo-Hebrew, a script that is also more prone to error. They only adopted the Torah (the first five books of the Bible) and rejected the rest of the canon. An important aspect is that they claimed that Mount Gerizim and not Moriah (the Temple Mount of Jerusalem) is the place that God had chosen to establish his dwelling and Holy Name. See Jesus' answer in John 4:19-20, where He does not say they are wrong in this view, but emphasizes that salvation comes from the Jews. Their claim that the Temple belongs on the Gerizim is not entirely unfounded on closer inspection. I quote from George Foot Moore's authoritative book "Judaism" (Ch. 1), first published in 1927:

> «« The idea of supplanting Mount Moriah by Mount Gerizim came from the Law itself. In it they found that Moses had enjoined the people, as soon as they came into the Promised Land, to put the blessing on Mount Gerizim and the curse on Mount Ebal. In Deuteronomy 27:4 the Jewish text has Mount Ebal, where the whole tenor of the context demands Gerizim, as the Samaritan Hebrew reads; the same change has been made in the Jewish text in Joshua 8:30. (…) Sichem-

> Gerizim was therefore manifestly the place so often spoken of in Deuteronomy where God would put his Name. »»

The prevailing opinion among Jewish scribes is that the Samaritans changed the two verses to read Mount Gerizim, but if, as I consider reasonable, they responded to the liturgical reforms instituted by the Men of the Great Synagogue (the period after the return from exile), only the opposite can be true: the Jerusalem Jews altered history and tampered with the text to indirectly glorify Mount Moriah. That is not to say that they made it a practice to change the Scriptures. Far from it! But in this case, the political motives were so strong that they simply could not resist the temptation and deliberately changed the name Gerizim to Ebal.

The Samaritan tradition teaches that Mount Gerizim is the place where Abraham met an enigmatic figure, the priest of God the Most High, called Melchizedek, and there also received the Prince of Sodom, further afield. (Gen. 14: 17-24) Moreover, the Samaritans point to a special place on the top of Gerizim where Jacob had the vision during his sleep of the stairway to haven: in that dream he received the promise of divine protection for him and his progeny. Upon awakening he exclaims: *"How awesome is this place! This is none other than the Bethel (the house of God) and this is the gate of heaven. (...) He called the name of that place Bethel: it used to be called Luz."* (Gen. 28:17-19) Mount Gerizim is therefore also called Gerizim-Bethel-Luza. There, in that place chosen by God, Jacob had that life changing experience. I join the Samaritan tradition in that regard. The top of the mountain is also called Kiryat Luza.[97)]

In this regard, I quote a message from one of the seven end-time prophets, who presents itself under the cover name of J.N.S.R.[98)] This is stated in her book "Mon dernier Pas avec Dieu" (My last step with God):

> «« For a thousand years the Earth will be [during the Millennium] a marvelous and resplendent paradise like the Garden of Eden. Christ will inhabit, together with the Righteous, the Celestial Jerusalem which will descend on this Earth, which GOD the Father has blessed and sanctified to Himself. God the Father will come to inhabit this Earth in person. There will be his Throne. Those who enter this City will be able to contemplate the Face of God. The New Jerusalem, with its golden streets, will descend on Earth and become the Seat of the 'Government of GOD' for all Eternity. Earth is destined to become the center of the activities of the Universe. This is GOD's fantastic design for the future of the Earth. It is to be considered that the Father himself will eventually establish his Headquarters here on earth. God will be here on this Earth – The Blessed Land from North to South, East to West – and will be the reward for all those who will be saved, as GOD commands us, by recognizing our SAVIOUR Jesus Christ. »» (June 2010)

Here we speak of beholding God's Face when the Earth will have become the spiritual center of the Universe. Elsewhere, J.N.S.R. talks about the Earth as the Cathedral of the Universe. This is reminiscent of what is written in Hosea 11:9: *"In the midst of Ephraim is the Holy One [in all his Splendor], but into the city [Jerusalem] will I [the Most High] not come like that."* This meeting face to face, where else but on the Kiryat Luza? It is similar to what Moses experienced over and over again in the tent of revelation during the 40-years trek through the desert:

---

97) Kiryat means 'city'. Luz or lawz means 'almond tree'. Remarkably, the Sinai in Al-Hejaz, where Moses received the Ten Commandments, is now called the Jabal Al-Lawz. In spring the almond tree blossoms first and it is therefore a symbol of the resurrection.

98) J.N.S.R. is a housewife and mother, and stands for Je Ne Suis Rien, or Jésus Notre Seigneur Revient, in translation: 'I am nothing' or 'Jesus our Lord is coming back'.

«« As soon as Moses entered the tent, the pillar of cloud came down and stood before the entrance of the tent, where Yahweh spoke with Moses. (…) Then Yahweh spoke to Moses face to face, as a man speaks to his friend. (…) When Moses went out to give all the orders to the Israelites and they saw the skin of Moses' face shining, Moses put the veil over his face [so as not to shock the people] until he went back in to converse with God. »» (Ex. 33:9-11, 34:34-35)

Who is this for? For the priest-kings of civilizations elsewhere in the Universe, where Moses is the image of the priest and Jacob is the image of the king. Since God is the God of life, wherever life is possible on the other trillions of planets, life will be created by God (no question of evolution in the Darwinian sense) and that includes self-conscious intelligent life, unlike ours, but still very similar because it is exactly the same DNA coding, which is the book of life, and so we all have one father and thus form one family.

The question has long puzzled me why God allowed the Samaritan sect to survive. There had to be a good reason for that. This now appears to be the reason; this now is the grandiose task that God has set for the Samaritans! While Mount Zion was destined for the sacrifices culminating in the One SACRIFICE, making the sacrifice of animals a thing of the past, Mount Gerizim was destined as a place of revelation, from time immemorial. The theological dispute between the two was therefore superfluous. It is not a controversy, but a mutual complement.

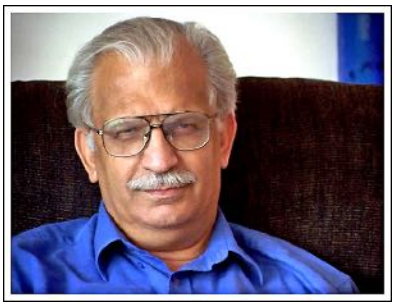
10.43 – The Samaritan Torah

Sharon Sullivan - 2011

Sharon Sullivan is of Roman Catholic origin. She was 19 years old when she came to a personal experience of faith that has since deepened. In search of the 'original' faith, she came into contact with Benyamim Tsedaka, a Samaritan Elder, via the Internet. She was a young woman then in her thirties. That contact developed further and a collaboration arose. For seven years she worked with him on the first English publication "The Israelite Samaritan Version of the Torah". Based on that inspiring experience she decided to join their group. She says in the interview she gave to the "TheSamaritanUpdate.com" (May/June, 2011, Vol. X):

«« I first came across the Israelite Samaritans calendar at Benny's Tsedaka's website. I contacted him to ask questions I wanted to know related to who the Samaritans were. He made me aware at that time of ancient Samaritan manuscripts housed at Michigan State University – which was very near to where I lived. I stayed in contact with Tsedaka asking many questions and receiving his gracious answers to all of my questions. The hardest step was about six years ago when I felt certain Jerusalem was a later sacred place than Mount Gerizim. It wasn't a hard step as far as evidence was concerned, because the evidence from the Biblical text is stronger in support of Mount Gerizim, but it was a big step to verbalize it at first knowing full well others would be shocked by that statement, and consider me heretical. At that time it also was not so easy to wrap my brain around the idea that only 750 people in the world (more or less) believed that Gerizim was the sacred place of the Israelites before Jerusalem. It just goes against the odds to agree with such a tiny minority on such a major theological point. However, I knew for sure in my own mind it was correct, and I had already been willing to step away from culture (after my conversion) and continue on the path of what was true and factual. Through those years of living in Michigan and working on the translation of the Samaritan Torah into English, I realized that this was as close as I could come to an original form of monotheism. The life of the

people in the practice of their faith was very close to the written text. It was a lonely experience for a long time for the kids and I in Michigan. We did not have the support of anyone but each other, and sometimes there was very harsh criticism and mocking of religious purity laws we practiced. When I finished my BA (Bachelor of the Arts), I wanted to continue and work on the MA (Master of Arts). I did not know the Samaritans would be open to the kids and I joining the community, and actually never expected they would. I knew it was a closed community entered only by birth for most, and marriage for a few others. Eventually those doors were opened for us, to our happy surprise. Many adjustments would follow in adapting to the community and culture. And a great relief to be with others and a pride to be among such an ancient religious people would result! »»



Benyamim Tsedaka - 2005

In 2013 was published: "The Israelite Samaritan version of the Torah: first English translation compared with the Masoretic version" by Benyamim Tsedaka and Sharon Sullivan. This is a parallel version of the Torah, in double columns on each page. The left column is the Samaritan, the right column is the Masoretic. Easy to see the differences because they are side by side, and additionally, the editors have added blanks in the text of the Masoretic to show where data was either removed in the Masoretic or added in the Samaritan. In the customer review by Åsmund Knutson Auklandon on August 14, 2014 is written:

«« Why was there a schism between the Samaritans and the Jews? The answer is found in this book, and the amazing thing is that this Samaritan version of the Torah may be older and more correct than that which we have in our Bibles. I had the honour to meet Benyamim Tsedaka in 1985 when he introduced me to their celebration of Succot on Har Gerizim. I do recommend this book to all serious students of the Bible. And I admire the Samaritans for their faithfulness through thousands of years. These are not a sect, but true original Israelites and a witness to us all. »»

✳

REAL ISRAELITES

By Neline Schipper

Neline studied at the Theological University of Apeldoorn and was working at the Foundation Christians for Israel when she wrote this article.

"No, a Jew, I prefer not to call myself like that. I am an Israeli", said Shachar Yehoshua, the representative of the Samaritan community in Holon, Tel Aviv, in a fierce tone. For centuries Jews and Samaritans have lived side by side in the Holy Land. Still, there have been tensions between both groups all along. The example of the conversation between Jesus and the Samaritan woman at a well is known. When Jesus asks her for a drink, she answers: *"How is it that You, being a Jew, ask a drink from me, a Samaritan woman?"* John adds: *"For Jews have no dealings with Samaritans."* (John 4:9) However, the ways between the two groups had parted already centuries earlier, and that is noticeable to this very day.

11.44 – Saints or Gentiles

According to Samaritan tradition, the Samaritan community originated in the 11th century BC at the time of the high priest Eli. Eli moved the Lord's sanctuary from Shechem to Shilo, while God designated the city of Shechem – where, among other things, the Covenant was renewed after the 40-years exodus – as a holy place. (Josh. 24) While almost all the people followed Eli, a small group of faithful led by the high priest Uzzi, was left behind. This group developed into the Samaritan community. After Uzzi, the high priesthood and leadership of the Samaritan community passed from father to son. Today, the oldest man in the community is the first in line of succession.

In Jewish tradition, the origin of the Samaritans is explained very differently. In the 8th century BC, the Assyrians invaded the Northern Kingdom of Israel and deported its inhabitants. Instead of them, strangers from other nations settled there, who mingled with the remaining Israelites. The Book of Kings narrates:

> «« And it was so, at the beginning of their dwelling there, that they did not fear the Lord. Therefore the Lord sent lions among them, which killed some of them. (…) Then one of the priests whom they had carried away from Samaria came and dwelt in Bethel, and taught them how they should fear the Lord. However every nation continued to make gods of its own, and put them in the shrines on the high places which the Samaritans had made, every nation in the cities where they dwelt. »» (2 Kings 17:25-29)

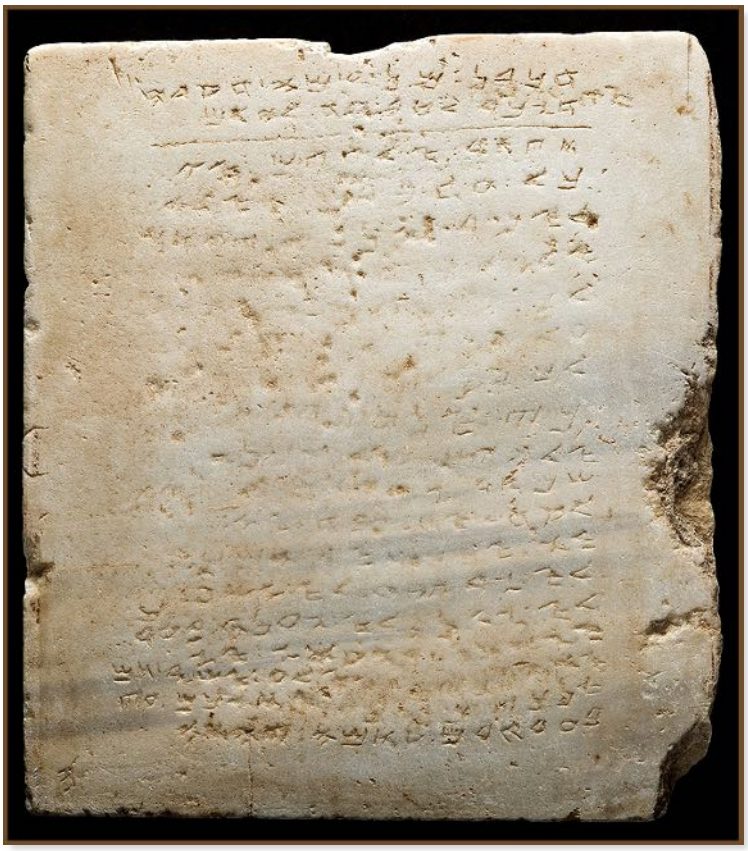
While Samaritan tradition emphasizes the religious and genetic purity of one's own community, Jewish tradition contradicts that purity. This gap seems unbridgeable and has created tense relationships between these groups over the centuries. The Samaritans see themselves as saints; the Jews see them as Gentiles.[99)]

Despite all the tensions, Samaritans live in the midst of a Jewish world to this day. The community as a whole counts about eight hundred souls. This is a significant increase from the low of 148 members in 1917, but is still far from the level of the fifth century

99) DNA is not the only hereditary factor. There is also an intangible component that is passed on to offspring. Therefore, racial mixing does not have to be decisive for the preservation of the peoples particular character, or its soul.

AD when the community numbered about one million members. Remarkably, Shachar Yehoshua is not hoping for significant further growth. The smaller the community, he thinks, the more one's own identity is experienced and retained. He also appreciates the 'us-knows-us feeling'. If someone does not show up at the synagogue, a fellow member will be at the door that same day to gauge whether the person in question is feeling well.

Although Shechem (present-day Nablus), located at the side of Mount Gerizim, is the holy place of the Samaritans, some of the Samaritans live in Holon, a district of Tel Aviv. Shachar Yehoshua relates that after an earthquake in the 1930s, some of them left Shechem to settle in Holon. Under President Itzhak Ben-Zvi (1952-1963), the Samaritans officially acquired their own district in Holon. They are used to go on a pilgrimage to the Gerizim at the various festivals. From Holon to Gerizim is a journey of 150 km (via a necessary detour), which takes just under three and a half hours.



THE TEN COMMANDMENTS IN PALEO-HEBREW

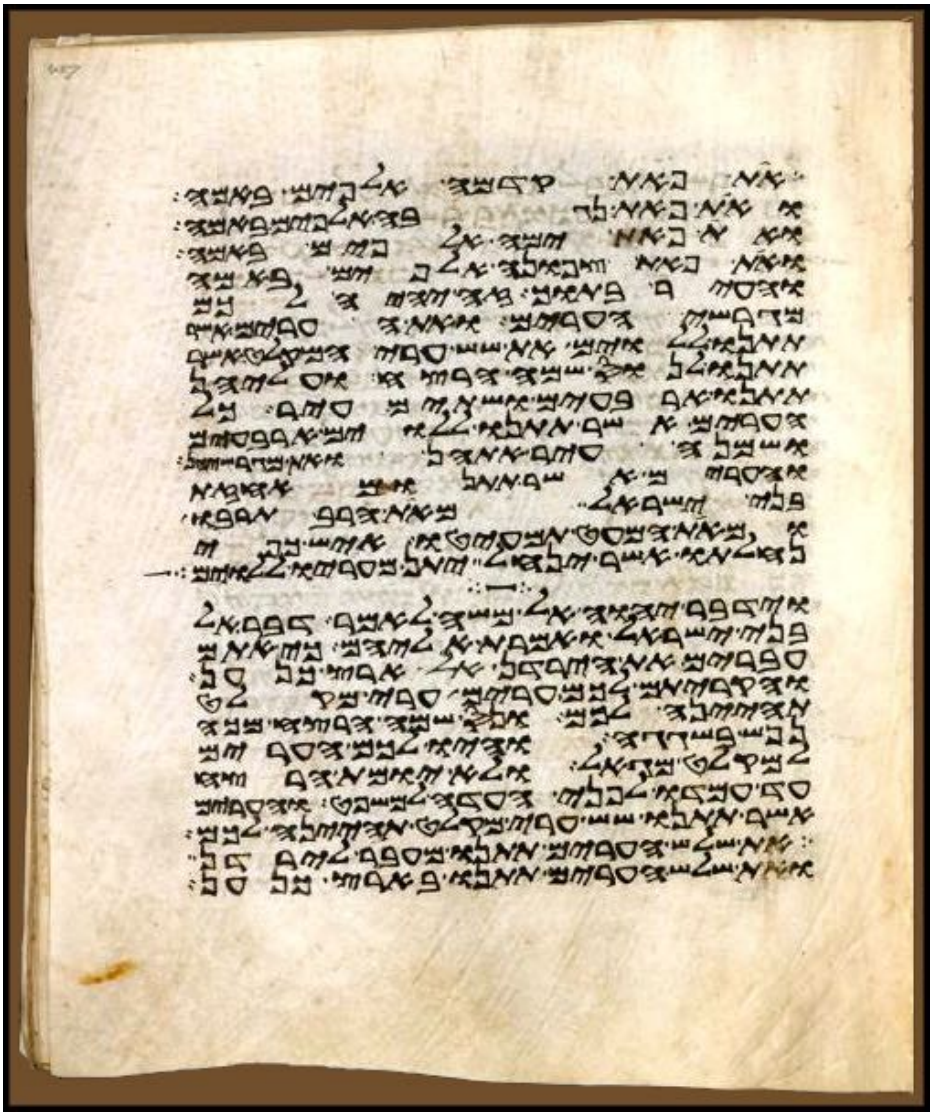
The Javneh Ten Commandments Stone is approximately 60 x 60 cm in size and weighs 52 kg. It was probably carved in the Samaritan variant of Paleo-Hebrew between the 4th and 8th centuries AD. It is one of only five known inscriptions from the Samaritan Decalogue that predates the time of the Muslim invasion.

11.45 – The Samaritan Synagogue

Walking through Holon, some differences between an 'ordinary' Jewish and this Samaritan neighbourhood become clear in the street scene. Where throughout Israel street names are indicated in Hebrew, Arabic and Latin script, the street signs in Holon also contain the paleo-Hebrew script. This ancient script is still maintained within the Samaritan community and is taught to children. They even use unique keyboards that contain this script.

We make a visit the Samaritan synagogue. There are regular services in the synagogue, even in the early morning of the Sabbath at three o'clock. Through a gate with a seven-armed candlestick and a text in paleo-Hebrew script, we reach the area around the synagogue. At first sight it is a normal synagogue, but on closer look, the outside of the building shows differences with the Jewish synagogues. For instance, the orientation of the synagogue is different. The Samaritan Synagogue points at Mount Gerizim, while Jewish synagogues point at the Temple Mount. Another difference is the fact that the synagogue was built on the edge of the community, while a Jewish synagogue is commonly located in the center. Due to the growth of the Samaritan quarter, this distinction is no longer that evident.

During a tour around the synagogue, we come across a dozen works of art attached to the fence close to the synagogue. Each of the artworks has an image symbolizing one of the tribes of Israel. It highlights how much the Samaritans see themselves as Israelites and legitimate descendants of the twelve tribes. We now enter the synagogue. It is not possible to just walk through to the part where the meetings are held. It is customary to take off your shoes first in memory of the Lord's appearance to Moses at the burning bush. Moreover, they wear white clothes and the men too cover their heads. Men and women assemble in the same room.



Samaritan Writing - Book Leviticus

The central area of the synagogue is impressive. First our attention is drawn to the ark in which the Torah scrolls are kept under a veil of a richly decorated handmade cloth. The seven-armed menorah is also depicted here. Further on hangs a painting depicting Aaron's blessing (Num. 6:22-27). Above the door hangs a work of art in which the Shema is depicted in a visual way (Hear Israel, the Lord your God is One!). The Shema is considered the central profession within Judaism and is also crucial to the Samaritan religion. In every Samaritan house there is a picture with the Shema. The Jews, however, attach the Shema, in a so-called mezuzah (a tiny tube), to the entrance of their house.

Shachar Yehoshua hands me a book. He proudly shows the inside. It is a prayer book, written entirely by hand, in the paleo-Hebrew script. He explains that songs and prayers are used in the meeting that resemble those of the Jewish liturgy, but are not quite the same. However, the great pride of the Samaritan community is not a book like this, says Shachar, but is the Torah that is said to have been written by a descendant of Aaron, which is about 3,600 years old and is kept in the synagogue at the Gerizim.

11.46 – Not Jewish…

The similarities but also the differences between the Samaritan community and the surrounding Jewish world are striking. Both serve the same God and want to do so in the purest possible way, but at the same time here lies the great gap between the two. Does this make good living together impossible? Not at all, because mixed marriages with Jewish women are permitted nowadays. Shachar does not see this mixing as a threat to their own identity. Usually, the Jewess in question adopts the customs and religion of the Samaritans. It is also the case that the Samaritan children go to Jewish schools. The community is too small to set up its own school. Children are educated in their own language and customs after school, so that the identity can be passed on from generation to generation.

The Torah is pre-eminently the holy book for Samaritans and enjoys a much higher status than the Samaritan chronicles. The chronicles are to them what Halacha is to Judaism, those are the laws and customs elaborated on the basis of the Biblical prescripts. The regulations from the Torah are very strictly observed. All the prescribed festivals are celebrated, not the ones that were added later such as Chanukah (the Jewish festival of light). Many sheep are ritually slaughtered on Pesach (Easter). Children are given a little blood on their foreheads as a reminder of the blood that was smeared on the doorposts, so that they remained untouched during the final plague, just before the Exodus from Egypt. Sukkoth (the Feast of Tabernacles) is also extensively celebrated, with each family building its own tabernacle or hut in or near the house. It is richly decorated with fruits and vegetables. The Rite of Azazel (scapegoat), known to the Jews as Yom Kippur (the Day of Atonement), involves a very severe fasting. Even children, from the time they are not infants, fast in total abstinence from eating and drinking.

There are not only differences. There are strong similarities, especially in the religious field, between the Samaritan community and Judaism, as mentioned above. Shachar Yehoshua recognizes that the relationship with Judaism is close as many essential elements and practices are shared in both religions. However, he immediately adds that only the Samaritans can be considered true Israelites. The Jewish view of the origin of the Samaritans, namely as a mixture of Israelites and Gentiles, dismisses Shachar as nonsense, which he does not even want to listen to. The Jews are said to have fabricated a story afterwards to blacken the Samaritans. He states that the Samaritans lived continuously in the land of Israel and therefore have more right to speak than the Jews. He sees it the other way around: the Jews are a mixed group, especially since the Diaspora, which makes the identity of most Israelites extremely dubious. A Jew, no, he does not want to call himself that. No, that Shachar Yehoshua, a Samaritan, he is a real Israelite!

‘Come Holy Spirit’ Renew the Face of the Earth!

The Orion Nebula

The Holy Spirit makes creation pass from chaos to cosmos making something beautiful out of it, well-ordered. The intervention of the Holy Spirit causes the Universe, the Church and every person to pass from chaos to cosmos, that is, from disorder to order, from confusion to harmony, from disfigurement to beauty. The Holy Spirit continuing act of creation ‘renews the face of the earth’. Where God is arranging, alternatively chaos ensues if it so happens that God hides his face. That doesn’t happen just like that. If humankind, the crown of creation, turns radically away from God, God from his side turns away from Man. But the possibility of recovery remains and Man, if he wants to, can turn back to God again.

12.47 – The Primeval Chaos becomes Ordered and Regular

There is a tension in God’s plan of creation between chaos and order, between *tohu bohu* and universe. If God withdraws, creation is left to the laws of decay and to the laws of blind chance and creation will return to its original disordered state. Where, in Psalm 104, God is engaged in putting order into things, chaos occurs where God hides his Face (Ps. 104:29). This does not happen just like that. If humankind, the crown of creation (Ps. 8:6-7), turns radically away from God, then God from his side, turns away from Man. Listen to the prophet Jeremiah. After first having put out a call to repentance (Jer. 4:4), he says: “Take away the foreskins of your hearts lest my fury come forth like fire because of the evil of your doings”. He continues (4:19-27): *“The alarm of war! Destruction upon destruction, for my people is foolish. I saw the earth. It was without form and void (tohu bohu), and the heavens had no light. There was no man and the birds had fled. The fruitful place had become a wilderness at the presence of Yahweh and by his fierce anger.”* We encounter this same *tohu bohu* at the beginning of the creation story: *“The earth was without form, and void”.* This “without form, and void” is seen as the primeval chaos that God made ordered and regular, so that everything fitted together in an organic whole, meaning that we can rightly speak of a UNI-verse. Wherever God is occupied in creating and continues to do so (the shepherd of Israel does not slumber or sleep) there is no *tohu bohu*, which is why *tohu bohu* preceded the first day of creation, and see: God created light!

We who see with our own eyes the earth torn apart,
but blindly and relentlessly deny what is happening:
That war is commanded and peace ought not be,
that men kill men, that we are those men.

We who may yet live, filled with hope and fear,
abandoned to powers more than our own fault,
we who, God knows how far, have been spared so far:
That we may never acknowledge the right of fire and sword.

That we may not forget what we were made for,that deep
within our conscience the Light awakens anew.
That, in us, is recreated the spirit that survives,
that our dear earth may yet have a chance
of being saved.

A hymn by Huub Oosterhuis

12.48 – The Erroneous Theory of Evolution

The Darwinian theory of evolution assumes that if we can speak of a creator, this somewhat vague individual, having called the world into existence, went off to look after his garden and left nature to its own devices. After having laid the race track and given the starting shot, there was nothing left for God to do. For, it is said in a quasi-pious manner, creation is in fact completed and can look after itself; in fact, evolution is provided for in the plan of creation under the law of cause and effect. According to this view, it is irrelevant whether the world was created or not. In either case the result is the same. This concept is interesting from a philosophical point of view, since God in his omnipotence could have opted for it, but in his wisdom, and especially his LOVE, He decided otherwise and has made it known by many signs and revelations throughout history. The Judeo-Christian view, therefore, assumes God's active intervention. This fits the image of a God who is like a mother hen, gathering her chicks under her wings (Lk. 13:34). And thus creation, as stated from the start, is one half: the other – God Himself – is required to bring creation to its final destination. It does not have to be like that. If needs be, God turns his back on us in the final resort. In Hebrew this is known as '*hester panim*': the hiding of God's face. If God leaves the world to its own devices, then the end is near, then remains only 'the day of judgement'. The turning away from God is described in Deuteronomy 31:17 (see also 32:20): "*In that day I will forsake them and* ***I will hide My face from them*** *and they shall be devoured. And many evils and troubles will befall them."* God Himself lives in an inaccessible Light that no man has seen nor can see. Thus God clothes Himself in an external garment, the *panim*, in order to hide his Inner Essence, the *p'nim*. And still that face is of such great magnificence that no man can even see it and live. If God hides his face from us, the situation is serious, so much so that Moses prayed: *"If Your Presence does not go with us, do not bring us up from here (Sinai)!"* (Ex. 33:13; 1 Tim. 6:16)

In his arrogance modern man thought that with the discovery of the laws of nature he had explored to its greatest depths the reality that surrounds us. At the time, the next logical step was the theory of evolution, which is at fault from the outset because its proponents assume that evolution is based on laws of chance. But God leaves nothing to chance, except there where mankind (who is appointed as crown of creation) gives up and turns away from God through misbehaviour. In response God – who respects our freedom! – takes his distance. He then becomes the silent clockmaker (an expression of

a well-known evolutionist). Creation is then left to what is called immanent justice, a justice which follows from the very nature of the actions performed by man. The concept of immanent justice excludes any idea of punishment that comes from above or from without. That's what is meant by immanent, based on the Latin 'manere in': to stay inside. That term denotes something that flows from the thing itself, without the interference of a transcendent or external cause.

Since the episode of the Tower of Babel, self-satisfied mankind may no longer build high towers, though a small one such as at Siloam (Lk. 13:4) was permitted, a human construction that had been left to the laws of chance and killed eighteen passers-by when it collapsed. If, in general, people walk with God, then He bends the laws of chance so that their society is blessed, and towers such as that at Siloam only collapse if 'by chance' nobody is passing. But, in the incident alluded to, at that one crucial moment there were people passing by and they were killed. Under the prevailing circumstances they were no more sinful than the rest. Indeed, seen from the viewpoint of chance, they could well have been better than the rest.

This is not to say that God cannot act as the punishing God either. Where the possibilities for recovery have been completely exhausted, pruning will be carried out - albeit in the extremis. The flood and the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah are examples and warnings of this. God is also righteousness, but his righteousness is different from ours. How then to understand Psalm 94? *"O Lord God, to whom vengeance belongeth; O God, to whom vengeance belongeth, shew Thyself. Lift up Thyself, thou judge of the earth: render a reward to the proud. Lord, how long shall the wicked, how long shall the wicked triumph?"* Vengeance in this psalm is a somewhat unfortunate translation of the Hebrew nekama. A revenge in the human sense is usually the result of wild pent-up anger, and if indulged it breaks all standards of decency. Nekama, on the other hand, is a cool and balanced response that belongs to the legal terminology. It involves reprisal for wrongdoing and it includes compensation for the injured party. The latter is unfortunately missing in our Western criminal law, and falls under civil law. That is why in that same psalm God stands up for the oppressed: the widow, the stranger and the orphan. When justice returns to where it belongs, they, the upright in heart, feel assured of being protected under God's wings. And thus God is to them a helper and a fortress (a place of refuge). So indeed, God is a party, standing guarantor for the weak and displaced. God's 'punishment' thus corresponds to his commitment to those who are defenseless against the human measure of violence, hatred and greed. The psalmist, who wrote this, renounces vengeance, refrains from making amends with his own hands, and prays God to consider his case and compensate the misdeeds that were committed. See, for instance, Psalms 43:1 and 109:31. The praying person thereby not only surrenders his enemies to God, but also himself, and essentially observes the lesson from the Letter to the Romans (12:19): *"Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto [divine] wrath: for it is written (Deut. 32:35): Vengeance is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord."* Two verses further stands in stark contradiction to our petty human intuitive justice: *"Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good."* This is so extreme that we lack the commitment to do so, but fortunately God has sent us the Holy Spirit, the Helper who helps us in our weakness. The evildoer, however, has to fear, for the fear of God, the submissive respect, is far from him: God his redeemer is neglected by him, if not rejected and opposed. Look at what Deuteronomy 32:31-36 tells about it:

> «« For their rock is not as our Rock, even our enemies themselves have to acknowledge it. For their vine is of the vine of Sodom, and of the fields of Gomorrah: their grapes are grapes of gall, their clusters are bitter; their wine is the poison of dragons, and the cruel venom of asps. Is not this laid up in store with Me, and sealed up among my treasures? To Me belongeth vengeance, and recompence; their foot shall slide in due time: for the day of their calamity is at

hand, and the things that shall come upon them make haste. For the Lord shall judge his people, and repent Himself for his servants, when he seeth that their power is gone, and that soon there will be none shut up, or left. »»

The work of the Holy Spirit in God's plan of creation

"When the Spirit began to hover over the earth", said St. Ambrose, *"creation was devoid of beauty. Through the workings of the Spirit she received all that astonishing beauty that makes her shine as 'world'."* The Holy Spirit makes creation pass from chaos to cosmos. He makes something beautiful out of it, well-ordered. God was not Creator just once, but always remained. The action of the Holy Spirit makes the Universe, the Church and every person advance from chaos to cosmos, that is, from disorder to order, from confusion to harmony, from disfigurement to beauty. The Holy Spirit unceasingly creates and sees to it that the face of the earth is reborn.

From the 3rd Lent Sermon in 2012 by the Vatican Pastor, Father Cantalamessa, entitled: "St. Basil and the Belief in the Full Divinity of the Holy Spirit".

12.49 – A remarkable example: Scud Rockets Fired at Israel

There is a remarkable example of the idea that God assists the weak and those who desist from taking the law in their own hands. That was evidenced during Operation Desert Storm, when the US decided to drive Iraq out of Kuwait, which the Iraqis had brutally invaded. To contain a potentially dangerous escalation of the war, Israel agreed not to intervene and retaliate whatever might happen. As feared, numerous mid-range missiles, so-called Scuds, were fired at Israel. Yet, the destruction and casualties were minimal. In spite of the American Patriot missiles intercepting the Iraqi Scuds while still airborne, 39 were to hit their selected targets, mostly in population centres such as Tel Aviv. As a result 10,992 apartments and 1,235 private homes were completely destroyed. Inexplicably there was not a single death. Many people were pulled from under mounds of wreckage several metres high. The only fatality was that of an elderly man who died of a heart attack in the hospital after having survived an impact that destroyed his home. In contrast, the only Scud that in Saudi Arabia hit a military base killed 19 Americans. That was to be expected, for in the first Iran-Iraq war, the death-toll from Scuds falling on Teheran was on average nine dead for each Scud!

Chaim Herzog addressed the nation on Febr. 22, 1991, in the Voice of Israel radio program, commenting on these wondrous incidents: *"The Jewish nation witnessed many miracles throughout its history, from that of the splitting of the Red Sea to the miracles that we are witnessing this very day. This time, as well, we are being blessed with Divine intervention."* The editor in chief of the profoundly secular magazine "This World" (HaOlam) wrote in a leading article: *"God's hands guide the Scuds, their lethal shrapnel, away from people to walls. God's hands - it could be nothing less. You stand, shivering and shuddering, opposite a house reduced to rubble, and you are amazed that these tons of concrete and steel can tumble while the residents of the sealed rooms are barely scratched. Miraculous. Time and again, miracle upon miracle, and then yet another miracle; there is no other explanation."* This is how it works when 'Hashem Elokei Yisrael' (the God of Israel) wants to save.

There was one Israeli casualty from the Scuds, which is usually not counted because considered God's judgement on a man called Eitan Grundland of Ramat Gan, near the border with B'nai Berak.[100)] His wife was on the phone with him when she heard the air-raid sirens sound. Moments later the line was cut off when a Scud struck their home.

There is a story to it. Grundland was raised and educated in an institution that taught Torah, Mishna and Talmud to all ages, the Yeshiva ha-Ro'eh, to be precise. He left the path and turned completely against his past, to the point where the Grundlands' apartment had a sign on the front door saying: *"In this house, we eat pork."* In B'nai Berak he once drove his motorcycle into a Chassidic synagogue during the Sabbath morning service. He roared around the *bimah* (the centrally positioned reading platform) during the Torah scroll reading and went out again. The people were hopping mad, of course, and discussed what to do about him. The rebbe told them that they were not going to do anything. The insult was not to the worshippers but to the Master of the Universe, he explained, and He would deal with it accordingly. The rebbe said that Grundland would die by stoning, on a Sabbath, having desecrated G-d's honor on a Sabbath. That does not make sense: in Jerusalem there is no Beit ha-Mikdash - the great Temple - and there is no Sanhedrin, as in Biblical times, that can pronounce and carry out death sentences and even if there were, it is forbidden to do so on a Sabbath. The rocket that killed Grundland fell just after the onset of Sabbath. When the target was hit, the man was precipitated from a second story apartment to the ground below and a block of concrete wall fell on top of him. Look up the laws concerning death by stoning. It is not to be done in the Hollywood version or the way Muslims do it. The convicted criminal is taken up onto a building, bound and thrown off. A heavy stone is thrown down on him and then, in the event of his not being dead, he is pelted with stones. Technically speaking, Grundland died by the ritual process of stoning, on a Sabbath. God's chosen people cannot legally execute on a Sabbath, true enough, but 'He' can. It is not without reason that a rebbe is but a rebbe.[101)]

The above does not mean that in God's plan there is no room for chance in the scientific sense of the term but that – where relevant – chance accommodates itself to God's intentions and mind. In this accommodation nature does not pass the bounds set for it but shows itself as the helper of mankind. Nowadays, in our times, it appears to have become judge and executioner of humanity. And in this I have no problem with according a personality to nature which, as an organising principle, has entered into a collaborative contract with us and reacts to our positive and negative activities.

12.50 – The very unusual number 2732

The bold assertion that God steers chance by means of a higher system of laws, I would like to illustrate by the following discoveries regarding the number 2732, which is related

100) Rabbi Yosef Kahaneman, of blessed memory, was renowned for his efforts in rebuilding Torah instruction from the ashes of the Holocaust. In the Torah city of B'nai Berak he helped to establish the jewel in the crown by building the Ponovez Yeshiva, which at present is one of the most distinguished Yeshivos (schools) in the world and is famous too for its myriad of affiliate institutions. He built a Yeshiva for pre-teens, another for young men, and still a third for married scholars. He built the Batei Avos, a huge housing complex with hundreds of subsidised apartments for needy families. He built schools for orphaned boys and girls in B'nai Berak, Ashdod, and numerous cities across the State of Israel. Often he would visit wealthy patrons in the United States, Canada, South Africa and Europe to appeal for contributions to his Ponovezer Institutions. The story is told, perhaps apocryphal, that one particular donor once confronted him in jest: «« "Why is it, Rabbi Kahaneman, that all the other Rabbis and heads of Yeshiva who visit me never mention money? All they talk about is Torah and mitzvos (precepts). But you come here and cut right to the chase. You don't talk about Torah and mitzvos. Your appeal, however, is direct and to the point. You come here and say that you need one hundred thousand dollars to finish a girls' school in Ashdod. Why don't you also give me a speech about Torah, mitzvos and Jewish continuity?" Rabbi Kahaneman did not draw back. He took the man's hand and looked him straight in the eye. Then he made a profound statement: "You know me well. Many fund raisers talk, 'Torah, Torah, Torah', but they mean money, money, money. I talk money, but I mean Torah, Torah, Torah." »» (from "Words Like Arrows" by Rabbi Mordechai Kamenetzky)

to the comparison between circle and square, discoveries that apply exclusively to our blue planet called Earth. If we cut a circle out of a square, the area of the four left-overs covers 27.32% of the circle area, calculated according to (4-π)/π, where the value of π (Pi) is the result of the Chudnovsky algorithm, which calculates the old value for π. The geometria sacra teaches that Christ's incarnation has inscribed the circle into a square, stated differently, introduced the divine into our human nature after having first converted the square into a cross. Yes, that's why God designed our Earth. The following observations, which are in line with the foregoing, can be safely called God's watermark.

The following outcomes point at the same remarkable number: a leap year, which repeats itself in a cycle of four, counts 366 days and 1/366 equals 0.002732; the absolute zero is minus 273.2º Celsius; gases undergo a volume change at a ratio of 1/273.2 for every degree change in temperature; a sidereal month lasts 27.32 days (the astronomical circle of the moon around the earth); the duration of pregnancy, according to medical manuals, is 273 days; the acceleration of the moon is presented as 0.273 x cm/s^2; the lunar diameter is 0.273 of the Earth's diameter and is 'coincidentally' at the correct distance between the Earth and the Sun to give a perfect solar eclipse (the lunar disk is identical to the sun disk to the eye on Earth). The current speed of light of 299,792 km/second is equivalent to 7,481 times our equatorial circumference of 40,075 km. and this 7,481 was found to be 0.23% higher than the square of 2,732, or almost equal.[102)]

This cannot be pure coincidence. The observations of the absolute zero point and of the expansion rate of gases may be systematic, but the expression of these two is based on our earthly air pressure – in fact an arbitrary base but nevertheless an obvious point of departure under the experimental conditions found on our planet. As regards the second, which is the measure of time to which the speed of light relates, everyone knows that this is related to the speed of rotation of the earth, which, to be precise, counts 86,400 seconds per day, divided over 2x12 hours of 60 minutes and 60 seconds per hour each.

It should be mentioned that the twelve or sixty-digit system is derived from our hands. The 2 times 12 hours and the sixty seconds are created as follows: with the right hand each finger counts «1» and with each «5» an extra phalanx of the four fingers of the other hand counts, a total of 12 phalanges, so 12 x 5 = 60. The thumbs do not count because they are used for counting. This method, which is at least 4,000 years old, is still used in Australia when at the end of the season a cattle count is made, when – after grazing in the wild – they are sent to the corral. These findings are odd, especially concerning the so-called non-systematic values, like the measure of time and the earth circumference. By definition, the latter was initially set at 40,000 kilometers (the meter is derived from this). The number 144 (or 144,000), which is a well-known Biblical number, is created by counting the twelve phalanges of both hands (12 x 12), and it

---

101) David Bedein from Israel Resource News Agency, investigated the incident.

102) The speed of light is not constant when measured over time. She is constant at every now-moment. Sometime, in the not so distant future, the speed of light will be at 299,113 km/second, corresponding exactly to 2.732 squared x the circumference of the Earth, because the speed of light decreases over time. It cannot be calculated with the current state of science when the point will be reached that the speed of light equals 299,113 km/second, because sometimes the speed of light is accelerating, as it is currently the case. On average, however, the speed of light decreases. Also should be taken into account that the Earth may rotate faster or slower on its axis after an encounter with a celestial body (in particular, this will be the case with the confrontation on April 13, 2029 with the asteroid Apophis that weighs about 35x as much as Pyramid of Giza). This would have repercussions for the duration of one second; and if the second changes, the calculated speed of light changes.

symbolizes the largest possible number (by means of this simple method). So it should not be taken literally, and it means in Biblical parlance: ‘as much as possible’.

This unlikely combination of observations clearly points in the direction of design. The process itself that has led to these wondrous outcomes is, when seen from a superficial point of view, quite normal. These kinds of results seem to point at remarkable coincidences, as with Grundland’s execution. Is it also a remarkable and special coincidence if our passport happens to have a watermark? No, because it shows who is the creator and owner of the passport who designed this watermark. The sequencing process of the origin of our solar system, and in particular of our blue planet, turns out to be miraculous from its results and not from any observation related to the process itself. And this also applies to the harmonious ordering of nature, or its disastrous disordering into tohu wa bohu, into the seething and whirling movement of the primeval sea.

PRELIMINARY REMARKS ON APHOPHIS AND THE ENDTIME CLOCK

Transcript of the lecture by Hubert Luns on March 25, 2023
in Nijmegen, the Netherlands

Dear attendees,

Feel priviliged that once again I may give a lecture in this small circle on a subject that concerns us all: "the end-time chronology", though this time via audio tape.

Since my conversion at age 23, which is now more than 50 years ago, I have been intensely preoccupied with everything related to the end times. The two most impressive prophets in that area are Marie Julie Jahenny, who died in 1941, and a French housewife, who calls herself JNSR and is still alive. That name is an acronym for "Je ne suis rien" (I am nothing), or "Jésus Notre Seigneur Revient" (Our Lord Jesus Christ is coming back). JNSR is one of the seven end-time prophets, of which MDM (Mary Divine Mercy from Ireland) is the seventh. Naturally, I have also studied the Book of Truth which we may call the end-time book. In this jumble of prophecies, much of what is said is vague or seems contradictory.

I came across something through which I found the key to this issue. That was the prophecy of a certain Tom Horn who in 1975, during the night, had a nightmare showing God's judgement on the earth; he did not publicize it at the time. But that frightening dream repeated itself in 2019, that is, more than 55 years later. A year later, he was then interviewed by Sid Roth on his widely viewed television program "It's Supernatural". Sid deals primarily with end-time events and miraculous things. During this interview, Thomas Horn mentioned that he had seen a comet strike and unleash catastrophic events all over the earth. He also then heard a name: Apophis. Apophis is the god of chaos from Egyptian mythology and to his surprise, shortly after his dream, he saw a message telling him that Earth would have a near collision with the comet Apophis on April 13, 2029. That was confirmation to him of the accuracy of his dream. Thing is, when this comet was first discovered in 2004, a press statement went out that there was a danger of this comet falling to Earth. The U.S. space agency, NASA, has denied this report, insisting that the comet will skim past Earth at a distance of 35,000 km. Well, such precision is impossible. That thing travels at a speed of 80,000 km. per hour, which is equivalent to twice the Earth's circumference in just one hour, and it is approaching from far beyond the solar system. While a calculation may indicate that this comet will skim past Earth at 35,000 km., which is the distance at which communications satellites are located, there is a margin of uncertainty that just as easily this comet

might crash into Earth itself. In this regard, I prefer to adhere to Tom Horn's prophecy. According to him, this comet will fall west of the United States into the Pacific Ocean.

Calculations point out that the object is 35x heavier than the Pyramid of Cheops (Giza). If this comet falls into a tectonic fissure it could have far-reaching effects because a computer program has indicated that the energy released on impact is equivalent to 3.5 million Hiroshima bombs. So it is something we have to take seriously. I for my part not only take it into account, but take it as a benchmark for all end-time events. Note that April 13, 2029 is now only six years away. In that space of time we will experience The Warning. In that space of time comes the Antichrist. In that space of time will be the Second Coming of Christ who will annihilate the Antichrist with the Breath of his mouth. A great deal more happens during that time, yet the time of Christ's final Second Coming is much later. In fact, there are two Comings and three Judgements. We first have the judgement of the Antichrist and his henchmen, to be followed by the judgement of nations and finally at the final Second Coming the judgement of each one individually.

The judgement of nations is accompanied by massive tsunamis, volcanic eruptions and meteorite rains. As a result, the face of the earth will be changed so that the various continents will once again face each other. A period of penance and repentance will follow in the years following. And at a time not yet foreseeable, Christ will return. Even Christ Himself does not know when that point comes that will coincide with the beginning of the Reign of Peace. Before the judgement of nations occurs we will see the rapture of the saints, which is logical because their testimony and their own purification will then have been completed. I hope you may be among those people. God's judgement needs no additional witnessing. After all, this is God's way of giving testimony. Because of the meteorite rains (many small debris), the earth will not be able to give harvest for a number of years, if at all, so much so that people because of famine will turn to cannibalism - from the corpses lying in the fields. There is no need to be surprised about this, because it is also mentioned in the Bible during the siege of Samaria. (2 Kings 6:28-29, see also Jer. 19:9) The enemies of God were already cast into Hell, but fortunately many billions of people will have survived this cataclysm.

At the beginning of the Reign of Peace, our own condition, which until then had fallen prey to the inclination to evil, will also be supernaturally restored. After all, Paul's letter to the Philippians ch. 3 announces: "The Lord Jesus Christ will recreate our poor body and make it like his glorified body with the same power that enables Him to subject the Universe to Himself." This ties in with Ezekiel 36:26: "I will give you a new heart and a new spirit. I will remove the heart of stone from your body and give a living heart in its place. I will put in you My spirit so that you can live according to My laws and observe My rules."

Christ Himself will not remain on earth and therefore will not rule in the flesh. That will be the so-called great monarch who will appear on the scene immediately after the judgement of nations. He will be a descendant of Louis XVII, son of King Louis XVI, murdered by the revolutionaries during the French Revolution. This son went through life as Karl-Wilhelm Naundorff and is buried near the outer wall of the Nieuwe Kerk in Delft, which is the church where the Dutch royal family is buried. Nexyt to the great monarch, there will be the great pope. Together they will rule the world during the Millennial Reign. These, like us, will no longer die. Our children will still be able to die. This is stated in the penultimate chapter of the prophet Isaiah (65:20): "If anyone does not reach one hundred years he will be considered a cursed person." Do realize that if all people lived indefinitely, the earth would soon become overpopulated. By the way, I know from a prophecy that the menstrual cycle will have become different, so we need not worry about extremely large families.

So there are two Second Comings. A Second Coming that precedes the judgement of nations and happens shortly after the first three days of darkness. And there is the final Second Coming, again after three days of darkness. The final three days of darkness will be caused by the withdrawal of God's light from the world, creating a darkness that is utterly total. This is another kind of darkness prior to the judgement of nations. At the final return, there is the judgement of each one individually (i.e., not of the nations). The first three days of darkness occur because the sun loses its luster after which there is the rapture of the 'saints'. Shortly thereafter, there are another three days of darkness, now caused by the blackening of the sky by the meteorite rains. After those rains, which purify and fertilize the earth, there would be such a great climatic change that if God did not miraculously intervene, all higher life would have become impossible for a long time. The chastisement has a natural cause, but the dawn thereafter will be supernatural, a prophecy predicts. Yet the earth will first bear little or no fruit for three more years, but after that the harvests will be plentiful.

As for the darkness just before the final return, the Book of Truth says (18-03-2012): "Without God' light, which fills every soul, including sinners, the world would cease to exist. It is this light that keeps the world alive. Many of God's followers, who devote themselves to suffering in union with Christ also help keep this light alive. Just before the Second Coming, that light will disappear in the world for a period of three days. This will happen at the very end and should not be confused with The Warning. It will be during these three days that there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. People will strive to find God's light even though they have rejected Jesus Christ." And the May 13, 2014 BOT: "I, Jesus, will suddenly arrive under the sound of trumpets and the sweet sound of the angelic choir. The sky will be darkened for three days just before I return. Then it will burn in a multitude of colors that man has never seen before.

I will be visible to every man, woman and child, of every age, and there will be great shock, as well as great excitement. People will not be able to believe their eyes and many will be stunned, yet others will cry tears of relief and joy. Many will be unprepared and they will find the event so overwhelming that they will shed tears of sorrow, for they will know in their hearts how they have rejected the true Messiah and realize how unworthy they are to enter Christ's Kingdom. But I, Jesus, now say to these people. On that Day you must cry out to Me and ask Me to forgive you. Then you too will be gathered into My New Kingdom." This is where the December 10, 2012 BOT message connects: "You will be brought in your true home and will be united with your own family. All God's children, privileged to enter this new Glorious Existence, will become as one. Love will be everywhere. Peace, joy, laughter, companionship, miracles and the worship of God will be part of every moment. Death will not exist. Hatred will be extinct. Evil will be eliminated. All humanity will no longer suffer pain or imperfection of any kind. This is my New Paradise. The time of tears will have ended." I am now reminded of Psalm 66:10-12: "You have tried us, O God, purged us, purified us like silver, driven us into a safety net, we have passed through fire and through water, but You brought us to a land of plenty."

So what can we expect in the short term? If we start from the moment the meteorite Apophis strikes, calculated for April 13, 2029, and subtract three and a half years from that we arrive at November 2025. This number, named as "time, times, and a half", is found in Daniel's prophecy (Dan. 7:25). It represents the first part of the great tribulation (half of seven) that begins at the revelation of the Antichrist. Mary Divine Mercy (MDM), the Irish end-time prophetess, speaks in one of her messages in the Book of Truth of the coming of the Antichrist to happen in December 2012. That she got that wrong should not surprise, because the announced prophecies that a prophet hears, appear so real that the prophet thinks that it is only a matter of months or, as in the case of the La Salette's prophecy, a few years. Only now we are traversing the prophecies of La Salette, whereas the revelation to the two children was in 1846. However, since the April 2029 benchmark minus three and a half years points at November 2015, I take the liberty of assuming that the December month of MDM's prophecy is indeed correct, but only the year mentioned was incorrect. Therefore, I assume that the Antichrist will begin to reveal himself to the world in December 2015.

According to Ken Peters (see YouTube: "I Saw the Tribulation" - Ken Peters), just before the Antichrist appears on the scene be the rapture of the dead will happen, that is, of the piously deceased: the logical conclusion is that the graves will break open in Nov./Dec.; the dead will rise from their graves with much noise, and visible to everyone they will be taken up into heaven. People will be very frightened by this and riots will break out everywhere, according to Ken Peters. Shortly thereafter, the Antichrist will appear and announce over the media that this was

caused because these people had lived in sin and are now facing their damnation. Therefore, the living need not worry about this, he says. In the letter to the Thessalonians, Paul explicitly tells us that the rapture of the dead precedes the rapture of the living - that is us - and he calls this a mystery. Clearly if there was only a short time between the two, he would not have used the word mystery. So there is something more to it, which has now been revealed by Ken Peters, who died some years ago. Therefore, the difference between this and the rapture of the living is not a few minutes or even hours, but three and a half years.

The Antichrist emerges in a time of great turmoil and presents himself as a peacemaker, not so difficult when you have caused the problems yourself by pushing behind the scenes for the outbreak of major wars. He will be admired like no other in history and draw many to him by his charm and eloquence. I see in Obama someone who already carries many traits of the Antichrist. But the Antichrist will be an Obama squared.

Prior to the Antichrist, there will be The Warning, or the illumination of conscience, which is similar to what the Apostle Paul experienced on his way to Damascus (Acts 9). Many will be so shaken by this that they will go into cardiac arrest. Afterwards, there will be suicides as well. Would not be surprised if 5% of the people will die on account of The Warning, with another three times that number lying on the verge of exhaustion on bed, some of whom will have to be taken to the hospital. There are three prayers in the crusade prayers that beg that those who die because of The Warning, having had no time to repent, will still be saved by God. There are also quite a number of messages in the BOT (Book of Truth) that talk about this. Initially, normal life will have been totally disrupted after this event, and I expect it will take about seven to 10 days for society to get back on its feet, with the first priority being to pick up the dead and the seriously ill, and make sure the supermarkets are functioning again. The BOT predicts that there will be a time of calm after The Warning over the world and that the Remnant Church will then constitute a force to be reckoned with in the world. There are many indications that in this year, 2023, The Warning will come, albeit at a time when no one expects it: "I will bring My gift of The Warning when the time is right and when My children least expect it." (BOT Dec. 15, 2011) If we assume it will take place in mid-2023 (an assumption, no more), we then have two and a half years before the Antichrist reveals himself, preceded by months of worldwide turmoil and wars. After all, as the BOT predicts, many will fall back into their old sins over time. After an initial enthusiasm, a neglect of prayer will prevent them from escaping the inclination toward evil. The powers of evil will have to reorient and regroup after The Warning has taken place, and that requires time, but regained in strength they will try to intervene in world affairs more daringly than ever.

With the foregoing, the end-time chronology is presented in general outline. Thanks for listening.

To answer two questions following the seminar:

Q 1: Is there really nothing to say about the date of Christ's final return?

Answer:

Much can be said about that within wide margins, although a precise date is impossible. Christ Himself says in the Book of Truth that only the Father knows when He will return. Even Christ does not know. (BOT 18-08-2011, 24-02-2012) What is certain is that Christ will not return until the earth will fruitful again. Because of the judgement of nations, the earth has been plowed over, being polluted with sulfur and the like and so it will not be able to produce much food for the first years, if any at all. Because of that plowing (because of the meteoretic rain), many new substances have been added to the soil, causing it to be cleansed of pesticides and the negative effects of artificial fertilizers, so that when the earth starts producing crops again they will be plentiful. If we now add three years to 2029 for putting the seasons and harvests back to normal, we arrive at 2032. One thing is certain: Christ's final coming will not take place before 2032. In addition, extra time is required for reconstruction to prepare for a worthy welcome for Christ. His coming in glory is to be implored. We are not aloof witnesses. Isn't the Lord's Prayer a perfect prayer of supplication for that? It is Our Heavenly Father who will tell whether He is adequately compensated for all the insults received in the past from a more than ungrateful humanity. Surely this interim will take at least three years. If we add those two terms together we arrive at 2035. And thus, I am of the opinion, an opinion, that the final coming is a real possibility only as from 2036, i.e. 2029 plus 7 years. Take note that even in human terms, the Second Coming is near, because the BOT of Febr. 24, 2012 states that most of our generation will be able to experience it. If we add another seven years and again a third time, we arrive at 21 years, which means 2050 at the latest. That I see as the upper limit. I take the liberty of saying that Christ will return in between 2036 and 2050, which gives a margin of uncertainty of 14 years. In this sense, no one knows when but we do know of a wide period in which it is going to happen.

Why do we have to wait so long? First, man must be inwardly cleansed through penance and repentance. "Only when the purification is complete", says God the Father, "will My Son return. The purification of which I speak is the separation of the good people from the evil. "Those who have filled their lives with the lies that Satan has planted in their souls will still have time to repent." (BOT 18-05-2012) Note that Lucifer and all demons and devil worshippers have already been cast into the abyss prior and during the judgement of nations. This period also serves to bring reparation for the sins committed in the past, which is why they will have to seek earnestly for Christ's return. That time will also be

used for healing, spiritually and physically. I remember a prophecy that 1 in 10 people will have the gift of healing, which seems sensible to me. However, that will not only be used for the living but also for our ancestry. Each one will vouch for his own ancestry into the distant past, because just as the curse was passed down through the generations through posterity, along the same line our blessings will flow back for the benefit of our ancestors. This is also called the healing of memories. A fact is also that not everyone goes to Heaven, Hell or Purgatory after death, but that a number of souls remain chained somewhere here on earth. They too need healing and salvation. An appropriate term for this is baptism for the dead (1 Cor. 15:29), a term that people in theology do not know what to do with.

Reconstruction will obviously take a long time such as infrastructural works, the establishment of a good scientific practice in which science will have rid itself of its arrogance and accept its limitations. Money too will have come to an end, which of course will only be possible if people are totally focused on God and can be totally trusted, a situation that is unthinkable today. Bear in mind that by that time man will be rid of his innate tendency toward evil. People will pray a great deal, especially in the early days. There is talk (in a message from JNSR) of a bell ringing several times a day at which sound the workers in the fields and homes immediately abandon their labor to go and pray in a common place, the Hail Mary, Latin prayers and songs, which were common until the 1970s. Among all those people are also the Protestants, because by then Protestantism will be a thing of the past just like the pagan religions like Islam and Jehovah's Witnesses (who believe Jesus was the angel Gabriel). The sub-division between the Eastern Orthodox churches and Catholicism will also have come to an end. The priests will have once again become servants of Christ and will no longer be busy building their own castles. The Apostle Peter will have returned to earth as pope to rule the world together with the great monarch. JNSR prophesies that by then it will have become quite normal for someone to pray an hour and a half a day. That is not what it is today.

Nevertheless, there will still be fighting in the beginning. Marie Julie Jahenny, in particular, talks about this. Under the great monarch, armies will fight against the Mohammedan hordes. Those wars will not last long because each time the Islamists will be defeated in undeniably miraculous ways that will force them to come to the recognition that their god is not Allah but the God of the Bible and that their prophet is not Mohammed but our beloved Jesus Christ. But why is this battle still being fought after the judgement of nations has taken place? Well, God is the God of all people. He also loves the Mohammedans whose upbringing often prevents them from thinking differently.

I myself hope (with a large margin of uncertainty) that Christ will return as early as 2036. However, we may be fairly certain that his final return

will occur within 3x7 years plus 2029, making 2050 the final date. This also fits with the message of the Book of Truth of Feb. 24, 2012: "Only I, God the Father, know of this time of my Son's return. Even My Son does not know the date. I can tell you that it will be soon and that most of this generation now living in the world will still be alive on the day of My Son's return in great glory." The May 18, 2012 Book of Truth explains why an interim period will be inserted after the judgement of nations: "Not until the purification is complete will My Son return. The purification of which I speak is when the good are separated from the evil. Those who fill their lives with the lies Satan has planted in their souls still have time to repent." The vast majority, the BOT promises, will take God's side and thus be saved. Yes, God is more than victorious and reaps a rich harvest. Then there is the prophecy, over two months later on July 26, 2012, which states: "The final stage is the sanctification – the final purification so that the whole of humanity is fit to enter the perfect Paradise [and only then can the Messiah be given an appropriate welcome].

In the Reign of Peace, of course, there will no longer be the use of contraceptives, but women will not be able to have huge numbers of children as in the past, because an old prophecy, which I have never forgotten, states that the menstrual cycle will be different then. The children who will be born this way will not have eternal life. The Book of Truth of Feb. 24, 2012: "My chosen generation will be with Me forever. This Paradise will offer 1,000 years of peace, love and harmony. After this period, the second resurrection of the dead will take place. Only then can eternal life be given to all souls with God's light shining through them."

The earth would become overpopulated if no one would die in those thousand years. The penultimate chapter of Isaiah describes the coming reign, in Hebrew the olam haba. In it is written (Is. 65:20) : "At that time the infant of a few days shall not die, nor the old man, if he has not fulfilled his days. For one dies like [in the vitality of] a youth, though one becomes a hundred years. And he who does not become a hundred will be seen as a cursed one!" The meaning of "one dies like a youth" is that pestilential death will have been done away with. A dying will then truly have become a going to sleep, a peaceful passing away. If prophecies foretell, including those of the BOT, that death will be no more, we must look at the Hebrew meaning of the word death. The word demot means likeness or form and points to dema which means to be destroyed, and that in turn points to the Hebrew 'mut' or to die in the sense of pestilential death. The sting will be taken away to accomplish the promise from Hosea 13:14: "Death, where is yet your pestilence, grave, where is your rot?" as well as Revelation 21:4: "Every tear He will wipe away from their eyes, and death (mut) will never exist again." And finally, we look at 1 Corinthians 15:26, 55: "Death is the last enemy that will be destroyed. Death, where is your victory? Death, where is your incentive?"

Those who went through the Great Tribulation and remained faithful to their Lord and Shepherd despite great persecution and terror, as well as those who were raptured just before the judgement of nations, those will have eternal life, and of course our loved ones and family members who return from the grave. When we speak of Christ's final return, let's suppose that it takes place in 2043, then it is conceivable that some who have been raptured in 2029 will return some time earlier, perhaps in 2036, to be able to participate in and have leadership in the reconstructon effort.

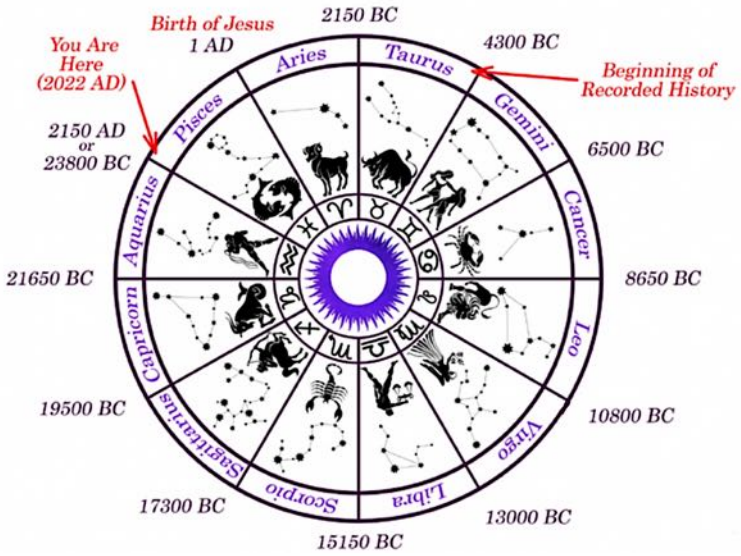
Q 2: Why does the number seven play such an important role and why is it counted in multiples of seven or in portions of seven, specifically 3.5 years of tribulation before the judgement of nations, to be followed by 3.5 years thereafter?

Answer:

The end-time emphasis on the number seven is based on the Prophet Daniel, the prophet who indicated the exact time of the coming to earth of Jesus Christ. But he is also the prophet of his return. This count is especially evident in the ninth chapter of the Book of Daniel. Seven is an important number. The creation story in Genesis 1 speaks of the six days in which God created the world, and since then we have been in the seventh day, which is again divided into seven: Christ came to earth at the end of the fourth day after Adam, or the year 4000 AM (Anno Mundi), and so now we are on the threshold of day 6 to 7. Seven always indicates a consummation. And after that seventh day of a thousand years, the Millennial Reign of Peace, comes an eighth, indicating a new beginning on the cosmic keyboard, each octave indicating a new scale. The Bible does not write about the new octave, but we do know from the various prophecies that God did not create the material universe and our earth for a limited time, but forever and its inhabitants are also destined to continue to dwell in it. As the Book of Truth says (24-02-2012): "My chosen generation will be with Me forever. This Paradise will offer 1,000 years of peace, love and harmony. After this period, the second resurrection of the dead will take place. Only then can eternal life be offered to all souls with the light of God shining through them."

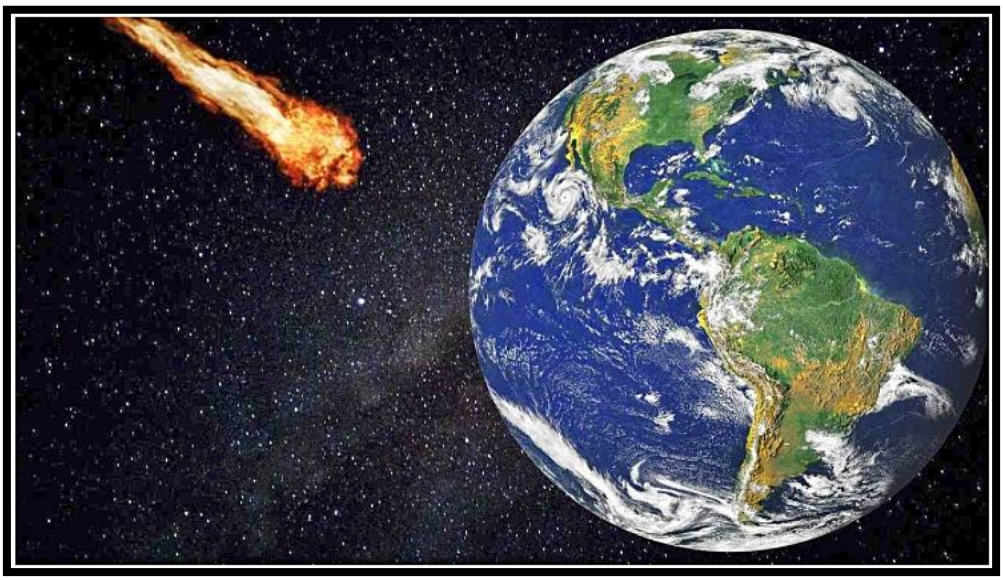
An interesting side note is that also according to pure paganism, which uses the zodiac of twelve, we are now entering the seventh era. Our earth has experienced a sharp rise in sea level since the end of the Last Glacial Maximum (LGM), some 20,000 years ago, from at least 120 meters below the present sea level. The resulting catastrophes were already largely over by the beginning of the 11th millennium BCE. The zodiac of 12 has a cycle of 25,772 years (related to the toll movement of the earth).

In the year 10,900 B.C., the earth was on the threshold of the constellations Virgo (virgin) and Leo (lion). That point is symbolized by the Great Sphinx in Egypt, where the statue has the body of a lion topped by the head of a virgin. We are now at the threshold of the seventh constellation (180 degrees further away), that of Aquarius, also representing a period of peace. These thresholds cannot be pinpointed exactly to the year, but it is certain that we are now moving from Pisces to Aquarius. See Internet: "aquarius lyrics".



APOPHIS AND THE ENDTIME CLOCK

The Apophis asteroid was discovered on June 19 2004, by the Kitt Peak National Observatory. The NASA report of Dec. 23 2004 mentioned impact chances on Earth of around 1 in 300 in 2029. This was widely reported in the media. Later that day, based on a total of 64 observations, the estimates were adjusted to 1 in 62, resulting on Dec. 27 in an update to the initial report and an upgrade to 4 on the Torino risk rating. Apophis set the record for highest risk ever on this scale. It assesses the seriousness of a possible collission with a celestial object. Level 4 is defined as "A close encounter meriting attention by astronomers in view of the fact that the current calculations give a 1% or greater chance of collision capable of regional devastation. " — March 2022.



A chunk from space rushes closer and crashes in the big pond, like a glowing ball, burning the air with terrible howling, gigantic power. As a death-missile it crashes in the Earth. As concentrated power racing through space, it brings a deadly destroying seed. Mountains, they crash – and life, it dies; a death-monster, which now spoils much. Loud cries, the people in a sizeable choir, shoot their misery upward to the Creator of Heavens and Earth and find the way to bow down for God. They scream and cry and plead for blessing and love and help from now on, but they never thought about the great law, about the love-commandment, which they broke. They lived along, passing Creation by, because all-the-while Love was immaterial to them. Only the punishing power of the Highest One allows them to repent and find their way back home, the home of the Almighty One.

13.51 – God's First Judgement in Fast Cadence

The chronology outlined in this article is based on the scientific observation of a massive asteroid, currently on a disaster course toward Earth, which will lead to an encounter on April 13, 2029.[103)] This asteroid was identified on June 19, 2004 by the Kitt Peak National Observatory in Arizona (KPNO), who was the first to discover it, and then they named it "99942 Apophis". This name is derived from the Egyptian god of chaos, who is usually depicted as a long-winding serpent. Apophis is hurtling through space at gigantic speed and will be visible as from 2025 with commercially available star gazers; and later it will be visible to the naked eye.

The Sid Roth interview of March 8 2020 (at the left Dr. Thomas R. Horn)

My attention was drawn to this by a 2020 interview with Dr. Thomas Horn, who is a television and radio personality and author of a number of bestsellers. This was in response to his most recent book: "The Wormwood Prophecy"[104)] and featured on Sid Roth's much-watched program: "It's Supernatural!"[105)] Thomas Horn is director of Sky-WatchTV; he is known for his prophetic insights that deal with the times in which we live. Our time is similar to what preceded the Flood when Noah and his people managed to save themselves. Although the train of events will now be very different, it is no less dramatic. Only a few were saved during the Flood, but today there will be billions.

Sometime in the year 1975, when Tom Horn was newly married, he died for a short time while sleeping in bed at night, as his wife can attest. He had a nightmarish dream, which he describes as follows: *"I was standing in front of a very brilliant light. Somehow I knew that I was standing in front of God. I also knew that He had shown me some things and that at one point even a scroll had unfolded and that I had watched vivid images.*

---

103) When the object was discovered in 2004, it was more than 16 billion km away from us, while the distance from Earth to the edge of our solar system is about 4 billion km.

104) In 2021, Thomas Horn published "Zeitgeist 2025" in which he goes into the end time chronology. He states (pp. 284-85) that Christ's return is to be calculated as from April 13th 2029 plus the 1335 days, spoken of by the Prophet Daniel, which brings us to 2032. Add over 40 years, he says, "for 'clean up', so that in the year 2075, the Kingdom Age can officially begin with nothing left to be fulfilled [prophetically]." This fits with the Qumran archaeological finds, of which he says (p. 279): "If the Essene calendar is correct, by the year 2075 everything should be in place for the Millennial Reign of Christ to begin." And as concerns the year 2025, he says (p. 277): "In the year AD 2025, if the Essene calendar is correct [but it does not fit the Panin Bible Statistics, which is the only correct one – see App. 2], then we will enter the marked exchange zone of our age and the Kingdom Age." Furthermore (p. 282): "If we assume the middle of the Tribulation is April 13 2029, we can substract 1260 days (42 months) and arrive at Nov. 1st 2025 , as the date when the Antichrist 'confirms the covenant' (Dan. 9:27) – which is officially the beginning of the seven-year Tribulation." Note: According to the Panin Numbers, the 7th millennium started in AD 1995, that is, 80 years earlier.

105) On YouTube under "Sid Roth - The WORMWOOD Prophecy: 2029 Asteroid Striking Earth?" Well worth it! The name Wormwood is taken from Revelation 8:11: "And the name of the asteroid that fell from heaven was Wormwood". See also: "Tom Horn Dies & God shows him the Future | Supernatural Stories". The quote is from the last one.

But I was not allowed to remember them, except for some future time." In 2019 he had this experience all over again, which he describes as follows:

> «« I was on the top of a mountain somewhere, and was surrounded by thousands and thousands of people. And everybody was in a panic. Everybody was screaming and running and looking back over their shoulders, including me. And that part of the vision for me was the most frightening and the most real, because so far as my mind was concerned at the time, it was actually happening. And I remember turning and looking back over my shoulder and I could see this giant burning mountain that was coming through the atmosphere, breaking apart as it raced towards the surface of the Earth. And as we were all running, all of a sudden, this stone fell into the Pacific Ocean. It knocked all of us off of our feet. The whole planet felt to me like it was shaking, vibrating so roughly, that we could not stand up. And I heard this horrible cracking sound as if literally the mantle of the earth was breaking apart. And again, I looked back over my right shoulder and I saw this giant tsunami, a massive wall of water that was coming up over the top of this mountain. And I knew that we were all getting ready to perish. And just then, as if two large hands came down underneath my arms and lifted me up into the air so that now I was looking down on the planet and it was horrible. It was terrifying as this water was rushing over the top of all of these desperate people who were screaming and crying and praying. And I watched something that only later did I understand – from a science point of view. I'm not a scientist. So I only could write down what I saw, and then later I verified. [And I then discovered that] this is exactly what a scientist say would happen [with such an event], as I saw the waters of the Pacific Ocean – where this stone, this massive burning stone fell – were boiling and the aerosol that was coming up off of this water moved up into the upper atmosphere. And a whole series of hurricane movement started moving across the hemispheres of the Earth. And then a second very large part of this stone that had broken off of it, evidently, as it entered ino the atmosphere, impacted the Earth and ignited a series of volcanoes. And all of this material was being blown up into the upper atmosphere and gettting caught in the jet stream, moving around the earth. Very soon, within a period of days, darkening out much of the sun and the moon and the stars. Then I woke up; I was so terrified, I literallly almost fell out of bed and grabbed a sheet of paper, which I've learned to keep next to my bed with a pen. And I started writing down all of the minute details, blow by blow of what I had seen and what I had experienced. But before I could do that, it was as if a voice in the room spoke and uttered a single word, and that was the word 'Apophis'. »»

According to current NASA predictions (Wiki March 18, 2022), there is absolutely no danger of impact, although at an altitude of about 31,600 kilometers a number of satellites would be knocked out while the Earth itself was not in danger. **But such a precise prediction is impossible, even absurd, as every expert knows; if the celestial body (a NEO or Near Earth Object) comes so close to Earth, a calculation can give an average result, but due to the large margin of uncertainty, the object could just as well impact the Earth itself.** There happens to be a scandalous cover-up. On the contrary, the impact risk remains extremely high, even if the averager NASA calculations would be correct. **Because I believe in the Bible and Tom's vision appears true to me, I know, thanks to the Book of Truth (BOT)** [106)] **that Christ's return is near. Since the Book of Revelation speaks of this, we may say that from this perspective the collision is not a danger but a certainty. Our compass for navigating these waters is the Book of Revelation.** By now

106) The Book of Truth (BOT) consists of the writings of the Irish lady MDM (Maria Divine Mercy), one of the seven end time prophets, which were given via the communications of the Eternal Father, Jesus Christ and the Most Blessed Virgin, as from November 2010 until May 2015.

Apophis should have a rating of 6 on the Torino scale, but it has been downgraded to zero, meaning that the impact risk from Apophis is considered less than the background hazard level, level 6 defined as*: "A close encounter by a large object posing a serious but still uncertain threat of a global catastrophe. Critical attention by astronomers is needed to determine conclusively whether a collision will occur. If the encounter is less than three decades away, governmental contingency planning may be warranted."* We may argue that Apophis is the instrument of God's First Judgement as set forth in Revelation 8 and 9. Successive angels, there, announce punishments with the sounding of trumpets. This deals, according to Tom Horn, with one and the same punishment, in with everything unfolding in rapid succession. That is why, in the following Bible quotations, the interludes with the angels have been omitted:

> «« (Ch. 8:) And there were noises, thunderings, lightnings, and an earthquake. Hail and fire followed, mingled with blood, and they were thrown on the Earth.[107] And a third of the trees were burned up, and all green grass was burned up. [A day later] a great mountain [like a star], burning with fire, was thrown into the ocean. And a third of the sea became red, like blood. A third of the living creatures in the sea died, and a third of the ships were destroyed. And this great star [currently called asteroid] fell from heaven, burning like a torch. It fell on a third of the rivers and on the springs of water. The name of the star is Wormwood (bitter). And the third of the waters became bitter, and many men died from the water, because it was made bitter. Then the earth was darkened so that a third less light was given, not only from the sun but also from the moon and stars [because of the soot and the sulphur that hung in the air]. Day and night were darkened. (…) (Ch. 9:) And the four angels, who had been prepared for the hour and day and month and year [April 13, 2029], were released to kill a third of humankind. Thus I saw the horses in the vision: those who sat on them had breastplates of fiery red, hyacinth blue, and sulfur yellow; and the heads of the horses were like the heads of lions; and out of their mouths came fire, smoke, and brimstone. [The horses here are a symbolic representation of volcanoes.[108]] By these three plagues a third of humankind was killed, namely by the fire and the smoke and the brimstone which came out of their mouths. For their power is in their mouth and in their tails [lava flows]; for their tails are like serpents, having heads; and with them they do harm. But the rest of the people, who were not killed by these plagues, did not repent of the works of their hands, that they should not worship demons, and idols of gold, silver, brass, stone, and wood, which can neither see nor hear nor walk. And they did not repent of their murders or their sorceries or their sexual immorality or their thefts. »»

Another description but now in layman's terms, corresponds to this:

> «« Because of the huge explosion, as soon as Apophis entered the sphere of the Earth, the world shook like a drunken man, and thunder rolled around the entire globe. The planet shuddered and many volcanoes erupted. The main part of the exploding red-hot asteroid crashed like a titanic fist into the Pacific Ocean, where the crust of the Earth is not very thick – usually seven to ten kilometers that can be

---

107) According to Marie Julie Jahenny (1850-1941), the Breton stigmatist who prophesied much about the end times, the comet shower will start on a Thursday and end on a Saturday. So Apophis will crash west of the US and on land on Day 2, with the comet shower hitting Europe on Day 1. From this it can be deduced that the rapture in Europe will take place a day earlier than in the US. Because the comet shower will continue for three days, the whole earth will be affected.

108) There are about 1,350 potentially active volcanoes worldwide, aside from the continuous belts of volcanoes on the ocean floor at spreading centers like the Mid-Atlantic Ridge. About 500 of those 1,350 volcanoes have erupted in historical time. Many of those are located along the Pacific Rim in what is known as the Ring of Fire.

cracked more easily, certainly if the object touches the bottom where two tectonic plates meet each other near the continental shelve; the by pressure solidified water helps to create the breach. It would take less than two seconds upon impact before the iron core had lost its velocity,[109] but not unnoticed: as if the world was going under. For the power released was far greater than all the atomic bombs that in their madness that the nations keep ready for action.

The large cloud of meteorites, some of which of monstrous size,[110] took multiple orbits. A wide shower rushed like rabid dogs close over the surface of the Earth, leaving in its trail fire, death and destruction, turning everything upside down,[111] until reaching its final destination somewhere in the Laplandic plains, where it created, with a trembling and furious roar, gaping wounds from the many impacts of its debris.

Deep in the ocean, where the big chunck fell, the Earth's crust was torn apart. Earthquakes were felt and the way was opened for the boiling hot and glowing magma from the inner Earth, which now viciously swirled out. The seawater began to bubble and to boil, and vaporized masses shot up like giant geysers high into air. Through all this, the wild ocean was thrown up into gigantic tsunamis that hit the shores with frantic speed at a height of maybe a thousand meters, and pulled along everything and destroyed whatever they met on their paths. The secondary effects were no less dramatic: the continuous shaking of the Earth and the eruption of volcanoes, new and old, created major landslides that hit the waters, triggering their own mega-tsunamis in many places in the world.[112] »»

Père Louis Marie Pel (1878-1966) is a great saint who fits in the illustrious list of three: Pio, Pel and Paul (the last one, a Belgian father).[113] He said: *"Jesus gave me his heart."* The prayer, not his, which undersigned often prays, is accordingly: "Jesus I love you,

---

109) Without a high metal content, the object could never cause the devastation described by Thomas Horn. Otherwise it would disintegrate like a paintball as soon as it touches the sea. See: "Paintballs clarify what happens when an asteroid hits the earth's ocean" by Nola Taylor Redd, Nov. 15th 2018 (Sky&Telescope).

110) The BOT of Dec. 14th 2014: "I, Jesus, will send down upon you a punishment so great that you will find it difficult to catch your breath; hailstones of such large dimensions will hurl down from the heavens."

111) As might surprise, the temperature of more than 1500°C of a meteorite, traveling through the air, is not caused by friction but by extreme compression of the air in front of it, which subsequently transfers its heat to the meteorite and its wide surroundings. A falling meteorite is not a localized affair, but because of the thick envelop of air that travels with it, the effects are not localized at all. By means of supercomputers scientists try to simulate the effects in slow motion.

my beloved. You live in me and I live in You." (Eph. 3:17) He prophesied in 1945 about God's First Judgement: Of that the Book of Truth (BOT) comments:

«« The First Judgement [also called Judgement of Nations] is close and I will cast the wicked aside, as the New Heaven and New Earth will only welcome those who accepted my Mercy. Many will say: 'God is Merciful. He would never show such cruelty.' My answer is this. The Earth, as you know it, will be no more. Instead, a new renewed Earth will emerge – much larger, greater than before [to be understood as habitable surface], where twelve nations will reside, side by side, in loving harmony. Only those who remain loyal to Me and those who do not know Me, but who do accept my Hand, when I prove to them the Truth at The Warning, will enter the gates. »» (Aug. 15th 2013)

"But concerning the times and seasons, brethren, you have no need that I should write to you. For you yourselves know perfectly that the 'Day of the Lord' so comes as a thief in the night. For when they say: 'Peace and safety!' then sudden destruction comes upon them, as labor pains upon a pregnant woman. And they shall not escape. But you, brethren, are not in darkness, so that this Day should overtake you as a thief. For you are all sons of light and sons of the day; we are not of the night nor of darkness; we do not sleep, as others do." (1 Thess. 5:1-6)

Père Pel goes into great detail about what will take place during the First Judgement and more particularly as regards France, the eldest daughter of the Church:

«« Know that with the sins of the world increasing in abomination in this age, very great divine chastisements shall descend upon the world, and no continent shall be spared from the wrath of God. As for France, guilty of apostasy and denying her vocation, she will be severely punished. There will be a dividing line going from Bordeaux to Lille. [If we extend that line to the south, Portugal appears to be spared; Madrid falls to the east of this line.] To the right of this line, everything will be destroyed and burned by the invasion of peoples from the East…,[114] but also by the fall of great fiery meteorites that fall in fire showers

112) For example, the Cumbre Vieja Volcano on the Canary Island of La Palma has the potential to trigger a megatsunami along the Atlantic coasts that will also hit the eastern United States with unprecedented destructive power. According to Père Pel, there will also be gigantic tsunamis in the Mediterranean. As scientists such as Prof. Bill McGuire have determined, the western flank of the Cumbre, which is now heavily ruptured, will at some point break off as a result of vulcanic eruption and slide into the ocean, and cause massive tsunamis. YouTube: Megatsunami Scenario – La Palma Landslide, as well as: Dreams: East Coast USA tsunami judgment & moving day!!! (from a young woman called Melissa.) This last YouTube is interesting for, according to her vision, the tsunami will be caused by a comet; she also said that **at the first timpani of the comet, the rapture of the saints takes place** (in the US) (1 Thes. 4:16). Melissa also mentions an eight-year-old girl (her daughter?) who 'heard' that the comet's impact and the rapture were **during a Thanksgiving.** Well, in the U.S., Thanksgiving is the feast of bringing in the first harvest, and thus the rapture is the cutting off of the first crops, of those who belong to Christ, a thanksgiving thus in a figurative sense, not pointing to an exact date.

113) Père Pel was above all an ardent apostle of the Sacred Heart of Jesus, a great devotee of the Sorrowful and Immaculate Heart of Mary, and had a burning love for Jesus-Host. He was blessed with nearly 3500 Eucharistic miracles and spent his nights standing with his forehead against the door of the tabernacle, in permanent ecstasy, conversing with God whom he saw face to face. He spent about two hours celebrating Holy Mass, in Padre Pio style, and spent exhausting days in the confessional. Besides, he had his apostolate and the 'missions' that he preached throughout France. Endowed with iron health, a car accident had to end his life: he was then 86 years old.

on the whole earth and in these areas in particular. It will be general destruction. Revolutions, war, epidemics, plague and others, poisonous and chemical gases, violent earthquakes. The extinct volcanoes of France will become active again and destroy everything: Auvergne, Alps, Pyrenees and other places. While the left part of the line will be less affected – Vendée, Brittany, because of the belief still rooted in these regions. But nevertheless it will be necessary to go far from the coasts, sometimes even as far as 50 km, to escape the engulfment to the bottom of the seas, like Marseille and the Côte d'Azur, which will be swallowed up – because of the committed sins and the scandals on the beaches of these regions in particular.

But I must tell you, my child, that the sectarians and the great enemies of God, who have taken refuge for this, believing that they can escape this world cataclysm [the reality of which they have not denied in advance], shall be put to death by the demons themselves wherever they hide, for the wrath of the Lord is just and holy. [However, most people on earth will be in total ignorance as a result of being bombarded with fake news.]

Dense darkness, caused by war, gigantic fires and falling pieces of fiery stars [meteorites], which will fall for three days and three nights, will make the sun disappear.[115)] And only the church candles blessed for this occasion will be able to give light in the hands of believers. But the wicked will not see this miraculous light because their souls are in darkness.

Thus, my child, three quarters of humanity will be destroyed[116)] and in many places in France you will have to travel a hundred kilometers to find someone like me [thus a priest]. People will come to eat human flesh in order to survive.

Several countries will disappear from the world map. [Especially those countries that have been instrumental in the abortion hecatomb – see the BOT of July 29th 2012: *"The anger of my Father will be witnessed by those nations, who have legalised abortion, during the Chastisement. They will be wiped out and no compassion shown to them just as they showed no remorse for this mortal sin when they condoned the killing of God's children in the womb."* And message of August 29, 2011: *"My punishment on countries guilty of legalizing abortion will wipe out nations. Your countries will divide into little pieces and fall into the ocean. Your vile clinics and hospitals, where you carry out these practices, will close and you, the guilty among you, will be cast into the fires of Hell for your heinous crimes."*]

France will have become small, but this part remains until the end of times. For she will again, thus purified, become the eldest daughter of the renewed Church.

---

114) This corresponds to prophecies of others predicting an invasion of Russian troops. Since the acts of war immediately precede the Apophis' impact, this means that the impact of Apophis will be denied until the very end, or its effects will be minimized. Otherwise there would be absolutely no interest in unleashing a war at just such a time, which of course must have started a few days before the impact materializes.

115) The question arises whether this is all due to Apophis. No, because the meteor shower lasts for three days and nights and creates enormous havoc. It seems, from prophecies, that the prolonged meteorite shower will not be detected long in advance, which is possible if the meteorites are stationary in the sky, i.e. if the movement in the sky is identical to the movement of the earth.

116) Even those who turn to God at the last moment during this turmoil and die, will be saved and thus be candidates for the Reign of Peace that will begin a few years later. The BOT of Sept. 18th 2013 states through Jesus: "I will raise the dead, those who have been purified in the depths of Purgatory, as well as those who are awaiting, patiently, in Heaven, for the arrival of this Great Day. The rest will be banished. Your time on Earth has been decided by my Father and this day [of the New Paradise] is still unknown to Me, but I tell you this. You, of this generation, will be gathered and taken into my New Paradise when Heaven and Earth will become one."

For all the Cains and Judes of humankind will be gone in this Judgement of the Nations, but the End of Time has not yet come, for it will be later [when the predicted Great Tribulation by Daniel the prophet will have come to an end]. [See Appendix 3 with a message from the BOT.]

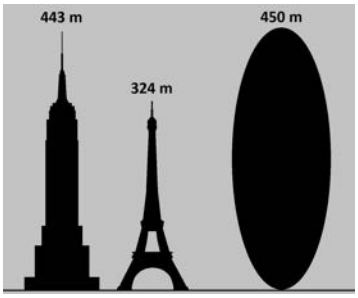
The Mediterranean will disappear completely. The oceans will blast huge jets of scorching steam into the air and send terrible tidal waves [tsunamis] across the continents, destroying everything in their path. New mountains will rise from the oceans and from the mainland, while at the same time the Alps and Rhine Valley to the north collapse and become engulfed by water. Therefore, the current map of the world will change completely [and according to the BOT it will be divided into twelve nations, to be ruled by the twelve Apostles.]

And the Earth will [during a certain time] no longer rotate normally on its axis due to heavy shocks. The seasons will be gone for at least three years before the earth can return grasses and vegetation. Great famine will reign all over the world.

Paris will be destroyed by the revolution and burned by Russian nuclear fire from Orleans and the Provins region [both not far to the south from Paris], while Marseille and the Côte d'Azur crumble into the sea.

More than 3 billion people will disappear in this global turmoil. Jesus said there will be no more such great destruction, not even at the end of the world, so great will be the punishment for the sins of the world. »»

13.52 – The NASA not always trustworthy



If Apophis measures 450 meters

To predict a possible collision of a celestial body with our earth, NASA uses the number Pi. The number Pi, known for thousands of years, is said to be incorrect according to scientific outsider Harry Lear. He mentions this in his open letter quoted below to US President Trump, who founded the Space Force shortly afterwards; more on that later. The classic Pi value is 3.14159…, but according to his calculation method it should be 3.14460… And this third-place decimal difference would have resulted in an inaccurate calculation of the impact risk. So far, no scientist has bothered to disprove Harry Lear's evidence for Pi, despite urging several scientists to do so. That is of minor importance for the present discussion because there are compensatory errors – if he is right. Yours truly would like to leave the discussion to the experts; it is far beyond his knowledge. Harry Lear explains:

«« Too many mathematicians using Archimedes' polygon limit approach think it is OK to compute the tangent or arctangent of a right triangle whose short side is 'curved' and not straight. (If it's not a straight side, it is not a right triangle and the notion of tan and arctan go out the window. Even using the calculus, it is a gross error to assume that you can [correctly] compute the tan or arctan of a curved side [unto many decimals], since then the curved triangle is not truly a triangle.) »»

Harry Lear proposed the CNC method[117)] to support his calculations, which NASA undoubtedly did, but did not make public. It wouldn't be the first time NASA pretends nothing is wrong. This would not be the first time that NASA has played dumb. For one, Dr. Nathan Myhrvold has shown that NASA made serious errors in calculating the size of asteroids, but NASA refuses to enter into a serious discussion about this.[118)] JNSR[119)] says several times that the elite are plotting to leave earth, without JNSR explaining why. That may be related to Apophis and would be a form of betrayal. After all, the captain should be the last to leave the sinking ship. The correct solution is to turn to God, because

just like with Nineveh (see the Bible book Jonah), here too, God can intervene in the natural course of events.

On June 18, 2018, President Donald Trump signed the 'Space Policy Directive', establishing Space Force as the sixth branch of the Armed Services, and the first new military service since 1947. In 2022 it had a budget of more than USD 18 billion. The reasons behind it are mainly about NEO's (Near Earth Objects), and Apophis is a NEO. Among other things, Space Force must investigate methods of prevention of potential impacts of NEOs with the Earth. In no time the decision and funding were secured via Congress. That was four and a half months after Harry Lear's open letter to Trump, pointing out the real threat of an Apophis impact. That was unbelievably fast, and a remarkable coincidence. Harry Lear's credentials are: Pentagon and Saigon, Vietnam MACV HQ in SSD, ACSI, Special Security Detachment, Assistant Chief of Staff Intelligence, Top Secret Crypto EO NOFORN, other classified special access codes – 1965-67 US Army. His open letter of February 15th 2018 begins as follows:

> «« Houston, we have a BIG PROBLEM. NASA/JPL's Near Earth Object calculations for the trajectory of the Earth's orbit intersecting the orbit of Asteroid 99942 (nicknamed Apophis) on April 13, 2029, were calculated using the wrong value of

---

117) With a Rotary Circle Cutter (CNC machine) the true value of Pi can be verified experimentally. Harry Lear's website: "Measuring Pi Squaring Phi" explains in great detail how he did this himself.

118) Dr. Nathan Myhrvold, who is a very competent and distinguished scientist, has written in 2018 two articles in which he outlines the errors of the NASA funded WISE/NEOWISE in their published findings, notably as concerns their estimates for size and brightness of NEOs. NEOWISE uses a space telescope to hunt for asteroids and comets that could pose a threat to Earth. In Myhrvold's article on this topic, the one from June, is written: "Each of the NEOWISE papers typically has several co-authors. All told, the work of hundreds of scientist has made use of NEOWISE data. Within planetary science, asteroids are a big deal, and so is NEOWISE. Asteroids are also important to all of us here on Earth, non-scientists and scientists alike. We know that an asteroid killed the dinosaurs. In 1908, a [little] asteroid impact flattened the large forest of Tunguska, Siberia. And in 2013, a [much] smaller meteor exploded in the air over Chelyabinsk, Russia. The NEOWISE results are critical to assessing the risk of future impacts, which in turn depend critically on having accurate diameter estimates. In recognition of this risk, Congress directed NASA in 2005 to identify 90% of all near-Earth objects that are 140 meters in diameter or larger, by the end of 2020. That work is coordinated by the NASA office that oversees NEOWISE. At this stage the possibility that this is all an honest error is impossible to support. The pattern of deception continues in every communication from the NEOWISE group. If this was an honest mistake, why didn't they just say so at the outset? Instead there has been no transparency from the NEOWISE team and a steady stream of further deception and misconduct. Under these circumstances, the NEOWISE group appears to have made the calculated decision that was better to deny everything than to address the issues I raised — or to admit any mistakes at all. The problem with this approach is that the longer you deny things, the worse it gets. As is often the case, the cover-up turns out to be worse than the crime. Had I given up, however, the strategy would have worked."

See: "180522-Examination of WISE asteroid analysis - Myhrvold" and "180614-What's Wrong with NEOWISE - Myhrvold", both available on Myhrvold's website.

• Nathan Paul Myhrvold, formerly Chief Technology Officer at Microsoft and is co-founder of Intellectual Ventures. He is listed as co-inventor on 17 U.S. patents at Microsoft and is co-inventor on over 900 other U.S. patents issued to his corporation and its affiliates. His doctoral dissertation was "Vistas in curved space-time quantum field theory" under the supervision of the theoretical physicist Malcolm Perry.

119) J.N.S.R. is an acronym for a simple mother in France, which means "Jesus Notre Savior Revient" (Jesus our Saviour returns) or "Je Ne Suis Rien" (I am nothing). She has published at least 14 books since 1993 containing prophecies, from 1988 until 2014, which she received mainly from Jesus and the Blessed Virgin Mary, but also from the other persons of the Holly Trinity and from saints like Padre Pio.

> Pi = 3.141592654… (…) Using the old value of Pi, NASA is currently stating that Apophis will miss Earth on April 13, 2029, by only 32,000 km (18,000 miles). (…) This 32,000 km is the distance of our satellites above Earth. The difference between NASA's erroneous calculations of the orbits of Earth and Apophis using the wrong value of Pi is significant [Harry Lear seems to be very sure of himself]: 901,434 km too short for Earth and 831,517 km too short for Apophis. If NASA's current orbital calculations are wrong by hundreds of thousands of kilometers, why should we believe that Apophis will miss planet Earth by a measly 32,000 km if they use the incorrect value of Pi? NASA is already off by 900,000 and over 800,000 km, just for the basic calculations, and we have not even mentioned other parameters that also use Pi such as gravity (centrifugal force) and centripetal inertia. The BIG QUESTION is: If NASA uses the new, true value of Pi = 3.144605511… instead of the old, erroneous [?] value of Pi = 3.141592654…, would the trajectories of the Earth and Apophis orbits still miss planet Earth by 32,000 km or would Apophis crash into Earth? (…)
>
> There are some troubling factors. (Harry Lear continues) Apophis was predicted to exist by a Swiss individual named Billy Eduard Meier in 1981. He stated that it would crash into Earth on April 13 2029. [This is pertinently incorrect, as Billy Meier did not mention a date.][120)] This was 23 years before Earth astronomers discovered Apophis in 2004. Meier has been publishing astronomical and other information as a contactee [as Billy claims], meeting with human ETs [of course not] called the Pleiadians for the last 75 years. Billy Meier and the Pleiadians called Apophis "The Red Meteor" and predicted from their calculations [??] that Apophis would strike planet Earth somewhere along the Tectonic Plate from the North Sea (Northern England) to the Black Sea (near the Ukraine). They still hold this prediction to date. [again note 18] »»

According to the Jan. 21, 2022 calculation (on wiki), Apophis appears to be more than 10x as heavy as the Pyramid of Giza (6.1x10^10 kg/5.2x10^9 kg), but that is a conservative estimate and could be 35x.[121)] In early 2022, this one had an unimaginable impact velocity of 77,800 km/hour (see the Apophis lifestream), which speed is equivalent to

---

120) Here, Harry Lear refers to Billy Meier's Contact Report 150 of the 10th of Oct. 1981, wherein there would be mention of the date of April 13 2029, **but that report does not mention the impact date of the Asteroid**, nor does it mention its weight. Indeed, it mentions the wrong crash site on earth. If you can calculate the crash site, then you also know the exact date and hour of the impact, but that the report fails to mention. The next contact report on the same topic is from November 2008, or more than four years after Apophis' discovery by Kitt Peak National Observatory. I wrote an email to Harry Lear, pointing out that the date is missing from contact report 150. He answered immediately and made it clear that he made an honest mistake. Such things happen, errare humanum est.

Billy Meier claims to have had since 1952 contact with representatives of the Pleiades (444 light years from Earth), when he was five years old; it is only through those contacts, so he says, that he has gathered his information. According to many Christians, the encounters with so-called extraterrestrials are nothing but demonically inspired illusions. As far as the New Age nonsense is concerned, they are undoubtedly right. As far as the Contact Reports are concerned, they display very clearly a version of New Age philosophy, venting an undisguised hatred of Catholicism, particularly against Pope John Paul II. Religion in general is having a hard time. The Billy Meier Interview of Nov. 20, 1988 states: "Religion, in its present terrestrial-human sense of understanding, is foreign to the Pleiadians. A creator god, or whatever the various terrestrial cult religions call him, is an abomination to the Pleiadians, and they view the concept as unrealistic." The conclusion is inescapable: Billy Meier is demonically inspired. Incomprehensible that Harry Lear fell into this trap, but he is not the only one. The international FIGU community, which is committed to promoting Billy Meier's work, has approximately 30,000 members, according to Harry Lear, including many scientists.

almost twice the earth's circumference. Professor Gareth Collins of Imperial College London has calculated that the amount of energy released on impact, assuming the conservatively estimated weight of 10x Giza, is equivalent to the global nuclear war potential (3,750 bombs), which amount to one million times the power of the Hiroshima bomb,[122] with the understanding that everything is concentrated in two bombs, as it were, because Apophis, according to Thomas Horns' vision, strikes as a double fist (one part breaks off upon entering the atmosphere).

13.53 – The Chronology of Events

According to the BOT and many other modern prophecies, we are now living in the end times, and Bergoglio, who calls himself Pope Francis, happens to be the False Prophet, so called in the Book of Revelation. This figure is also called the second beast (Rev. 13:11; 16:13, 19:20, 20:10). Together with the Antichrist and Satan, the False Prophet is the third person of the unholy trinity. He is the last pope of our age, because the next one, that of the Reign of Peace, will be Petrus Romanus. (BOT, Aug. 30th 2013) Since Bergoglio is at present very old, it cannot be long; it is now five to twelve!

The final act of our present world will conclude with Judgement Day, also called the First Judgement or the judgement of the nations. The instrument used will be a judgement star as revealed in Revelation 8 by the Greek word 'absinth' (bitterness), also translated as Wormwood or Artemisia. The judgement star appears to be the asteroid Apophis. Thanks to Thomas Horn's vision, which he got the first time in the year 1975, we know that Apophis, first discovered in 2004, is the Biblical Wormwood. Apophis, the NASA calculation shows, will meet our Earth on Friday, April 13, 2029, and not merely skim past it, as the NASA falsely claims to be an established fact. We may regard that date as a precise benchmark to which the various end-time-prophecies can be linked. God's punishment is, as always, conditional, because the approaching disaster can be averted if, as with Nineveh, a sufficient number of people will sit in sackcloth and ashes.[123] Otherwise there will be no escape, and the earth will be plowed under by this gigantic boulder and its simultaneous meteor shower.

According to Thomas Horn's vision, the first impact will cause a rupture in the Earth's mantle. As a result, massive expanding volcanic activity will develop, initially beneath the surface of the water, but that was hidden from his view. The second chunk, he saw, fell on earth, causing volcanic activity there as well. Because of the disastrous climate changes that follows it and also because of many new active volcanoes, even if they would not continue to spew, most of the world would have become uninhabitable for beings like us. JNSR, one of the seven end-time prophets, says that the catastrophe has

---

121) If Apophis consists for a large part of metals, it could be even 35x heavier than Giza (according to Wikipedia such a comet weighs 5,3 g/cm3). With a differen composition, the Earth's mantle would probably not be ruptured in the event of an impact into the ocean. Weighing in at 35x, the total explosive power is equivalent to 3.5x the war potential of all atomic bombs on Earth, or a staggering 3.5 million Hiroshimas.

122) The effects of Apophis when hitting Earth, are not mentioned in any publication by Professor Gareth Collins. I asked him about it and he replied: "I am afraid there are no documented 'simulations'. The quote was a bit misleading in Robert Lea's article of Sept. 22 2021 in Space: 'Apophis: The asteroid we thought might hit us'. I was asked if we had used the 'impact effects calculator' to estimate the consequences of an Apophis impact, which I did for fun and you can too: https://impact.ese.ic.ac.uk/ImpactEarth/" Collins is Professor of Planetary Science in the Earth Science & Engineering Department. His research explores the many consequences of impacts in our solar system through the development and application of numerical models. He is well placed to evaluate the consequences of a direct hit by Apophis, which in spite of the developed models remain very uncertain.

a natural cause, but that the following dawn will be supernatural. The impact will be so terrible that without that supernatural beginning the approximately three-year recovery period for soil fertility (period mentioned by Père Pel) would be completely inadequate to return to the habitable environment befitting the coming Reign of Peace. And then, at the beginning of that Reign – a number of years after the second phase of the Great Tribulation – our own condition, which up to then was prey to the inclination to evil, will also be supernaturally restored. The letter to the Philippians 3:20-21 announces: *"The Lord Jesus Christ, will transform our lowly body that it may be conformed to his glorious body, according to the working by which He is able even to subdue the Universe to Himself."* Which ties in with Ezekiel 36:26-27: *"I will give you a new heart and put a new spirit within you. I will take the heart of stone out of your body and give you a living heart instead. I will put my Spirit within you so that you can walk according to my laws and observe my rules."*

The entire end-time chronology is tied to the date of the judgement of the nations, that is, April 13th, 2029, with the other dates being less exact. The three days of darkness will occur before that date, counting in terms of perhaps days, at most a few months. In the message of the Most Blessed Virgin Mary of March 11, 2014 (BOT), a discourse on the last days of the Antichrist reads: *"Then, when the Great Day dawns and after the three terrible days of darkness are over,*[124] *a great Light will appear over the Earth. This Light will surround my Son and the sun, which will be at its greatest strength, and will descend over the world – both at the same time. Not one person will fail to witness this supernatural spectacle. The roar of the announcement will be heard by all through every form of communication known to man. Therefore, all will anticipate a great event [the coming Reign of Peace], but [cf. 1 Thess. 5:1-6] they will not know the time, the hour or the date [of that event]. And then those, whose names are listed in the Book of the Living, will be gathered."* By the latter is meant the rapture because God's chastisement, which follows shortly after the rapture, constitutes in itself a sufficient witness, and therefore the testimony of God's remnant church is not wanted anymore. The idea of the rapture follows from 1 Thessalonians 4:16-17: *"For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of an archangel, and with the trumpet of God. And the dead in Christ (the deceased) will rise first.*[125] *Then [it does not say directly afterwards], we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air."* 1 Corinthians 15:51-55 joins in: *"Listen, I tell you a mystery: not all will we sleep [die], but we will all be changed in a flash, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound [as a sign of God's omnipotence], the dead will be raised imperishable, but we [the living] will be changed [later, at the appointed time]. For the perishable must clothe itself with the imperishable and the mortal with immortality. And as the perishable has been clothed with the imperishable, and the mortal with immortality, then the Word of Schripture will have come true: 'Death has been swallowed up in victory. Where, O death, is your victory? Where, O death, is your sting?' (Is. 25:8, Hos. 13:14)"*

The judgement of the nations will last for only a few days, although there will be many after-effects. Beforehand there are the three days of darkness followed shortly thereafter by the rapture of the living – in the U.S., cf. Melissa's vision, at the first thunderous blast of the impacting asteroid (Apophis). The BOT says the following about those first three days of darkness and what follows leading up to the judgement of the nations:

---

123) A precedent did not only exist with Nineveh – where punishment was averted through penance and repentance. Something similar played out in 594 BC, a catastrophe that was not averted and marked the end of the kingdom of Judeah. This is explained in Part III of my book: "Proofs of the Life and Death of Jesus" (pp. 294 ff).

124) During the continuous three-day meteor shower that soon follows, there are again days of darkness, caused by the black smoke.

«« As sin envelops the world, the sun will slowly lose its lustre and become dull. As man loses his sense of love for others and becomes immune to the pain he inflicts upon others, because of sin, the world will become darker – darker of the spirit, darker by day. (…) The sun will dissipate until finally, no light will cover the earth for three days. The only light will be that which comes from the Truth. And, on the fourth day, the skies will burst open and the light – the likes of which you will never have believed possible will pour from the Heavens. Then I will be seen by every person in every country, at the same time, in all my Glory, as I come to reclaim the Kingdom promised to Me by my Father. (Some years later, during the judgement of persons, the final return follows.) »» (Oct. 24, 2014)

After the terrible First Judgement, Christ's final advent is imminent. But we don't know the day nor the hour of this return, that of the Second Judgement, not even Christ knows. The BOT of March 18th 2012: *"I will never reveal the day for only my Father knows this but, I can assure you, that the time for my Second Coming is close."* We do know that it will be soon and that through our prayers we can speed up his Coming, the parousia. This Coming will also be preceded by a number of days of darkness, but then by a different cause. The first three days of darkness were caused by a darkening sun. The ensuing three days of darkness by the meteor shower, and the three days of darkness of Christ's final return will be due to the withdrawal of the inner Light of God, in fact the withdrawal of God's Love that holds everything together and makes it alive. The BOT of March 18th 2012 says the following about this:

«« If it were not for my light, which fills each soul including sinners, the world would cease to exist. It is my light which keeps the world alive. Many of my followers who consecrate themselves to suffer in union with Me, also help keep this light alive. Just before I return my light will disappear in the world for a period of three days. This will happen at the very end. (…) This will be the day I come to Judge [the persons individually]. I will divide my people into those who love Me and those who hate Me. Those who rejected Me and paid homage to all things evil will be banished in the eternal fires of Hell. The rest will come and live with Me in Paradise along with the resurrected righteous [from death]. »»

This final return heralds the Reign of Peace. What a joy to get to meet our relatives, sometimes from many generations back. This is what Jesus says about it in the BOT:

«« Those of you who come to Me willingly, without any conditions, with humility and love, will not experience the pain of physical death. Instead, you will, in the blink of an eye, find yourself [at the rapture] in your new surroundings. [In human terms the delay between the rapture and the start of the Reign of Peace will be a number of years; blink of an eye (1 Cor. 15:52) is therefore the Biblical equivalent for time travel.] This will shock you at first, and you will look around you quickly to find your loved ones. I will save so many souls that you will be with your families, including those who you love, who are already with Me in Heaven and those I will release from the fires of Purgatory. Great rejoicing will take place everywhere. This will last hundred days.

My New Paradise will have only one religion, the New Jerusalem, where I will be adored, daily. All will be in union with the Holy Will of my Father. There

125) The Roman Catholic Ken Peters (†2021), of Irish-Portuguese background, saw the rapture of the dead in a dream in 1981. It took place during day time (in the US) and the graves literally broke open, one could speak of an explosion. Thus those people rose to heaven in shining attire. In the aftermath, he perceived a worldwide mass hysteria and crime wave, a real pandemonium. Strangely enough, people reacted in total despair and that lasted for about two weeks. After radio and television came back online, the Anti-christ made his glorious entrance, for the first time, explaining with hypnotic persuasion that this resurrection was a judgement of God upon those taken up [and by no means a judgement upon the living]. (YouTube: I Saw the Tribulation, Ken Peters 2000)

will be twelve nations, but only one language, for I will not permit division. I will appoint leaders and in each nation there will be no shortage of food, water, homes or life. There will be no death, because I will give all those who enter, Eternal Life.[126] All nations will work together to spread the Word of God; and happiness, which is impossible to attain on Earth today, will be one of the greatest Gifts I will present to you. You will be very much loved and you will love Me, just as I love you. Many of you will meet generations of your families, going back centuries. Generations will continue and so you will see your sons and daughters marry and produce perfect children of God – each blessed with great Graces.

There will be appointed, a head of my Church and his name is Peter, for I promised that he [the Apostle Peter] would form my Church on Earth. And so, in the New Paradise he will head up my Church. »» This is the explanation of what Jesus meant in Matthew 16:18: *"I tell you Simon bar Jona, that you will be Peter (boulder), and it is on this rock that I will build my Church, and the gates of Hell shall not prevail against it."* (Aug. 30th 2013, as well as Nov. 17th 2013)

The after-effects are comparable, but much worse, to the after-effects of an all-out nuclear war. The Journal of Geophysical Research published an interesting article in this regard in 2007: "Nuclear winter revisited with a modern climate model and current nuclear arsenals: Still catastrophic consequences." Current climate models were used to calculate the long-term effects of a world-wide nuclear war involving most or all of the world's current nuclear arsenals, representing a capacity of one million Hiroshima bombs. The model found that *"a global average surface cooling of minus 7°C to minus 8°C persists for years, and after a decade the cooling is still minus 4°C. Considering that the global average cooling at the depth of the last ice age 18,000 years ago was about minus 5°C, this would be a climate change unprecedented in speed and amplitude in the history of the human race. The temperature changes are largest over land. (...) Cooling of more than minus 20°C occurs over large areas of North America and of more than minus 30°C over much of Eurasia, including all agricultural regions."* The study did not discuss the implications for agriculture in depth, but noted that a 1986 study, which assumed no food production for a year, projected that *"most of the people on the planet would run out of food and starve to death by then"* and commented that their own results show that *"this period of no food production needs to be extended by many years, making the impacts of nuclear winter even worse than previously thought."* As for the case involving one third of the then current nuclear arsenals, it concluded that the simulation *"produced climate responses very similar to those of the first case, but with about half the amplitude", but that "the time scale of response was about the same."*

As for the after-effects of Apophis, an additional confounding factor is that the gigantic impact energy is concentrated in two points which can trigger volcanic activity. As for the sudden extinction of the mammoths at the beginning of the last ice age, of which completely preserved Siberian specimens were discovered with half digested food remains in the stomach, several theories are postulated. One theory is that due to greatly increased volcanic activity, the soot and the large quantities of sulfur in the air darkened the sunlight, triggering a very rapid decrease in the temperature on earth, for some places even very spectaculair.[127] But there was not only volcanic activity on the mainland, also underwater, causing a strong evaporation that due to the lower temperatures fell down

126) For those who will be born in the New Paradise it will be different, otherwise the world would become overcrowded, cf. Isaiah 65:17-20: "For behold, I'll create new heavens and a new Earth! And the former shall not be remembered any more or come to mind. (...) The voice of weeping shall no longer be heard in her, nor the voice of crying. In the new dispensation, the babe of a few days shall not depart, nor an old man who has not completed his days, for he will die in the vitality of his youth, in spite of being a hundred years old. And whoever does not reach one hundred years will be seen as an accursed one!"

as snow, such that in six months time as much as 110 meters of snow might have fallen (quoted from memory). That could explain why fully intact mammoths died of asphyxiation, as evidenced by the erection of the male genital tract. It should be clear that without God's intervention, after the Apophis impact, the world would for a very long time have become unlivable for extensive regions. About that, JNSR knows to tell that South Africa will become the South Pole, which some say may also be caused by a shift in the earth's cost. Forgot which prophet, but remember well that it was prophetically predicted that France will then have a subtropical climate, confirming the foregoing.

13.54 – The Great Tribulation or Time of Nations

In Revelation 7:14, the term 'the Great Tribulation' is used as follows: *"These are the ones who come out of the Great Tribulation, and washed their robes and made them white in the Blood of the Lamb."* Which refers to Daniel 12:1-4: *"There shall be a time of trouble, such as never existed since there were nations, even to that day. But at that time your people shall be delivered, every person who is found written in the book. And many of those who sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake: some to everlasting life, some to shame and everlasting contempt. Those who are wise shall shine like the brightness of the firmament, and those who have brought many to righteousness like the stars forever and ever! You, Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book until the time of the end [but now that in 2023 the end is near, it is permitted to go into more detail]. Then many will continue to search for it, and knowledge shall increase."*

There is consensus that the Great Tribulation is a relatively short period of time, where everyone will experience worldwide hardships, disasters, famine, war, pain, and suffering, which will affect all of creation, and precede God's judgement at the time of the Second Coming, which is the prelude to the long awaited Reign of Peace. Supposedly, the Great Tribulation is during the reign of the Antichrist after which Jesus returns to separate the sheep from the goats, separating the good people from the bad ones, which is called the Judgement of the Nations, recorded in chapter 25 of the Gospel of Matthew. And then, finally, the gates of the Reign of Peace will open, so that each and everyone can receive his rightful inheritance. But this approach, though very tempting, misses the mark. As we have come to see, Apophis will cut the last seven years in two. In the First Judgement, caused by Apophis, all the demons and their henchmen will be cast into the abyss (the Antichrist and the False Prophet have had their reckoning before), but the Tribulation will not have come to an end yet. For another three years, the harvests will be virtually non-existent, and the inner man of the survivors will not yet have been transfigured. In fact, there will still be many who will not have chosen for God and his ways, not yet. The stubborn and unrepentant will be judged during the so-called Second Judge-

---

127) Scientists found partially preserved stomach vegetation in some of the carcasses and so could identify the woolly mammoth's last meal. Solving one mystery just leads to another. They wondered how the stomach contents remained half digested in hypothermic animals? This is a problem since it takes a long time to freeze an animal as large as an elephant and yet quick freeze must have occurred. Birds Eye Frozen Foods Company in the US ran the calculations and came up with a staggering minus 100°C. Once again, the scientists were puzzled. How could such temperatures be reached on earth, especially when apparently they were in a fairly temperate environment before the quick freeze? Many theories have been postulated. One of the most popular is that the woolly mammoths were peacefully grazing and were suddenly struck by a huge freezing storm blowing from the Arctic Ocean that was incited by a chain reaction due to vastly increased volcanic activity. Millions of them froze instantly, while at the same time snow kept falling at unprecedented rates. Can it snow when that cold? Definitely yes. Until the teperature falls to absolute zero, there will always be a possibility of snow depending on too many variables to be mentioned, and indeed circumstances were very exceptional at the beginning of this Ice Age.

ment, when Christ returns again. But the moment of that return cannot be known must be supplicated in prayer. What we can say, however, is that even in human terms this will not last long. And then, finally, comes the apotheosis, which is the elevation of someone to divine status that has been liberated from the inclination to evil. Marie Julie Jahenny, the Breton Stigmatist, has much to say about the period between the first and second judgements; suffice it to say that this period will be anything but tranquil.

The beginning of the first three and a half years, triggered by the advent of the Antichrist, cannot be calculated precisely, but the Apophis impact in 2029 gives nonetheless a time frame, somewhere, near the end of 2025. The BOT says that the Antichrist will emerge as a military hero in the month of December, which could be read 'in December 2025'.[128] The message of the Book of Truth of March 16th 2013 announces that *"the Antichrist will make himself known in the midst of the carnage of wars all over the world. Confusion, fear and loss of crops will compound the problem. Not long after, the Third Seal will be revealed (Rev. 6:5) when man will scramble for food, as famines grip humanity. Starved of food, starved of spirit, starved of help, mankind will grasp at anything or anyone, which offers respite."*

Keep in mind that the Tribulation does not depend on the Antichrist. Without him, of course, the suffering of humankind is mitigated. Crusade Prayer 6 (from the BOT) is designed to stop the Antichrist: *"Oh Jesus I pray that God in his mercy will prevent the Antichrist and his vile army from causing terror and inflicting hardship on your children. We pray that he will be stopped and that the hand of chastisement will be avoided through the conversion achieved during The Warning."* Crusade Prayer 83 for the mitigation of chastisements: *"O dear Father, God the Most High, we, your poor children, prostrate ourselves before your Glorious Throne in Heaven. We beg You to rid the world of evil. We implore your Mercy for the souls of those who cause terrible hardships to your children on earth. Please forgive them. Please remove the Antichrist, as soon as he makes himself known. We ask You, dear Lord, to mitigate your hand of chastisement."*

The Biblical insights regarding the Tribulation are not easy to understand, and yet we cannot fully grasp the arguments without referring to the difficult prophecies of Daniel. I have to go into the details for completeless, and so I now discuss those prophecies.

The Great Tribulation lasts one week in an interpretation of Daniel's Prophecy of 70 weeks. It is thought that each week represents seven years, with the timetable beginning from Cyrus' decree to rebuild the Temple in Jerusalem. Daniel 9:24-25 reads: *"From the going forth of the decree [for the people of Judah] to return and restore Jerusalem until [the time of the] Messiah the Prince, shall be 483 years (69x7)."* The year of the decree is mentioned in Ezra 1:1-3: *"In the first year of [the reign of] Cyrus (...), he made*

---

128) The BOT of July 20th 2012: "The three and a half years remaining in the Tribulation period commences in December 2012. This is the period when the Antichrist will emerge as a military hero. (...) Meanwhile the False Prophet will seize power within the Catholic Church and very soon it will be sucked into the New World Religion, a front for Satanic worship. Worship of self will be the fundamental aim of this abomination and the introduction of laws, which amount to two things: the abolition of the sacraments and the abolition of sin [as something intrinsically evil that needs to be dealt with]. (...) Please understand that I tell you these things to prepare you so that you can prevent as many souls as possible from accepting the Mark of the Beast [in the 7th vaccination]. Satan will use the power of possession in those souls who take the Mark and it will be very difficult to save them." Please note that, as is common in many prophecies, the year has little meaning, like in those of La Salette. Because of the nature of a prophecy, it seems to the visionary as if the future merges with the present time, and that very thing makes it very difficult for a prophet to estimate when things will happen.

a decree (...) that the Lord charged him to build Him a house in Jerusalem (the Temple).” Counting 483 after the decree of Cyrus the Great, emperor of the Achæmenid Empire, we arrive at the year of birth of the Messiah. While the chronology of the historical events was not one hundred percent sure, the High Priesthood was pretty sure that ‘their’ Messiah – who, as a military commander, would crush the Romans – had to be born at the time of the birth of Jesus. Later they adjusted their timetable forward to the year that John the Baptist started to preach (from the time that John the Baptist appeared until the Crucifixion is seven years – see: “Proofs of the Life and Death of Jesus”, by the undersigned).

The above reasoning stands or falls by the assumed canonicity of the Book of Daniel. Canonical means that the writing is the infallible Word of God. The Roman Catholic Church’s position has always been that this book belongs in the Canon, i.e. is directly inspired by God, an opinion based among other things on Jesus’ reference to Daniel 9:27 in Mathew 24:15. Those who hold a different view may not realize that mainstream Judaism first began to challenge its canonicity only after the Crucifixion, because by then it had become abundantly clear to the high priesthood that the Jesus they had crucified was the promised Messiah. The prophecy of Daniel, therefore, had to be set aside. In doing so, they did a disservice to the Jewish people, but apparently, that logic escaped them.[129)]

After 7 plus another 62 weeks, another prophecy of Daniel tells us, the Messiah will be cut off, which is taken to correspond with the death of Christ on the Cross. Note that these 62 weeks do not count as from Cyrus year 1. This cutting off is seen as an indefinite break in the timeline, with one week still awaiting its fulfillment. This is reflected in the message Jesus gave to JNSR on March 11th 2013, entitled: “This is the time when the Antichrist will start his reign”:

> «« We have entered the time of the end, of which the last 7 days [or years] are called the “Time of Nations” (Zech. 2:11). They are included in the ‘490 years’ [of Daniel] when Israel underwent penance [in the Babylonian exile] that God imposed on her because of her [prior] idolatry. This time would end with the offer that our Lord made to them in his Holy Resurrection: ‘7 years of Grace’ in honor of the Great Universal Sacrifice of Jesus Christ, **for the Kingdom of God on Earth was destined for this time** [shortly after the Resurrection], when Israel also benefited from the ‘7 years of forgiveness’.[130)] [BOT of Dec. 15th 2014: *“When I arose from the dead, the Pharisees were given proof of my Resurrection but choose, instead, to spread lies so as to conceal the Truth. As a result of their actions they drew millions of souls away from their rightful inheritance.”*]
>
> But Israel’s refusal cancelled the remission of the sentence during those seven years. God our Father, offended by this refusal, transposed their penance during the seven years… to the end of time. It is said: *“You will be saved through each other”,* which also means that you will ‘pay’ for each other because you too are not without sin… as you would tend to believe…

---

129) The secularisation of Daniel fits into the Jewish policy of wiping the slate clean, and the man who played a major part in this effort was the great scriptural scholar Jonathan ben Uziel, a member of the Sanhedrin that condemned our Saviour. The same man also decided to remove the chapter on the Suffering Servant (Isaiah 53) from the Haftorahs, or public readings of the Scriptures, a custom that still prevails. The Talmud tells that an angel appeared to Jonathan to warn him that the way in which the prophet speaks of the Messiah here indicates Jesus of Nazareth too clearly. See: “Valeur de l’Assemblée qui prononça la peine de mort contre Jésus-Christ” (Status of the Assembly that pronounced the death sentence on Jesus Christ), 1877, by Mgr. Augustin Lémann and Mgr. Joseph Lémann - Fils d’Israël / Prêtres de Jésus Christ # reprinted in 1975 by the Socii Sancti Michaelis, Gent, Belgium (p. 31).

We do not know when it will start or has started, the last seven years, in which we all suffer… to earn the Glorious Return of the Son of Man and Son of GOD. Jesus returns as is said: *"At the end of the last Tribulation…"* »»

The full text of Daniel 9:24-27 reads:

«« Seventy sevens (not shavuot for 'weeks' but shavuim, which means sevens) are determined for your people and for your holy city to finish the transgression: to make an end of sins, to make reconciliation for iniquity, to bring in everlasting righteousness, to seal up vision and prophecy [to shroud in mystery], and to anoint the Most Holy.

Know therefore and understand that from the going forth of the decree to return and restore Jerusalem until Messiah the Prince, there shall be seven sevens and sixty-two sevens (69x7, or 483). The streets shall be built again, and the moat too, even in troublesome times.

And after the sixty-two sevens Messiah [Jesus Christ] shall be cut off, but not for Himself. And the people of the prince [the Roman emperor] who comes thereafter, shall destroy 'the City' [Jerusalem] and desecrate the sanctuary [the Temple].

The end of [the seventy or the last week] shall be with a flood [a divine Judgement], and till the end [of the last week] war and desolations are determined. Then he [the Anti-Anointed One or Antichrist] shall confirm a covenant with many for one week, but it is only until the middle of the week [3,5 years] that He shall bring an end to sacrifice and offering [the Holy Mass]. And instead there will be the abomination of desolation, until the Revenge [of the First Judgement or Judgement of the Nations] is poured out on the destroyer! »»

To recapulate: Daniel's sevens are divided into three separate blocks: (A) 7 x seven, (B) 62 x seven and (C) 1 x seven. During the first block of time of 49 years Jerusalem would *"be built again, with street and moat, even in troublesome times".* The second block of 62 sevens, or 434 years, immediately follows the first one for a total of 69 sevens or 483 years, the end-point of which goes *"until [the time of the] Messiah the Prince (or Christ King)",* which in retrospect appears to be the year of birth of Jesus of Nazareth. The peculiar way of formulating these blocks implies that the last multiple of seven - the 70th - does not necessarily have to follow immediately after the period of 69x, as in the sentence: "the work took 14 months, not counting the one month holiday in between". That the week mentioned in verse 27 is something quite special, is evidenced by the preceding verse, stating that the 70 weeks end with a flood: the first flood was with water, that of Noah; the second was with blood, that of the Crucifixion (Mt. 20:22, Mk

---

130) The BOT of Dec. 22nd 2013, from "Your Beloved Mother": "How lonely are those who do not know my son. When my son stood on the mount, just before his Ascension into heaven, his disciples were confused and frightened. [Acts 1:6: « Lord, will You at this time restore the Kingdom to Israel? He answered: It is not for you to know the times which the Father has established. (…) After that He was taken up.»] (…) Although Jesus told everyone that day that He would come again, they did not truly understand what He meant. Some thought that it would be weeks before He would make Himself known. But, remember, a day in God's Time can be any time. Now that Day is drawing close and all the prophecies foretold as to the signs of the time of the end are happening."

The consensus during the early days of Christianity was that the Millennium Reign was imminent, and they were not entirely wrong about that, as evidenced by the message to JNSR that the Kingdom of God on Earth was destined for their time. What Jesus said in the days before his Crucifixion, the Book of Acts, as well as the letters of the Apostle Paul, can only be properly understood if we keep that expectation in mind. Therefore, these teachings have lost none of their topicality. One could even say that they are a manual for the times in which we are currently living.

10:38, Luke 12:50); and the third one will be with fire, caused by celestial bodies falling unto Earth and the ensuing volcanic activity.

The time period for this explanation is also based on other passages of the Book of Daniel, like verse 12:7: *"A time, times and half a time (explained as three and a half years); when the power of the destroyer of the holy people has been completely shattered, all this shall come to an end!"* This agrees with the Book of Revelation 11:3: *"1260"* and *"42 months",* calculated with the prophetic month of 30 days, hence 1260/30 = 42 months or 3.5 years. It is assumed that the 1290 days of Daniel 12:11 indicate the merciless persecution of the priests and their followers, who continue to celebrate the Holy Sacrifice of the Mass as it was practiced from ancient times. Daniel 12:11-12 reads: *"And from the time that the daily sacrifice is taken away, and the abomination of desolation is set up, there shall be1290 days. Blessed is he who waits, and comes to 1335 days!"* The difference between 1290 and 1335 could mean that at the beginning of the reign of the Antichrist reign, the daily sacrifice (the Holy Mass) is still taking place as usual, but that after about a month and a half this will be radically put to an end.

13.55 – The Warning or the Illumination of Conscious

The Great Warning or Illumination of Conscious was first prophesized during the apparitions of Garabandal. The Warning is supposed to be given shortly before the end of times and is comparable to what someone experiences when he has died, seeing the condition of his soul as revealed by God. We then see ourselves in the eyes of God. In this particular instance it is an encounter with Jesus, after which no one should have doubts of God's existence. It is an act of great Mercy given by God the Father. Yet, for some people, the seeing of the condition of their soul will be a very frightening experience and a tremendous chock, comparable to what Saul experienced on the road to Damascus. (Acts 9:3-9) Only after that experience did he become a good Christian.

Lady of Mount Carmel

The Garabandal apparitions were of the Archangel Michael and the Blessed Virgin Mary, and were in the period from 1961 to 1965. The visionaries were four young schoolgirls in the rural village of Garabandal in Northern Spain. The Virgin Mary in this visitations was referred to as Our Lady of Mount Carmel of Garabandal, because she was dressed as the Lady of Mount Carmel (a particular representation of the Most Holy Virgin). The purpose of the apparitions was to bring people to a 'conversion of heart'.

The Warning, the girls said, will be followed by a miracle, and not long afterwards by a punishment. It will be an incision in the time, all over the world, and for everyone regardless of their belief or outlook on life, and they will all be seeing the condition of their souls. Concurrently they are shown how to amend their ways in order to be agreeable to God. This refers to John 16:8-9: *"Jesus tells his friends: When the Helper comes (the Holy Spirit) He will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgement: of sin, because people don't believe in Me; of righteousness, because I am going to the Father, where you can see Me no longer; and of judgement, because the prince of this world (Lucifer) now stands condemned."* The children heard that the miracle is going to take place within a year after The Warning; that it will leave a permanent sign in Garabandal, to be seen and photographed, but not touched. The severity of the punishment or

chastisement, they said, is conditional upon how mankind reacts to both The Warning and the miracle.

There was a message from the Blessed Virgin Mary that the Church needed to spread. This one was followed more than three and a half years later by a second from the Virgin Mary by way of her messenger, the Archangel Michael. The first one, revealed on Oct. 18th 1961, states: *"We must make many sacrifices, perform much penance, and visit the Blessed Sacrament [Holy Eucharist] frequently. But foremost, we must lead good lives. If we do not, a chastisement will befall us. The cup is already filling up, and if we do not change, a very great chastisement will come upon us [that of the end of times, when not only the nations are being judged, but also Satan stands to be thrown into the abyss]."* The second message, that of June 18th 1965, was live on Spanish television. Reportedly, only Conchita received this one:

> «« As my Message of the 18th of October has not been complied with, and as it has not been made known to the world, I am telling you that this one is the last one. Previously, the Cup was filling; now, it's brimming over. Many Cardinals, Bishops and priests are following the road to perdition, and with them they are taking many more souls. Ever less importance is being given to the Holy Eucharist.[131)] We should turn the wrath of God away from us by our own efforts. If you ask his forgiveness with a sincere heart, He will pardon you. I, your mother, through the intercession of St. Michael the Archangel, wish to tell that you should make amends. You are now being given the last admonitions. I love you very much and do not want your condemnation. Ask Us [the Holy Trinity] sincerely and We shall grant your plea… Reflect on the Passion of Jesus. »»

On July 8, 1965, Bishop Eugenio Beitia of Santander wrote concerning this message of the Holy Archangel Mihael:

> «« We point out that we have not found anything deserving of ecclesiastical censorship or condemnation either in the doctrine or in the spiritual recommendations that have been publicized and were addressed to the faithful, for these …contain an exhortation to prayer and sacrifice, to Eucharistic devotion, to the veneration of Our Lady in traditional praiseworthy ways, and to holy fear of God who is being offended by our sins. They simply repeat the common doctrine of the Church in these matters. »»

From the 1997 book by Michael Brown, "The Final Hour", on the topic of Padre Pio's belief in Garabandal: *"Asked on another occasion about its authenticity, he answered curtly: How many times must she appear there to be believed?"* (p. 141)

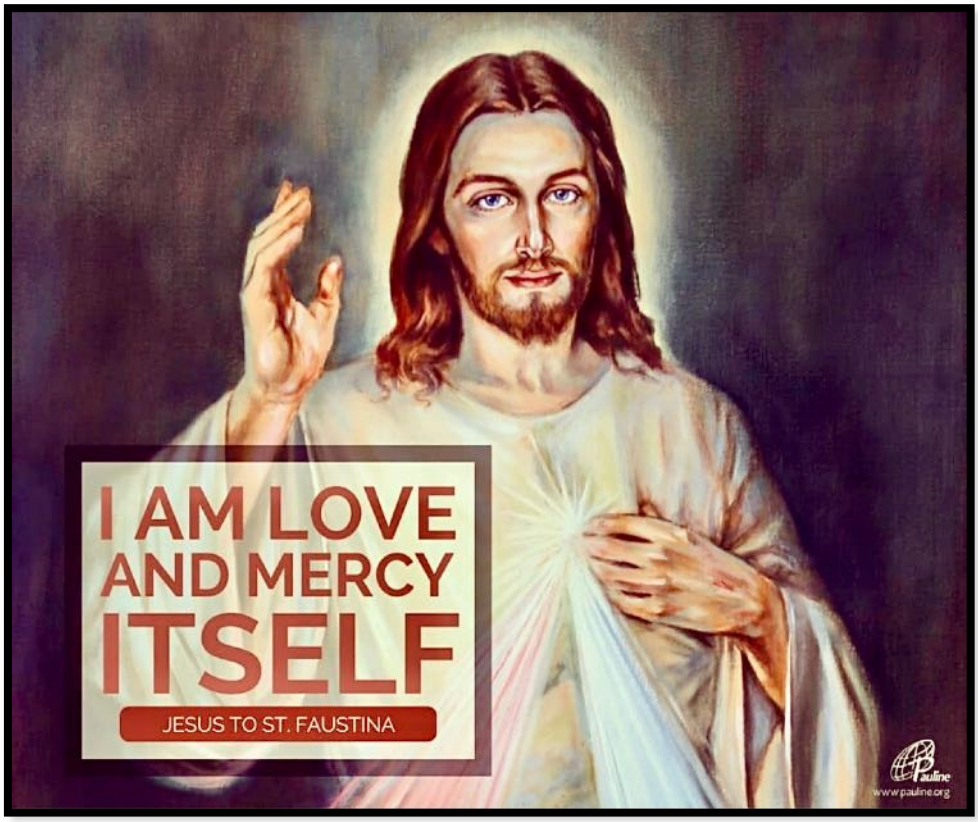
The Warning is not to be feared. We will see our shortcomings and will be stimulated in improving ourselves, in order to live a life agreeable to God, which actually we should be doing each day. In Faustina's diary, nr 83[132)] Jesus says:

---

131) We should be aware that the Second Vatican Council (1962-65) has given a fatal blow to the Roman Catholic Church. On Dec. 4th 1963 the constitution was issued about the Holy Liturgy (Sacrosanctum Concilium). Already in 1965 an instruction for the Holy Sacrifice of the Mass appeared that was based on this constitution, but it did not last long, although still within the tradition of the Church. In 1969 the so-called Novus Ordo Missae was promulgated, or the new ordinance of the Mass. To use the words of Cardinals Alfredo Ottaviani and Antonio Bacci in their "Breve Esame Critico del Novus Ordo Missæ" from Sept. 3rd 1969: "The Novus Ordo Missae represents, as a whole and in detail, a striking departure from the Catholic theology of the Holy Mass as it was formulated in the 22nd Session of the Council of Trent, which, by fixing definitively the canons of the rite, erected an insurmountable barrier against any heresy which might attack the integrity of the Mystery." And yet the barrier was broken! What else to say?

«« Before I come as the Just Judge, I am coming first as the King of Mercy. Before the Day of Justice arrives, there will be given to people a sign in the heavens of this sort: all light in the heavens will be extinguished, and there will be great darkness over the whole earth. Then the Sign of the Cross will be seen in the sky, and from the openings where the hands and the feet of the Savior were nailed will come forth great lights which will light up the earth for a period of time. This will take place shortly before the Last Day. »»

Sister Faustina also experienced her own Illumination of Conscience, which in nr 36 she describes in this way: *"Suddenly I saw the complete condition of my soul as God sees it. I could clearly see all that is displeasing to God. I did not know that even the smallest transgressions will have to be accounted for! What a moment! Who can describe it? To stand before the Thrice-Holy God!"*



The BOT often talks of The Warning. There are almost 250 messages where there is mention of The Warning. The message of June 26th 2011 says:

«« For those who are unsure of this prophecy, please keep your hearts open, for when you witness this ecological, but supernatural event, it is important that you understand that this is the greatest miracle you will ever see and that it is my great Gift to you all. Consider this. This is how the Final Day of Judgement will unfold, only this time you will not be condemned. You will be given a new lease of life when your soul will be saved, to enable you to restore to the level I desire of it. »»

132) Sister Faustina (1905-1938) was a Polish nun of the order of the Blessed Sacrament. The apparitions to her of Jesus Christ inspired the Roman Catholic devotion to the Divine Mercy and earned her the title of 'Secretary of Divine Mercy'. Throughout her life, Faustina had visions of Jesus and had conversations with Him, which she noted in her diary, later published as "The Diary of Saint Maria Faustina Kowalska – Divine Mercy in my Soul". The BOT refers to Faustina seven times. It also stresses to often pray the Divine Mercy chaplet that was given to the world by Jesus through Faustina.

THE ILLUMINATION OF CONSCIENCE announced by Our Lady at Garabandal in 1961 will soon take place to save the world.

The Warning

New prophecies received by a European seer reveal global events leading up to the Second Coming.

WHY DOES THE WARNING TAKE PLACE?

- To prove to everyone that God exists.
- To bring everyone back to Jesus and the way of truth.
- To weaken the impact of sin and evil in the world through the massive conversion that will follow The Warning.
- To help us save before the Day of the Last Judgement, by giving us the opportunity to ask for forgiveness for the sins we have committed.
- To convert the non-believers who would have had no chance of salvation without this great act of Mercy.
- To strengthen the faith of the believers.

WHAT WILL HAPPEN DURING THE WARNING?

- Everyone over the age of seven will experience a personal mystical encounter with Jesus which will last approximately 15 to 20 minutes.
- It is a gift from God the Father to bring people back to the truth. It will be like the Day of the Last Judgement but this time you will not be judged. Instead, you'll have the opportunity to beg God for forgiveness.

- **Two comets** will collide in the sky.
- People will think this is catastrophic, worse than an earthquake, but it is not. **It is a sign that Jesus is going to come in each one's life**.

- **The sky will turn red**. It will look like it is on fire and then you will see **a large cross** in the sky to prepare the people for what is coming.
- Atheists will say it was a worldwide illusion. Scientists will look for a logical explanation, **but there will be none.**
- **It will be spectacular** and not harm us, because it comes from Jesus as an act of Love and Mercy.
- **Our sins will be shown to us, as in a film, and we will feel immensely sad and ashamed when they are revealed to us**. Others will be so sickened and shocked by the way their sins are revealed that they will drop dead before they have had a chance to ask God's forgiveness.
- Everyone will see the condition of his soul before God – the good they have done in their lives, the sorrow they have caused others, and all they have failed to do.
- Many people will fall down and cry tears of relief, tears of joy and happiness, tears of wonder and love.
- **For afterwards it will be possible, finally, to live a new life as we have come to know the full truth**.

Jesus now asks everyone to pray for the souls who will die of the shock and who may be in mortal sin. Everyone should prepare now. Jesus requires all to ask for forgiveness for their sins prior to The Warning, because that is best.

†

And the message of Nov. 22nd 2010:

> «« Every single one of my children will be shown their lives, their sins, their wrongdoings and every single insult they were responsible for against their brothers and sisters, all during a mystical experience. Not one man, woman or child on this Earth will be excluded [as from the age of seven]. Some will be deeply shocked and saddened by the sins in their lives and will immediately turn to Me, their Just Judge, and redeem themselves. They will, out of love and sorrow, ask for Mercy. **Others will be so sickened and shocked by the way in which their sins will be revealed, that they will drop dead before they have a chance to ask for forgiveness.** And then there will be those who follow the deceiver. They, in their terror, when they see the wicked sins in their past life flash in front of them, will flee. They will try to hide, but there is nowhere to go. Ducking and diving, they will either accept what they see and ask for forgiveness, there and then, or they will turn away and squirm in shame and horror, …but will not ask for Mercy. Then there is the final sinner! When his sins are shown to him, all he will do is argue and deny that he committed these grievous offences against God's Commandments. He will simply deny the truth and turn his back, [heading] into the darkness of eternal Hell. »»

Three Crusade Prayers (Nos 1, 43 and 65), which we owe to the BOT, contain prayers for the salvation of souls who will die from shock during The Warning and have not had time to ask God's forgiveness. They are designated as follows: *"those souls who may not survive The Warning"*; *"to save souls who cannot save themselves and who may die in mortal sin during The Warning"*; *"all those poor souls in sin who may be taken from this earth during The Warning"*. Since three separate prayers have been given for this, we can assume that there are not a few who will be implicated. My personal estimate is that on average about 5% of people will die on the spot from shock,[133)] and that the percentage of people in leadership positions will be two to three times higher, because in terms of morals I value the common man higher than those others. We can further assume that about three times more people will be completely exhausted by the shock. Shock symptoms can last for several hours and even continue for four weeks. Added together, we are talking about 1/6th of the total population that is incapacitated. As a result, after The Warning, nothing will function normally for a number of days. It seems reasonable to assume that normal life will only start again after about two weeks, with priority to get rid of the corpses first.

The message of the BOT of April 16th 2011: *"Once The Warning is over, peace and joy will prevail. And then the persecution by the New World Alliance will commence. Their power will be weakened if enough of you spread conversion and pray hard."* The message of June 11th of that same year:

> «« My dearly beloved daughter, it is with love that I speak with you tonight, because very soon now, more and more of my cherished followers will unite as one to fight the deceiver [by means of prayer]. Right now he, and the wealthy influential groups behind whom he hides, are plotting to gain as much control over you all, but you cannot see this. They will be stopped sooner than you think. Many of them will convert during The Warning. This will weaken Satan's One World Group to such an extent that many will wonder what path to take, so confused will they be. Many will then turn back to Me, children, for they will seek redemption. »»

The message of April 23rd 2011 reads:

> «« It is important to remember one important lesson regarding The Warning. This Great Event, when all of you will see not only your sins, as I see them, but will understand the Truth about the next life, must be followed by prayer. Sadly, many will fall back into sin afterwards. Now is the time to prepare to avoid this situation by praying my Divine Mercy Chaplet every day of your lives. By getting into the

> habit of praying this powerful prayer you will retain the level of conversion and faith, which will sweep the world thereafter [after The Warning]. Rejoice, pray and thank Me, your Divine Saviour, for this great Mercy. Kneel and give praise to God the Father, for the Gift of My Sacrifice. Prayer will help dilute the impact of the persecution by the New World Global Alliance, which will follow. »»

The question is when The Warning will take place. Obviously, it is going to happen before the Antichrist comes on the scene, for which we've pinned the December 2015 date. It appears from the messages just quoted that the groups striving for a totalitarian world order will be greatly weakened after The Warning. The Warning comes at a time when people are desperate, as appears from the message of April 16th 2013: *"In the midst of the turmoil, I will make Myself known at last, and my Spirit will sweep the Earth just as people believe that they cannot take any more."* The contours of what the world will look like just before The Warning are already taking shape: shortages of food and electricity, and also financial chaos; there will be disease and war and rumors of war, then here and then there.

It is quite clear that The Warning will cause a realignment of world events, but the prophesied Antichrist will appear anyway, for the Bible must be fulfilled. As explained, the Antichrist would present himself to the world in December 2025. Since there will be a period of calm after The Warning and since a renewed Global World Alliance will need time to regroup, my estimate is that at least two years will elapse between The Warning and the entrance of the Antichrist. The Warning should then take place no later than 2023. Let me put it this way, I would be surprised if it were later.

First the Inner Enlightenment takes place, which kills Atheism, but also gives a new impetus to Satanism, as it creates a separation of minds. Unfortunately, in the months following, many will pick up their bad habits. It will begin as a small stream that slowly swells, paving the way for the Antichrist. If we give the Antichrist less than three years – which could be shorter if enough people turn to God and pray – we'll arrive sometime in 2028 at the point when the Antichrist will be destroyed by God's breath, as foretold: *"Then that Man of Evil will appear, [the Antichrist]. And the Lord Jesus will kill him with the breath that comes from his mouth and will destroy him with the glory of his coming."* (2 Thess. 2:8) But the end is not yet in sight. Also of this coming we know day nor hour, but this uncertainness counts itself in months, not years, as with the final Second Coming.

When the troubles are over, it will be manifest that our Lord is not only victorious over the evil powers and their minions, but will also be victorious in the number of those being saved – those are the glad tidings, the bulk of people will be saved. In the end, the vast majority will have chosen for God: *"These Messages will be responsible for the salvation of over seven billion people."* (BOT 30-6-2013) Yes, because when at the very end Jesus *"reaches out his Hand of Mercy to all, very few will reject his [glorious] kingdom."* (BOT 30-12-2014) And that answers the very difficult question why God permits this misery to befall us: the misery calls for self-reflection. Not that God wants it to be that way. Our own deeds as humanity have invited Him, as it were, to issue his judgements, whereby God foremost strives for the salvation of as many souls as possible, while preserving free will. That cannot be tampered with, for that is sacrosanct.

Ad finem

---

133) Drivers of cars or planes, who die because of The Warning, will not cause an accident, because God will no doubt have a solution for that.

Note, dated May 17th 2023, following the latest discoveries regarding the Biblical Deluge (amendment March 2024)

General Outline: Over the past 15 years, an vast amount of scientific research has been conducted on the floods that have plagued the Earth since the end of the last Ice Age, starting from 18,000 BC. The melting process was not gradual as was assumed until recently, but was accompanied by discharges that caused masses of meltwater, which had accumulated on top of the ice sheets, to pour down catastrophically, again and again and again. Ocean water levels at the end of the Ice Age were some 120 to 160 meters lower than they are today. The greatest tidal wave occurred in the year 9549 BC when ten million cubic kilometers of meltwater raced down, raising the sea level 50 meters in a matter of days. That was what is known in the Bible as the Flood. Genesis 11 says that Arphaxad was born two cycles after the flood, which is usually translated "two years after". But the Hebrew does not say that! According to the traditional way of counting, Adam was born in the year 4005 BC. The two cycles of each 60x60 years from Genesis 11 must be added to this to arrive at his correct year of birth, calculated as follows: 4005 plus 7200 = 11205 BC. Well, 1656 years later the Flood took place. This 1656 is derived from the traditional chronological count.

Just as we had God's judgment with water (the Flood) and a judgment in blood (the sacrifice of Calvary), we are now facing a judgment in fire (the judgment of the nations). Regarding the Flood, Graham Hancock, who is not a Christian, as well as that of Gregg Braden (more or less New AGE) have done much useful work. The PBS (Panin Bible Statistics) runs up to the birth of Jesus Christ to almost 4000 years from Adam, called AM 4000 (Anno Mundi). He calculates the Flood for the year 2349 BC. Well, it is 100% certain that no flood calamity occurred around that time in the geological record, but much earlier. For such a calamity we have to go back to the so-called Younger Dryas, an intermediate ice age encompassing 1200 years, which according to present science came to an abrupt end in about the year 9600 BC. There is thus a gap of roughly 7200 years between the PBS and the finds from the geological record. Genesis 11:10 states that Arphaxad, son of Shem, was born two years after the Flood. The Hebrew root text reads, "two complete cycles thereafter—שְׁנָתַיִם אַחַר 'shenathayim achar', or two complete solar revolutions thereafter (or years of days) after the Flood." We also encounter shenathayim at two other places in Genesis. See Genesis 41:1: "Two full years"—שנתים ימים 'shenathayim yamim', two full solar revolutions after the events mentioned in the previous chapter. Here it says 'yamim' (years) instead of the 'achar' of Genesis 11:10, which means 'afterward'. Since this type of calculation for a prophetic year (a short cycle) usually applies the number 360 (according to the 60-count system, as on our clocks), or 3600 in the case of a long cycle, corresponding to the number of seconds in an hour,[134] we may translate 'shenathayim achar' as 2x3600 years thereafter (after the Flood).[135] The common Hebrew term for two, 'shettayim', is found under Strong's 8147.

---

134) In Sumer they had the 60-numerical system as used in the city of Ur III, from which Abraham emigrated. In Sumerian, the numbers from 1 to 5, and 8 (2x four fingers), 10 (2x fifth fingers), 20 (4x fifth fingers), 60 (12x fifth fingers) and 3600 are denoted by simple words. All other numbers consist of a combination of these. The largest number known at the time was 3600 or one sar (which also means totality), as shown in the Sumerian lexicons to be found on the Internet. Sar also means 'many, all, world, horizon, cycle'. Sár is a general in command of 3600 soldiers (Sárgon is the name of a mighty ruler); an iku (hour) is a surface measuring 60 shekel (minutes) consisting of 3600 mini-shekel (seconds). A mini-shekel is called a 'gíntur'.

If Christ's year of birth was in 8 BC (as demonstrated in "Proofs of the Life and Death of Christ"), which occurred in AM 3997, and if we apply Panin's calculation for the beginning of the Flood, i.e., in AM 1656, **then a simple calculation shows that the real date of the Flood occurred in 9549 BC** (3997+8 - 1656 + 2x3600).

This means that there are two coexisting chronologies, the Biblical one, which results from adding up Biblical ages and events, and the one we have just established. The biblical chronology indicates that Adam was born around the year 4000 BC, while for the alternative one, 7200 years would have to be added. How to reconcile the two? Well, the Genesis story, up to the flood, is a lore that we find worldwide, in more than 200 variants (see among others: "List of flood myths", Wikipedia).[136] The Biblical one was an existing one that was written down by Moses, which is illustrated by the existence of two creation accounts, one in Genesis ch. 1, and one in ch. 2. In the first one the beasts are created before man, and in the second one it is the other way around, which means two things: the six days' creation account should not be taken literal but schematical,

---

135) For the shenathayim cycle, we use the sexagesimal (base 60) number system, which was the counting method of the town Ur of Abraham. This method is based on finger counting as it is still done in Australia, when at the end of the season the cattle is herded together with small helicopters. When running into the corral, each animal is thus counted at the entrance. It goes as follows: the right hand counts the four fingers with the thumb. At five, a phalanx of the left hand is successively pressed with the left thumb. The thumbs do the counting, the fingers are the abacus. The Sumerian counting frame (as a one to four device) appeared between 2700 and 2300 BC as a reflection of finger counting. Since there are 12 phalanges on four fingers, we get 12x5 = 60 like our clock. For large numbers, the right hand also counts the phalanges, giving a gross of 144 (12x12). The year is divided into 12 months and the zodiac has 12 constellations. A protractor is in full 360 degrees, divided into 5 gives 72. The number 360 corresponds to the number of days in a year, where 365 would represent a deviation from the ideal. In the toll motion of the earth, each degree of the circle takes 72 years, to be exact, 71.59. In total, the precession of 360 degrees takes 25,772 years (360 x 71.59). Jesus sends out 72 men to bring the Good News. Another gospel states 70. Apparently two missionaries failed for whatever reason. Why does the day have 24 hours of twice twelve? There is a division of day and night, seems the most obvious answer.

136) Joseph Edkins belonged to the London Missionary Society and spent 57 years in China. He was an expert in Chinese religions, was also a linguist and a philologist and proved to be a profilic writer. In 1893 he published a little book at The Religious Tract Society (republished in 2005): "The Early Spread of Religious Ideas", which has a bearing on our subject. It can be downloaded at the Internet Archive. Noteworthy are his thoughts on mythological lore (p. 49): "History, even if forgotten, is real from the very beginning onset. We are apt to forget this, and to be content with viewing all of it as mythological. Let us rather strip off the shell that hides the kernel from being seen. The kernel is true, while the mythology joined to it is false. It is divine teachings that belong to the kernel and is therefore worth seeking." It appears to be the reverse of what we are thaught at school. On the contrary, the belief systems in our world started as monotheism (Noah was a monotheist!) and it subsequently degraded into polytheism. As Edkins says on the next page: "First there was monotheism and moral law, then came the worship of heaven, the sun, the moon, and the planets and after this the mythologies sprang up." He continues (p. 52): "We must be allowed to attribute the Pentateuch to the age assigned to it by the Jews and early Christians. Otherwise we cannot account for the accuracy of the details regarding Ancient Egypt that we find in it. It consists of [Moses' own manuscripts] and those of various writers [as well as oral traditions] selected by Moses [under the guidance of the Holy Spirit], as well as those put together [shortly] after his death by them who shared his spirit and enjoyed Divine assistance."

and it also means that different lores existed at the time, as nowadays. The creation accounts already existed, but it is God's words that Moses recorded as God's note taker. It is therefore acceptable that there are two coexisting chronologies. If the Flood occurred in 9549 BC, it follows that Noah lived immensely longer than hitherto accepted. Instead of dying at age 950, he died at the age of 950+7200 years, i.e., 350 years after our traditional deluge date. (In the Reign of Peace some will not die at all!) Remember that Noah was the last pure descendant of Adam and Eve; even his wife was impure. For it says: *"Noah was a righteous man, a blameless one (or immaculate) among the people of his time."* (Gen. 6:9) The others of the Adamic lineage were hybrids, which the first verse of ch. 6 seems to indicate. This perhaps new thought to the reader, already put forward by others, need not be written off in advance.

Goliath was obviously a hybrid, but so were those of ordinary stature. We too are without exception hybrids, which is one reason why infant baptism is called for. And now once again scientists are tampering with our DNA. A déjà vu. There is evidence that hybrids have been born due to the COVID vaccinations, with a probability - a rough estimate - of 1 in 100 million. Examples were shown on the Internet in 2021 of babies who could walk completely on their own after only three days. Collected in a camp, they can start cloning with the champions. Cloning dogs, cats, horses, etc. is becoming more and more 'common business', and from there to humans is only a small step. In South Korea, Sinogene and Sooam Biotech Research Foundation charge $100,000 per clone (worldwide by 2023, especially in the US, thousands of cases of dog cloning were done, including those of Barbara Streisand). There is talk of the clone wars in Starwars. The popular television series SG1 (Stargate 1) features an 'inhuman' who was fully grown within months. I think that sort of thing didn't just fall out of the sky and is becoming more and more trendy. It is creepy what they are doing, though. A total of forty or so mutants could have been born as a direct result of the COVID vaccinations, six of whom would pass the selection criteria. These champions could then be earmarked for cloning experiments to create the Antichrist's elite corps. The passage to adulthood for those inhumans will take perhaps 5 years or less (in view of the age they began to walk), and the reproductive age will then be at about half that age, after which they can start cloning, i.e., in 2024. The resulting 'terrorists' will be imposing but not huge; they must fit in a Humvee! Long ago, Maria Esperanza and other Christian prophets warned that misuse of technology – godless technology applied to human cloning – would turn out to be disastrous.

If the Flood occurred in the year 9549 BC, then the creation of Adam was in the year 11,205 BC, which is half a millennium before the start of the Younger Dryas. It is noteworthy that investigations of the megalithic monuments have shown,[137)] that even before that time people were walking on the earth who had a highly developed civilization; the Indian Rig Veda (translated: Book of Truth), which is written in Sanskrit, also goes back much further than the 12th millennium before Christ. In fact it is the most ancient book in the world, but unfortunately this truth does not lead to worship of the God, creator of heaven and earth, but to a worship of creation itself. We need not be surprised at the existence of a precreation, for Adam – meaning God (or anointing) in blood (Alef-Dam) – was created to regenerate the creatures of precreation. (Christ is the Greek for the Hebrew Messiah, and means 'anointed one'.) Adam and his other half formed together a perfect and blessed Oneness thanks to the Anointing, but something intervened, causing discord. However, God did not abandon his own Anointing, He followed his anointed and their people and remained with them. Since then, we have known Him as the Emanuel (God with us). Adam and the Wo-man were created by God in a separate act of creation, because God had a calling for them for the then pre-existing human race – actually, the pygmies and the bushmen (Khoi San) are not descended from Adam, any

more than the giants of old. The paradise story is about the person, the one Anointed One (the cleaving together of Adam and Eve), who are the sublime expression of the God who is One. God made that One person his partner (singular for the two). Finally, this unity was to be antitype to the serpent. In their vocation, Adam and the Wo-man were serving in a tabernacle service, which is a way of saying that they were ordained to bring the human race into the presence of God. They were to act as mediators between the Most Holy and humanity, which is somewhat comparable to the ordained priesthood of later times, by passionately pleading: "Lord, spare Thine inheritance!" Their function was to act as mediator between the holiest of holies and humankind, somewhat similar as in later ages the ordained priesthood, vouching for the holiness of their office, that of bringing the conscience of the people of the precreation to rest in the ranking order of the kings.[138)] Their vocation was to be 'One', in particular by representing the One Anointing of the One God. They had to reveal God's Love for a world made up of dualities, or as Darwin put it: in a struggle for the survival of the fittest. Therefore, God needed a representative to show his 'One'-ness. Adam and his counterpart were anointed to serve in this vocation. Unfortunately, the cleaving was cleaved asunder (for cleave in Hebrew twice 'bak', cf. Strong's 1234, 1692). The Bible is focused on the Adamic generation, and when it says that because of the Flood all perished except those who took refuge in the Ark, it points exclusively to those who belonged to the Adamic generation.

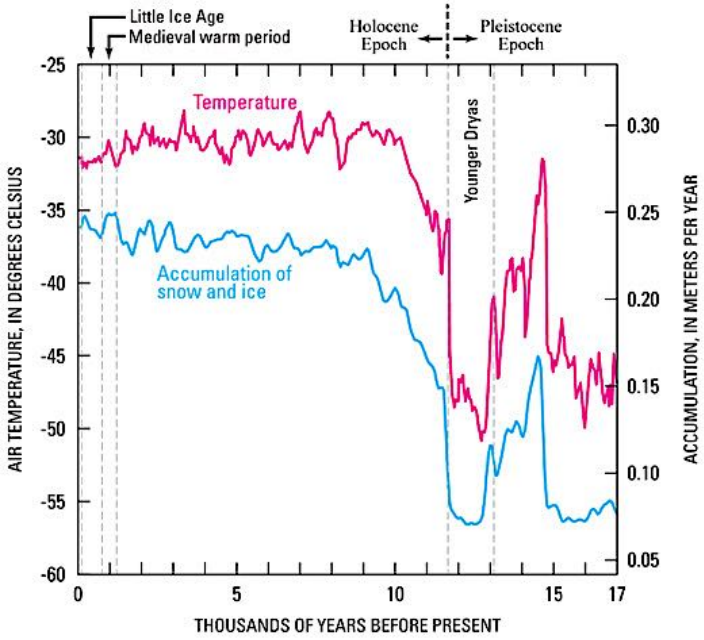
After this digression, we continue with the Flood account. Hancock postulates a giant flood that marked the end of the Younger Dryas, which, he continues, occurred according to the geological record around the year 9600 BC, typified as the "Meltwater Pulse 1B". According to Wikipedia, it struck in the period in between 9500 and 9200 BC. The precise date cannot be determined with current scientific methods. The above calculated year of 9549 BC is within the range of possibilities of Meltwater Pulse 1B. It also fits with what Plato mentioned regarding the global flood. He tells that it occurred nine thousand years before Solon. According to Plato, Solon (ca 630 - ca 560 BC) had heard that from Egyptian priests and there still seem to exist hieroglyphics that substantiate the claim. For more details see YouTube: "The Younger Dryas was a sustained global cataclysm" - Graham Hancock (Jan. 11, 2023) - less than 12 minutes.

Since 1980, a great deal of knowledge has been accumulated regarding the post-Ice Age period in which the world as we know it today was formed. The Ice Age reached the LGM (Last Glacial Maximum) no later than 18000 BC, after which the great melting began. At that time the level of the oceans was 120 to 160 meters lower than it is today; the depleted water was contained by the ice masses that were often 4 kilometers thick and they covered 30% of the planet's surface. The moraines in the Netherlands are a

137) See for that matter the books and YouTube presentations of Graham Hancock, like "Fingerprints of the Gods" and "Underworld, the Mysterious Origins of Civilization".

138) Deuteronomy 16:18 until 21:9 explains the ranking order of kings. Deut. 17:8-13 deals with the divine constitutional and moral law and its central interpretative and priestly authority. Deut. 17:14-20 deals with the by God chosen king who should fear God in the discharge of his duties. He represents the supreme political authority and as such he should fear God and be fearless of humans, as has been advanced by the beloved Marie Leckzinska (1703-1768), Queen of France: "The human indulgence, condamnable in all Christians, becomes a true apostasy in those who have been establised in a position to command and to instruct." Deut. 18:9-22 deals with the prophetic guidance to which both the political and priestly spheres should be orientated. These are the three Biblical categories of anointed ones. With respect to prophets, the Bible places less emphasis on the rite of anointing but rather on the gift of the Spirit. With Adam and Adamah, in the 'one' couple, all three functions were established in a close spirit of unity-loveliness.

remnant of this and those are known as the Utrecht Ridge (Utrechtse Heuvelrug). An additional and essential factor is that with the disappearance of the ice masses, the pressure on the Earth's crust was redistributed, which caused tectonic agitation, earthquakes and volcanic eruptions, as well as mountain formation.



The melting process was gradual, but initially most of the melt water did not make it to the ocean and accumulated on top of the ice in awe-inspiring lakes bounded by ice barriers. Nowadays it is accepted that most of the melt water did not gradually flow away, but that each time mega-discharges occurred with disastrous flood surges, sometimes tens of kilometers wide, again and again and again. This pattern is very evident in the geological record that reveals itself in the northern region of the United States. Three of these discharges were global and downright titanic. The largest was that of the Biblical Flood, which as has now been discovered was the Meltwater Pulse 1B.

One of the tides, a big one, is known as the Laurentide drainage (Hudson Bay) in about the year 6200 BC, when in a matter of days a tide flowed into the Labrador Sea of perhaps 100,000 cubic kilometers of meltwater, mixed with ice and rocks, which raised the ocean by an estimated half a meter (see pp. 82-86 of Hancock's "Underworld"). When such an ice plug burst, a flood arose that swept everything in its path. The beginning of the Younger Dryas was triggered by a so-called metal comet of perhaps 4 kilometers in diameter that, before it hit the earth, disintegrated into thousands of glowing chunks that spread across the earth from north to south, comparable to what we saw at Tungusko in 1908 when 18 million trees were knocked down, but that involved just one chunk. These impacts at the beginning of the Younger Dryas initially caused a large flow of meltwater, but not for long. The resulting soot in the air caused an extremely rapid drop in temperature of about 10 degrees Celsius. To that end, see YouTube: "The comet impact which caused the Ice Age Mass Extinction" - Geology Hub (May 19, 2022) - 4.5 minutes.

Pulse 1B at the end of the Younger Dryas was a global flood of perhaps ten million cubic kilometers of meltwater that may have pushed the oceans up by 50 meters in a very short time. Here we see the Biblical Flood scientifically substantiated, but much research is still required. The Flood could have been triggered by a large comet of ice and debris (an asteroid), which fell on the ocean and disintegrated, throwing gigantic masses of

steam into the air, which gave rise to torrential downpours, signaling the beginning of the Flood. The cloud masses initially caused the temperature to rise sharply via a greenhouse effect. This in turn caused the northern ice masses and lakes of meltwater to be catastrophically set in motion. After the catastrophe, the earth could face a warmer climate, the one we live in today.

Interesting in this context are the Pyramid of Giza and the Sphinx. The Sphinx was carved out of a rock mound and the megaliths thus released were used for the base of the three pyramids of Giza. It has been established that the base of the pyramids and the Sphinx are made of exactly the same material and thus both were constructed concurrently. The configuration of the three pyramids of Giza corresponds to the constellation of the star system Orion in exactly the year 10,450 BC, which was about a thousand years before the Flood. This date marks the beginning of a new 30,000-year upward cycle of Orion (as viewed from Earth). But this does not necessarily mean that the pyramids were erected at that time. The Sphinx corresponds to the transition from Virgo to Leo in 10,900 BC, near the time of the beginning of the Younger Dryas. Possibly, the construction of the pyramids of Giza was halted as the Flood raged over the earth. Only under Pharaoh Cheops (or Khufu), in about 2550 BC, was the construction completed. The blocks used for the completion of the monument, weighing 20 tons each, were not moved, but poured on site. This was done with a kind of concrete mortar made of limestone, a so-called geopolymer (see the work of Joseph Davidovits). Giza's geopolymers are typified by a hardness much greater than the original unground limestone. Robert Schoch has peer-reviewed evidence that the limestone Sphinx (not a geopolymer) has been affected by water erosion for thousands of years, with erosion furrows up to three and a half meters deep (at the back of the statue). The base of the pyramid of Giza (under the outer covering) shows an identical erosion pattern. See YouTube: "The Schocking TRUTH about how they built the Pyramids" - Gregg Braden (Apr. 27, 2023), over an hour long, but only the first 30 minutes are of interest. In the first two weeks after it was posted on YouTube, this was viewed 1.4 million times! That the pyramids were completed in the time of Pharaoh Cheops is evidenced by one of the long corridors inside the pyramid, which in 2500 BC appears to have been perfectly aligned with the star Sirius, known as the morning star, with a year-long revolution of 365.25 days, whose rising on the horizon, even before the sun rose, signaled the new harvest season in Egypt. Interesting reading on the Giza Plateau can be found in ch. 49 of "Fingerprints of the Gods" by Graham Hancock.

Who is Gregg Braden?

Gregg Braden is a multiple New York Times bestselling author and researcher. He is renown as someone who bridges science, spirituality, and human potential. He is a member of the American Association for the Advancement of Science (AAAS) and is active with the HeartMath Global Coherence Initiative and The Arlington Institute, among others.

Plato on the Atlantis and the Americas

The story of the lost islands of Atlantis comes to us from the Socratic dia-logues, called "Timaeus and Critias", written around the year 360 BC by Plato. Plato describes Critias reporting what his grandfather heard from Solon (ca 630 - ca 560 BC), the Athenian lawgiver and one of the seven sages of ancient Greece. This account of the Atlantis came from an Egyptian priest in the city of Sais, known for its historical archives. The Greek Solon had traveled to Egypt where he met a priest, who compared Egypt and Athens and talked about the gods and history of both lands. One such account was about the Atlantis. There was also talk of a second region beyond the sunken lands, to be found west of the Atlantis, to be reached after a voyage of many days.

When Solon was looking for a story for a poem, he discovered strange place names that came from the ancient Egyptian histories [which means that the name Atlantis is rather Coptic or otherwise, but definitely not of Greek origin]. Solon's great-grandfather Dropidas possessed records from Egypt in which those names appeared, and these Solon had studied when he was young. Apparently, this prompted him in adulthood to travel to Egypt to pursue the matter further.

Dialogue between Solon and an Egyptian Priest (as reported by Plato):

> «« In the Egyptian delta, at the head of which the river Nile divides, there is a certain district called Sais [where there was an important centre of studies]. When Solon came to this city, he was received with great honour [as he had already built up a reputation]. He asked the priests most skilful in such matters, about [events in] antiquity. One of them, of very great age, said: *"O Solon, Solon, you Hellenes are never anything but children, and there is not one old man among you."* Solon asked what he meant. *"I mean that in mind you are all young. There is no science among you that has been handed down from generation to generation, nor any science that is hoary with age."* »»

Here follows part of Plato's text from Timaeus and Critias:

«« This empire came forth out of the Atlantic Ocean, for in those days the ocean was navigable. There [was a group] of island[s] [the Atlantis now sunken], situated in front of the Pillars of Heracles [at the west of the Strait of Gibraltar]. The island [the coastal line of the main one] was larger than Libya and Asia [Turkey] combined, and had to be passed to arrive at the 'other island'. Continuing your travel, you might arrive at the whole [land mass] of the opposite continent [now called the Americas], which is surrounded by the 'true' ocean [the great ocean situated in between the Atlantis and the Americas, which means that the Atlantis were closer to Europe than the US]. Take note that our sea [the Mediterranian Sea], that is situated behind the Pillars of Heracles, is comparatively only a harbour, having a narrow entrance, but the other one [at the west] is a real sea, of which at the opposite side [the Americas] may be found most truly to be a boundless continent. [As concerns the 'other island', it is good to know that in ancient times an island could very well be a continent like the Americas or Africa, because island only meant that it is possible to sail around it, irrespective of its size, or that it was newly discovered land not yet sufficiently explored.]

Let me [Critias] begin by observing, first of all, that [as Solon had told] 9,000 years had elapsed since the war which was said to have taken place between the people who dwelt outside the Pillars of Heracles [in the Atlantic Ocean] against the people who dwelt within them [those of the Mediterranian countries]. Of the Mediterranian combattants, Athens is reported to have directed the battle, while their ennemies were directed by the kings of the Atlantis [which, if we look at the Pizzigano Map, consisted of a coalition of islands and therefore 'kings' is plural]. As already noticed, [the largest one] had a coast line greater than that of Libya and Asia [Turkey] combined. [The Atlantis are therefore to be compared with the archipelago of the Azores of which none of its nine islands is called Azores. The Azores is plural and therefore we always speak of 'the' Azores, and so it is 'the' Atlantis.]

After this great war [between the Atlantean army and the Mediterranian coalition] there occurred violent earthquakes and floods. [This must have been the Great Deluge, thus situated around 9,600 BC, if counted backwards from Solon, assuming he went to Egypt when about thirty years old.] And in a single day and night of misfortune all the Atlanteans tumbeled into [the crevisses of] the earth, and in like manner their countries too disappeared in the depths of the sea.

After the Atlantis had sunk, it had become an impassable barrier of mud to voyagers sailing from hence [Strait of Gibraltar] trying to get to the other side of the ocean. [This part about the impassable barrier is without a shadow of a doubt a lie to protect the merchant route secret. See for that matter Strabo 3:5:11 and "Before Colum-bus" by Cyrus H. Gordon #1971 (pp. 38, 40, 44). On page 194 Gordon writes: *"Intermittent transatlantic crossings continued to be made [after the utter destruction of Carthage in 146 BC] as from Roman times through the Renaissance, but they were kept secret. To illustrate, I refer to a wide variety of Roman coins that have turned up in North America: too many to be accidental. For instance, Hebrew coins of Bar Kokhba's rebellion against Rome have been found."*] (Plato continues:) Many great deluges have taken place during those 9,000 years, for that is the number of years which have elapsed since the time I am speaking of; and in all the ages and changes of things there has never been any [comparable] sediment of the earth, which is worth of mention, that came flowing down from the mountains. [This flow must have been the meltwater pulse of the Deluge, which contained water and ice mixed with mud, vegetation and rocks. In geology a sediment is particulate matter that is carried away and deposited on the surface of the land or on the seabed to eventually become solid rock.]

Now the Atlantis were once a great and wonderful empire consisting of several islands that were also reigning over parts of the [European] continent. Furthermore, the Atlanteans had subjected parts of Libya behind the columns of Heracles, even as far as Egypt, and of Europe as far as Tyrrhenia [whereabouts uncertain]. »» (So far Plato of which we may assume that the original had a few corruptions that had krept in.)

The Aztecs have a story of where their people came from, which has been under much scholarly debate:

> «« Aztlán (from Nahuatl: Astatlan) is the ancestral home of the Aztec peoples. Aztlán is mentioned in several ethnohistorical sources dating from the colonial period, and while they each cite varying lists of the different tribal groups who participated in the migration from Aztlán to central Mexico, the Mexica who went on to found Mexico-Tenochtitlan are mentioned in all of the accounts.

> Whether Aztlán represents a real location, or is purely mythological is a matter of debate. »» (Source: Wikipedia under Aztlán, May 26th 2024)

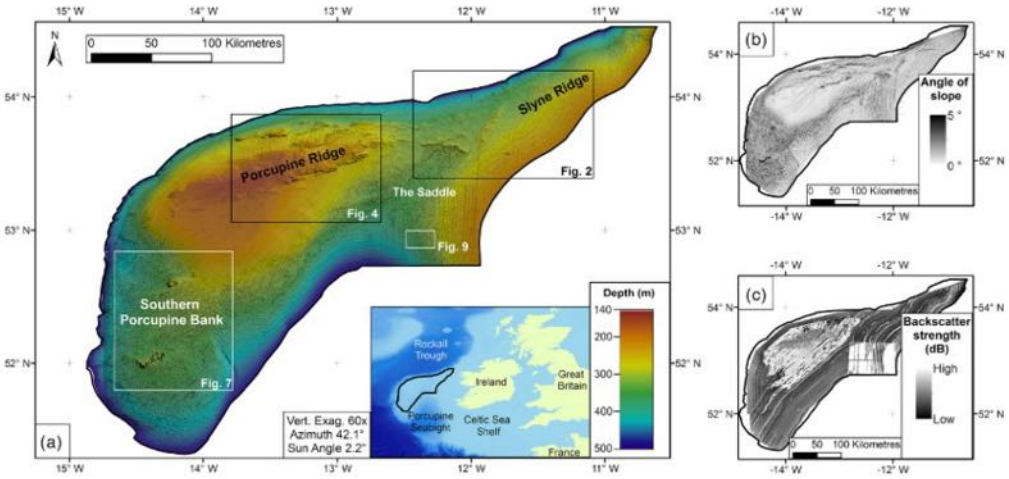
The similarity between Astatlan and Atlan(tis) is striking. This seems to be a second source about the famous myth. Whether this also means that the Aztecs were ethnically related to the Atlanteans is stretching the imagination to the limit.

Departure from Aztlán from an island
16th century Codex Boturini

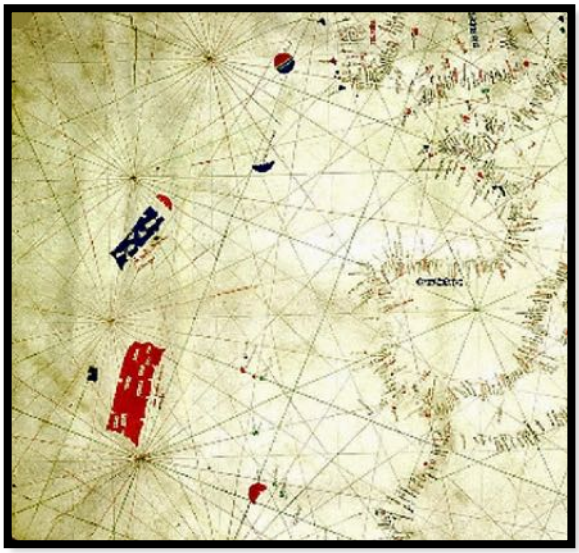
To answer where to locate the Atlantis, the approach is simple: take Plato at his word. Then it must not have been too far from Europe, sailing straight west from Spain. If we look at the old seamaps (the portolans) from before the discovery of the Americas in 1492, fascinating details come to light. Charles Hapgood's impressive 1966 book "Maps of the Ancient Sea Kings" reveals that medieval portolans incorporated very precise knowledge that far exceeded the insights and capabilities of the time. This transmitted knowledge, therefore, goes back to times about which our historiographic record remains silent. By lack of an alternative, we are forced to situate the basic knowledge in the time preceding the Deluge, which must therefore, contrary to scientific dictum, have been anything but primitive. (The subtitle of Hapgood's book says, not knowing about the date of the Deluge: "Evidence of advanced civilization in the Ice Age", but that is too farfetched.) It stands to reason that the Deluge caused a backlash in every field, but apparently people managed to perpetuate mapping information from generation to generation. Why? Because it filled an essential need, proving that seafaring has been the most common thing since time immemorial. And thanks to those maps, Columbus was in a position to make his journey, worry-free.

Those portolans should be taken seriously, which we are now going to discuss. Graham Hancock discusses in "Underworld" from 2002 (pp. 512-16) the possible whereabouts of the ancient Atlantis by means of those portolans, notably the Zuane Pizzagano portolan, which mention two large islands: Antilla and Santanaze, and also a smaller one called Hy-Brasil. The first two lie exactly on the Mid-Atlantic Ridge in between the two continents and the third one perfectly agrees with the Porcupine Bank, situated approximately 200 km west of Ireland, its shallowest section with water depths less than 200 meters over a length of 200 km. While the disappearance of Hy-Brasil can easily be explained by flooding and concurrent sinking of the land, the first two present a problem because the Mid-Atlantic Ridge is nowadays at that part at more than 2 km below the sea level. This, Hancock explains, could have been caused by isostatic compensation,

because the gigantic pressure of the kilometres-thick ice masses could have caused a so-called bulging effect, forcing the Mid-Atlantic Ridge to bulge upwards, as it represents a weak spot, a scar in the surface of the earth. The North American, Eurasian, and African plates meet to form the Azores triple junction, an uncommon type of plate boundary of three divergent ridges, which commonly expresses itself in some form of seismic and vulcanic activity. There is a submarine volcano in the Azores, which last erupted in 1911. The archipelago of the Azores itself consists of nine islands with nine volcanos. According to Plato, the Atlantis had many natural hot springs. Once the presssure subsided due to the girgantuan meltwater quantities rushing down, the opposite happened and the islands, in spasmodic shifts, sunk back to their original positions. Established science denies the possibility out of hand, but I am not impressed by the words of those omniscient people, saying that such is 'impossible'. Hancock mentions, without referring to the exact source, a discovery of Soviet oceanographic origin between the 1950s and 1980s of deeply submerged underwater ruins near the Azores, but no further research has been undertaken so far, in view also of the high costs involved for such an ambitious undertaking.



Porcupine Bank (initially Hy-Brasil, Canaanite for Island of Brazil/iron), only discovered in 1862 by HMS Porcupine, a British sail and paddle-wheel ship.



The Pizzigano Map from 1424

The Pizzigano Map was published by Zuane Pizzigano in 1424 in Venice, Italy. The map was first discovered in 1953, among the thousands of manuscripts in the library of the noted collector Sir Thomas Phillipps. On the North Atlantic, it shows a number of phantom islands. The islands of Antilla and Santanazes and the smaller Royllo and Tanmar appear in the centre of the map, and near Ireland we find Hy-Brasil, which is now proven not to be a fabrication, but appears to have really existed, providing a strong argument to take those other missing islands to be true as well.

In his “Geography” (2:3:6), Strabo (64/63 BC - ca 24 AD) makes mention of the Atlantis, discussing a work of polymath Posidonius (ca 135 - ca 51 BC), who was by far the most learned man of his time, as was then generally acknowledged:

> «« However, he (Posidonius) rightly attributes earthquakes and other similar phenomena, which have been enumerated, to rises, subsidence and changes, which at various periods have stirred the earth. He did well, too, in citing the views of Plato, that the tradition concerning the Island[s] of Atlantis might be received as something more than mere fiction, it having been related by Solon on the authority of the Egyptian priests, that this [group of] island[s], almost as vast as a continent, was formerly in existence, although no trace of it has been left. »» Note: Plato did not say that Atlantis was as vast as a continent, but that the land beyond it, on the other side of the ocean, had an expanse like that of a continent. Plato talks about two lands, one had sunken, and the other remained.

APPENDIX 3

God wants to alleviate The Chastisement

• Book of Truth, August 2nd 2011

I come in the name of my Son Jesus Christ. I am God the Father and wish to communicate to the whole world. It is my intention to put a stay on the severity of 'The Chastisement' to give mankind a chance to open their hearts to the truth of my existence. They, my precious children, must know that I am a God firstly of Mercy and then of Justice.

My Mercy has been stretched to extraordinary limits. I will, because of the power of prayer, hold my hand back in Mercy so that man can alleviate the hatred that is manifested in many souls throughout the world. Beware my children when I warn you that failure to stop sin from spreading will result in a chastisement that will destroy much of mankind. Such a chastisement will not have been witnessed since the days of the flood that destroyed the Earth in the time of Noah.

I will no longer allow you my ungrateful children destroy those who have shown allegiance to Me. Nor will I stand back and allow the One World Order to contaminate my creation, my children, my Earth.

Heed now this, one of the final warnings being given to mankind. Turn away now from the way of sin and you will be saved. Turn away from your blind devotion to the lure of Satan and his seductive charms, which attract you by means of love of oneself and of material wonders. Should you continue to desecrate this beautiful world created out of love for you in the way you do it will not be there for you to inflict any further damage.

I am the God of love, slow to anger, but my patience is running out. Those who continue to maim and destroy my children through war and control of the world's finances know that your days are numbered. Your chance of redemption now will be your last. Should you not respond appropriately during the great gift of Mercy that is 'The Warning' then you and your minions will be destroyed.

My Glory will be known to every man, woman and child. Those who chose the path to my Kingdom will have ever lasting life. Those who do not will experience a darkness the like of which they could never imagine nor want.

Followers of Satan who knowingly idolise his wickedness hear now my promise: 'You, my lost children will be offered the hand of love and peace once more during The Warning.' Grasp it for it will be your lifeline back into the bosom of my love. Ignore my pleas and you will suffer for eternity never to return to the fold of my cherished family.

This now, my daughter, is one of the most important warnings to save your brothers and sisters from the torturous fires of eternal damnation.

King of the Most High
God the Almighty Father

†

APPENDIX 4

The Second Judgement - Who Will Endure the Coming of His Glory?

• Book of Truth, December 4th 2014

My dearly beloved daughter, when the time comes for my Second Coming, a great sound will be heard like the roar of thunder, and the skies will be opened as if a great curtain has been lifted. I will appear in a great white light, brighter than the sun, and many people will be blinded by this Great Light, which will surround Me. The purer the soul, the clearer will be their eyesight, and they will rejoice when they see my Face.

My Presence will shake the earth and the ground will tremble. Then there will be a great stillness and my voice will ring out as I declare that it is I, Jesus Christ. There will be great rejoicing on the part of those I will call out to – those who will have been blessed with my Great Mercy. But, amidst the love and the joy, there will also be great sorrow and fear. Those who have nothing but hatred for Me will sink to their knees, groaning in pain and thrashing about in anger and fear at the sight of Me. [This means that these survived the First Judgement, because Jesus the Merciful saw another possibility to save them at his final return, because in the years after the First Judgement these were confronted with themselves, without any demons to throw a spanner in the works, and so there was hope. It is these people who are facing the Second Judgement.]

Those who reach out to Me on that Day and beg Me to take them into my Merciful Arms, will be saved. I will reach out to the lowly, the lost as well as those who will be too weak to seek Me out. They need only whisper these words: *"Jesus forgive me my sins."* And I will sweep them off their feet and into my Glorious Kingdom.

To all of you who fear the Great Day of my Second Coming, know that if you love Me that this Day will bring you the greatest joy. If you do not know Me, and when you see Me on that Day, you will come to Me and open your arms to greet Me. It will only be those who hate Me, who will refuse my Hand of Mercy. I ask you to trust in Me to bring you peace, for it would never be my intention to frighten you, as I Am a God of endless Love. To those of you who accept my Great Gift of Eternal Life, there is nothing to fear at all, and I will guide you along this path up to the Great Day.

My Words may be harsh; the Truth may be very difficult to accept; but such is the state of the world, caused by the ugliness of sin, that were I not to warn you of this Day, then you would not be prepared. It is because of Satan that the pain of sin causes such discord, grief and suffering in the world, but soon I will bring all sin to an end.

Your Jesus

†

APPENDIX 5

The Panin Bible Statistics (PBS)

God's Unfinished One

Ivan Nikolayevitsh Panin (1855-1942) discovered that the statistical phenomena in the Canons of the Old and the New Testament are based on a design impossible to create by human hands. He based his method solely on what the Bible itself indicates. In doing so, he has established, incontrovertibly, a continuous Biblical chronology, beginning with Adam and ending nearly four thousand years later with the birth of our Lord and Savior. The world finds itself already in the seventh millennium, the millennium in which the Reign of Peace belongs. The end time clock is already far past time.

God's programming of the ages uses a division of God's creative work in seven periods, in which man has also been assigned a task. The number seven is a very common number in the Bible. The most important point of reference is found in the creation account, in which the seventh day of creation, is a kind of 'Unfinished One'. The Genesis 2:3 original text reads: "[In the previous 6 days] God created in order to be able to make [during the 7th still in progress]." This special day is still going towards its final destination. The end of it announces the 8th day. This can be compared to the harmonic octave. The eighth note is the first of a new octave. About the coming octave in God's plan for the world, the Bible remains almost silent, and we don't have to concern ourselves with it at the moment.

The seventh-day Sabbath is reminiscent of the world to come in which, in a new dispensation, God's people will lie in green pastures by the waters of rest (menuhot). (Ps. 23:1) Menuha is the basic theme of the Sabbath, which proceeds from an intrinsically positive demand from which joy, peace and perfection spring, in short: holiness. The perfected world belongs to the world to come, *"for humanity has not yet entered its rest and does not rest from his works as God did from his. (...) If the people of God had already been able to rest in the Promised Land, God would not have spoken later of another day."* (paraphrase of Hebr. 4:10, 4:8)

Bible Numerics

Panin was born in Russia. Having participated in plots against the Czar at an early age, he was exiled. After spending some years in study in Germany, he came to the United States and entered Harvard University. After graduation in 1882, he converted from agnosticism to Christianity. In 1890 he discovered some of the phenomenal mathematical designs underlying both the Greek text of the New Testament and the Hebrew text of the Old Testament. He was to devote over fifty years of his life painstakingly, and exhausting his health, exploring the numerical structure of Scripture, generating over 43,000 detailed hand-penned pages of analysis. A sampling of his discoveries was published, and is still being published today. Panin used the Greek edition of Westcott and Hort of the New Testament as the basis for his research, but made use in particular of the alternative readings that those authors suggested.

Bible Numerics starts by replacing letters with numbers, which manipulation is made possible because in Greek (as well as in Hebrew) each letter represents a numerical value. The next step is to apply statistical analysis to these numbers, with a disregard for

the meaning of the words from which these numbers are derived. If a set of numbers in a row thus obtained are highly correlated, this points to design, because it ought not be.

Because of the amazing design that appears to permiate all the texts, it is possible to determine which of the doubtful translations are correct and which passages, suspected or rejected on the basis of other textual criticism, form part of the original manuscript. As Panin once noted: *"I would gladly – at least the spirit is willing, however weak the flesh – have one of my fingers cut off rather than permit a single word to be forever cut from the Authentic Original."* One of his studies, that should be in any serious library, is called "The New Testament from the Greek text as established by Bible Numerics", first printed at the prestigious Oxford University Press in 1973.

The Theological Establishment says No

The Panin Bible Statistics (PBS) have until now been largely ignored by the theological profession because of the haphazard way that the New Testament came into being and was transmitted from one generation to the other (in the earliest time). From this point of view a letter-perfect design that would permeate all the texts seems preposterous. Therefore the matter was never taken seriously in spite of the mathematical formulae that speak for themselves. Those 'formulae' have not found a listening ear because, generally speaking, Christian theologians have not much affinity with mathematics; Jewish theologians are of a different breed. I wonder how many Christian theologians have ever experienced the excitement of a newly discovered mathematical formula, to be compared with the excitement of a connoisseur who tastes some exquisite wine.

Het Letter Perfect New Testament

Because the early Christians did not use a copying system even remotely similar to that of the Jewish scribes that could secure a faithful multiplication of the Holy Scripture in minute detail, the common versions in Greek that circulated in the 19th century should have counted thousands of letter variations as compared to the authentic text. Logically those common versions should contain more than 14,000 letter variations, or 2%, from the authentic text that, at a quick guess, totals 700,000 letters (the number of Greek words of the New Testament is 138,000). This would, of course, yield far fewer word variations and even fewer sentence variations. Actually, the number of contested renderings of the

Holy Writ consisted of 3,000 readings, which have been tested by means of the PBS. It should be noted that the kind of discrepancies are in most cases inconsequential for a truthful interpretation of the text. Unquestionably, Westcott & Hort's revision of the original Greek of the New Testament has restored a great deal of the autographs, but it would be a true miracle if they had managed to restore the 'original' Versions in letter-perfect detail. Such a miracle would of course be possible, but it is not necessarily the only way out. God may have chosen to work with our human frailties over the span of many centuries in such a way that would finally lead to the letter-perfect script as it existed in the Mind of God. This perfect script in God's Mind could differ in letter-detail from the original autographs in the beginning of our Christian era. Whatever the case, the kind of mathematical analysis as performed by Panin requires a nearly perfect text, because one digit change alone destroys the statistical framework of a whole section and if the corruption of the text grows larger, a point is very soon reached where a reconstruction of the original text surpasses our human genius. Panin has demonstrated that the variations from the original as it exists in the Mind of God were reduced by Westcott & Hort to some wrong spellings and to 13 double-bracketed passages that were stamped by them as "Interpolations" (of a total of 15). I can readily accept that Westcott & Hort managed to weed out all the intentional corruptions, like the so-called Johannine Comma of 1 John 5:7-8, but to fully appreciate their work we should also consider the unintentional corruptions.

Of course, Westcott & Hort did not pretend to have produced a letter-perfect sample of the original as it exists in the Mind of God, although the ideal was ever present in their minds. That they have accomplished this remarkable feat of an almost faultless text is because of factors beyond their control: the phenomenal mathematical design underlying the texts throughout the whole Bible was only to be discovered by Ivan Panin in 1890, nine years after Westcott & Hort had completed their task. In 1934 Panin, then 79 years old, published the Greek text of the New Testament determined by his method to be the same, letter by letter, as the original as it has always existed in the Mind of God. His method proves that all the manuscripts had the same divine author, but does not prove that the men who were writing the first manuscripts or translating them from some Hebrew original, or inadvertently modifying them at some later stage in the way intended by God, were aware of the fact that every word, yes every letter, was divinely inspired and was to be inscribed in one of the great works of creation of the Almighty.

The Creation is Recreation
A Historiographic Interpretation

Article partly based on an unpublished manuscript of Jacqueline Wels from 1986

Creation or Evolution? Two camps fight each other: the Darwinists and the Creationists. The Darwinists attribute everything to chance. An untenable position. It is absurd to attribute the emergence of new life forms to blind chance, judged on their merits in a kind of knockout race. But the creationists are wrong too. The opposite of a wrong position does not make a good position! Christians should no longer be reluctant to believe in the so-called pre-creation. How can we maintain that God created man-like people only 4,000 years before Christ? There were already peoples when God created Adam and Eve. It is a mysterium if the Bible recounts that Adam was the first man. If we state that Christ was the first man, no one will claim that He was also genetically the first one.

To be sure, adaptation and natural selection in the Darwinian sense exist and have a violent and dark nature, but it does not explain the origin of species. Besides, where are the countless transitional forms? [139] ***None of this is found in the sediments, despite the exceptional richness of the fossil record. Rather, it is a burst of evolutionary drift on the threshold of every geological age, which contradicts gradual mutation and natural selection. The initial stages are always characterized by the sudden emergence of many new species. How else than via a predetermined route?***

14.56 – A Rearrangement of what Existed already

A major stumbling block to arriving at a correct understanding of the Biblical creation story is the inadequate interpretation of the verb 'to make'. We see this in Genesis 1:7: *"And God made the firmament",* but also in Exodus *20:11: "For in six days God made the heaven and earth, and rested the seventh."* The superficial reader is inclined to place 'to make' on the same level as 'to create'. Thus, in the first verse we read: *"In the beginning God created heaven and earth"* or *"...God made heaven and earth."* The Hebrew

words for ‘create’ and ‘make’ are, however, are completely different. In the first verse the verb ‘bara’ is used, in the seventh ‘asah’.

What is the exact meaning of ‘asah’ compared to ‘bara’? Word number 6213 of Strong’s Concordance gives several meanings for asah. These include the word ‘appoint’ but not ‘create’. The word asah is also used when speaking of the clothes that God makes for man, and of clothes that man makes for himself. (Gen. 3:21, Ex. 28:2) It always involves a working on something that already exists, usually to change its form, for instance when trimming someone’s mustache or nails. (2 Sam. 19:24, Deut. 21:12) It is a transformation of material that already exists. ‘Asah’ has other meanings than ‘to make’ in the general meaning of being involved or working on it. But the usual sense is ‘to appoint’, which implies that something is given a different application (a bread knife can be used for something else, like cutting vegetables). When we are told that God ‘made’ the heavens and the earth, we are not supposed to think that this refers to a creation ‘in the beginning’. We are justified in seeing this as a re-working of something that existed for a long time, just as the sun and the moon and the stars may very well have existed long before they were ‘appointed’ to mark the times and the seasons for the new human race. The Exodus text certainly refers to the six-days’ making – *“In six days the Lord made the heavens and earth (...) and rested the seventh”*, though not in the sense of seasonal creations ‘out of nothing’, but as a work of God in which a degraded cosmos was rearranged to serve as a dignified dwelling place again. After this rearrangement was completed, God rested from his ‘creative work’ (Heb. Melachah) and and handed the task over to the new Man.

14.57 – They are a Smoke in My Nose

Most people have a romanticised picture in mind when they read about the creation of Adam, the new Man. The true facts are far from romantic. The Hebrew words show that God knew what in all likelihood would happen. They are thundering words. The Hebrew is generally open to several interpretations and here every word is so loaded with meaning that the old Masoretes had to do their utmost to make a romanticised text of it. In this context, see Jeremiah 4:19-27 (abridged): *“The alarm of war! Destruction upon destruction, for my people is foolish. I saw the earth. It was without form and void (tohu wa bohu), and the heavens had no light. There was no human and the birds had fled. The fruitful place had become a wilderness at the presence of Yahweh and by his fierce anger.”*

There is no question, in the creation account, of a gentle blowing of God’s soul or breath (Hebrew: ‘neshama’) into the nostrils of the clay form that was to become Adam. (Gen. 2:7; Ps.104:29) It resembles suppressed wrath, compelling an indrawn snort of indignation, with quivering nostrils, that is followed immediately afterwards by a violent blast. Compare with Psalm 18:15 and II Samuel 22:16: *“Then the channels of waters were seen, and the foundations of the world were discovered at thy rebuke, Oh Lord, at the blast of the breath of thy nostrils.”* The blowing out, however, in order to blow the soul in,

---

139) The famous palaeontologist George Gaylord Simpson (†1984) wrote: “The earliest and most primitive known members of every order already have the basic ordinal characters, and in no case is an approximately continuous sequence from one order to another known. In most cases the break is so sharp and the gap so large that the origin of the order is speculative and much disputed.” And further: “This regular absence of transitional forms is not confined to mammals, but is an almost universal phenomenon...” Please note that Simpson does not say the absence of, but the ‘regular’ absence of. An exception to the lack of a transitional record seems to be the gradual evolution of various molluscs through millions of years, but that does not prove anything. See “Tempo and Mode in Evolution” by George Gaylord Simpson, Columbia University Press # 1944, under “Major Systematic Discontinuities of Record” (pp. 105 en 107).

comes from God's mouth and not from his nostrils, because the Bible says: *"Man (Hebrew: 'adam') lives by all that proceeds from the mouth of the Lord."* (Deut. 8:3)

On the first page of the Bible we learn that the 'beasts' of the field were around and that there was 'moisture' or 'vapour' on the earth. It is not common vapour. The text indicates that the peoples already existing were working with all kinds of witchcraft and occultism. They were not human in the original meaning of the word. They were animal-like without the characteristics and moral standards of the ideal human nature, which originally was created differently.

The Hebrew 'ad' for 'vapour' or 'mist' is a key word. It is used only one other time, in Job 36:27, where in a straightforward manner it represents moisture. In Genesis it indicates equivalent meanings of words, such as in the Zechariah 3 text, where Joshua is likened to a brand snatched from the fire (the Hebrew for brand reverts to 'ad' with a soundless 'vav' in the middle). David says in a Psalm that he feels like a leather bag (nô'ad) in the smoke. Ad is vapour, but vapour with a destructive effect; it is actually a cloud of smoke. Obviously this should not be taken as a weather condition. Destructive smoke relates to fire, like in Acts 2:19 where the Greek atmis is used: *"I will show wonders in heaven above and signs in the earth beneath. Blood and fire and vapour of smoke."* Atmis appears only one other time, in James 4:14: *"For what is the life of a human? A cloud of smoke that appears for a little while and then vanishes away."* Indeed, not very complimentary and therefore the translation is usually toned down with a term like vapour, but it need not be understood that way.

Fire and heat indicate demonic presence in the rites. The Jews make their food wholesome (kosher) according to the prescriptions of biblical law that speak of cooking utensils *"that can stand the fire",* following the principle that heating conquers all forms of demonism. 'Ad' or smoke confirms that the peoples of the pre-creation practised initiation and other related wickedness. See Isaiah 65:3-5: *"A people that provoketh Me (...) and remain among the graves (...) they are a smoke in my nose."* Most religions have their own Paradise account. The Biblical one is meant as an antitype.

14.58 – The Gap Theory

No, the world of the pre-creation was not a happy place. The Bible reports in the first verse of Genesis that God created the heavens and the earth. The next verse proceeds to speak of only one of them, leaving the heavens entirely out of consideration. Both were created 'in the beginning', but the earth, at some time, and by some means, and from some unmentioned cause, became *"desolate and empty"*, in Hebrew: 'tohu wa bohu'. From tohu alone it appears that the earth was in a desolate state that could not have existed in the very beginning, dealt with in the first verse. It would seem that creation had turned into something that was not according to the original plan. Does not Isaiah 45:18 say very emphatically that *"God did not create the earth to be desolate (tohu)"*? A remarkable fact in this context is that the second verse of the whole Bible ends with: *"And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters."* Hovering can also be translated by 'brooding', as on an egg, which points to a new start, a re-creation! From this approach the story of creation can be rendered as: "It was 14 billion years ago that God created heavens and earth." We see the same creating in the first verses of the Gospel of John, written in Greek: *"In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was in the beginning with God. All things were made through Him, and without Him nothing was made that was made. In Him was Life, and the Life was the Light of men."*

After Genesis 1:1, we place brackets around the first half of the next verse: (*"The earth was without form, and void, and darkness was on the face of the deep."*) We could regard this sentence as a gap situated outside our scope. It is placed between brackets because it is incidental to the intentions of the divine writer. We would dearly love to know more about this episode, but God wishes to focus the reader's attention on something else. In the end it is not a question of encyclopaedic knowledge but of the operation needed to restore what God's hands had made. Placing the brackets around the first part of the second verse greatly clarifies things. The sentence in question can be rendered thus: In the historical evolution since the very BEGINNING – which we will not dwell on further – the world and all its inhabitants fell into a miserable condition.

This approach can be called a revolution in theology, but it is not unfounded. Unfortunately, in this case, the pre-Christian Septuagint translation from Hebrew into Greek has wrong-footed all the Bible translators. The authoritative Septuagint is a major resource for finding out how the Hebrew should be translated, but it is not perfect. The Septuagint translates the Hebrew verb 'hajah' in Genesis 1 with an inflection of the Greek 'ginomai' (to happen, to become), except in verse 2 where a passive hyphen is applied so that it becomes in Greek: *"the earth was without form (or desolate)".* Where a passive state is involved, it is the normal way in Hebrew to omit the verb. "I am sick" or "I was sick" then becomes "I sick". No more. Thus 'hajah' for an active condition may not simply be translated with 'was'. In French it should read: "La terre fut informée" and in English: "The earth had become without form".

In Genesis 1:2, therefore, there is a pluperfect tense (had become), but without the hyphen before of the Hebrew letter vav (and, but), which means that in the first two verses of the chapter there is no logical-orderly narrative, involving verbs linked together, as later in the creation story. From a linguistic point of view, it is not about two states, creation and desolation, that follow naturally from one another; instead there is a contrast, even an irreconcilable contradiction. The 'vav' at the beginning of the second verse should therefore be best translated as 'nevertheless', and not by 'now' as in some translations: *"Now the earth was without form and void."* A correct translation is: *"Yet, the earth had become without form."* How different it would have been if there had been *"watehi ha-arets",* with a 'vav' before the imperfect tense, but that is not so. If it had been so, the narration of the creation event would have been something like this: *"In the beginning, God created heaven and earth. And then suddenly the earth appears, still completely unformed and empty, like the clay that the potter still needs to mould in order to create a pot."* But again, that is not what is written! [140)]

After reading: *"Yet, the earth had become without form, darkness was over the surface of the deep."* we arrive at the last part of the second verse, which is joined to verse 3 (the division in verses is aleatory). We then read: *"The Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters. Then God said: Let there be light. And there was light."* This we explain as follows: The Spirit of God saw this misery. Now, over 2,500 years ago - relative to Moses who was driven by God to write this down - yes then, at that time, He unfolded his plan for the redemption of the world. Therefore God said: Let there be light! And, behold, the light shone in the darkness. This agrees with the first chapter verse 5 of Saint John's Gospel: *"The light shines in the darkness - and the darkness did not comprehend it."*

The Tohu wa Bohu of the desolate oblivion is made up of two terms. The ghastly whore of Apocalypse seated on the beast is the real significance of these words. They are like

140) The foregoing is retrieved from a 2009 essay "De Bijbel letterlijk leren lezen, een bijdrage aan de Darwin discussie" (Learning to read the Bible literally, a contribution to the Darwin discussion), by Reverend Roelof Strijker.

two beasts from the abyss. Bohu occurs never without Tohu, and they belong certainly in the story of creation, because there they indicate the sea-monster that inevitably dwells in the water depths. It is there, in the immeasurable depth of evil, that the baptism, directed against God, is administered. The other term, bohu, has the same significance as Behomat or Baphomet (one of the names of Satan). It is also the Leviathan or dragon who is one and the same terrifying monster that dwells in the deepest seas. It is also androgynous: simultaneously male and female. Bohu agrees with the mythical concept of the chaos. Tohu wa Bohu together are the religious twofold chaos of the oldest initiation rites. The Jewish tradition states that they include a state of astonishment and confusion, a state of total bewilderment. The human subconscious is described as such. In imagery the initiation goes back to this chaos belonging to the dragon and to the whorish goddess. The allegorical dragon and the goddess-whore, described in the Book of Revelation, are part of the primitive religious philosophy, called Gnosis. It is therefore the image of pure paganism. The chaos, the beast and the whore are the frightful company of the dead and confront the one who is initiated. The symbolic return to the chaos, the First Cause, accords with the idolatrous baptism in order to come into contact with the dead, who present to us the ancestral bills. It is precisely these bills that have been cancelled in Jesus suffering on the Cross, providing the guarantee for restoration. The going back to the beast and the whore, particularly the chaos, is encoded in Biblical language as the return, the retreat, the going or falling backward. Doesn't the Bible have many healing allegories to address this?

The Gap-Theory from a Traditional Jewish Perspective

The Gap-Theory or Ruin-Reconstruction interpretation is a theological explanation much older than Darwin's theory of evolution. It is based on the scriptural fact that in the second verse of Genesis 1, it simply and clearly states that the planet Earth was already here - but in a ruined state - before the seven days' creative process was put into motion. The Gap-Theory is also found in the Judaica. Rabbi Aryeh Kaplan explains in a booklet "Kabbalah and the age of the Universe" : «« The following approach is that of the Ma'areches Elokus, mentioned earlier. The first possuk of the Torah tells us: *"In the beginning God created the Heaven and Earth."* However, it does not tell us what happened in the years that followed, continuing: *"The Earth was tohu and bohu..."* The Midrash explains this to be speaking of "the Earth which already existed", since *"there was an order of time before this."* Thus, in between *"In the beginning God created..."* and *"God's Spirit hovered on the face of the water"*, there is an unspecified number of years, perhaps even as many as 15 bln years. The principle of there being a hiatus between one event and another is evident elsewhere in the Torah. For example, in Parashas Chukas, the Parah Adumah and the death of Miriam are placed next to each other in the text, whereas there was a gap of forty years between one event and the other. (Num. 20:1) Although this is not as many as 15 billion years, the principle is the the same. There is still another argument. The Masoretes brought in a small mark, known as the rebia, following Genesis 1:1, to warn the reader that there is a break in the narrative at this point, and that he should pause before going on to the next verse. In view of the rebia, the beginning of verse 2 should start with 'but' or 'yet'. »» (p. 37)

14.59 – The Unity of the Anointed Couple

We are back again with the first human couple. God created Adam from the 'dust' of the earth. (Gen. 2:7) By way of exception and matching his special mission, Adam had no ancestors, just like Melchizedek. (Gen. 14:18, Hebr. 5:5-6) No creation ex nihilo, but a resplendent transformation, in such a way that it became a creating. As far as the Woman is concerned, the Hebrew does not say that God 'made' her from Adam's rib but that He 'created' her from the rib, with the word for rib (tsela) having other meanings, possibly 'ovum' (egg). By the way, Hebrew is the language of God and not a

language derived from something else, and therefore the translation of ovum is permitted. Since the union of the couple was a true unity of thought and action in a way beyond our understanding, we are allowed to use the singular form for 'Adam and his Woman'. Therefore 'him' in Psalm 8:6 refers to both of them: *"You made 'him' rulers over the works of your hands."*

Renza Giacobbi, in her commentary on the writings of Don Guido Bortoluzzi (1907-1991), writes about the special way of creating the Anointed Couple: [141)]

> «« What is important to see is that to give origin to the first Man, God created 'both the male and female gametes'. But later, to create the first Woman, He created 'only the ovule' in the ancestor mother's womb, since the spermatozoa was made available by the Young Man (Adam). We may remember that the Almighty God made Adam fall into a deep sleep, as says the Mosaic Genesis, so that he may not remember what happened with that female, in order not to repeat that union any more. This way God created also a hierarchy. Before: the Man, as head of family and head of mankind. And after: the Woman. The special incubator-female [an animal species], after those two direct exceptional interventions of God, kept all her properties and her genes. So she remained always able to generate from the ancestral line pups of the pure ancestor race; and from Man, hybrid sons following the laws of heredity studied by Mendel. This was the reason why she should not have had intercourse with any male of the [elevated] human species, after having served as an instrument of God to give birth to the human species. »»

Dust is afar in Hebrew. Afar and ofra are related to each other. The angel who came to Gideon could be seen at Ofra. The Queen of Sheba brought gold from Ofir or Ofra (spelt differently in Hebrew from the Ofra of Gideon). Gold dust can be the meaning of afar or dust that shines with a golden gleam, though not exactly so. It points to what it should become. The snake in Paradise is condemned to eating dust and to remain earthbound and bound in form. He can never aspire to the higher Heavenly spheres. Dust points to the body, gold-dust to the Heavenly body that does not know the cycle of death and birth. The Paradise Curse reveals that Adam and his Mannin came from dust and will return to dust, at least for the time being…[142)] Surprisingly, the mission of the two remained intact after they had failed. Therefore the Messiah, son of Adam (which also means the human), is rightly called the second Adam and the Virgin Mary the second Eve, in order to fulfill where the first ones had failed. (see 1 Cor. 15:47) It is remarkable that Jesus had only one parent, and thus the unity between Mary and Jesus and that between Adam and his first pure offspring was greater than between a common child and its mother.

---

141) Note to § 94 of the 2007 English Genesis Edition of the writings of Don Guido Bortoluzzi. See: "An Evaluation of the Biblical Genesis - From the Writings of Don Guido Bortoluzzi, with commentary by Renza Giacobbi". Original text in Italian; as well as: "Creation - Book of Genesis - Clarifications of the Origin of Man". From the writings of Don Guido Bortoluzzi with critical remarks by Hubert Luns. Illuminated with quotes from the writings of Blessed Anna Katharina Emmerick, also of Jasher and Enoch, plus those of Maria Valtorta. Placed on the Internet.

142) In this piece the reader is confronted with the expression "Man - Mannin", sometimes with "Adam - Mannin" and also "Adam - Adamah", in an attempt to translate the Hebrew "ish - isha" which usually is being translated with man-woman. I believe that Luther was the first to translate 'isha' with mannin. In English, "Man & Wo-man" seems appopriate, and in French, "l'homme et la haoma". The Haoma is a tree in Iran whose milky sap is considered an elixir of life. It is also a common stylistic pattern representing the tree of life, which is 'etz ha-chayyim' in Hebrew.

Genesis 1:26-27 states in the plurality of the Holy Trinity: *"Let 'Us' make Man in Our image, according to Our likeness. (...) in his image in the image of God He created him."* Among the Greek Church Fathers there was generally a distinction drawn between the image and the likeness: man is created in the image, and his destiny in freedom is to achieve a likeness to God. (Origen: "On first principles" 3:6:1) Since the text repetition is silent about the precise meaning of the term likeness, it can only mean that the likeness was appointed (asah) as something to be achieved by the individual and wrought out in life, initially by being faithful to the command: *"...of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil thou shalt not eat".* (Gen. 2:17) Upon violation of the command, the anointed couple, while remaining image-bearer, lost the likeness in the 'total agreement with God's will'. It is this agreement, the universal FIAT – the 'fiat Voluntas tua' or 'Thy will be done' – that has now to be fought for in a different way, much more painful and dramatic than God first had in mind. When the couple was expelled from Paradise, they still retained the anointing. (Lam. 4:20) Hence, God's image was preserved in their posterity, but our likeness to God was increasingly violated in a downward spiral of human self-interest and excessive egoism. While God made Adam after his Own, Adam's children were in their father's human image and likeness. (Gen. 5:1-3) And thus they bore the consequences of the violation of the command, in what is called the original sin.

> As regards the human species, the crown of creation, we see no evolution, but devolution or degeneration, though this is also not without effect on the lower order of creation: after all, everything is one family, everything affects everything else. The tarnishing of the universe as we observe it, cannot be blamed on God, as if his work of creation was imperfect. The Biblical creation story is therefore a recreation story.

The Jewish scribe Rashi tells in a well-known explanation that Man was made with a stamp (the clay form) like a coin which is made by a die, yet all replicas are different! Jesus said of the coin in his hand that the regal image stamped upon it means that it belongs to the Roman Emperor. (Luke 20:23-25) The divine image stamped upon Man means likewise that he belongs to God, and not only that but rather that he ought to belong to God as a son to his father. God is not the father of his creatures merely because He made them, for He also made the beasts. But those are not his sons. Unlike those, Adam and the Matriarch were made in the image of God. As regards the aspect of the likeness, it had to be brought about in successive generations by experience and not by a creative work, as God first intended. It was exclusively and only Christ – and we with Him and in Him – who could accomplish this, holding up a mirror to us, showing where the apostasy had led us to.

The force of Satan's initial temptation was that Man could attain the stage of understanding, which belongs to the likeness, on his own, for he said: *"If you eat of the fruit you will be like God."* In wisdom the anointed couple was perfect. Intuitively they always knew what was good, but they were imperfect in their understanding, to which also the knowledge of evil belongs (of the alternatives). This insight would have been given them by God as a free gift at the appropriate time.[143)] Says Luisa Piccarreta: *"If Adam (...) had remembered God's Love at the moment of temptation, they would not have succumbed."* They would have seen through Satan's lie, knowing that God is the generous giver of all gifts.

The two, who were created in Paradise, were not the first human beings. They were the first 'humans' in the idealistic calling of how they ought to have been or rather had to become, far above anything ever reached. This sounds far-fetched perhaps, yet is not

unbiblical. Cain became a fugitive among the nations who, by any logical standard, could not be kin.[144)] Adam and the Wo-man were created because they had a vocation for the humanlike race that already existed at the time and with whom they later mixed.[145)] The Paradise story is about a human, the Anointed One of the God who is One. God made that person together with the Wo-man his partner in his plan of creation. Psalm 8 says: *"You have made him (the human couple) a little lower than God and have crowned him with glory and honour."* Stunningly, Adam and the Wo-man were near-equal to God. He created them as majestic beings who were to rule over the work of his hands. On balance the 'unity' of the two had to be an antitype to the serpent, who is in the image of the unfolding struggle, from bad to worse, ending with the nuclear bomb and the self-opinionated disposal over life and death. Think of the authorised abortion hecatomb and assisted suicide.

Eve is sometimes called Adamah instead of Isha or Woman, because she was taken from the human or Ish. (Gen. 2:23) The Adamah, who came from the side of Adam, is an image of the Church, bride of Christ, taken from his side when He was pierced on Golgotha. God, who is One, anointed this Man/Mannin duality, that was one flesh, to be the one Man. When Adam received his Mannin, their unity was emphasized. This unity was in the image of likeness to God, which consisted for them of a lovingly and all-encompassing unity in thinking, feeling and doing, not only between Adam and Adamah reciprocally, but also between the sublime couple and God. Because of this supreme unity the couple may be rightly called divine. Usually nobody gives a thought to the unity of the Triune God (let Us make), which is the basis of his creation of image and likeness, the basis of the mystical unity between Christ and his Church, as superbly formulated in the high-priestly prayer: *"That they all may be One, as You, Father are in Me, and I in You. (...) And the glory which You gave Me I have given them, that they may be One (ut unum sint) just as We are One: I in them, and You in Me; that they may be made perfect in One."* (John 17:21-23) Although in the present dispensation this exalted unity in the secular church is still hidden, it can still be recognized in the believer who lives this unity together with his or her Christ..

In their vocation, Adam and Adamah were serving in a tabernacle service, which is a way of saying that they were ordained to bring the human offspring of the pre-creation into the presence of God. They also had to mediate between the holiest of holies and the already existing humanlike beings, somewhat similar to the ordained priesthood of later ages. Vouching for the holiness of their office, that of bringing the conscience of the humanlike beings to rest in the ranking order of the kings, their cry was: *"Lord, spare*

---

143) There are three stages of knowledge: wisdom, intellectual understanding and pure knowledge. If cows are given the choice between GM-food (genetically modified) and ordinary food, they will always opt for the ordinary food and even break down fences to get at it, even though science can discover no external difference. Do cows understand what they do? No, but they are certainly wise. In an encyclopaedia we find pure knowledge, but an encyclopaedia understands nothing and is not wise. Why are these three stages reserved to human beings? It is because God has endowed our souls with memory, will and intellect. It is through free will that man can resemble God, for it is through the consensus of mutual will that the Divine Trinity is One.

144) In Genesis 4, Cain curses God after killing his brother. God says that henceforth Cain will be a fugitive and vagabond on the earth, to which Cain replies: "What am I to do? All those who find me will kill me. My life has no future". A Jewish interpretation is that 'all those' refers to the beasts of the field. But this interpretation contradicts the next verse that whoever kills Cain will be avenged sevenfold. The Jewish scribe Rashi explains this, which fits with verse 24: "Cain will be avenged when seven generations have passed". Whatever, why would God take revenge on an animal that is simply following its instinct? 'All those', therefore, refers to people, those of the pre-creation.

145) "The Creation - the Book Genesis" by Don Guido Bortoluzzi (www.genesibiblica.eu)

thine inheritance!" (Joel 2:17) Today there are no purebred descendents from Adam. Today all people are humans. To put things right: *"We have all sinned and we all fall short of the glory of God."* (Rom. 3:23-24) Their vocation was to be One, in particular by representing the One Anointing of the One God. They had to reveal God's Love for a world made up of dualities, or as Darwin put it: engaged in a struggle for survival. Therefore, God needed a representation to show his Oneness. Adam and Adamah were anointed to take up this vocation.

The Ranking Order of Kings

Deuteronomy 16:18 to 21:9 explains the ranking order of kings. Deuteronomy 17:8-13 discusses the divine constitutional and moral law and its central explanatory and priestly authority. Deuteronomy 17:14-20 treats the God-chosen king who should fear God in the performance of his duties. He represents the supreme political authority and as such he should fear God and be fearless of humans, as has been pointed out by the beloved Marie Leckzinska (1703-1768), Queen of France: *"Human indulgence, to be condemned in all Christians, becomes a true apostasy in those who have been placed in a position to command and to instruct."* Deuteronomy 18:9-22 discusses the prophetic guidance to which both the political and priestly spheres should be attentive. These are the three Biblical categories of anointed ones. In the case of prophets, the Bible places less emphasis on the rite of anointing but rather on the gift of the Holy Spirit. With Adam and the Adamah all three functions were fulfilled in the 'one' couple in a close spirit of unity and lovingness.

When Genesis 2:7 emphasizes that Adam *"became a living being"* (or soul), we get an idea of what the peoples of old believed. It happened that when a king was dying they tried to preserve his anointing through his exhaled last breath.[146)] This belongs to the so-called 'primitive gnosis' in which breath, the anointing and the soul are of equal significance. In this way, it was hoped to bring to a higher level the soul of an ordinary mortal – that had been separated from the full knowledge of God – and thus secure the kingship 'by the grace of God'! Adam and Adamah were one living soul, antitype to this dead soul![147)] In him and his companion was the Anointing of the Holy One, and they knew all things intuitively; knowing God they had eternal life, for it is written: *"This is eternal life, that they may know You, the only true God."* (John 17:3, 1 John 2:13; 20-25) Yet, the well-nigh impossible happened. They went from life on the way to death, from knowing God to not knowing Him. Thus we can speak of a dead soul, a soul that gropes in the dark about God and his ways.[148)]

If it says that Eve, which means 'Life-giver', became the mother of all the living (Gen. 3:20), it means nothing more nor less than that she was the Matriarch of all those who love and know God. In this sense it is logical that Jesus entrusted all his children to his mother, who was in the image of Adamah. Hanging on the cross, looking at Mary and John, the beloved disciple, Jesus uttered these words: *"Woman, here is your son"* and also: *"Behold your mother."* Thus he wished, as it were, to say: "My mother, I entrust

to you all my children. Give to them all the love that you showed Me. Give my children all the devotion and tenderness of a mother. You will saveguard them all for Me." But what do we do with it? How to thank God for such an immeasurable favour? O Blessed Virgin, how deeply touched and filled with joy we are, to know you as a mother. Be a mother to us! As Luisa Piccarreta explained in "The Twenty-Four Hours of the Passion of Christ":

«« Do we internalize the love and devotion in all just like Jesus did, in order to please his mother? Can we say that our divine mother finds in us the satisfaction she found in Christ? Are we always with her like faithful children? Do we obey her? Are we imitating her virtues? Are we seeking every good means to never escape her motherly gaze, so that she will always flatter us against her son? In everything we do, do we call out Mary's gaze to guide us; in order to live a holy life under her pious gaze as befits true children? That we may please our Mother as her son did, let us ask Jesus for all the affection He had for his Mother with the glory He continually gave her along with tender and delicate manifestations of love. Let us make all of this our own to be able to say to our Heavenly Mother: "We have Jesus within us. So that you may be happy to find in us all that you found in Jesus, we give you everything, O my Mother. We also want to offer

---

146) In connection with the view that the king's last breath contained the anointing, I draw your attention to the words of the Blessed Virgin to J.N.S.R. (Je Ne Suis Rien / I am nothing), shown in the booklets "Acts of the Apostles": «« After I received the lifeless divine corpse of my child in my arms, I bent over his adorable face, just above his sacred lips, to give him my motherly kiss. Then my heart stopped beating and I tasted the death of my son, of my God, my cherised child who had died to sin. For a moment God allowed me to drink the bitterness of his holy death, until the moment when, as I approached his most holy mouth, I received the divine breath of his immortal soul that gave me back life. If the life of a human starts with a breath; likewise it ends with a breath that thereby becomes the eternal life in God. Where do you notice a cessation? It is the same breath. God gives life. God does not take back life but extends it in his own life, the eternal life in God. When Jesus with the "Father, in your hands I command my Spirit" breathed out the last breath, the Son of Man entrusted his Spirit in that breath to God his father, and it came to pass that in that same breath the Son of God revealed Himself in his immortal soul in favour of his Holy Mother, to whom He handed over his first spark of life. »»

147) Don Guido Bortoluzzi wrote in a note: «« On the 8th June 1972, I was present in the Great Hall of the Seminary at a lecture on genetic microbiology relative to hereditary defects that condition human behaviour. Professor Giambattista Marson, head of the department of dermatology at the Belluno Hospital, was explaining how in America examination of the body cells of those condemned to life sentences revealed that some of them, instead of having the normal XY chromosomes, had, in addition, a smaller one, an Y. On account of which the scientists wondered how that "Y" had entered the human genetic patrimony, which had given those involved an unbalanced personality. I then intervened, saying: "We are believers, and for us it is quite certain that He who has guided the evolution of living creatures up to the summits of the phylum, has put into being a human creature that was perfect and intended to be the champion for all his descendants. If today there are found cases of ancestral peculiarities, that is due to the fact that the champion, who in Earthly Paradise goes under the name of the genealogical 'Tree of Life', had progenitive relations with the 'Wild Tree', which could have produced good fruit with God's intervention and would produce bad fruit without it: that is, hybrids, bastards..." I could not continue because a senior professor of Biblical exegesis, Father Angelo Santin, interrupted me, saying: "We are not prepared for this line!" »»

Note to § 28 of the English Genesis Edition of the writings of don Guido Bortoluzzi, edited by Renza Giacobbi # 2007. See: www.genesibiblica.eu

148) The God-given guarantee of knowing his ways is the infused knowledge of the Ten Commandments. However, its detailed elaboration is nevertheless problematic.

> Jesus all the delights that He found in you. That's why we want to enter into your heart and take your love and all your joys, your motherly devotion, in order to offer them to Jesus. O my Mother, that your maternal hands may be the soft chains that bind us to you as well as to Jesus!" »»

Now back to the anointed couple. Adam, with the golden gloss of kingship, was made a living soul together with his Wo-man. After the fall and clothed with a degraded anointing, they were walking like men groping on earth like blind people. God's plan of recreation had thus begun in the midst of desolate emptiness… The royal priesthood had thus been established on earth, and it served as a counterweight to the spiral of evil. God's visible history and his helping hand for this struggling world had begun. That's what the Genesis story is about.[149)] The serpent, who in the fertility rites represents the concept of development and progress, did not remain silent, making use of the medium of the word through its idolatrous and deified couple. That legendary couple is known as Tehom and Tiamat.[150)] Clearly, he wanted to harness the very powerful divine or anointed dual-oneness (single-voicedness) of Adam and Adamah and use it for his own ends. Tehom and Tiamat strive to overpower Adam and his Wo-man and their progeny. In essence, it is the appropriation of power, known as 'the hand on the Lord's throne'.

Spirit and Breath

In Job 27:3 it is written: "The spirit of God is in my nostrils." This refers to the fertility rites where the nose is the instrument of handing on and of the beginning of life. Sometimes a dying king would have his successor so close to him that on the moment of death he could take into his own nose the dying king's last breath. They did this only in the case of kings. The nose was considered so sacred that the Egyptians saw it as the holiest of holies. Dr Wilhelm Fliess, a close friend of Freud, saw the nose as the most important organ and even believed that his patients could be relieved from all kinds of physical ills by a simple nose operation!

By breathing in the last breath of his predecessor through the nostrils, the successor felt sure to have inherited the kingship and received the accompanying capacities (the anointing) to exercise its functions of rulership and priesthood properly (in ancient times the rulers were king-priests). The one who in this manner captured the last breath had become equal to the late king and felt confident to have acquired a divine countenance. In the abridged version of "The Golden Bough - A Study in Magic and Religion" (ch. 27: The Succession to the Soul) Sir James Frazer mentions an example of the breathing in of the last breath of the dying king by the people of Nias, an island North-West of Sumatra in the Indonesian archipelago, but he does not mention whether this specific custom was also observed elsewhere or in a distant past. Based on the Biblical evidence, I think this was not an isolated case.

14.60 – The Paradise Curse

And thus the breath, but in this case the anointed breath that God breathed into the nose, brought Adam forth, a living soul. God, with giving his breath, conveyed of his own essence to Adam. That breath, or whatever it is supposed to represent, penetrates everything according to the precepts of the primitive gnosis. The name Adam can be written as 'Aleph-dam' or 'Aleph in the blood', with aleph being the first letter of the Hebrew alphabet representing the divine. God is the beginning and the end, the alpha and the omega, the aleph and the tau. We can therefore say that Adam means 'the Anointing in Man' or simply 'the Anointed One', a justifiable explanation because the soul of the flesh is in the blood. (Lev. 17:11) We had to wait for Jesus Christ (Christ is the Greek for anointed one), another anointed one, to finish Adam's work. The mirror image in the Hebrew spelling of aleph is 'pala', meaning 'the hidden, which is secret, miraculous,

mysterious, hidden from all eyes'. In Isaiah 9, one of the four titles of the Messiah is 'pala jooz' or 'wonderful counselor'.

Finding the Child – William Hunt (Sudley House)

It should be clear now that the whole person, head and body, is involved in the Anointing. It is not just a drop of oil poured over the head that can be washed away, not some quick operation that can be undone if one fails to come up to expectations. The whole person is involved. If the person falls, the Anointing falls with him. If this person, in particular Adam and his Wo-man, is captured, the Anointing is captured with him. If this person dies, the Anointing goes down together with him into the grave, which is why *"The breath of our nostrils (nose), the anointed of the Lord (that is, the whole Man), was taken in their pits". "In the graves of all"* is also possible. The graves of all are captured in the realm of the collective soul. Singular is changed into plural. From then on we have to consider the multiplication sign and the collective element. The human community is implicated in the fall and - for that day we yearn - will also be implicated in the recovery. Remember Isaiah's seventh and final act that starts with chapter 56 of his book. This piece underscores the salvation of Jerusalem and Zion. It so happens that the anointed of the Lord announces (Is. 61:1): *"The Spirit of the Lord is upon Me because the Lord has anointed Me to preach good tidings to the poor; He has sent Me to heal the broken-hearted and to proclaim the opening of the prison to those who are bound."* Then, in Isaiah's final act it is the apotheosis, last chapter as from 66:7: *"Shall a nation be born at once? But (affirms the Lord's judgement) Zion was in labour and she gave birth to her sons."* For the time being the nations are groaning under the weight of the paradise curse. The curse has not yet turned into a blessing.

This is what the paradise curse is all about. Adam and his Wo-man were 'the whole Man'. Together in a spirit of agreement they were the Lord's Anointed One. The cleavage, this unworldly close alliance as mentioned in Genesis 2:24, was cloven. The Anointing was by that also cloven (to cleave or stick fast and to cleave or break apart have the same Hebrew root). Adam and Adamah formed one body and the following came into existence at the cleaving: Adam is now the 'head' and Adamah the 'body'.

---

149) Jewish tradition usually situates the start of God's reign with the creation of the anointed couple, thus on the 6th day of creation, the start also of the Anno Mundi calendar. This explains why within festive Jewish cycle the celebration of New Year or Rosh Ha-shana (1 Tishrei) is focussed on the creation of the (new) world, known as God's kingdom on earth. However, that kingdom will not be completed until the complete agreement of the will between Creator and his created beings will have been achieved. The "Our Father Thy Kingdom Come" prayer was appropriately bestowed upon us by Jesus on that special occasion of Rosh Ha-shana, as shown in Matthew 6. For Christians, it is not obvious that this chapter refers to Rosh Ha-shana and its accompanying Great Day of Atonement ritual, but for those who grew up with the Jewish feasts, this is something obvious, that is, until Matthew 6:19. From that verse on, it apparently deals with the considerations that go with the Feast of Tabernacles.

150) Tiamat (Hebrew: תְּהוֹם, Greek: ábyssos, orginally Akkadian) is a primeval monster/goddess in Babylonian and Sumerian mythology, and a central figure in the Enûma Elish creation epic. John C. L. Gibson notes (in the Ugaritic glossary of Canaanite Myths and Legends) that the word tehom appears in the Ugaritic texts of 1400–1200 BC, simply meaning sea. Such a depersonalised Tiamat (the -at ending makes her feminine) is 'the deep or abyss' (Hebrew: tehom), present at the beginning of the Book Genesis.

The sundered duality (Man/Wo-man) was given the present meaning of head-body, mind-intuition, male-female, and it became a mighty weapon in the hands of the enemy. He is the ruler of that degenerate region in which we all wander. This duality can be found in Genesis: *"The man shall rule over the woman",* which in itself is not wrong when interpreted correctly, but which has become a horror in its practical implementation. In Jewish tradition this relationship between Adam and Adamah is like the relationship between Man and soil (Adamah means 'soil' in Hebrew). As he rules over the woman, he rules over the earth and abuses her. The 'head' that has become a personality in its own right, is now the opponent of the 'body', which in turn received a personality in its own right. He is the head. She, as the body, will know what suffering is. She shall diminish while he shall increase. In the secret language of the Mystery Services, irrespective of time, culture and place, this follows the formula: "via decay comes reconstruction", and it explains the price to be paid for so-called progress. By means of all kinds of acts a person is 'broken down' to give place to the 'enlightened man'. 'Solve et Coagula', as the Masonic adage goes. Solve et Coagula refers to the hideous Baphomet, a depiction of Lucifer, who has written these words on his upper arms, which means that destruction precedes a 'reset', which refers not only to the individual personality but to all social connections and the nations that together form our world. This means that the social order must be destroyed in the broadest sense of the word so that a new society with a new human being can take shape. It reveals the raging struggle whose ultimate outcome is a sure thing since the event on Calvary. Then once again the cleaving between man and woman and between Christ and them will take shape in a way that is completely unimaginable to us, as it now has been accomplished between Jesus and Mary, who cleave together as did Adam and Adamah of old. It is therefore that the apostle says: *"This a great mystery, but for me I speak concerning Christ and the Church."* (Eph. 1:22-23, 5:23-32; John 17:21-26) Yes, in Christ we are more than victorious!!

> Regardless of what we think of the Bible, the physical rules and facts are also given by God. God will be glorified by the truth, and it is incorrect to deny physical observations in defense of some theological system of thought.
>
> Matthew S. Tiscareno, Astronomical Department, Cornell University - U.S.A.

The Apostle Paul is the author of the Epistle to the Ephesians. An important tradition designates Ephesus as the place where the Virgin Mary spent her last years. That this very epistle has the Church as its theme fits well with this.. After all, Mary is the guardian of the Church as with a mother who watches over her offspring. The texts in Ephesians point to the head-body duality which is the image of Christ and his Church:

> «« He put all things under his feet, and gave Him to be head over all things to the Church, which is his body, the fullness of Him who fills all in all. (…) The husband is head of the wife, as also Christ is head of the Church; and He is the Saviour of the body. Therefore, just as the Church is subject to Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in everything. Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ also loved the Church and gave Himself for her, that He might sanctify and cleanse her with the washing of water by the word, that He might present her to Himself a glorious Church, not having spot or winkle or any such thing, but that she should be holy and without blemish. So husbands ought to love their own wives as their own bodies; he who loves his wife loves himself. For no one ever hated his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, just as the Lord does the Church. For we are members of his body, of his flesh and of his bones. For this reason (cf. Gen. 2:24) *"A man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh. This a great mystery, but I speak concerning Christ and the Church."* »» (Eph. 1:22, 5:23-32)

The Gospel of John deals with the same theme: (John 17:21-26)

> «« That they all may be one, as You, Father, are in Me, and I in You: that they also may be one in Us, that the world may believe that You sent Me. And the glory which You gave Me I have given them, that they may be one just as We are one: I in them, and You in Me; that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may know that You have sent Me, and have loved them as You have loved Me. Father, I desire that they also whom You gave Me may be with Me where I am, that they may behold my glory which You have given Me, for You loved Me before the foundation of the world. O righteous Father! Though the world has not acknowledged You, I have acknowledged You, and these have acknowledged that You sent Me. I have declared to them your name. I will continue to do this so that the love with which You have loved Me may be in them and I may be in them. »»

14.61 – In Christ More than Victorious

It cannot be emphasized enough that the ordinary human, in Christ, is the gateway to the divine. To pass through that gate we must be spiritual people, snatched from the compulsion of the flesh. Flesh stands over against spirit as form does against content. In other words, are we formal or true? It is not the rules and regulations that matter, for it is the letter that kills and the spirit that makes alive. (2 Cor. 3:6) One would be inclined to conclude that on this road to God the transcendent experience is a good characterization of what the Apostle Paul calls the spirit in the seventh and eighth chapters of the epistle to the Romanst; that it is an even better term for identifying the contemporary Christian religious experience. But that is incorrect. The transcendent presupposes a rise above our being beyond the constraints of our human condition. If that were correct, then Christ's resurrection and ascension would have been in vain! Christ became flesh and remained so in his resurrection precisely in order to attain the experience of God in our humanity as God also, yes also, intended it for us. We should not strive to rise above the human, but be moved by the Spirit 'in' the human. That can only occur in the encounter with Jesus Christ. Christianity is, without a hint of bigotry, a relational religion. Christ has made Himself accountable in the way of men. This is an important fact: that God, Who is indeed transcendental, has allowed Himself to be caught in the human and calls us his brothers and sisters. Where this will lead to in the future is beyond our comprehension, because the growth curve of the human potential – joined together in the divine – is infinite. After all, the human soul, a reflection (image) of the divine, carries within itself the potential of infinity. Because God is wedded to the human in the God-man, He has been made accessible for everyone, so that every person has been given the opportunity to accept Christ's atoning sacrifice in order to penetrate ever more into God's being. In this way, the dividing line between slave and lord, foreigner and indigenous, was overturned.

The address given to the Ecclesial Congress of the Diocese of Rome on 26th May 2009 by Pope Benedict XVI included the following words:

> «« The Second Vatican Council, wishing to pass on the pure and integral doctrine on the Church, matured over the course of two thousand years, gave it *"a more*

> *meditated definition",* illustrating mostly its mysterious nature, that is, as *"a reality imbued with the divine presence, and for this always capable of new and deeper explorations".*[151] That is, the Church, which has her origin in the Trinitarian God, is a mystery of communion. As a communion, the Church is not a solely spiritual reality, but lives in history, that is to say, in flesh and blood. The Second Vatican Council describes her *"as a sacrament, or sign and instrument of the intimate union with God and of unity with the entire human race".* (Lumen Gentium 1) And the essence of the [eucharistic] sacrament is exactly that in it the invisible is touched in the visible, that the touchable visible opens the door unto God Himself. The Church, we said, is a communion, a communion of people who, through the action of the Holy Spirit, form the People of God that is, at the same time, the Body of Christ. (…) While 'People of God' expresses the continuity in the history of the Church, 'Body of Christ' expresses the universality established on the Cross and in the resurrection of the Lord. For us Christians, therefore, Body of Christ is not only an image, but a true concept, because in it Christ gives us the gift of his real Body and not only of an image. »»

A beautiful reflection on the intimate unity of Christ and his Church comes from Father Norbertine Basiel Vanmaele of Averbode Abbey, initiator (in 1920) of the Eucharistic Crusade: [152]

> «« There on Calvary, Jesus was all alone to offer the Sacrifice, as He was only to be sacrificed. *"I have trodden the winepress alone and from the peoples no one was with Me."* (Is. 63:3) Jesus' Church did not exist then. She would only be born on the Cross. In order to create and sanctify her, Jesus had to die first. (cf. Eph. 5:25-27) It is quite different with regard to the Holy Sacrifice of the Mass. Now Jesus is bound to his Church as the temple rests on the cornerstone (cf. Eph. 2:20-21), as the bridegroom is united to his bride (cf. Eph. 5:23), as the head is one body with the limbs. (cf. Col. 1:18) (…) Now, when today the Holy Mass is celebrated as the sacrifice of Calvary, Jesus is no longer alone. The Church stands faithful at Jesus' side as co-sacrificer and co-sacrifice in the sacrificial Eucharistic life of her Bridegroom. »»

Isn't that a beautiful ending to this chapter that discussed the glorious restoration of Creation and our paradisiacal state?

151) Quote of Pope Paul VI from the Opening Address to the 2nd Session, Sept. 29, 1963.

152) "Hostie met de Hostie" (Host with the Host) by B. Vanmaele (OPraem) - published by the "Sekretariaat van de Eucharistische Kruistocht", Averbode Abbey, Belgium # 2nd edition, 1929.

APPENDIX 6

A New Species, using the Uterus as an Incubator…

by Renza Giacobbi

Note to § 96 of the Genesis Edition (2007) of the writings of Don Guido Bortoluzzi

The HEAD OF THE BRIDGE symbolises the female of whatever species it may be, who, by divine intervention, brings into the world the first couple of a new species, [of the higher orders]. This female is given this name by the Lord because symbolically she can be portrayed as a HEAD OF THE BRIDGE, which lacks the rest of the bridge, a half-arch. So she resembles a trampoline more than a bridge because after the springboard there is a void, that is, the absence of what ought to be the natural result of her genetic patrimony, and instead of it there is the beginning of a different species through the creative work of God who used her uterus as an incubator. In practice: from the HEAD OF THE BRIDGE there comes to light a new, autonomous species which has no chromosomal continuity with the species of the female from whom it is derived. In other words, individuals of the new species have no possibility of being effectively crossed with those of the species from which their species has come, that is, the species that the HEAD OF THE BRIDGE belongs to.

To sum up: from a HEAD OF THE BRIDGE there is a one-way journey, a road with no turning back. This is a general rule how God creates any new kind. The BRIDGE, on the other hand, indicates in current speech the structure that permits a passage from one bank to the other. In this case, or in the language used by the Lord, it is a female [a unique specimen] endowed with a number of chromosomes such as to permit a passage in a double direction, that is, the passing of genes from one species to another and vice-versa. This bridge, or the female, which only exceptionally becomes a link between two different species, creates a hybrid population. In this revelation, the BRIDGE is that individual female that has been the origin of a cross between two species, like that of the ancestors and that of the Sons of God. In nature, the phenomenon of a cross between different species is impossible on account of the definition of a species, which presents it as “a group of individuals genetically isolated”, for which cause any relations outside the group are infertile or sterile because between incompatible groups. [A cross can be fertile only if between different groups belonging to the same species. For example, one can make crosses between different breeds of dogs, but a cross between a dog and a cat is normally impossible, as is a cross between a human and a monkey, a so-called humanzee.]

Hence, in this revelation [by Don Guido] we find ourselves faced with an exceptional feminine individual, called HEAD OF THE BRIDGE, who in an isolated event takes on the role of BRIDGE because exceptionally endowed with the potentiality of being compatible, through the number and nature of her chromosomes, with individuals of the two different species [with the new Man as well as with the ancestors of herself] and, therefore, of being able to be fertilised by both of them. This is the reason why this symbol which here is named the BRIDGE is used as an appellation of that female individual who gives and will give, as we shall see later, birth to a hybrid species. Because of this Don Guido concluded that only said female must have had necessarily

47 chromosomes, to be able to be an intermediate passage from the ancestor's species and the species of the Children of God. In fact, as we shall see later, this female could get babies both from ancestors having 48 chromosomes, and from the Man having 46 chromosomes. [In 1959, the French physician Jérôme Lejeune identified Down syndrome as a chromosomal condition. Instead of the usual 46 chromosomes present in each cell, Lejeune observed 47 in the cells of individuals with Down syndrome.] *)

This interfertile female was a unique exception wanted by the Lord, more similar to a woman then her sisters, probably in order to give to the first Man a nurse more intelligent and closer to the characteristics of the human species: a fatherly attention from God. Because of her particular function this female should have been removed from the Man once she had performed her function as a head of bridge in order that the Man would not have a chance to generate hybrids from her in a natural way. But unfortunately it is this that took place because of the disobedience of the Young Man [Adam] – the first and only time in the entire history of creation, since she became in fact a bridge between the two species [instead of only head of the bridge, and it is Noah who was the last descendant of Adam who was pure (Gen. 6:9), without hybrid defilement, and it is due to special divine intervention that also the Virgin Mary appeared to be pure/immaculate].

NOTE: That God has also used other methods to create new species in the long history of the universe should not be ruled out.

*) Chromosome abnormality associated with the clinical syndrome of mongolism can usually be attributed to primary non-disjunction during gametogenesis. Nevertheless, a variety of chromosome abnormalities not attributable to primary non-disjunction during gametogenesis have been described, usually in mongols born to young mothers. The authors of this paper report a 48/46 chromosome mosaicism in a mongol born to a young mother. The cell line with 48 chromosomes has five chromosomes of the 21–22 group (Denver system) and a centric fragment. The cell line with 46 chromosomes has an extra chromosome with the morphology of the 19–20 group and only three chromosomes of the 21–22 group. ("Chromosome Mosaicism in a Mongol born to a Young Mother" by C.E. Blank, P.M. Lord, M.D. Casey and B.M. Laurance of the Genetics Department of the University of Sheffield; in Cytogenetics 2 # 1963 - pp. 76-84).

THE EXPECTATION OF THE JEWS

We eagerly look forward to the coming of God's reign on earth. There is much opposition to this event. Psalm 2 prophesies about this and begins with the question: "Why do the heathen rage?" Yes why, because the grandiose outcome is certain in advance. Yet is not appreciated by the proud rulers of our age. In this article we look at how ancient Judaism interpreted this psalm as to themselves and the nations around, and how they have given it form in accordance to their messianic expectations.

15.62 – Even the Perfect King would by a Tyrant

In Psalm 2 is written: *"Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the Lord, and against his Anointed: 'Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us! (...) Then shall He speak unto them (...): 'I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion.' (...) Ask of Me, and I shall give Thee the heathen for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession."* Zion is the image of the Jerusalem conquered by King David from the Jebusites, and therefore this city is known as the City of David. The Judahite David, king of all Israel, is in the Bible the foreshadowing of the long-awaited Messiah, for Genesis 49:10 says: *"The sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and unto Him shall the gathering of the people (plural form) show obedience."* Shiloh is here one of the common names for the great Messiah Prince.

The foregoing shows that God's kingdom, in its direct sense, is closely linked with an earthly and worldwide kingdom, which in turn cannot be separated from the extraordinary calling of the 'people' and the function of the State of Israel. What was true in ancient times, when these words were recorded, is still true today. God's Word never fails. It also shows that there is an prideful and idiosyncratic conspiracy against the ranking order of kings, instituted by God, an institution that in Old Testament times

served as a precursor and was a reflection of the kingdom to be claimed by God at some time in future.

Deuteronomy 16:18 until 21:9 explains the ranking order of kings. Deuteronomy 17:8-13 treats the divine constitutional and moral law and its central interpretative and priestly authority. Deuteronomy 17:14-20 treats the God chosen king who should fear God in the execution of his duties. He represents the supreme political authority and as such he should fear God and be fearless to humans, as has been advanced by the beloved Marie Leckzinska (1703-1768), queen of France: *"The human indulgence, condamnable in all Christians, becomes a true apostasy in those who have been establised in a position to command and to instruct."* Deuteronomy 18:9-22 treats the prophetic guidance to which both the political and priestly spheres should be attentive. These are the three biblical categories of anointed ones. In the case of prophets, the emphasis is less on the rite of anointing but is put on the gift of the Spirit. With Adam and the Adamah (Eve) all three functions were fulfilled in the 'one' couple in a close spirit of unity-loveliness.

From a Biblical perspective, it can be said that whoever opposes the principle of 'king by the grace of God' also opposes God. To clarify, this principle is a statehood. This is why the Dutch national anthem (the Wilhelmus), spoken by William of Orange, and composed in 1572, immediately became popular as an anthem of resistance: *"To the king of Spain I've granted a lifelong loyalty. (...) But God, I trust, will rate me his willing instrument."* Signing the Union of Utrecht in 1579 against the Spanish King Philip II, the northern provinces of the Low Countries (from above the great rivers) did not want to turn away from a lord of the land. William of Orange, the leader of the revolt, therefore committed himself to the younger brother of the French king, the Duke of Anjou. Anjou was proclaimed "prince and lord of the Netherlands" by the States General in January 1581. He thanked for the honor bestowed on him, which de facto created the Republic of the United Netherlands. The provinces then had to formally rid themselves of their lord through their representation in the States General. In the so-called "Act of Abjuration" (Plakkaat van Verlatinghe) of July 26 1581, the States General set forth their reasons. A monarch, they argued, although appointed by God, could nonetheless be deposed by his subjects. A monarch is head over his subjects to protect them and he may not demand that they be submissive to him in everything and serve him as slaves. If he does so, he exceeds the limits of his God-given mandate and is a tyrant. On July 26, 1581, King Philip II and his heirs were deposed forever by the revolutionary government.

In practice, the Act of Abjuration amounted to a declaration of independence. This was the first time during the Eighty Years' War that people explicitly rebelled against the king. Previously, the Wilhelmus, the Pacification of Ghent and even the Union of Utrecht itself always said that the people remained loyal to the king and only fought the Spanish soldiers. Therefore, the struggle for independence in the Low Countries in the 16th century was not fought against the institutional kingship - by the grace of God - but against the then reigning Spanish monarch, that is, against the individual who misbehaved. That is the quintessence of the Dutch National Anthem. In contrast, the French National Anthem, opposes the principle itself. In it, every monarch, even good monarch, even perfect monarch, is portrayed as a tyrant and conspirator – one who conspires with the despicable God of the Bible, for that is the meaning the revolutionaries placed in it. The Dutch National Anthem speaks in the vein of Psalm 2 about *"defeating the tyranny",* yet a totally different tyranny to which the god-haters are referring. Seen this way, the Marseillaise is the antithesis to the Dutch National Anthem.[153)]

153) See the Official Gazette Le Moniteur regarding the parliamentary deliberations from January 2, 1793, which led to a majority vote in parliament for the death penalty on King Louis XVI, who was assassinated as early as the 21st of that month. The French National Anthem was composed eight months earlier.

As an aside, it should be noted that just as there is a degeneration in kingship, there is also a degeneration in the power of the general population. Democracy, rather democratism, is the degeneration of a concept that is essentially correct, but in which the power of the popular power prevails at all costs. If we set aside the excesses, which we are now witnessing more than ever, democratic principles are applicable everywhere, even in the purely monarchical state. Kingship has its excesses, as history demonstrates. But are excesses of parenthood, in which children are abused, an argument for abolishing parental authority? In this sense, there is good and bad kingship, good and bad democracy.

15.63 – The Jewish Vision in the Pre-Christian Era

In the interpretation of Psalm 2, in conjunction with the prophecies of Daniel, the emphasis within ancient Judaism was on the militant, of God as a warrior. The relevant part of Psalm 2 goes as follows: *"Ask of me, and I shall give you the heathen for your inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for your possession. You shall break them with a rod of iron. You shall dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel. Now listen to this warning, you kings; learn this lesson, you rulers of the world.*" In Jesus' day, Israel chose to interpret these verses literally as if God would gladly crush nations. However, this imagery need not be taken literally. An ancient Egyptian and magical ritual, common in pre-Christian times, involved writing on a clay vase or bowl the names of the tributary nations and their princes and then dashing the thing to pieces. This made it clear who the new ruler was, whose yoke – in the vein of the 28th chapter of the prophet Jeremiah – would henceforth determine the goings-on of the nations under his sphere of influence. As soon as the pottery was shattered, every witness knew that this symbolic act was a warning of what was about to happen if someone dared to resist the new ruler. The symbolic act was enough. It did not have to result in a literal crushing.[154)]

Christ, King of the Universe
Feast of last Sunday of liturgical year

According to Daniel 2:44, the Most High God will crush all kingdoms to finally establish his own empire. In intertestamental times, people looked forward to its fulfillment. I now quote from a second-century tract, "The Expectation of the Jews", intended as an apology on Christianity: [155)]

> «« The expectation (in Jesus' time) seems to have been that the Messiah was to be a prophet like unto Moses, yet greater. (…) (But) another and much larger group of people advanced for the Messianic prophecies a more worldly meaning. The great personage whose coming they shortly expected was to be a king, but greater than any who had sat upon the Jewish throne. It was with this expectation, evidently, that Jesus' disciples followed Him through his whole ministry. And even after his resurrection they seem for a while to have entertained the same hopes. One of the questions they asked Him after He rose was (Acts 1:6): *"Are You going to restore in this time the Kingdom to Israel?"* And at the last supper they disputed *"which of them should be the greatest",* that is, who should be

154) See on the Internet: "UCLA Encyclopedia of Egyptology – execration ritual".
155) See my book: "Proofs of the Life and Death of Jesus".

highest in office in the new Kingdom that He was about to set up. It was with this idea that He was hailed by the multitude into Jerusalem with the shout, *"Hosanna to the Son of David"*. This was the idea that Nathanael meant to express when he said, on receiving the evidence that He was a prophet (John 1:49): "*Rabbi, You are the Son of God, You are the King of Israel."* That it was his temporal character to which Nathanael here referred we have sufficient evidence in the information which first directed his attention to Jesus (John 1:45): *"We have found him of whom Moses in the law, and the prophets, wrote – Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph."*

(…) So prevalent had this expectation become that it had spread beyond the Holy Land. Tacitus records the fact that among many *"there was a persuasion that in the ancient books of the priesthood it was written that at this precise time the East should become mighty, and that those issuing from Judeah should rule the world."* And Suetonius writes: *"that in the East an ancient and constant opinion prevailed that it was fated there should issue at this time from Judeah those who should obtain universal dominion."*

This confident expectation of the Jews had already caused no little political disturbance. It was this proud anticipation of universal conquest that made them so restive under the government of the Romans. That they who were destined to reign over the world – and whose King Messiah was to have the heathens for his inheritance, the uttermost parts of the earth for his possession, who was to break them with a rod of iron, and dash them to pieces like a potter's vessel – should be in vassalage to a foreign power, was more than they could bear.

One truth which John the Baptist announced bears evident marks of supernatural origin – since it contradicted the conceptions and prejudices of the age – that the Messiah and his Kingdom were not to be national, not belonging de jure and exclusively to the posterity of Abraham alone. There is a maxim, as common as the very letters of the alphabet, in the writings of the rabbis, that *"All Israel is to partake in the world to come",* that is, in the Messianic Kingdom, merely by virtue of their descent from Abraham. They had not the slightest notion that it was to be a kingdom selected from Israel and other nations, a new community by no means coextensive with the seed of Abraham. That it was to be a moral and a spiritual kingdom was just as far from their concepts. »»

This point of view is illustrated by Qumran's famous "War Scroll", on permanent display in the Shrine of the Book in Western Jerusalem which, to use the words of Neil Silberman, is *"a kind of chapel of relics dedicated to the miracle of national rebirth"*. This considerably damaged scroll describes the last vengeful battle, a small fragment of which reads in characteristic languageal:

«« For into the hand of the oppressed You will deliver the enemies of all the lands; into the hands of those who are prostrate in the dust, in order to bring down all mighty men of the peoples, to return the recompense of the wicked on the heads of the stubborn, to pronounce the just judgment of your truth on all children of Man, and to make for Yourself an everlasting name among the people. You will show Yourself great and holy through the wars by which You reveal Yourself to the remnant of the nations. So they may know that You are God when You carry out judgments on Gog and on all his company that are assembled about us, for You will do battle against them from the high heavens for their everlasting confusion. »» [156)]

Looking forward to a warlike messiah must have been the prevailing opinion at the time, but other voices were also heard. In this way Melker, the priest from Bethlehem, wrote in the time that Jesus was born: [157)]

«« Every suffering of David, or lamentation of Job, or glory of Solomon - yea, every wail of human sorrow, every throe of human grief, every dying sigh, every falling bitter tear - is a type, a prophecy of the coming King of the Jews and the Saviour of the world. Israel stands as a common factor at every great epoch of history.

(…) And this, I fear, is going to be a trouble with our nation: our people are going to look to 'the one sent' (Shiloh) as a temporal deliverer, and will aim to circumscribe Him to the Jews alone. And when his actions begin to flow out to all the inhabitants of the world in love and charity, as is most certainly shown forth in the ninth section of the holy prophet (Jer. 9:24-25), then I fear the Jews will reject Him, and, in fact, we are warned of that already in the third section of Jeremiah's word. To avoid this, Israel must be taught that the prophecy of Isaiah does not stop with the Babylonian captivity and return to the Kingdom of Heaven, and that Ezekiel's wheels (of ch. 1 and 10) do not whirl politically or spiritually in heaven, but upon earth, and have reference to earthly revolutions or changes, and show the bringing to pass of the great events of which this of Bethlehem is the grandest of all. (…) We, as Jews, are the only people that God has entrusted with the great questions, and, of course, the world will look to and expect us to give an interpretation to these questions. As we are entrusted with these things, God will hold us responsible if we fail to give the true light on this subject. »»

Jeremiah 9:24-25 reads: *"I am the Lord, exercising loving kindness, judgement, and righteousness in the earth, for in these I delight. Behold, the days are coming, says the Lord, that I will punish all who are circumcised with the uncircumcised"*, and indeed this has happened.

15.64 – The Missionary Drive, a Corollary of Messianism

Of lying lips and a deceitful tongue …

Israel has forsaken its historic duty to proclaim the message of salvation to the nations about the one and true God. That is not the same as making them Jewish! Israel's error of judgement has always been its contempt for those foreigners, whom they were accustomed to call dogs and count as the scum of the earth; see story in Matthew 15:21-28. She has taken over the attitude of Miriam (Num. 12), the 'prophetess' of lying lips and deceitful tongue, who reviled at Moses' wife.[158] (Num. 12) His wife, called Zipporah, was the daughter of Jethro, who was a Cushite (Nubian) and must have been of very dark complexion, like the Cushite Queen of Sheba. In those days, being black was probably seen as a distasteful condition. In the first Gospel of the Infancy of Jesus Christ, written no

156) From the English translation by Michael Wise, Martin Abegg Jr, and Edward Cook in "The Dead Sea Scrolls: A New Translation", HarperCollins – New York # 1996 (fragment 1QM ≈ 11:13-20 on p. 161).

157) This is in the report of Melker, the Chief Rabbi of the Bethlehem synagogue, and can be found in Chapter 4 of the ArchkoVolume. See book by yours truly: "Proofs of the Life and Death of Jesus."

158) In Exodus 15, Miriam is called 'prophetess'. In ancient Hebrew, prophetess is a neutral term. Thus, the soothsayer Bileam is also called a prophet.

later than the second century, is written (17:9): *"The children of Israel are like Cushites among the people, and the women said: We beseech of thy mercy that thou wouldst restore those boys to their former state."* This illustrates that Cushite was a term of abuse. Having reviled Zipporah because of the colour of her skin, Miriam was punished with the curse she had spoken and suddenly she caught a distasteful skin condition so that she became as white as snow: not black, but white!

The Book of Acts also gives evidence of Jewish contempt for outsiders. When the Apostle Paul preached in the synagogue at Antioch (Acts 13:14-45) and told of the forgiveness of sins through Jesus Christ and justification by faith in Him, everyone listened attentively and they even invited him to continue his preaching on the next Sabbath. But on that day, when the entire city had turned out, including many Gentiles, to listen to Paul's sermon, the Jews "were filled with envy" and began to scold him during his exposition. That was the breaking point, that the glad tidings were also for the Gentiles! That was unpalatable. The same is also true of his much later speech in Jerusalem. After they had dragged him out of the Temple, Paul is allowed to make his defense, explaining in detail about his conversion when Christ appeared to him in a vision. No one interrupts him. Tumult only breaks loose when he adds that he was sent far away to the Gentiles. *"Then they shouted at a loud voice: Away with such a fellow from the earth! It is not fit that he should live!"* (Acts 22:21-22)

We thus see that the people of Israel in its uplifted mission as a teacher of righteousness have demonstrated way too little missionary zeal, though they have always welcomed new converts, in particular in the pre- and early Christian times.[159)] The ancient times ought to have known tribes of great virtue who earnestly searched for God and would have been delighted to have been instructed on how to set up their own service of reconciliation as a prefiguration of things to come. (Is. 56:3-8) The Cushite Eunuch – a honorific title at the time – complained: *"How can I understand what I am reading in Scripture unless someone guides me?"* This proves my point. (Acts 8:26-33)

A separatist attitude to life is not foreign to modern Judaism either. Still Orthodox Jews pray during morning prayer: *"Blessed are Thou Lord, King of the universe, because Thou have not made me a goy (heathen), a slave or a woman."* [160)] This tendency explains much about why Israel, like the unclean Miriam, was shut out of the camp until it will be admit-

159) According to Josephus the inhabitants of Greek and other foreign cities displayed great zeal for the spread of Judaism. Once converted, the proselyte received a new name and was cut off from his family. After the Christian Church formally opposed Judaising, proselytism receded.

160) The 'having not created me a woman' is part of a group that also expresses gratitude for not having been created a gentile or a slave. It appears as part of a sequence of blessings, found in the Talmud, that are meant to accompany activities that are performed in the course of waking up in the morning, such as hearing the first cock-crow, opening one's eyes, stepping on the ground, getting dressed, etc. The following is an excerpt from "Women in Judaism - class 31 (year 2000)" by Mrs. Leah Kohn, which resorts under ProjectGenesis (www.torah.org): «« I have taught and worked with unaffiliated Jewish men and women for the past 17 years. In fact, I came to the United States from my home in Israel for this express purpose. I grew up in an observant Jerusalem neighborhood, a twelfth generation 'Yershalmi' (inhabitant of Jerusalem). For as long as I can remember I had been surrounded by men who each morning recited the prayer: "Blessed are You, Hashem our G-d, King of the universe, for not having made me a woman." I never objected to this practice – not because I was thoughtless or accepting. As a child and a young adult I was perpetually curious and asked questions about Judaism regularly. Nonetheless, this blessing never became an issue for me. On arriving in the U.S. and working with American Jews, I was confronted with the challenge of explaining this 'blessing' to many women whom it had perturbed. For the first time in my life I started to wonder why I was not similarly bothered. »»

ted again, all cleansed. (Num. 12:14) Does not Paul say: *"Have they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid: but rather through their fall salvation is come unto the Gentiles."* And elsewhere: *"Blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in. And so all Israel shall be saved, (...) for they are enemies for your sakes: but as touching the election, they are beloved for the fathers' sakes."* (Rom. 11:11, 25-28)

Israel's contempt for the goyim (foreign people) probably reached its apex under the Hasmonian King and High Priest John Hyrcanus (134-104 BC) after he had high-handedly abrogated the oral law and all its ordinances and forced the Gentile Galileans and the Idumeans to convert to Judaism, the only forcible mass conversion in the history of Judaism. Though the Galileans and Idumeans did not ostensibly resist their conversion, we may speculate – there exists no definite account of it – that these acts caused resentment and horror under a large number of the religious elite, associated with the Pharisees, who must have considered it worse than the relentless religious persecution of the Jewish faith that preceded it, for the rot was now eating its way from within. They declared impure the soil of foreigners and forbade all intercourse among Jews and strangers out of fear of contamination. As the sacrificial vases were contaminated by the least impure contact, they came to regard themselves contaminated by any contact with strangers.

Some may object that the Mosaic law itself promote contempt for foreigners, because of its emphasis on segregation. However, trying to keep a national identity and showing love for the foreigner is not in itself contradictory. This has been clarified in the second "School of Hillel letter" regarding "God's providence to the Jews", written shortly after the destruction of the Temple of Jerusalem in 70 AD: [161)]

> «« To secure this one grand and fundamental design – that is, the worship of the One living and true God – the whole Mosaic economy was modelled. For this purpose we were forbidden to marry foreigners; for this purpose our sacrifices were all to be offered in one place, and by one family of priests, lest we should wander away and become corrupt by association with idolaters. For this purpose we were forbidden certain kinds of food, such as were offered in sacrifices to heathen deities. We were not to be present at idolatrous feasts, nor to become accustomed to those moral abominations with which heathen worship was invariably accompanied. »»

Curiously, the Jewish sages have always considered Abraham's missionary zeal as one of his great virtues. But did they put it in practice? I now quote from the authoritative ArtScroll Tanach Series (overview Sidrah Toldos and comment on Genesis 2:4):

> «« Abraham and Sarah dedicated their lives to seeking out people to whom they could bring the message of God. Abraham had an 'army' of some 318 disciples of fighting age who were part of his own household [Gen. 14:14]; even before moving to Canaan from Haran, he and Sarah had proselytized untold numbers of people [Gen. 12:5]. (…) We find in Genesis 2:4: *"This is the offspring [i.e. the products] from the heaven and the earth after they were being created."* As a Midrash and the Zohar comment, 'created' [b'beram] has in the Hebrew the same letters as 'for Abraham'. Hence, the world was created for the sake of Abraham and his teachings; his proclamation of Hashem (the Name) as the only God and of his infinite kindness were the purpose and foundation of creation. Abraham did his share to perfect creation. By employing love, goodness and hospitality [chessed] he was indeed able to raise armies of converts in Haran and Canaan. (…) In the Hilchos Avodah Zorah, Rambam explains [1:2-3]: *"On this path [of progressively more serious idolatry] the world went and continued to develop until*

161) See ArchkoVolume in "Proofs of the Life and Death of Jesus" by your's truly.

the birth of the pillar of the universe – our father Abraham (...) He arose and called out in a great voice to the entire world to inform them that there is a single God (...) from city to city and from kingdom to kingdom he went (...) until he arrived in Canaan (...) until he gathered to himself thousands and tens of thousands."
Abraham's academy was open to all who would listen; Isaac had only one student - Jacob - but what a student! We do not know the ultimate results of Abraham's teachings – although it is axiomatic that despite the disappearance of his converts (in the course of history), the lifetime devotion of an Abraham had lasting effects – but we do know that the single product of Isaac's academy became the father of our nation, (the perfect tool dedicated) to God's purpose in the work of creating heaven and earth. »»

I bring up these arguments because current preaching is closely related to the prevailing view of the shape of God's kingdom on earth. Missionary zeal is a counterpart of fostered messianism. The stronger the expectation of an earthly and global empire, the stronger the missionary zeal. It may be said that this vocation has always embraced Judaism. Not surprisingly, world-conquering Marxism came from Jewish quarters (Karl Marx was Jewish). However, Marxism and corresponding groups do not look forward to a heavenly kingdom descending on earth, but to a purely human achievement, with all religious ideals stripped of their lustre.

The Reign of Peace (Photo Hubert Luns)

15.65 – Jewish Messianism in our days

The Jewish tradition, as expressed in the Mishna (± 220 AD), focused on what was considered honourable, ignoring what fell short of it, ingeniously adapting the reading material to that purpose. The original pluralism of the Jewish world of thought was thereby violated. The stunning disillusion after the bloody repression of the Bar Kochba Revolt prompted the Jews to bury this entire episode and forget about the theological considerations that had played a part in it. A certain shame might have prevailed concer-

ning their concept of a vengeful God seeking to destroy the heathen nations; if so, it would be a justifiable shame because the two complementary aspects of God, being righteous and merciful at the same time, have always been known to them: Amos's message portrays the inflexible righteousness of God, Hosea's his great forgiveness. These two cannot be separated, because God's involvement is in 'both' justice and mercy at the same time.

The messianism in the new era after the Bar Kochba Revolt, that took hold after 138 AD, appears to concentrate more on a remote future, where the deliverer is seen on a celestial stage. Until that era the calculations for the advent of the reign of God were revised, each time that the events, often very traumatic, failed to meet expectations. George Foot Moore comments in his famous work "Judaism":

> «« It is probable that similar corrected computations were made in the period of the Bar Kochba Revolt. After the calamitous issue of the insurrection had discredited its Messiah, mistrust prevailed of all attempts to fix a date for [the involvement of] God and censure of those who tried it prevailed. »» (7:2)

It is explicable in this light that anti-Semitism, which emerged in particularly virulent form in the nineteenth century - and from which Nazism emerged, gave critical weight to the 'return' (aliyah) back Home. It was the unbelieving Jews who pioneered the exploitation of what is now called the Land of Israel. That may seem strange, and it also led to fierce resistance within Orthodox Judaism, which found it hard to stomach. Yet it is not unbiblical. After all, the return was unconditional, as announced by the Prophet Ezekiel, a prophet from their time of exile:

> «« Thus saith the Lord God. I do not this for your sakes, Oh house of Israel, but for the sake of my holy name, which you have disgraced in every country where you have gone. And I will sanctify my great name, which was profaned among the nations, the name you disgraced among them. Then they will know that I am the Lord, saith the Lord God. I will use you to show the nations that I am holy. For I will take you from every nation and country and bring you back to your own land. I will sprinkle clean water on you and make you clean from all your idols and everything else that has defiled you. A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you. I will take away your heart of stone and I will give you a heart of flesh. »» (Ez. 36:22-26)

It is only after World War II that the movement within practicing Judaism became increasingly important, based on a truly religiously driven messianism. One of its manifestations is the strong desire to rebuild the Temple in Jerusalem. It is fascinating to watch these developments. I am curious to see what this will bring!

THE END OR A NEW BEGINNING?

August Rodin – The Gates of Hell

Society is on a dangerous fault line: of either a return to its pagan roots or a revival of Christianity. In this decisive battle, Satanic powers are storming upon the weakened edifice of what is currently the suffering Church, now sighing and toiling. It eludes them that behind the facade of weakness is a spiritual reality called Christ, He who cried out on the Cross: "It is accomplished." From this the Church draws its invincibility. This struggle culminates in the anti-climax and the restoration of the paradisiacal state. This is quite different from the inflated self-glorification of paganism.

16.66 – The Pantheon, an Ode to Human Ingenuity

The Pantheon, a Roman temple transformed into a church, symbolizes Christianity, which settled on the paganism of old. It also symbolizes the deification of man. Although paganism subdued itself at that time, it continued to exist in its original form in the caverns (the chapel spaces under many churches). Now, after 1400 years the displaced phantoms claim their rights again! It is God who will judge this far-flung dispute.

In 2009, the Pantheon celebrated its 1400th anniversary as a Christian church building. The Pantheon, from Greek: 'every god', was built as a temple dedicated to 'all' the gods of Ancient Rome and it was meant as a tribute to the Roman Emperor. The monument expressed the Roman fixation with deification. The first temple on its site, built in 25 BC by Agrippa, son-in-law of the 'divine' Augustus, featured the gods Mars and Venus, the mythical ancestors of Julius Caesar and by extension, Augustus himself.

After almost half a millennium as a pagan structure, the Eastern Emperor gave the Pantheon to Pope Boniface IV who conferred on it a new identity. On May 13, 609, it became the first pagan temple in history to be transformed into a Christian church. Instead of letting it fall into ruins by the tooth of time, the Pantheon was reborn as St. Mary of the Martyrs, ready to continue through the centuries with a glorious purpose. To cement

its ecclesiastical dignity, and in antitype to its former purpose, the bones of hundreds of martyrs were brought there from the catacombs within Rome for a fitting veneration and commemoration within its strong walls. And as a result the Pantheon celebrates its dedication on the All Saints Day, on the first of November.

The Pantheon was not only a tribute to the mythical gods but also an ode to human inge–nuity. For the Romans, the Pantheon, rebuilt in the beginning of the second century AD, was a shining celebration of religion, mythology, art, power, and science, actually a cele-bration of Man himself. It is the most advanced building of antiquity, surpassing all other buildings of antiquity in terms of structural engineering. It has by far the largest self-supporting roof in antiquity. It deserves a place in the list of seven wonders of the world, but is never named in it. The original list, which dates from the second century BC, was lost and reformulated in the Middle Ages. The world wonder that perished last was the Pharos (lighthouse) of Alexandria, which was destroyed by earthquakes in the 14th century. In my view, the Pantheon surpasses in ingenuity the constructions of the great cathedrals of the Middle Ages, which were based on a simple principle taken to the extreme, until structures became so large that they collapsed under their own weight.

It is not only the diameter of the roof that is impressive with its more than 43 meters, but precisely and above all its spherical shape, which is constructively much more difficult to carry out than a slightly tapered one. With natural stone the construction would have been impracticable, but by using mortar made of ultra-light volcanic ash with pumice, in which fist-sized pieces of rock, a light and strong material was created, what today is called bim- or gas concrete, which lends itself excellently to constructive purposes (the mortar was diluted with portlandite by the Romans). By reducing the thickness of the panels toward the top and using more and more ash and pumice instead of rock, the weight of the dome was reduced by more than half, making the construction possible. This amazing achievement must have filled the architect with enormous pride and elevated him in his own mind high above the simple man. The present-day worship of human ingenuity finds its perfect allegory in the Pantheon. It is therefore fitting that the

Christian Church has appropriated it and elevated it to a loftier and more spiritual plane. Only the Creator of the universe is due the honor that humans appropriate. Wouldn't God's Spirit have been involved with the creators when they built the temples of antiquity? God must have foreseen that the Pantheon would be changed into a Christian church and sanctified with the bones of countless martyrs. How appropriate!

16.67 – An End or a New Beginning?

Feitse Boerwinkel wrote a book in 1974 with the catchy title "Einde of Nieuw Begin?" (The end or a new beginning?)[162)] In it he raises the question of identity, the question of the continued relevance of Christianity. He concludes that the social developments that led to this question point not so much to the end of the church as to the end of a particular manifestation of church and Christianity, namely the Constantinian, in which state and religion became intertwined in a perhaps unsavory way.

It was only after Emperor Constantine the Great accommodated the Christian faith, early in the 4th century, that Christian affairs also started to become state affairs, though we may wonder who profited most: the religion or the state, for in practice Christianity as the state religion was often subjected to imperial decree. The Pope, in a way, became subservient to the state, an ambiguity that has remained ever since. For the Christianization of the world, the state church did little. It did more, unfortunately, for the secularization of Christianity. The throne and the altar became one, a lofty ideal that often led to

162) Feitse Boerwinkel (1906-1987) was a cultural philosopher following the principle of inclusive thinking, a thinking that departs from the idea that 'my salvation' (happiness, life, prosperity) should not be obtained at the expense of or without 'his salvation'. The philosophy of life of inclusive thinking encompasses more than tolerance or conformism: the other must be selflessly helped. In "Einde of Nieuw Begin?" Boerwinkel pleads, based on this principle, for encounters between Catholics, Evangelicals and liberal Protestants, as well as between Christians and adherents of other world religions. The driving force for seeking a common ground is the Love of God, which calls to alleviate the plight of the less fortunate. For him, God was the God of liberation who provides a new beginning for humanity. (From ch. 2 of "Einde of Nieuw Begin?")

compromise and worse. I'd like to point out that only at the gates of death, the Emperor had himself baptised. No wonder heathen elements entered the Church. The true Christian element was his mother, Saint Helena. In the year 313 Constantine issued the Edict of Milan (with co-emperor Licinius), which removed penalties for professing the Christian faith and pledged to return confiscated Church property. From then on the Christian practices were benevolently allowed. It became 'religio licita' (approved or accepted religion). However, it neither made paganism illegal nor made Christianity the state religion. These were actions of Theodosius, more than seventy years later.

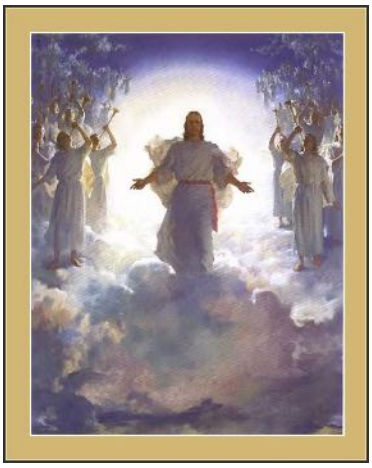
Under Constantine, the clergy were exempted from state duties. The remainder of this in our time is that they were exempt from military service. Bishops were often given judicial powers. Moreover, they were later, like church officials, allowed to use the imperial stagecoaches. The latter explains the postage freedom enjoyed by church policy bodies in the Netherlands at the time. Rights of inheritance and asylum were granted to the church. Especially after 324, Feitse Boerwinkel writes, when he became autocrat, this privileging of the church is implemented by Constantine. More and more clearly he signaled to his subjects that he expected them to join the church. Yet he did not cross the line from insistence to coercion. The latter Theodosius does, out of gratitude, after having been cured of an illness. The Theodosian phase in our European history lasted until the French Revolution, Boerwinkel explains.

During the French Revolution, the movement of separation of church and state arose which was beaten back for the time being and culminated in the Concordat of 1801. The law of July 12, 1790 was short-lived and is known as "La constitution civile du clergé" - the civil regulation of the clergy. The heroic revolt against it by the people of La Vendée (Anjou, Brittany, Poitou), which Napoleon, upon taking office in 1799, faced, was pacified by him. This played an important part in forming the Concordat that Napoleon concluded with the Vatican two years later. This reaffirmed Catholic practice as the primary religious order and ushered in the failure of "La constitution civile du clergé", as well as the formal decision in 1795 to achieve the separation of church and state. It was not until 1905 that the principle of the "separation of church and state" was definitively enshrined in an article of law under the leadership of Prime Minister Émile Combes, a failed seminarian who had become a virulent Freemason. The law was not meant as an amicable divorce under cohabitation conditions, but constituted a total separation of church and state, especially in the normative and moral spheres. In fact, the principle being followed stemmed from a desire to destroy the Church. The 1905 law was an act with far-reaching consequences. It is seen abroad as a model, not necessarily as a law, but as a guide for all forms of public administration.

In 1801 does end the Theodosian, but not yet the Constantinian phase, namely that of favoritism of the church by the state and especially that of the obviousness of being a church member, the obviousness also of the superiority of Christianity over other religions. Boerwinkel quotes Chenu: *"The 'puissance' (power) of the church may have ended with the French Revolution, but not yet its 'influence' (influence)."* The latter continued until the 1960s when the obviousness of being a church member quickly crumbled and the church was pushed to the periphery of society. Then also began the phase of integration of pagan religions, such as Islam, which were considered equal partners of Christianity or even superior to it, because criticism of Christianity was allowed but not the other way around.

Under Constantinian rule there was a cutting of any connection between Jews and Christianity, such as the prohibition of celebrating the 'dies dominica' (the Lord's Day) with the Jews. Sunday became the official seventh day, which it already was for the pagans, who were thus kept on friendly terms. It was Constantine who insisted on putting the celebration of Easter on a day other than the Jewish one, an unfortunate decision that

also worked its way into the schism with the Eastern churches. Yet it was not until after Theodosius that an outright ban on the Jewish religion and real persecution of Jews came about. The schism between the synagogue and the church is also took place in theological terms, away from the Jewish roots towards a Hellenization of thinking with its black and white contrasts, which favors unsubtle logic, providing an eldorado for demagogues and politicians.[163)] It has also made its mark in end-time and judgmental thinking. That while the end times must set the new tone - the high tone with the golden flute - for the glorified body in Christ



Where the Roman Church left ground fallow, Protestant sects in their efforts to clear that fallow ground, in doing so have turned against the mother church. In exaggeration, they sometimes strayed far from Christ. It was not all gold that shone. After all, an organizational schism will inevitably lead to a schism in thought. Ah, human impatience and arrogance, expressed in an attitude of being able and having to do things alone, did unspeakable damage, although the first impulse was often good as in the case of Cardinal Lefebvre. It must be said that in the theology of schismatic movements there are pearls, washed in the water bath of the Word, from which the Roman Church could have drawn lessons.

Among the first Christians there was a lively expectation of Christ's imminent return to earth to establish his kingdom here. Their meetings ended with the maranatha: "Our Lord, come!" Hence, there was also little concern for social reform because everything would be different at his coming. Moreover, they were politically impotent. Gradually the emphasis shifted and the expectation became more and more focused on the hereafter with great emphasis on Christ as the world's judge, who passes judgment in his seat, and that is the Last Judgment – and the dead will be judged (cf. Heb. 9:7, 2 Cor. 5:10 and Rev. 20:12), but only after the universe has rolled up like a carpet in accordance with Isaiah 34:4. The Christian religion became salvation doctrine. Boerwinkel puts it succinctly: *"Redemption from the earthly rather than renewal of the earth."* With all this, the gifts of the Spirit: prophecies, healings and miracles are extinguished, except for an exclusive group of the gifted, the saints, who are viewed with a certain suspicion by the established church and often receive recognition afterwards, that is, after their death. Economic thinking is also influenced considerably. The Sermon on the Mount becomes something extravagant. In fact, the Roman concept of property becomes increasingly dominant in opposition to Biblical stewardship. Says Boerwinkel: *"One does not know how to deal with the Sermon on the Mount. In contrast one knows very well how to deal with Mammon."* Only in the monasteries does both communal life go hand in hand with personal possessiveness. It may be called a miracle that in all this the Roman Church has

163) Greek thought is characterized by the "est et non" of Pythagoras, known also as "A or non-A". But reality is less simple. Irrational numbers, for example, are even and odd at the same time. When considering two possible outcomes, the following possibilities exist: «yes, no», «no, yes», «yes, yes» or «no, no». In the classical approach, one considers only the first two possibilities, and that now is Greek thinking. But that's too exclusive. The other two possibilities are at least as important. Greek thinking might imply that the opposite of a wrong position is a right position, but that is incorrect. For instance, the fact that the theory of evolution is wrong does not prove creationism is right. All too often there a many gradations of «yes» and «no», like 0%, 25%, 50%, 75% and 100%. That brings the number of possibilities on an x and y axis from 4 to 25. This logic is an important addition to the classical approach, even in theological terms. (see: "The logic that washes whiter" by Marek Kohn in "The Independent" of May 5, 1994.)

always returned to the right path and preserved the pure doctrine. Interestingly, I believe from JNSR, a prophecy tells that in the Reign of Peace money will have been outbanned. Really difficult to imagine!

Now, 1400 years later, we see a return to the original configuration. Not only paganism is making itself heard more and more in de-Christianized Europe. Judaism is also making a come-back, and I mean the latter positively. There is a growing interest in coming to a deepening of faith with them. Jewish literature can also count on a renewed interest. It is striking that the established church bodies have less and less to say. The Second Vatican Council abolished much of the hierarchical structure of the Church, which was in fact a legacy of the Constantinian era. That paralleled a crumbling of power. As Boerwinkel aptly puts it: *"from powerful Church to narrow congregation".*

Returning to the situation of the first Christian congregations is unfeasible, but that of small communities within the Church in the vein of Marthe Robin (1902-1981) with her Foyers de Charité, which contribute to a renewal and dynamization of the Church, is within the realm of possibilities. Where have we seen this before? The late-medieval renewal movement, called modern devotion, opposed the moral decay within Church and society at the time. This led to the founding of the Brethren of the Common Life, who sought to shape the ideal of the original church. (Acts 4:32-34) Thomas a Kempis was an exponent of this.Today this aspiration is much more universal. Where there is talk of 'ending' and doors closing, other doors are opening. The gifts of the Spirit are returning, even among ordinary people. Make no mistake about their power! A similar impetus to the Catholic Church is occurring within the Protestant charismatic movement, where, among the wide landscape of initiatives, I draw your attention to the Community of Marian Sisters, born under the inspiring leadership of Mother Basilea Schlink (1904-2001). (see www.kanaan.org) In all this, the city of the future is seen not in the hereafter but on earth. The focus is primarily on the earth and its inhabitants who will be renewed, which does not take away from the fact that our hope and salvation for each individual concerns a different homeland, the Heavenly one. (Heb. 11:13-16)

16.68 – The Restoration of the Paradisiacal State

In 1862, Don Bosco had a dream in which he saw that after a period of terrible persecution and suffering, the Church is finally victorious. According to "Don Bosco's Dream", victory over the opposing powers depends on devotion to the Immaculate Virgin Mary, Help of Christians, and is achieved thanks to the Most Holy Eucharist, called in this dream the Salvation of the Faithful. The triumph of the Church is thus certain, but, logic commands, it will not be a resumption of the Constantinian model and not a democracy according to the socialist model. On the contrary, it will end in a king-ship with someone after God's heart. As the pretender to the throne, the Count of Cham-bord, explained to Count Henrik of Vanssay, who was his great confidant:

> «« Now I'm certain that my cousin Louis XVII exists [who died in 1845]. I won't be on the throne of France, but God wants us to keep it a secret. He alone reserves the right to re-establish royalty. Above all, let them (the family of Comte de Vanssay) keep the hope that one day God will bring back to the throne of France the descendant of the Lily with the severed head. And our beloved country, once again the Eldest Daughter of the Church, will regain its greatness and glory. »»

This realization of what was at stake only occurred after he had met Maximin Giraud in 1875, known as one of the three shepherds of La Salette to whom Our Lady had appeared with a message of the utmost importance for the end times of the Church. Maximin Giraud had to violate the episcopal order not to leave the department. Otherwise, he could not have visited the Count of Chambord with the message that it was better for

him to renounce the throne, an issue that was highly relevant in the political climate of the time. After all, with the God-hating regime then in place, it was impossible to bring about anything good. Because Maximin had violated the episcopal order, the Pastor of Ars concluded that he could not possibly be a true servant of God. The Pastor did not know that Maximin had been sent out by a higher authority than the bishop in a matter of national importance. This again is evidence of the rule that outsiders, even in the case of the Holy Pastor of Ars, are not allowed to judge those sent by God.[164] Later, Chambord added the following statement: [165]

> «« After near hundred years of revolutions, civil wars, invasions and coups d'état, the monarchy I represent can only be introduced to Europe and the French people as a work of peace, reconciliation and preservation. (...) [It cannot be otherwise that] God has to reign supreme so that [someone as] I can reign as king. »»

In other words, first a return to true faith and then the monarch. Winter is at its deepest, the night is long, but the branches are budding and the harbingers of spring - the Marian apparitions - are already there. Since the 1846 La Salette apparitions, the Virgin Mary, in the function and power of John the Baptist, has testified in many places and in an uninterrupted series, bearing witness to the coming kingdom: *"Repent, for the kingdom of Heaven is at hand! The axe is already at the root of the tree: every tree that does not bear good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire."* (Mt. 3:2, 10) We are now entering the phase that has been prayed for in the course of two thousand years, the so-called Reign of Peace: *"Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done on earth as it is in Heaven."*

"Thy will be done" can only be achieved through true reformation in body and soul. Our soul that inhabits our miserable body needs to be conformed to the glorified body of Jesus Christ. Our soul, which is our second (invisible) body, and our spirit that animates it, are addressed at the end of the First Letter to the Thessalonians: *"All your being, spirit, soul and body, may be preserved undefiled at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ."*

In an age-long process, in unison the saints have been growing to uniformity with the Son, also called the perfect Man - head and body. (Eph. 2:20-21, 4:12-16) Now in that process, as prophesied in Romans 8, is the revelation of the sons of God, which, if achieved, can only be a gift, a pure gift, entirely beyond human potential. To this end 'quiet time', 'meditation', whatever, lead nowhere. Important persons, like Monseigneur Aldo Gregori, are convinced that the blessed Luisa Piccarreta (1865-1947) effectively represents the first of this new generation of saints. Jesus told her during the conversation they had on April 15th 1919:

> «« My resurrection is the symbol of the souls who form the holiness in my Will. The saints of the past ages are the symbol of my humanity. (…) They have received the sign of My humanity before the resurrection. (And later, on Oct. 27th 1922:) You should know that my humanity contained in itself two generations: the sons of darkness and the sons of Light. I came to buy free the first

164) "Les treize portes du Temple et les six morts de Louis XVII" by Eric Muraise and Maurice Etienne - Editeur Maisni Tredaniel # 1990 (p. 95).

165) "Le comte de Chambord: dernier Roi de France" by Daniel de Montplaisir - Editeur Perrin # 2008 (pp. 577, 566).

> ones and therefore I have paid with my Blood to bring them on a sure place. (…) There is in Me another generation that I need to accomplish. I want to give them the inheritance of the highest Will. And like I have received it Myself, I want to give them this so that I may give birth as it were to the second generation, of the children of Light. »»

The abbess Maria Cäcilia Baij contemplated the inner life of Jesus, but those who live in the holiness of God's will not only 'contemplate' but 'experience' the divine life just like Jesus experienced it in his risen humanity, and therefore with the revelation of the sons of God begins a new and glorious stage in God's salvation plan with our world. Says the Apostle Paul in his Letter to the Philippians: *"But we are citizens of heaven and are eagerly waiting for our Savior to come from there. Our Lord Jesus Christ will make these **poor** bodies of ours like his own **glorious** body, according to the working whereby He is able even to subdue the universe unto Himself."* (Phil. 3:20-21) That glorified body man carries latently within him, actually as a kind of memory. The new man will exist differently from the carnal body as known today, and yet be the same again, like the body of the risen Lord.

It will be in the new creation as presented to us in the Old Testament. In Isaiah 11:6-9: *"Wolves will rest with lambs, leopards will lie down with young goats."* And elsewhere (65:17): *"See, I am creating new heavens and a new earth."* The letter to the Romans discusses the same theme, as well as the Book of Revelation: *" (...) all creation is still groaning and is in pain, like a woman about to give birth. (...) We ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the the redemption of our body. (...) See, I am making everything new. (...) The Emanuel will wipe all tears from their eyes, and there will be no more death, suffering, crying, or pain. These things of the past are gone forever."* (Rom. 8:22-23, Rev. 21:3-5) A new creation not stained by sin and cleansed, that is what we earnestly look forward to. 1 Corinthians 15:20-26 teaches the following:

> «« Christ has been raised to life! And He makes us certain that others will also be raised to life. Just as we will die because of a human, we will be raised to life because of a human. Adam brought death to all of us, and Christ will bring life to all of us. (…) Christ will rule until He puts all his enemies under his power, and the last enemy that shall be destroyed is death. »»

With the last enemy 'the decaying death' is meant, in Hebrew 'met' or 'mut', and not the dying itself, because mut has also the meaning of being destroyed, wasting away, decaying, being beaten and murdered, fatal illness, pestilence and dismay.[166)] In the paradisical state the experience of dying without the intervention of sin, should have been, as from the very beginning, a joyful outpouring of the 'dying' person into the divine life. Unfortunately this opportunity was lost, though not completely. The seed of the restored paradisical state is still in our body, by means of the soul created by God. Because the mortal cannot bring forth the immortal, the creation of the immortal soul, which animates every human being from the mother's womb, requires each time a special act of creation from God in order to thus make the soul in his 'Image'. (Gen. 1:26) Always, when God the Father beholds a human being, however sinful, He recognizes Himself in that human being, because that human being is image-bearer of God the Father, who is like a father to us in every way.

In its present carnal form, that body should be treated with respect, for our *"body is a temple of the Holy Spirit"*. We do know that God will *"once make alive our mortal bodies*

166) The earthly life begins with the mother (in Hebrew "am": aleph, mem) and finishes with death (in Hebrew "mut": mem, tau); in between the individual discovers the meaning of truth (truth is in Hebrew "emmet": aleph, mem, tau). Aleph is the first letter of the Hebrew alphabet, Mem the middle one, and Tau the last letter.

by the power of his Spirit, who dwells in us." (1 Cor. 6:19, Rom. 8:11) In the First Letter to the Corinthians, St. Paul writes (1 Cor. 15:22, 42-44): *"Adam brought death to all of us, and Christ will bring life to all of us. (...) It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power: it is sown a psychic (Gr. Psuchicos) body, it is raised a spiritual body."* [167)]

In Christ I see what I was in Paradise, to be restored once again

I say, that I – in the essence of my soul and body, when I was not as yet I, but when I was in Adam's essence – was there, and did myself fool away [negligently lose] my glory in Adam. But seeing Christ has restored it again unto me, I see, in the spirit of Christ, what I was in Paradise; and what I now am in sin; and what I shall be again. And therefore let none cry it out as a thing unknowable; for although I indeed know it not, yet the spirit of Christ knows it in me; from which knowledge I shall write.

Jacob Boehme [Böhme], 1575-1624 (Mysterium Magnum, Ch. 18)
Böhme was a Lutheran mystic with Neoplatonist and alchemical inclinations

Still Paul, now to the Christians of Tessaloníca:

> «« For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord we will in no way precede the dead. For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first. Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air. And so shall we ever be with the Lord. Wherefore comfort one another with these words. »» (1 Tess. 4:15-18)

This is a great mystery, because the dead will rise on God's sign from the graves just before the Antichrist comes on the scene, but before his coming there will be the so-called 'black awakening' when in a short time period his gang of terrorists create absolute chaos and kill as many Christians and godly people as possible - who are already stated on lists. (cf. Rev. 6) And then, three and a half years later, when the terrible judgment of the nations strikes the world (cf. Rev. 8), only then will be the rapture of the living (who survived the black awakening).

Do not be distracted by turmoil. God lets man go on as long as he thinks he can do it alone. At a certain point people will come to their senses and realize: "It can no longer go on like this!" - and they will turn to God. That will also be the moment when God intervenes in the events all over the world, culminating in the anticlimax and the restoration of the paradisiacal state.

167) The psychic body, which is an expression of the soul, is invisible, but no less real for that reason. If someone loses a leg, he can still feel intense and real pain in the place where his leg once was, which is still in his invisible psychic body and suffers from being separated from the part to which it was connected as from the mother's womb. Thus bilocation can be explained if, according to the Will of the Most High, one's psychic body is simultaneously in a totally different place as the material body, which sometimes happened to Saint Padre Pio. (His fellow brothers joked: "Get up for a moment to get bread. You can stay seated anyway!") This psychic body, also known as the 'spark' (of the life of God) or the anointing, is Adam's inheritance that is assigned to each one of us. It was created in the beginning when the Lord breathed from his mouth the Life (the breath of God) into Adam's nose. God says: "I am ... the Life." (John 14:6)

The Decline of the Catholic Magisterium
A Sign of the Times

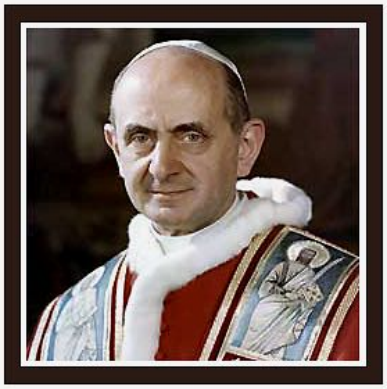
"When you see the Precursor, it can be said that the mission of ha-Yeshua Mashiach has begun!", states an old Jewish saying. Who is the Precursor other than the Virgin Mary? The growing series of announcements telling of the end of the times – think of Lourdes, Fatima and so many others – are all in the spirit of "convert, for the kingdom of God is at hand". These series of announcements started in 1846 with Mary's apparitions to the shepherds of La Salette, in which it was predicted that "the priests, ministers of my Son, the priests, by their wicked lives, by their irreverence and their impiety in the celebration of the holy mysteries, by their love of money, their love of honors and pleasures, these priests have become cesspools of impurity!" Thus the Mother of God is the herald sent to prepare the new era of God's reign on earth, in which the universal magisterium will have returned to Judaism again. How the Catholic magisterium was endangered by the disastrous Council of the 1960s is placed here within the endtime perspective.

17.69 – A Devious Council…

It was on Thursday 11th October 1962 on the feast of Mary's Divine Motherhood that the first session of the Second Vatican Council was held. After a silent prayer, Pope John XXIII broke into the first official prayer with the "Veni, Creator Spiritus" (Come, Holy Ghost, Creator). This prayer was uttered so that the Holy Spirit would lead the Council. Once the strains of the 'Veni Creator' had faded under the enormous vault of the basilica, the Book of the Gospels was laid ceremoniously on the altar, a custom dating back to the earliest councils. It was then that the Pope gave his opening speech. He spoke of his confidence that the Church would gain new energy and power from the Council and asked those present to *"look to the future without fear"*. His infectious enthusiasm was released when he said:

«« We feel we must disagree with those prophets of doom who are always forecasting disaster, as though the end of the world were at hand. (…) They say that our era in comparison with past eras is worsening, and behave as though they had learned nothing from history, the real teacher of life. (…) For history shows that things had not, in fact, been any better in the olden days. The greatest concern of the Ecumenical Council is this: that the sacred deposit of Christian doctrine should be guarded and taught more efficaciously (…) faithful to the sacred patrimony of truth received from the Fathers. »»

An apostolic council can choose when, and when not, to exercise the chrism of infallibility. This one was not to proclaim any new matter in doctrinal truth and certainly not infallible. The reason for the fiasco of the Council is that, though the guidelines formulated were under the aegis of the Holy Spirit, their subsequent and forced upon interpretation was not. The Pope wrote in his Spiritual Diary, four weeks before the Council started, that he felt driven by the Holy Ghost to convene the Council. It was by no means a wild idea, judging by the in-depth preparation that preceded it, a work that had in fact begun under Pope Pius XII, who in 1948 appointed Mgr. Francesco Borgongini Duca, old classmate and friend of the man who was later to become John XXIII, to the position of chairman of the preparatory workgroup for a council being planned for. One session would have sufficed as a form of 'aggiornamento', one of the key words of the Council, which means 'a bringing up to date', in such a way that the deposit of faith could be better pursued. **Contrary to all previous councils, and explicitly stated, it was not a dogmatic council!** The interpretation afterwards was dogmatic, in such a way that the very foundation of the Church was affected, which was possible due to the often vague formulation of the avalanche of 4 constitutions, 3 statements and 9 decrees. Vatican I from 1870 had only 2 constitutions.



Pope Paul VI

In view of the bitter fruit produced by the Council, it would have been preferable to have held only one session. Pope John XXIII died after the completion of the first session on June 3rd 1963. The second session started mid-October under Pope Paul VI. The Council could have been stopped after the first session if they had really wanted to. Not an easy thing, but it would have been possible. On his death bed, far too late, John XXIII gave the order to stop the Council,[168] but this was not taken seriously by the cardinals present at the time and it was obstructed. In total there were four sessions, the last one finished on December 8 1965. Vatican II took over three years to complete, compared to Vatican I which lasted from December 8, 1869 until October 20, 1970.

Moreover, it is extremely curious that this council was convened for an aggiornamento, essentially an accounting term, which means 'a bringing up to date' in such a way that the deposit of faith can be better pursued. Even a brief overview of the twenty General Councils of the Church shows that almost each of these councils was convened as an extraordinary measure to condemn heresies. The specific function of the universal magisterium during a general council is to fire off anathemas, condemn errors and redefine Catholic doctrine, where it is attacked or threatened to be falsified by heretical movements within the Church. In other words, holding a council to 'update' the doctrine was unheard

168) On his death bed the Pope exclaimed: "Stop the Council, stop the Council!", quoted by Kevin Haney in "The Stormy History of General Councils". Also confirmed by Jean Guitton, the only Catholic layman to serve as a peritus (expert) at the Vatican Council, as well as by Michael Davies in "Apologia Pro Marcel Lefebvre".

of and inappropriate. The decision to convene the Second Vatican Council was not based on thorough consultation between the Pope and his counselors (the cardinals and the curia), as was customary, but was primarily based on a personal flash of inspiration. This spontaneity was unusual, to say the least, and, as it turns out, very unwise. This headstrong pope seemed to be less humble than he suggested. Nor was he an anchor point with regard to the traditional doctrine, rather someone who let himself be carried away by wind and sea. He was a simple minded thinker as he frankly admitted. He had an inscrutable personality …and yet he became pope.

In this context, the message of Fatima, which has never been made public, plays a role in the background. I do not want to withhold the following. The story goes that in May 1994 the French priest Raymond Arnette, who was then living in Germany and who had remained true to the tradition, was listening to religious music on his CD. Suddenly the music stopped and a voice spoke in the room, not from the inside, but in a normal way: [169)]

> «« **A wicked Council will be planned and prepared which will change the face of the Church**. Many souls will lose the Faith, confusion will reign everywhere. The sheep will seek in vain for their shepherds. A schism will rend my Son's tunic. It will be the end of the times, announced in Scripture and recalled by me in many places. The 'abomination that maketh desolate' (Dan. 11:31) will reach its peak and call down the chastisement announced at La Salette. The arm of my Son that I can no longer hold back, will come down on this world which will have to expiate its crimes. All that one will hear of, is wars and revolutions. The elements of nature will be shaken and will strike anguish into the best and most courageous of men. The Church will bleed from all her wounds. Blessed those who persevere and seek refuge in my Heart, for in the end my Immaculate Heart will triumph. — That is the Third Secret of Fatima (the voice said). »»

According to the instructions of Sister Lucia, the so-called Third Secret of Fatima had to be published in 1960 which would then have been under Pope John XXIII. Actually, on June 17, 1944, Sr. Lucia sent the sealed envelope to her bishop: José Alves Correia da Silva of Leiria-Fatima (a great believer in the apparitions, who remained on his post until his death in December 1957 after having been bishop there for 37 years). Upon the sealed envelope, Sister Lucia had written: *"By express order of Our Lady, this envelope can only be opened in 1960 by the Cardinal Patriarch of Lisbon or the Bishop of Leiria."* She also asked her bishop that the sealed envelope *"would definitely be opened and read to the world either at my death or in 1960, whichever comes first".* [ibid.] Bishop da Silva placed that envelope later in a sealed envelope of his own with the inscription: *"This envelope with its contents shall be entrusted to His Eminence Cardinal D. Manuel, Patriarch of Lisbon, after my death."* However, this never happened; instead, for reasons never fully disclosed, orders came from Rome to deliver the envelope to the papal nuncio, along with the notebooks of Sr. Lucia and photocopies of all her writings on file in the chancery of Leiria. This was accomplished on March 16, 1957, and all these documents were delivered to the Vatican.

According to Cardinal Ottaviani and Monsignor Capovilla, secretary of the Pope, the envelope was still sealed when John XXIII opened it in 1959. On August 17 1959, the envelope was brought to the papal residence of Castel Gandolfo, by Monsignor Philippe, then an official at the Holy Office. The secret was read a few days later, according to Capovilla. Assistance in reading the Portuguese was given by Monsignor Paulo José

169) Source: St Thomas Aquinas Seminary in Minnesota belonging to the Pius X Society. The website of the seminary at the time informed that the identity of this priest was known, but that he preferred to remain unknown. He, the website said, always wears a cassock, but does not belong to the Pius X Society.

Tavarez of the Secretariat of State. Later, Ottaviani was allowed to read it. When the Pope broke open the sealed envelope and read the message that a disastrous council would be held for the Church, he was deeply shocked, the story goes, for he had announced in January his intention to convene that council, three months after he became pope ... and he should have canceled it now. The Third Secret disappeared in a drawer.

Pope John XXIII expected the Council to end in three months, just like the Italian Synod that preceded it, which issued, at the Pope's direction, very traditional decrees, such as the full retention of Latin during the Holy Sacrifice of the Mass. He probably thought to have found a cheap solution. The Pope said:[170] *"We will come together for three months with all the Bishops of the entire world. We will begin on October 13 (1962). Then everything will be over with between December 8 and January 25. Everybody will go home, and the Council will be over and done with."* Little did he suspect how wrong he was! The later popes disclosed the Third Secret in an watered-down version, although they need not have been aware of it, since they may no longer have had access to the original document. The 'secret' would no longer be relevant. All critical questions were thereby dismissed. They were fed up with all the commotion!

17.70 – An Attack on the Legitimate Doctrine

Within two months after the final session, on Jan. 12th 1966, Pope Paul VI said at the General Audience:

> «« In view of the pastoral nature of the Council, it avoided any extraordinary statements of dogmas endowed with the note of infallibility, but it still provided its teaching with the authority of the Ordinary Magisterium which must be accepted with docility according to the mind of the Council concerning the nature and aims of each document. »»

This means that while the documents prepared by Vatican II may contain some infallible statements, especially related to matters already defined by previous councils, they do not enjoy the indisputable status like the documents produced by the Council of Trent and Vatican I. That being said, Vatican II should not be interpreted in a vacuum. Everything contained in the conciliar documents must be seen in the context of the Church tradition and with the understanding that they cannot go against the former magisterial teachings. It also means the conciliar documents can be debated to a certain degree. Most importantly, it means they are subject to further definition and clarification by the Holy Father, who can most certainly make announcements on topics ex cathedra (only if he says so), and then it would have become infallible. That being said, the Catholic Church today is still bound under the same doctrines and teachings as it was before the Vatican Council II.

If you would like to know the legitimite teachings of the Church today, simply pull out a catechism from the fifties. One can also consult the excellent "Catechism of the Catholic Church", the so-called CCC, issued under the auspices of Pope John Paul II in 1992. The CCC responds to the wish, as it lived among many prelates, to formulate an up-to-date and leading document in which 'all' points of theological truth and morale are discussed, which two are the elements of faith, in accordance to the secular tradition of the Church, as more specifically expressed in the catechical guidelines of the Council of Trent (1545-1563). The conclusion is simple: as concerns the fundamental teachings nothing has changed and it is the same today as it was yesterday and as it will be tomorrow. Of course, there are still quite some gray areas in Catholic doctrine that need

---

170) Referenced in Traditio, an international journal, published annually and dedicated to the study of ancient and medieval history, thought and religion.

elucidation, but those can in no way contradict the treasure of faith, as established in the dogmatic constitutions, which was built up during the past millennia.

Pope John Paul II approved the text of the CCC on June 25, 1992, which was presented to the world through the apostolic constitution Fidei Depositum on October 11, 1992, on the thirtieth anniversary of the beginning of Vatican II. It states the following:

> «« After the renewal of the liturgy and the new codification of canon law for the Latin Church and that of the various Eastern Catholic Churches, this catechism represents a very important contribution in the realization of the renewal of all ecclesiastical life, which is the aim of the Second Vatican Council that has been effectuated. (…) For me – who had the special grace to be involved and actively participate in its progress – the Second Vatican Council has always been the point of reference for all my pastoral activities and has remained so, particularly during these pontifical years, in a deliberate effort to apply the guiding principles of this Council as concretely and faithfully as possible at the level of each church as well as the Church as a whole. »»

The CCC's source language is neither Latin nor Italian, but French, the first world language, after all, the language of diplomacy and of the country traditionally called "the oldest daughter of the Church". After a number of revisions and corrections, the definetive version was finally published in 1998. The Pope considered this to be the most important document of his pontificate, which he believed would also be considered his most important contribution in future.

But how, in spite of its careful preparation, was it possible that the Council managed to introduce such radical changes within the Catholic Church? I now quote from "The Rise and Fall of Annibale Bugnini", or "The Destruction of the Catholic Faith through changes in Catholic Worship" by Michael Davies published in 1990, also called "Liturgical Time-Bombs in Vatican II":

> «« Seventy-five preparatory schemata had been prepared for the Council Fathers, the fruits of the most painstaking and meticulous preparation for a Council in the history of the Church. The number was eventually reduced to twenty, and seven were selected for discussion at the first session of the Council. The Bugnini schema was the fifth of these, and it was presumed by most bishops that the schemata would be debated in their numerical sequence. But the other schemata were so orthodox that the liberals could not accept them – even as a basis for discussion. At the instigation of Father Edward Schillebeeckx the schemata were rejected with one exception – the Bugnini schema. This, he said, was *"an admirable piece of work".* It was announced at the second general congregation of the Council in 1962, that the sacred liturgy was the first item on the agenda for examination by the Fathers. Notitiae looked back on this with considerable satisfaction in 1972, remarking that the Bugnini preparatory schema was the only one that was eventually passed without substantial alteration. Father Ralph Wiltgen comments in "The Rhine Flows into the Tiber: A History of Vatican II": *"It should be noted that the liturgical movement had been active in Europe for several decades, and that quite a large number of bishops and periti (experts) from the Rhine countries had been appointed by Pope John to the preparatory commission on the liturgy. As a result, they had succeeded in inserting their ideas into the schema and gaining approval for what they considered a very acceptable document."* (…) The Bugnini schema received the almost unanimous approval of the Council Fathers on December 7, 1962 and became Vatican II's "Constitution on the Sacred Liturgy". But the Constitution contained no more than general guidelines. Therefore, to achieve total victory, Father Bugnini and his cohorts needed to obtain the power to interpret and implement it. (…) The Liturgy

> Constitution, based loosely on the Bugnini schema, contained much generalised and, in places ambiguous terminology. Those who had the power to interpret it were certain to have considerable scope for reading their own ideas into the conciliar text.
>
> Cardinal Heenan of Westminster mentioned in his autobiography "A Crown of Thorns" that the Council Fathers were given the opportunity of discussing only general principles: *"Subsequent changes were more radical than those intended by Pope John and the bishops who passed the decree on the Liturgy. His sermon at the end of the first session shows that Pope John did not suspect what was being planned by the liturgical experts."*
>
> The Cardinal could hardly have been more explicit. (…) The experts (periti) who had drafted the text, intended to use the ambiguous terminology they had inserted in a manner that the Pope and the Bishops did not even suspect. The English Cardinal warned the Council Fathers of the manner in which the periti could draft texts capable *"of both an orthodox and modernistic interpretation."* He told them that he feared the periti, and dreaded the possibility of their obtaining the power to interpret the Council to the world. *"God forbid that this should happen!"* he exclaimed, but happen it did. »»

The Bugnini schema was accepted by a plenary session of the Liturgical Preparatory Commission in a vote taken on January 13, 1962. But the President of the Commission, the eighty-year old Cardinal Gaetano Cicognani, had the foresight to realize the dangers implicit in certain passages. Father Gy writes: *"The program of reform was so vast that it caused the president, Cardinal Gaetano Cicognani, to hesitate."* (Flannery p. 23) Unless the Cardinal could be persuaded to sign the schema, it would be blocked. It could not go through without his signature, even though it had been approved by a majority of the Commission. Father Bugnini needed to act. He arranged for immediate approaches to be made to Pope John, who agreed to intervene. He called for Cardinal Amleto Cicognani, his Secretary of State and the younger brother of the President of the Preparatory Commission, and told him to visit his brother and not return until the schema had been signed. The Cardinal complied. Later a peritus of the Liturgical Preparatory Commission stated that the old Cardinal was almost in tears as he waved the document in the air and said: *"They want me to sign this but I don't know if I want to.*" Then he laid the document on his desk, picked up a pen, and signed it. Four days later he died.[171)]

When we use an ambiguous language in ecclesiastical documents, we think of the small synod of Pistoia in Italy from 1786 on the eve of the French Revolution. Pope Pius VI, in the introduction to his "Auctorem Fidei" (for the protection of faith), condemned its use of language. How does this condemnation remind us of Vatican II!

> «« In order not to hurt Catholic ears, the innovators camouflaged their winding paths through a sophisticated and seemingly harmless use of language. By doing so, they wanted to pave the way to unobtrusively and sweetly introduce error into souls. Once the truth was compromised, they could twist the salutary message of faith by minor alterations in sentence structure or additions, to bring the faithful along subtle paths of error to their eternal damnation. This shrouded deception is evil regardless of the circumstances in which it occurs. For very good reasons, this is unacceptable to a synod whose supreme glory should be the clear teaching of the truth, avoiding [through careful language] any danger of misinterpretation. »»

In the aftermath of the Council, there is no doubt that there was a cunning conspiracy, a long-prepared manipulative intervention. To illustrate: The 1969 Novus Ordo Mass (New

171) Based on "The Rhine Flows into the Tiber" by Father Ralph M. Wiltgen - TAN Books, Rockford, U.S.A. # 1985 (p. 141).

Mass), which was formulated on the instructions of the Council, did not follow the instructions. Her approach was a never-before-seen breach from the past. It was not a logical follow-up of the decisions of the Council and was not in line with an established practice or belief. It was decreed from the top down and did not meet the requirement of organic development (a slow build-up over time). Monsignor Klaus Gamber is recognized as one of the best liturgists of the 20th century. He concluded with regard to the liturgical reform *"Obviously, the reformers wanted a completely new liturgy, a liturgy that differed from the traditional one in spirit as well as in form; and in no way a liturgy that represented what the Council Fathers had envisioned, i.e., a liturgy that would meet the pastoral needs of the faithful."* 172)

That there was a cunning conspiracy, was underlined in Pope Paul VI's address to the Lombard Seminary of Rome on December 7 1968. He was the one who promulgated the Council documents in 1965. Just three years after the completion of the Council, he began to reject the fruits of that Council, and started even associating it with the work of the devil. He issued a number of startling statements to that effect:

> «« The Church finds herself in an hour of anxiety, a disturbed period of self-criticism, or what would even better be called selfdestruction (auto-distruzione). It is an interior upheaval, acute and complicated, which nobody expected after the Council. It is almost as if the Church were attacking itself. We looked forward to a flowering, a serene expansion of conceptions which matured in the great sessions of the Council. But (…) one must notice above all the sorrowful aspect. It is as if the Church were destroying herself. »»

Pope Paul VI's sermon during the Mass for Sts. Peter and Paul, on the occasion of the anniversary of his coronation, he for the first time mentioned the smoke of Satan. In a May 15, 2008 interview at the Italian website called Petrus, Cardinal Vergilio Noe, Paul VI's Chief Liturgist and Master of Ceremonies, stated that the Pope was specifically referring herein to the Novus Ordo Mass:

> «« We have the impression that through some cracks in the wall the smoke of Satan (fumus Satanae) has entered the temple of God: it is doubt, uncertainty, questioning, dissatisfaction, confrontation (…) We thought that after the Council a day of sunshine would have dawned for the history of the Church. What dawned, instead, was a day of clouds and storms, of darkness, of searching and uncertainties. »»

During his General Audience on November 15 1972 he told:

> «« Don't be surprised at our answer and don't write it off as simplistic or even superstitious: one of the Church's greatest needs is to be defended against the evil we call the Devil. »»

There is also his address of October 13th 1977 on the occasion of the 60th anniversary of the Fatima apparitions:

> «« The tail of the devil is functioning in the disintegration of the Catholic world. The darkness of Satan has entered and spread throughout the Catholic Church even to its summit. Apostasy, the loss of the faith, is spreading throughout the world and into the highest levels within the Church. »»

Bella Dodd, who held a senior position in the American Communist Party and was baptized in 1952, claimed that the Communist Party placed its agents in seminaries,

---

172) "The Reform of the Roman Liturgy: Its Problems and Background" (translated from the French edition of 1992) by Monsignor Klaus Gamber - Roman Catholic Books, USA # 1993 (p. 100).

confirming the testimony of Douglas Hyde, another Communist Party defector. Bella Dodd told her friend Professor Alice von Hildebrand, the respected Jewish-born Roman Catholic theologian, that while she was working for the party, she liaised with four cardinals within the Vatican who were accomplices to Communism. She also told:

> «« *"In the 1930s we put 1100 men into the priesthood in order to destroy the Church from within. The idea was for these men to be ordained and progress to positions of influence and authority as monsignors and bishops."* A dozen years before Vatican II she stated that they had attained the highest places in the Church, and also that the changes would be so drastic that in the near future the Catholic Church would have become unrecognizable. »» ("Christian Order Magazine" Nov. 2000)

This immense perversity turned out to be following a plan much older than Communism itself! In the years directly following the French Revolution, "Le Grand Orient de France", the oldest French Masonic obedience and the largest in Continental Europe, hatched the plan to infiltrate and corrupt the Roman Catholic Church from within. This Lodge did so under the pseudonym of "Alta Vendita" (Supreme Auction House), and therefore this plan is known also as the Permanent Instruction of the Alta Vendita, being distributed among the lodges in 1820. How that took shape is stated in the article by the undersigned: "Christ Hides under the Threadbare Cloth".

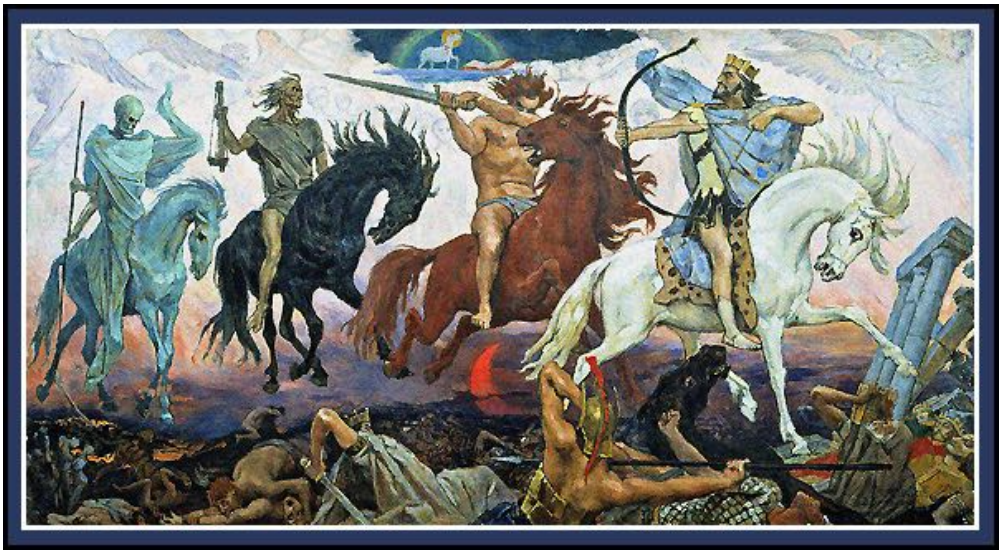
The Alta Vendita's instruction is a broad plan to undermine the Church through the very ministers of the Roman Catholic faith, a long-term project that reached its apex in the period after World War II. The Council of the sixties and what followed was a weighty phase in it. Since the middle of the nineteenth century, thousands of traitors have entered the seminaries and have been ordained to the priesthood, forming a sufficient reservoir from which a number of cardinals and professors would emerge, and finally even a pope, so that the dirty work could take shape at all levels, and of course also in the seminars. The instruction shows the diabolical strategy of infiltrating the Church and mobilizing its bona fide members after first corrupting them with freethinker ideals. Thus, well-meaning Catholics would be taken in tow and help propagate Masonic ideals under the apparent legitimacy of Catholicism. The strange phenomenon occurs that many acted out of inner conviction, unaware of a conspiracy. The Instruction contains among other things:

> «« You wish to revolutionize Italy? Find the right Pope whose contours have been drawn by us. (…) Let the naive clergy march under your banner in the belief that they are still marching under the banner of the Apostolic Keys. You wish to annihilate the last vestige of [papal] tyranny and oppression? Cast your nets like a Simon Bar-Jonah [the Apostle Peter]. Lay them in the depths of sacristies, seminaries, and monasteries, rather than in the depths of the sea, [meaning that the sworn enemies of God must infiltrate as priests, professors and monks.] (…) You will gather yourself as friends around the Apostolic See [after having ascended to the rank of bishop or cardinal.] A revolution is being preached here with the [papal] tiara and the cope, marching under the Cross and the banner. »»

17.71 – The 'End of the Times' Theology is based on a Misunderstanding

Although I am in full agreement with the statement that Christian doctrine, as always taught by the Church, must be taught again and with modern means, I dare to differ with the Pope's statement that our times are comparable to the past – since that is, in fact, what he said in his opening speech. There is an error of thinking hidden here that is separate from the treasure of faith that everyone must believe in. It concerns the distinction between 'eschatology', or the theology of the end of the times ('eschatos' is Greek for 'end' or 'final'), and 'apocalyptics', or the theology of the Last Judgement ('apoca-

lypse' means 'revelation', and refers to the Book of Revelation). The former relates mainly to the Kingdom of Peace while the latter is involved with disaster. John XXIII stated several times that he was not sympathetic towards theologians: *"They ensured that there was dispute, whereas the Church needed carers of souls."* What the Church Fathers have provided, says Benedict XVI – and he has wide knowledge of the subject – is a rounded-off whole; thereby, divine revelation is completed, though often still in hidden terms. After a long maturation process, when a dogma is proclaimed, it merely confirms what has long been known, but thus far has not been so formulated, with the consequence that following the proclamation of the particular dogma the faithful may no longer doubt its truth.



The Four Horses of the Apocalyps by Viktor Vasnetsov (1887)

Since according to the common interpretation, appropriate to the eight beatitudes (Mt. 5:9), the Church is to bring peace on earth, which is the eschatology of the here and now, of the triumphant church, it follows that she feels at home within the established order, while apocalypticism, which seeks to put an end to the established order, is seen precisely as an attack on it. I quote from a book by Mark Heirman: [173)]

> «« Apocalyptics was generally rejected by the Roman Catholic Church (…) Eschatology is essentially conservative and bound up with privilege and power. Apocalyptics is revolutionary and belongs to the world of those without rights or power, those who in this world have nothing to lose but their chains. In this sense eschatology is the objective ally of the established order, and at least strives for compromise. Apocalyptics is the sworn enemy of the established order and wishes to come to no compromises at all. Hence apocalyptics and 'parousia' [174)] had the upper hand for as long as Christianity was still a small sect in a world populated by Jews, Greeks and Romans. Only in the fourth century – when Christianity took control of the entire empire – did apocalypticism have to give way to eschatology, which made things more convenient for the established and rapidly becoming powerful Roman Catholic Church and thus apocalyptics was banned to the realm of heretics and the outcast. »»

The controversy between apocalypticism and eschatology is to be regretted, because beside the truth, as the triumphant church still has to descend to earth. The Church as of

---

173) "Apocalyptische Tijden" (Apocalyptic Times), by Mark Heirman, Publ. Houtekiet - Antwerp, 1999 (p. 149).

174) Parousia means "appearance, arrival, entry" and refers to the Second Coming.

yet is, in pain and sorrows, still making its pilgrimage. The Catechism of the Catholic Church clearly states, under the heading "Hope of the New Heaven and the New Earth" (articles 1042-1050), that the apocalyptic expectation should be a joyful one. It says that the divine revelation affirms the profound common destiny of the material world and Man, to which should be entertained an eager longing; even creation itself will one day be set free from its bondage to decay! Here follows the full text:

«« At the end of time, the Kingdom of God will come in its fullness. After the universal judgment, the righteous will reign for ever with Christ, glorified in body and soul. The Universe itself will be renewed: *"The Church (...) will only receive her perfection in the heavenly glory when the time will have come of the restoration of all things (the 'apocatastasis panton' of Acts 3:21). At that time, the Universe itself, along with the human race with which it is so closely connected, will be brought to its final destination by Man, and perfectly re-established in Christ."* (Lumen Gentium 48) Sacred Scripture calls this mysterious renewal, which will transform humanity and the world: *"new Heavens and a new Earth".* (Rev. 21:1, 2 Pet. 3:13) It will be the definitive realization of God's plan to *"gather together under a single head all things in Christ, both which are in Heaven, and which are on Earth."* (Eph. 1:10) In this new Universe of the heavenly Jerusalem, God will have his dwelling among men. *"He will wipe away every tear from their eyes, and death shall be no more, neither shall there be mourning nor crying nor pain any more, for the former things have passed away."* (Rev. 21:4) For Man, this consummation (of the old) will be the final realization of the unity of the human race, which God willed from creation and of which the pilgrim Church existed in *"the nature of a sacrament".* (LG 1) Those who are united with Christ will form the community of the redeemed, *"the holy city"* of God: *"the Bride of the Lamb."* (Rev. 21:2-10) She will not be wounded any longer by sin, stains, self-love, that destroy or wound the earthly community. The beatific vision, in which God opens Himself in an inexhaustible way to the elect, will be the ever-flowing well-spring of happiness, peace, and mutual communion. For the Cosmos, revelation affirms the profound common destiny of the material world and Man: *"For the creation waits with eager longing for the revelation of the sons of God (...) in hope because the creation itself will be set free from its bondage to decay. (...) We know that the whole creation has been groaning in travail together until now; and not only the creation, but we ourselves, who have the first fruits of the Spirit, groan inwardly as we wait for adoption as sons, the redemption of our bodies."* (Rom. 8:19-23) **The visible Universe, then, is itself destined to be transformed, *"so that the Earth itself, restored to its original state, facing no further obstacles, should be at the service of the just",* sharing their glorification in the risen Jesus Christ.** (Irenaeus: Adv. Haeres. 5:32:1) ***"We know neither the moment of the consummation of the (old) Earth and Man, nor the way in which the Universe will be transformed, but we do know that the form of this world, distorted by sin, will be passing away. And we are taught that God is preparing a new dwelling and a new Earth in which righteousness dwells, in which happiness will fill and surpass all the desires of peace arising in the hearts of men."*** (Gaudium et Spes 39:11)

"Far from diminishing our concern to develop this Earth, the expectancy of a new Earth should spur us on, for it is here that the body of a new human family grows, foreshadowing in some way the age which is to come. That is why, although we must be careful to distinguish earthly progress clearly from the increase of the Kingdom of Christ, such progress is of vital concern to the Kingdom of God, insofar as it can contribute to the better ordering of human society." (GS 39:2) *"When we have spread on Earth the fruits of our nature and our enterprise (...) according to the command of the Lord and in his Spirit, we will find them once again, cleansed this time from the stain of sin, illuminated and*

> *transfigured, when [the moment has arrived] that Christ presents to his Father an eternal and universal kingdom."* (GS 39-3) God will then be *"all in all"* in eternal life. (1 Cor 5:28) True and subsistent life consists in this: the Father, through the Son and in the Holy Spirit, is pouring out his heavenly gifts on all things without exception. Thanks to his mercy, we too, men that we are, have received the inalienable promise of eternal life. »»

Apocalyptics therefore does not have to be an ideology of disaster. It fits seamlessly with the notion of the Kingdom of Peace here on earth. In fact both notions deal with the same concept, but the theologians, whom John XXIII so disliked, have put us on the wrong track. The clash of opinions, which has lasted the entire history of the Church, is based on an obstinate misunderstanding. Let me explain. God's plan for the restoration of Adam's descendants - meaning us - is divided into chapters. We are now in the evangelical times and are on our way to a new and glorious chapter in God's plan of salvation for this world, in agreement with the Great Commission: (Mt. 28:19-20)

> «« [After his resurrection] Jesus came [to his eleven disciples] and spoke to them: *"All authority has been given to Me in heaven and on earth. Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, teaching them to observe all things that I have commanded you.* ***And lo, I am with you always, even to the 'end' of the age****."* »»

The word 'end' is the rendering of the Greek 'sunteleia', which indicates an entire completion and not a cutting-off. The end of times, which seems to inspire so much panic, is therefore not the end of 'time' but the end of an 'era'. The evil ones, those who really are of bad will, the conspirators, are the ones who should be in fear and trepidation, for they will be shattered as potter's vessels. (Ps. 2:9, Rev. 2:27) Finally, and here I agree, the Last Judgment 'will' come, but it has not come yet, because first Satan and his henchmen ought to be permanently chained, and this will not happen until the end of the Millennial Kingdom. Shortly before the Millennial he will be chained, to be disbanded for a short time at the end of it. (Rev. 20:2-10) Incidentally the term 'last Judgement' does not figure in the Bible.

17.72 – After 1840 God has 'not' kept Silent

God's work of redemption passes through a number of chapters or periods before it is completed. A theological word for chapter is 'dispensation'. Dispensation is a term used in the King James and New King James versions (in 1 Cor. 9:17, Eph. 1:10; 3:2 and Col. 1:25). It was taken over by the Roman Catholic Douay-Rheims Bible (1582), which still is the Bible of choice of traditionalist Catholics. The Catholic New American Bible (NAB - 1970) uses the word 'stewardship' instead. 'Dispensation' translates 'oikonomia', a word derived from 'oikos' (house) plus the verb 'nemein' (distribute, administer), sometimes rendered as 'stewardship', as in the parable of the unjust steward. (Luke 16) In the Roman Church, people use the term of the Economy of Salvation or the Divine Economy, to express a form of dispensation. Not so much, however, to indicate the final salvation of our world that would first have to pass by a number of stations; its use foremost deals with God's work of creation in the perspective of the management of our world as it exists 'now'. Nonetheless, the Bible clearly demonstrates that God divides human history into periods. In fact, He defines time in terms of hours, months, years. So, it is hardly surprising that God proceeds by a division in phases that each time come to an end, announced with words like: *"...the harvest of the earth is ripe".* (Rev. 14:15) God's partitioning plan is called dispensationalism, an expression to be associated with a conservative Protestant approach. How God partitions is something about which theologians strongly disagree, but this does not mean that the concept is wrong.

How are we to know that the end of our dispensation is close at hand? Will God not want to prepare his people, as He did when the Messiah was soon to be born? The prophet Daniel, in the ninth chapter of his book, predicted that 69 weeks would pass, or 69 x 7 = 483 years, from the start of the rebuilding of the temple to the time of the Messiah. It so happens that this corresponded to the coming of Jesus. And there were more signs, such as the three Magi who asked King Herod where the prophesied Messiah could be found. Their arrival in Jerusalem must have been the talk of the town.

And other peoples, even the Aztecs, were prepared by God for the things that were to come. The conquest of the Aztec Empire (Mexico) at the beginning of the sixteenth century was preceded by the appearance of a great comet; apocalyptic storms raged over the land and, in inexplicable ways, the Temple of the cruel god Tezcatlipoca went up in flames; the most important sign was the rising from the dead of Montezuma's sister Papantzin, four days after she had been buried, to warn the ruler of the coming collapse of his empire; the conquistador Cortez, who was driven by missionary zeal, set foot on land in the year, the month and on the day predicted by the oracle…

Händel's Messiah in Hebrew

An exciting development in the revival of the Jewish people is the translation of and accompaniment to Händel's Messiah in Hebrew by David Loden. He is a member of a Messianic Congregation in Israel that has the aim of preparing the Congregation of Yeshua for His return. A pilot production of the oratorio was performed in the spring of 2006. He says: "The Jewish people have always loved Händel's Messiah. Every time it is performed in Israel, which is yearly, Jewish people are part of the audience – they love it. But the Hebrew performance was historic. The Hebrew fits like a glove with Händel's music. And what this does is to take the music out of the box of being strictly art. It now becomes an intelligible witness to the Lord. (...) There is a 'Sacred Music Festival' every year in Israel which is extremely well-attended. (...) Imagine that this music is sung in the Hebrew tongue and listeners suddenly hear their own Scriptures not only sung but exposited – just think of the possibilities! It becomes a tool for really sharing the life of the Messiah. And that is our deepest desire – for people to really hear the music and the message of The M*essiah.* »»

From "Jews for Jesus" newsletter / Dec. 2007

Taking all of this into account, God will not act differently in our times. He will not fail to make Himself known when dawn breaks through. An important sign is the foundation of the State of Israel in 1948, an event that calls to mind the prediction made by Jesus in Luke 21:29-32: *"Look at the fig tree [symbol of Israel], and all the trees. When they are already budding, you see and know for yourselves (...) that the Kingdom of God is near. (...) This generation will by no means pass away till all things take place."* There is the prophecy of Rabbi Judah Hai Alkalai (1798-1878), who identified 1840 with the budding of the Messianic Age, and this he continued to proclaim despite great opposition.

Something is going on. Definitely. Over the whole world there were in 2018 at least a half million messianic Jews, thus Jews who believe in Christ, and the movement is gaining momentum. The largest organisation then in this field was "Jews for Jesus" with 55 branches world-wide. Something is going on. Undeniably. The most recent event that speaks to the imagination is something I would like to share with you. It so happened that just before his death, one of Israel's most prominent rabbis wrote an encrypted name of the Messiah on a small note (in acronym), which he requested should remain sealed until April 30, 2007. When the note was opened, it revealed what many have known for centuries: **"Yehoshua (Yeshua or Jesus) is the Messiah"**.

It is extremely interesting that Rabbi Yitzachk Kaduri uses the form 'Jehoshua' for the expected Messiah, since this name in Hebrew uses the letter 'shin' (our 's') in the middle of the 'unutterable Name', the so-called 'tetragram', as follows: yod, he, **shin**, he, waw. The unutterable Name is generally expressed by the Jews as Elohim or Adonai (in both cases 'Lord') or as Hashem (the NAME). In Christian Biblical translations the tetragram is sometimes rendered as Yahweh and generally rendered as 'Lord'. By using Jehoshua for the Jewish Messiah, Kaduri in fact indicates the divine nature of Jesus. The agreement between Jesus and the 'Jehoshua', living in God's bosom, was always understood by the learned rabbis. Why otherwise would the Sanhedrin have forbidden the use of the name of Jesus, for Him they later wanted to crucify? In fact, the name 'Jesus' was a very common first name among the Jews (but not written with the shin in the full tetragrammaton). Even Barabbas, that great criminal who was released instead of Jesus, was so called. According to Matthew 26:71, Jesus Christ was allowed to be referred to as 'Jesus the Nazorean'. Probably to give the Jews a good thrashing, Pilate explicitly called Him *"Jesus, who is called the Christ"* (Christ is Greek for messiah).

A few months before Rabbi Yitzchak Kaduri, known as the "Senior Cabbalist Elder", died at the age of 105 in the first month of 2006, he surprised his followers when he told them that he had met the Messiah. Kaduri gave the message in his synagogue on the feast of Yom Kippur, teaching the congregation how to recognise the Messiah. He also mentioned that the Messiah would appear to Israel after Ariel Sharon's death. The former Prime Minister was in a coma since January 4, 2006 and died in January 2014. Kaduri's son David confirmed that in his last year his father dreamed and talked almost exclusively about the Messiah and his coming. *"My father has met the Messiah in a vision"* he said, *"and told us that He would come soon."* Kaduri was not only highly esteemed because of his advanced age. Chief rabbis looked up to him as a 'tsadik', a righteous man or saint. Thousands visited him for counsel and healing. His followers speak of many miracles and his students say that he predicted many disasters. Police closed off the Jerusalem streets for his funeral, which became one of the largest ever, in a city known for large funerals. According to the newspaper Arutz-Sheva more than 300,000 joined the procession to pay their respects as he was taken to his final resting place. *"When He comes, the Messiah will rescue Jerusalem from foreign religions that want to rule the city",* Kaduri once said. *"They will not succeed for they will fight against one another."*

There are also other signs. Since of all the trees, the fig tree greens first, image of the spiritual budding of the Jewish people, it means that the mission of the herald taking on the role of John the Baptist, but now in a preaching for the whole world, did start only after 1840, the date thus of the budding of the Messianic Age. *"When you see the Precursor, it can be said that the mission of ha-Yeshua Mashiach has begun!",* states an old Jewish saying. Who else is this precursor but the Virgin Mary? The swelling series of end-time announcements, think of Lourdes, Fatima and so many others, is all about "repent for the kingdom of God is at hand". That series of announcements began in 1846 with Mary's appearance to the shepherds of La Salette. So the Mother of God is the herald in preparation for the new age. Surely it is this one that the prophet Isaiah meant when he said (Is. 40:3): *"The voice of one crying in the wilderness: make straight the ways of the Lord."* There is a person sent by God, whose name is Mary. This one comes to bear witness so that all men may believe through her. She is not the Light but comes to bear witness to the Light.

These include the apparitions of the Most Blessed Virgin Mary in the Blessed Garden (Giardion Benedetto) of Contrada Santa Teresa in Brindisi, Italy. On April 10, 2016, she spoke there the following words that attest that she is the John the Baptist of our time:

«« Dear friends, following the Blessed Virgin is a comfort to her, tormented by the lack of faith and even more by the lack of love. We are in times of spiritual darkening, times when man has replaced God with disorder and severe rebellion for his eternal Word of Truth. Let's commit ourselves to anchoring more to the guidelines of the Queen of Heaven, honoring her with the Holy Rosary, and incorporating in our heart her words of life. The messages will be 'a little sun' for everyone who welcomes them and contemplates them daily. The Blessed Virgin does not ask for the impossible, she simply asks to live a Christian life, to go the way of good, and practice the virtues in order to become happy with her on earth. Our Lord is revealed by the Holy Mother, so it is important to believe and follow the Immaculate, our spiritual 'educator'. »»

When we look closely at the revelations of the Augustinian nun, the venerable A. K. Emmerick in combination with "Mary, the Gate of Heaven" by Consuelo, a Spanish housewife, first published in 1990, then it appears that John's mission consisted of two parts. The first played itself out in the 'desert of Judea'. I now quote from Emmerick:

«« Now for him has Judea become the desert and, as before he dwelt in the desert with springs, rocks, trees and all animals, lived and spoke with them, so he speaks now with men and sinners, with no thought for himself. (…) Ever permeated with his mission, aware of his responsibility, serious, severe, simple and zealous, he proclaims but a single message: Penance! Prepare yourselves! Salvation is at hand, the Saviour comes! »»

It was only after Jesus had allowed Himself to be baptised that the second part of John's mission started to unfold in all the land surrounding the Jordan, where he preached and where he also administered a baptism of conversion from sin. It is precisely this explanation of the significance of the desert that is pointed at by Isaiah when he announces the voice of one crying in the wilderness, and it is in this way that the Blessed Virgin Mary fulfils her calling, now no longer limited simply to the region of Judea but comprising the entire world, for all people are her children, including those who have not yet found God, yeah, even those who despise Him.

Consuela received via revelations a Biblical catechesis from Mary Mother of God, that were given as a gift for the Marian year of 1987-88. As stated on the backcover:

«« This book opens for us *"a* door *to hope"* and reveals the high mission of the Virgin Mary. Her hands hold *"the keys to heaven"*. For Mary is indeed the *"Gate of Heaven"*, as determined by God's will. In fact, *"if the Lord has chosen the way through Mary to come into the world, the return of humanity to Jesus will also be through Mary",* who is *"the Mother of the Divine Mercy"* and *"Tabernacle of God and Gate of Heaven."* »»

It is sufficiently known that there have been many apparitions of the most Holy Virgin Mary, and there have been even some of Jesus. Among these apparitions, doubtless, there are a number of false apparitions, not always easy to recognize as such. The imitator brooks no reins. But you need not be concerned. God will tell us what is false in his own good time. We should not pull out the chaff, because then we will pull out the wheat too. The good grain of devoted Christians might be pulled out together with it! God Himself, the Lord of the harvest, will do the weeding and that just before the moment to harvest, so at the gates of the Reign of Peace. (Mt. 13:29-30) We humans must keep our distance. It is not for us to judge appearances, for we can be wrong, and even if our understanding is correct, we can shake people who first believed fervently. A priest once asked my opinion of a particular apparition and I answered in the negative, but added immediately: *"Above all, take no account of my opinion."* On a public forum, however, I will never denounce apparitions or visions.

And certainly in the last few years there have also been many apparitions outside the Roman Catholic world. And there are many private revelations, especially in the Islamic world, through which striking conversions have taken place. By way of illustration and to close this article I would like to give a characteristic example of an occurrence in Indonesia. Not so much an apparition of Mary but of the Son. The account is taken from bedevaartweb (pilgrimage web), a Dutch website that is presented in five languages.

It concerns a remarkable apparition that is little known, remarkable because it was a Christian phenomenon that occurred in an overwhelmingly Islamic country and, strangely enough, in and around the house of a Muslim. In the Jakarta neighbourhood of Kramath Lima a Christian church was being renovated. In the night of 22nd December 2000 a construction worker saw the figure of a man. He thought it was an evil spirit and asked him for a winning lottery number so that he could gamble. The next day he became ill. His two friends, who were sitting next to him, told the church warden. After hearing their description of the figure, the warden showed them an image of Jesus. The two confirmed that it looked like what they had seen. Ten days later the story continued. Not far from there a certain Ajum was at home occupied in Islamic prayer. There appeared a somewhat vague face on the wall. Because others, including a Christian minister, saw the same thing, it was decided to paint over the wall, but the image - resembling Jesus - kept returning. Within a week a stream of inquisitive visitors came. Even the international media (CNN) were there. The mullah (Islamic minister of religion) was consulted. When he stood before the image he called out: *"If you really are Jesus, prove it to me with a sign."* And then it seemed as if the image was attempting to come out of the wall. The mullah was so shocked at this that he fainted. Later he stated that this was 'the prophet' Jesus (Jesus is regarded as a prophet within Islam). Because of the publicity, the number of interested people had increased to more than ten thousand. Locals took advantage of this and stalls with food items appeared in front of the house. For example, one man was selling some kind of chicken stew, but to his amazement was able to scoop out multiples of the normal number of servings.

The authorities were unhappy with all the commotion and closed Anjum's house to the public on January 12. Anjum himself moved to Bogor, outside the city. From that moment on the image appeared no longer inside the house but at the same place on the outside wall, even after the wall had been painted blue. In the night of 14th to 15th January, in the presence of many witnesses, the figure drew itself out of the wall and rose into the clouds until out of sight. This happened at around half past midnight. Since then the cult has died a slow death. The authorities got what they wanted, but the population has not forgotten…

What follows concerns recent end-time prophecies. On November 8, 2010, an ordinary Irish woman who was not practicing the faith, received the first message from a major series called The Book of Truth, given to her by Jesus who revealed Himself to her. She presents herself under the pseudonym of "Mary Divine Mercy" (in short MDM). Jesus says that this is a new and supplementary revelation, and elsewhere that this is the last series of divine messages to be given to the world before his return, as foretold. The main theme is the Millennial Reign of Peace, which according to one of the messages will last literally a thousand years. The announced Warning, also known as the "Illumination of Conscience", when everyone without exception will see themselves in God's eyes, is intended to bring as many individuals as possible on the right path and to enormously increase the number that will get access to the Millennial Reign of Peace.

Some are annoyed that there are supplementary revelations. That would go against the doctrine of the Church, which is reaffirmed in the Catechism of the Catholic Church (CCC): *"No new public revelation is to be expected before the glorious manifestation of our Lord Jesus Christ. (...) Christian faith cannot accept 'revelations' that claim to sur-*

pass or correct the Revelation of which Christ is the fulfilment." (CCC 66-67) Indeed, I subscribe that no truly new revelations are to be expected before the glorious appearance of our Lord Jesus Christ. Well, we now live in the time of the glorious appearance of our Lord Jesus Christ proclaiming through MDM the Gospel of his second and festive coming. Gospel, from the Latin 'evangelium' or Greek 'εὐαγγέλιον' (evangelion), literally means glad tidings. It was originally the announcement, shortly beforehand, of the Roman Emperor's entry into some city or region, so that an appropriate reception could be prepared. (Belllum Gallicum, 4:11:5 §656) So I see no conflict here with what is stated in the CCC. After all, the epiphany is imminent. The Book of Truth addresses this issue in the May 13, 2014 message:

> «« Just like nations who welcome royalty, much preparation will be needed before the king lays foot on their lands. You would never allow a visiting king to arrive when everything is in disarray, decay or where streets are lined with filth. Representatives of such countries will, therefore, ensure that they are dressed and prepared properly to meet the visiting dignitaries. They will have gone to considerable trouble to prepare a great welcome and they will have chosen representatives, who they deem to be worthy, to welcome the visiting king. Finally, they will prepare a great ceremony to celebrate the arrival of the king and on the great day the streets will be lined and sing great praise. They will lavish accolades upon the visiting monarch and his entourage. So will it be on the Great Day of the Lord, when I, Jesus Christ, come to judge. »»

The name evangelion for our four Gospels originated from the expectation among early Christians that Christ's return was right around the corner, as is abundantly clear from Paul's letters. The first time that evangelion appears is in Matthew 4:23: *"Thereafter, Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, preaching the Gospel (evangelion) of the Kingdom [of God on earth]."* The Reign of Peace could arrive at any time, it was thought. So it is appropriate, two thousand years later, for another Gospel-message to be delivered, for Christ's return is at hand – also in human terms. We are therefore talking about a kind of fifth Gospel, the author of which is not one of the four apostles, but none other than our beloved Lord and Saviour, Jesus himself. By the way, Jesus does not call it a gospel but the Book of Truth, to remind us of the truths we already knew or could have known. (cf. message May 20th, 20133)

The wheat and the chaff

The chaff or weeds, as most Bibles refer to it, is a translation of 'zinzanion', a particular kind of weed, the dolik (Lolium temulentum). At the start of the season it looks remarkably like wheat, but must not be pulled up even when found because its roots spread horizontally and would thus pull up the wheat too. At the end of the season, when the ears of wheat bend under their own weight, the dolik is easily recognised (no heavy ears) and it stands upright and can thus be cut. The dolik was a feared plague in the Palestinian wheatfields. Sowing and spreading it (as an act of revenge) was punishable under Roman law. In our gardens we have a plant known as the Sabina officinalis. You can find it among strawberry plants. When the young leaves come out both plants look exactly the same. If even a small portion of the sabina's root remains behind, it will grow back again! The following from the Book of Truth fits in nicely with this: "He, the most Loving of all Fathers, is in great pain, at this moment, and He is deeply hurt by the darkness He witnesses in the souls of many of his children. It won't be long before the final phase of the purification of the human race begins. This will mean the separation of the good from the wicked. How this will break My Father's Heart, but it must be done. It is like as if He is preparing his garden, so that it is healthy and perfect. The weeds must be destroyed or they will spread and infest the healthy crops. Be prepared at all times. — Your Jesus." (Febr. 3rd 2013)

APPENDIX 7

The Marian apparitions of 1830
Do not count…

Message in the Book of Truth of Febr. 12th 2014 by our beloved mother, the Mother of Salvation: *"My role is to prepare you for the Great Day of my Son's Second Coming. I intend to continue to call out to my children, until that Day arrives."* Therefore, the messenger of our end times in the power and function of John the Baptist – repent ye, for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand! – is the Virgin Mary, through a myriad series of apparitions around the world and to many blessed, a series that began in 1846. Some would rather designate 1830 as the beginning in that function, the year that Mary appeared several times to a sister of the Daughters of Charity, the 24-year-old Cathérine Labouré, under the title "Mary-Immaculate Conception". That happened in the Rue du Bac in Paris. Of course, those apparitions cannot be viewed in isolation from the end time and the coming reign, which was already coming close. In my view, the weight of the Rue du Bac's apparitions was foremost centered on the dogmatic constitutions around Mary and it was not under the sign of evangelism, although Mary never appears without a call to prayer and conversion, or else she would not fulfill her maternal task. The distribution of the 'miraculous medal', as the medals were soon called, and which were made by Catherine Labouré on instruction of the Blessed Virgin, promoted the religious devotion. And indeed the Dogma of Mary Immaculate Conception*) was promulgated by the Church on Dec. 8, 1854, as the final chapter of a long and fruitful thinking process.

In 1858 the Blessed Virgin appeared in Lourdes to the girl Bernadette. The Mother of God then did not introduce herself as the Immaculate Conceived Virgin, but said: *"I am the Immaculate Conception!"* That was a step further than what she had said to Catherine. Although Mary confirmed the dogma of four years earlier, this immediately created a new theological problem. How could Mary call herself 'the' Immaculate Conception? She was not God, was she? Saint Father Maximilian Kolbe, who was murdered in nazi-Auschwitz, comments:

> «« The Immaculate Conception is divine! Not Mary, but the Holy Spirit. The third person of God, eternally received from the love between the Father and the Son, is the uncreated Immaculate Conception. Mary, on the other hand, is the created Immaculate Conception. So, there are two Immaculate Conceptions.
>
> The Holy Spirit dwells in Mary's soul from the very beginning, throughout her life, and through all eternity. He, the eternal Immaculate Conception, immaculately produces in her divine life, makes her the created Immaculate Conception. And the virgin womb of Mary's body is kept holy and unblemished for

Him, who she will receive in time, which is the human life of the God-man. [After all, all what is human is placed somewhere in the time.]

And if a wife takes the name of her husband, because [in a sense] she belongs to him, is one with him, and becomes equal to Him, the source of the new life, then even more would not Mary be positioned to use the Name of the Holy Spirit, the Divine Immaculate Conception, of Him who lives in her as the uncreated Love? »»

More than twenty years later, Pope Paul VI will embrace Maximilian Kolbe's theology and beatify him in 1971. Pope John Paul II canonized him eleven years later.

Besides this title, the Blessed Virgin Mary is also known as Advocate, Auxiliatrix, Adjutrix, and Mediatrix of Grace, about which the Second Vatican Council made statements in Lumen Gentium (nrs 60-65). There is also the title Co-Redemptrix, which the official magisterium kept at bay in order not to jeopardize ecumenism - a scandalum!**) Yet, that is the logical conclusion of her immaculate status. As early as the seventeenth century, her function as Co-redemptrix was highlighted by the Blessed Mary of Agreda. However, the fact remains that the Blessed Virgin Mary is subsidiary to Christ in everything.

According to a revelation to JNSR, we are still awaiting the confirmation of the dogma of 'Mary Divine Immaculate Conception', which is related to the coming deification of humankind in the sense of being totally in God's Will, which shall come to maturation during the Reign of Peace. If Christ has become man and God's children are one in Jesus Christ, who is God, should we then be surprised that we humans, and his mother in the first place, are deified (which is quite different from being God)?

---

*) The dogma of the Immaculate Conception asserts that, "from the first moment of her conception, the Blessed Virgin Mary was, by the singular grace and privilege of Almighty God, and in view of the merits of Jesus Christ, Saviour of Mankind, kept free from all stain of original sin."

**) In the Book of Truth of Nov. 10th 2013, the following is given by our beloved mother, the Mother of Salvation: «« My role as Co-Redemptrix (by decree of the Holy Office on June 26, 1913) means that my power against the devil has been strengthened, in a way that has not been granted to me by God before. So now is the time when all devotion to me will be carefully dismissed by the enemies of my son. When veneration to me is rushed through and when the request to safeguard countries against Communism is twisted, then my wishes will not have been carried out. I will, from now on, be a rarity in the official patronage normally affor by decree from the Holy Office on June 26, 1913 ded me, the Mother of God, in my son's Churches on Earth. My power against the beast will be avoided by the removal of my image, my Holy Rosary and other devotions to me from many Catholic Churches. »»

Don Bosco's Dream about the Rescue of the Church

- the dream of the two columns -

Don Bosco (1815-1888) is an Italian priest dedicated to disadvantaged youth in the suburbs of Turin. Early in life he heard a voice, which said: *"Not with blows, but with charity and gentleness must you draw these friends to the path of virtue."* He placed his works under the protection of Francis de Sales (1567-1622). His followers are therefore known as the Salesians. De Sales was one of the great preachers and writers of his time who placed the practice of piety within the reach of the common man, which was an innovation at the time. Forty-six years after his death, Don Bosco was canonized by Pius XI.

Right after Ascension Day, on Friday, May 30, 1862, during the customary 'Good Night Talk', Don Bosco described to his boys and the young clerics that he was training, a dream he had had a few nights before. This corresponded strikingly to the visions of Catherina of Racconigi (1486-1547), beatified in 1808, a town south of Turin. She had regular visions in which she watched the Church as the holy ship piloted by the pope, sailing between rocky cliffs tossed back and forth by headwinds, but St. Peter never abandoned the Church and took her under his wing.[175)] The boys listen eagerly to what Don Bosco has to say:

> «« My dear boys, I want to tell you a dream tonight. Try to picture yourselves with me on the seashore, or, better still, on an outlying cliff with no other land in sight. The vast expanse of water is covered with a formidable array of ships in battle formation, prows fitted with sharp spear-like beaks capable of breaking through any defence. All are heavily armed with cannons, incendiary bombs, and all kinds of weaponry - even books - and are heading towards one stately ship, mightier than them all. As they try to close in, they try to ram it, set it afire, and cripple it as much as possible. This stately vessel is shielded by a flotilla escort. Winds and waves are with the enemy. In this midst of this endless sea and far away, two solid columns, a short distance apart, soar high into the sky. One is surmounted by a statue of the Immaculate Virgin at whose feet a large inscription reads "Auxilium Christianorum"

175) In the Salesian writings I have not been able to find the connection with the visions of Catherina of Racconigi, which illustrates that Don Bosco did not know about this.

(Help of Christians). The other, far loftier and sturdier, supports a Holy Host of proportionate size and bears beneath it the inscription “Salus credentium” (Salvation of believers).

The flagship commander, the Roman Pontiff, seeing the enemy’s fury and his auxiliary ships’ very grave predicament, summons his captains to a conference. However, as they discuss their strategy, a furious storm breaks out and they must return to their ships. When the storm abates, the Pope again summons his captains as the flagship keeps on its course. But the storm rages again. Standing at the helm, the Pope strains every muscle to steer his ship towards and between the two columns from whose summits hang many anchors and strong hooks linked to chains.

Don Bosco

The entire enemy fleet closes in to intercept and sink the flagship at all costs. They bombard it with everything they have: books, pamphlets and incendiary bombs and they shoot with firearms and cannons. The battle rages ever more furious. Beaked prows ram the flagship again and again, but to no avail as, undaunted, it keeps on its course. At times a formidable ram splinters a gaping hole into its hull, but, immediately, a breeze from the two columns instantly seals the gash. Meanwhile, enemy cannons blow up, firearms get jammed and beaks fall to pieces, ships crack up and sink to the bottom. In blind fury the enemy takes to hand-to-hand combat, cursing and blaspheming.

Suddenly the Pope falls, seriously wounded! He is instantly helped up. He is struck down a second time and dies. A shout of victory rises from the enemy and wild rejoicing sweeps their ships. But they are wrong. No sooner is the Pope dead, then another takes his place. The captains of the auxiliary ships elected him so quickly that the news of the Pope’s death coincides with that of his successor’s election.

The enemy’s self-assurance clearly wanes. Breaking through all resistance, the new Pope steers his ship safely between the two columns and moors it to the two columns, first to the one surmounted by the Host, and then to the other, topped by the statue of the Virgin. At this point something unexpected happens. The enemy ships panic and disperse, colliding with and scuttling each other. Some auxiliary ships, which had gallantly fought alongside their flagship, are the first to tie up at the two columns. Any others, the most of them, which had fearfully kept far away from the fight, stand still, cautiously waiting until the last of the wrecked enemy ships vanish under the waves. Then, they too head for the two columns, tie up at the swinging hooks, and ride safe and tranquil beside their flagship. A great calm now covers the sea. »

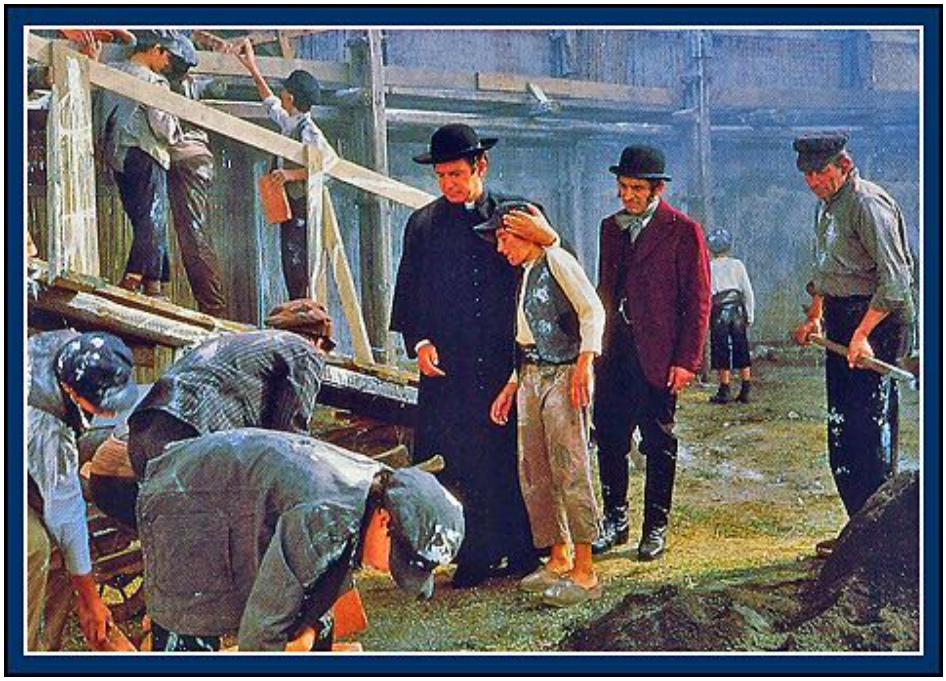
At this point Don Bosco asks Don Rua: *“What do you thing of it?”* And he replies:

«« I think that the flagship symbolises the Church headed by the Pope, with the ships representing humankind, with the sea as an image of the world. Those defending the flagship are the laity favourable to the Church. The attackers are those who try to destroy the Church. The two columns represent the devotion to the Holy Virgin and the Holy Eucharist. »»

Don Rua did not mention the death of the Pope,[176)] and neither did Don Bosco, but he added:

«« You have understood it well. But one aspect needs more detail. The enemy ships symbolise persecutions. Very grave trials await the Church. What we have

suffered so far is almost nothing compared to what is going to happen. The enemies of the Church are symbolised by the ships that strive their utmost to sink the flagship. Only two things can save us in such a grave hour: the devotion to Mary and frequent Communion. Let us do our very best to use these two means and have others use them everywhere. »»



Not surprisingly this dream amazed all those present. Two listerners wrote it down the following day and two some time later. The four accounts correspond well except for some differences in detail. Important is the end of the dream that points to the worldwide triumph of the Church, a triumph that will be recognized by all, only to be achieved after much suffering. The emphasis on Mary's role and the Holy Sacrament, demands our attention, especially with regard to the message of Fatima, in which she promises a great peace after difficult times. This peace corresponds to the 'great calm' of Don Bosco's dream and, with the knowledge of today, we may interpret it as the Millennial Reign.

✻

176) The pope who falls must be Pope Benedict. It says: "No sooner is the Pope dead, then another takes his place." It doesn't say "than another is elected", which could mean that from Heaven St. Peter will take the helm.

The Antichrist
The Coming One

It may surprise, at least it surprised me, that the so widely used name Antichrist appears exclusively in the two epistles of John. In the Gospel of John, this writer characterizes the Antichrist as 'the wolf'. This is in the parable where Jesus presents himself as 'the good shepherd' – who watches over his sheep, which are us. In his end-time account (Book of Revelation), John frequently uses the term 'the beast', especially in chapter 13. In that same chapter, Christ is also an animal, but not a beast, and is known there as the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world. The battle is between the Lamb and the beast that looks like a panther, in fact Satan, who has transferred his power and dominion and authority to the beast. It is not man against whom God is fighting, but Satan, who hides behind men. He is the one also who is worshipped: "And they worshipped the dragon, who had given power to the beast."

19.73 – The Mystery of Inequity

In Psalm 74:19 is written: *"Do not deliver your turtledove (your soul) unto the beasts."* Indeed, 'the beast' is the Biblical equivalent for 'a demon', whose main characteristic is precisely the savagery and bestiality that manifests itself in irrational rage and violent domination. And according to Revelation, that beast is given power over *"every tribe, language and people",* i.e. over everything and everyone.

Here we enter the realm of conspiracy theories and the New World Order, which will, after all, encompass everything and everyone. This is a difficult thought for many people to digest. Surely everything is democratically regulated, except for those few pirate states like North Korea? So, sleep peacefully.[177)] The conspiracy has ancient papers and is called in the Bible, *"the mystery of iniquity that is already at work".* (2 Th. 2:7) The Antichrist can only appear and be hailed by all if it is carefully prepared. Such things do not arise by themselves, but are planned by Kongsi. It is not rational but superrational. The time has to be ripe. In a centuries-long process, minds have been moulded by the fourth power,[178)] which is the towering power above the trias politica of legislative,

executive and judiciary. In the words of James Bacque, there is no freedom of the press, only the freedom to own it. Usually, the media do not have to lie, they just have to apply selection criteria and 'colour' the news presented to them in order to raise public opinion. Richard Salant, who was President of CBS News,[179] is quoted to have said: *"Our job is to give people not what the public wants, but what we decide they ought to have."*

That there is a worldwide conspiracy, or at least an attempt to achieve it, can be deduced from their own writings, especially those of Freemasonry. Léon de Ponçins did a good job with his 1934 research on what this organisation reveals about itself.[180] An important writing by someone from their own ranks is "Morals and Dogma of Freemasonr" by Albert Pike († 1891), one of the most eminent and influential Masons of his time. There have also been defectors in the course of time, who shed light on the internal machinations of 'the conspiracy'. A famous defector was Emile Zola, and also Jules Doinel. Jean Marquès-Rivière († 2000), once a celebrated member himself, writes in his introduction on the spiritual treachery of Freemasonry that its archives reveal only indecision, cowardice and opportunism. And he states wryly: *"She has nothing to hide because she owns nothing."* The reader asks: But this hatred then, this hatred of Christianity and the established power? Answer: That is no secret; you don't own something like that, it owns you. It is this Satanically possessing power that removes Freemasonry from the ubiquitous flatness and gives it that amazing continuity.

As a final pillar, historical research provides insight in a broader context. In the compendium "Origin, purpose and method of operationn of Freemasonry" and my book "The ascent of Man and Science", I show that Freemasonry was already present in a recognisable form in the early sixteenth century. Its origins are with the Socinians where the highly initiated practised devil-worship.[181] Even then they cherished ideals of world domination and the overthrow of Christianity..

If it turns out that there is indeed an all-encompassing conspiracy comprising all of humanity, those who exclude themselves and their own circle will look for a scapegoat. When that will have been wiped out there will be peace on earth, the theory goes. Who better to scapegoat than the Jewish people? During a lecture at the Agnes Church in Amsterdam on 19 March 2011, Jules van Rooyen, a well-known writer on the international conspiracy, proclaimed: *"The post-war period is characterised by philosemitism and liberalism; they are the cause of the decadence and apostasy within Europe."* That Jews are prominent in evil proves nothing, as that is manifestation of their superior intelligence and organisational skills. The search for a scapegoat disregards the evil within

---

177) After the German occupation of the French Rhineland in March 1936, Dutch Minister Colijn made a radio speech. He announced that, as a precaution, conscripts should remain under arms for an extended period. Thus he ended his speech, which has become one of the best-known statements in the Dutch collective memory: "I therefore request the listeners, when they soon seek their sleeping places, to sleep as peacefully as they do other nights. For the time being, there is no reason whatsoever to be really worried." Three and a half years later, the Second World War ignited.

178) The fourth power is the press and its willing servant is the education sector.

179) CBS News is a division of the American television and radio network CBS.

180) "La Dictature des puissances occultes – La Franc-Maçonnerie d'après ses documents secrets" (The Dictatorship of the Occult Powers - Freemasonry according to its secret documents) by Léon de Ponçins - Beauchesne et Fils éditeurs # 1934.

181) Freemasonry is said to have emerged from the stonemason guilds with the parent organisation presenting itself to the world in June 1717 as the continuation of the old guilds. But that lovely legend does not correspond to reality. Via the internet, see also the book by yours truly, especially starting from ch. 8: "The Ascent of Man and Science - From Thales to Newton"; the Dutch translation is a summary of it. (The description of Socinianism under Wikipedia is incorrect.)

ourselves. Of course, bad people exist, as well as good ones. The former bring out what is evil in themselves, the latter what is good in themselves. (Luke 6:45) Once an Israeli politician let slip: *"Every country has its thieves, murderers and rapists. Israel too is entitled to its criminals."*

AQUARIUS SONG

From the musical HAIR - 1969

When the moon is in the seventh house
And Jupiter aligns with Mars
Then peace will guide the planets
And love will steer the stars

This is the dawning of the age of Aquarius
The age of Aquarius, Aquarius, Aquarius !

Harmony and understanding
Sympathy and trust abounding
No more falsehoods or derisions
Golden living dreams of visions
Mystic crystal revelation
And the minds true liberation

Aquarius, Aquarius !

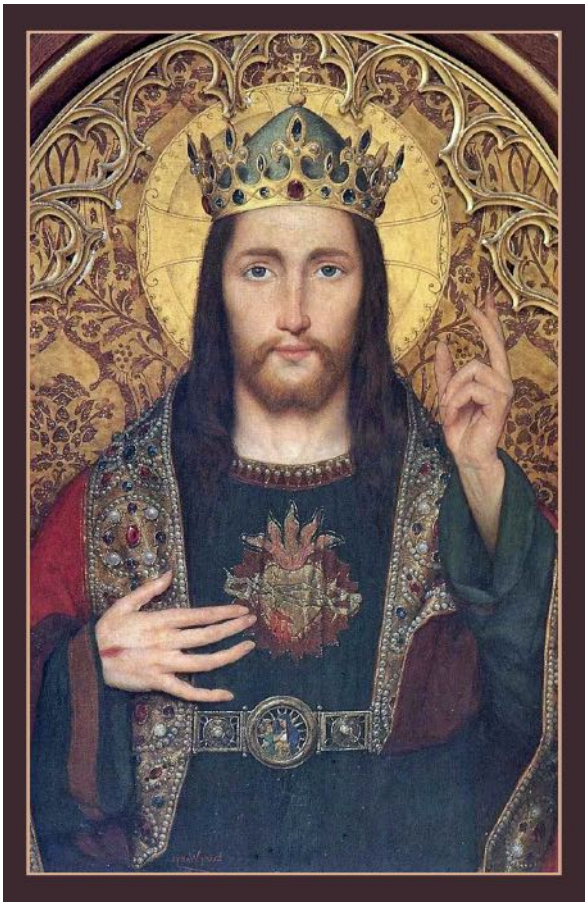
When the moon is in the seventh house
And Jupiter aligns with Mars
Then peace will guide the planets
And love will steer the stars

This is the dawning of the age of Aquarius
The age of Aquarius, Aquarius, Aquarius

Aquarius, Aquarius, Aquarius!

If not the Jews are targeted, well, it must be those odious Jesuits or the super-rich. And why not the Vatican? Indeed the rich and the devil are often good buddies. Says Ecclesiasticus (13:18-20): *"How can there be peace (...) between a poor and a rich. (...) The poor are pastures of the rich."* The devil also likes to disguise himself as an angel of light. It is obvious that his thrusters pretend to be servants of righteousness by means of sweet-talking words. (2 Cor. 12:15) Religious organisations are self-evidently a wanted and sometimes willing prey. The desire to pinpoint a specific organisation or people as the deepest cause of evil, and to demand their extirpation, disregards the transcendent nature of the grand conspiracy. For certain, conspiracies are secretly plotted, but here, regarding the mystery of inequity, I mean that it is invisible from our side. Even their atrocities are hidden from sight. It is foremost a spiritual battle that is waged, I would rather say 'a supernatural'. Therefore, Jesus says: *"Unless I go away, the Helper will not come to you; but if I go, I will send him to you."* (John 16:7)

This expression has preoccupied me for decades. Eventually I found a satisfactory answer, as follows. We Christians here on earth are fighting a spiritual battle, a battle against the powers in the heavenly realms (in our firmament). As the Apostle Paul says in his letter about the workings of the Church: *"We wrestle not against blood and*



The Solemnity of Christ the King
Image based on the Veil of Manoppello

flesh, but against the principalities, against the powers, against the world-rulers (cosmocrats) of this darkness, against the evil spirits in the air." (Eph. 6:12) So it is a spiritual battle and thus 'super-natural'. Although it transcends the material it is not for that reason unnatural. Well, in faith we live together with Christ, who sits in the Heavens (de real Heavens), but we do not see Him, which therefore represents a spiritual entity. We believe in the saints, who have attained eternal bliss and stand by our side, but we do not see them either. We believe in God's angels, but we don't see them. And we Christians believe that we are engaged in a battle against the demonic powers that possess supernatural powers, but we do not see them. All those devils and idolaters have submitted themselves to *"the god of this age"* (2 Cor. 4:4), to Lucifer, reason why in our society so many depraved people hold leadership positions and why the horrific Satanic covens, that are mushrooming in our present time, are not held politically and judicially accountable (making it seem as if they do not exist). We believe in the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, but do not see Him. We eat the transubstantiated body and blood of Christ, but we do not see it because clothed with bread. Only after Jesus ascended into Heavens could we begin to wage the spiritual battle, the real battle without which every victory would be a Pyrrhic victory, a battle that is not against flesh and blood and can only be fought with the weapons of prayer and a holy life. Only after Lucifer and all his cronies are thrown into the bottomless pit, will everything have become different, but it is not that far yet.

19.74 – Christ the King

The hardest thing to understand is the continuity of the conspiracy, which can only be given from a higher and conceiled power, terrible power, spanning the ages. Those who do not believe in Lucifer will have to put aside 'the conspiracy' as a meta-historical factor. There are indications that God has made a pact with this sinister lordship, giving him power to tempt humankind for a period of time, a time that culminates in the Great Tribulation, which represents the vestibule to the Millennial Kingdom.[182)] In the time granted to him, Lucifer directs his forces with military precision. For the past two thousand years, they have been the *"rulers of the world (cosmocrateros) of this darkness".* (Eph. 6:12 - for a theological exposition of this verse, see App. 8.) The question

182) Matthew 24:21 reads (cf. Mar 13:19), "For then there will be a great tribulation, such as there has not been from the beginning of the world until now, and such as there never will be again." See also Revelation 13:12-18 and Daniel 12:1.

that arises is whether at the Great Tribulation his supremancy has come to an end. Put differently, is his cosmocrateros concluded at the beginning or only at the end of the Great Tribulation? When exactly is the end of time?

On that pact, the protocols of which have so far been obscure, one of the seven[183)] end-time prophets, a housewife under the pseudonym of JNSR (Jésus Notre Seigneur Revient/Jesus our Lord is coming back), has said some interesting things. The message of 19 Sept. 2009 is reproduced here in full:

THE NON-INTERVENTION PACT OF GOD WITH SATAN

«« JESUS: Satan is a spirit and not a being of flesh. He is the rebellious angel of GOD's first creation, since the first creation was of the Angels.

When he learned of the future Creation of God which in time would attain a higher perfection than the angels to finally even resemble GOD, his jealousy and hatred made him the Antichrist, the incarnate manifestation who has been fighting against the Eternal in all times, to reign over the Universe, to destroy the Plan of God and bring about the downfall of the whole of Mankind.

He asked for an interview with his Creator. That meeting had nothing of a simple conversation.

Now that mankind had multiplied on Earth, now that the time had come for men to choose of their own free will, whether or not to accept this divine perfection, that was to lead them to "the identity of the SON OF GOD", now that the moment was very near in which everything was to be fulfilled, Satan said:

"I ask You, Lord GOD, permission to put them to the test. You will be all the more proud of them if You win this bet. Allow me to tempt them with all my promises. I'll use all my charm. They will submit to my authority. They will reject your Law and your Commandments. You will remain a silent spectator without revolting against anything You will see [as long as your assistance is not invoked]. In no case will You intervene until the end that You yourself have fixed, which is "the END of the Times" [end of the Non-Intervention Pact].

If I win the bet 'that men will all follow me', then, Lord GOD, You will lose all your Creation. Everything will be destroyed and You will rejoice in recognizing that the men, who have followed me to the last, have been destroyed because they were not worthy of becoming men in the image of Jesus Christ.

If I lose, if despite all my diabolical interventions they continue to resist and choose You by following your Son Jesus Christ, if they clamor his coming, if they cry out for it, even if they traverse the mere that is left standing - of the trees, the houses, the mountains, the valleys and all that was called 'land', yes, then your Creatures will be found worthy of their GOD, just like Jesus Christ who overcame temptation. They will then be worthy to resemble their Saviour.

And my GOD, as You grant them the promised IDENTITY, I will submit to You (Father, Son and Holy Spirit), worthy and great to be the ONE GOD of all the Universe." »» See also: http://www.jnsr.be/fr.htm

According to the prophecies of yet another – an Irish lady who presents herself under the pseudonym of Mary Divine Mercy – the time when Lucifer was allowed to seduce mankind unboundedly, has come to an end at the beginning of the Great Tribulation, with tipping point at the end of 2012. In her message of 25 Dec. 2012, it is written: *"My dearly beloved daughter, My Plan of Salvation for the world, began in My Time, on the*

183) A tentative list of the seven end-time prophets could be as follows: Mélanie Calvat (La Salette), Marie Julie Jahenny, Sister Faustina Kowalska, Luisa Piccarreta, J.N.S.R., Madeleine Aumont (Dozulé), Maria Divine Mercy.

22nd December 2012. This time in the world is Mine, as I gather all God's children together as one, as the great battle begins. This period of Great Tribulation will last some time." It is for this reason that this time is very much characterised by amazing answers to prayer and great deeds of God's people. Satan as world ruler has had his day! And Christ - it has become his time! - can intervene on his own initiative. However, the devil is in the tail or in other words, it stings like a scorpion. (Rev 9:5) The Great Tribulation, which is therefore the time we are experiencing now, is paradoxically a time of rejoicing according to the Apostle Luke's word (Luke 21:28): *"When all this is about to happen, arise and lift up your heads, for your redemption is at hand!"* Now is the time of God's interventions, but also the time of the Antichrist and the False Prophet (who sits in Peter's chair). Note that every major event from now on is 'sign'. We are rushing towards the Reign of Peace! Laetitia, laetitia!

Earthly, sensuous, and demonic, in the true spirit of the Antichrist

The evangelists Luke and John in their discussion of the betrayal of Jesus, clearly indicate that the one who actually manipulated the betrayal was Satan, the devil, that murderer from the beginning, whom Christ accordingly designates as the actual father of those Jews wishing to murder Him. Yet, how has it come about that Satan found precisely in Judas the tool required for his murder of the 'second Adam'? In general, what happens when a man becomes a demon? The question must be asked, for Judas is not the only one whom Christ designates as a devil. In a no less dramatic moment, He also calls Peter 'Satan' – one of the three apostels who stood closest to Him!

The case of Peter gives us an important clue to understanding this frightening event. When Jesus speaks for the first time openly about his impending Passion, Peter tries – with the best intentions, so it seems – to hold Him back from it. Consequently, Jesus rebukes him and calls him Satan, because he is *"thinking not as God thinks, but as men do!"* (Mt. 16:23)

(...) The stumbling block for all the disciples – and not merely for Peter and Judas – is the 'Passio Christi, Passio hominis': the Cross. They saw in Christ above all a purely human, intramundane Messiah, a political liberator of Israel, linking to their 'faith' very selfish expectations: not only Judas, about whose greed we hear in John 12:6, and Peter, but also for example the two sons of Zebedee, who ask Jesus to be the first and second in command (after Jesus) in the impending earthly kingdom. (Mt 20:21) Such political aspirations appear as 'human' to us and therefore pardonable. Christ, on the other hand, calls them satanic and demonic since they are contrary to God. In like manner, the apostle James speaks of a wisdom that is *"earthly, sensuous, and demonic"* – everything on one and the same level, in the true spirit of the Antichrist... (Jas 3:15)

From the English translation of "Dragon's Wine and Angel's Bread - the teachings of Evagius Ponticus on anger and meekness" by Gabriel Bunge - St Vladimir's Seminary Press, New York # 2009 (pp. 28-29).

On balance, the Great Tribulation would not need to be entered, as Christ would then be the new world ruler. The Millennial Kingdom could begin immediately. But without that postponement, bitterly few people would be admitted into what is also called the New Paradise. There is amorality and excessive materialism everywhere. Who is worthy of admission? It is the battle for souls that gives the rationale for the Great Tribulation and simultaneous manifestation of the Antichrist. There is struggle for souls, for all are invited to the wedding supper! (Mt. 22) True, in the time of the Tribulation everything is already under the command of Christ the King, yet pain and apostasy are tolerated – even so extreme that such a thing has not been and never will be since the foundation of the world. (Mt 24:21) God does not force. The freedom bestowed on each man is irrevocable, sacrosanct, unassailable. God never twists our free will and it is for this reason

that the Tribulation is necessary. It is not disciplining for the sake of disciplining, but disciplining for the sake of discernment by men.

It is difficult to understand why God permits all of this, all that pain and anguish. Let us turn to the ancient Hebrew language, and try to find a solution here. Many Talmudists have pointed out the relation between the Hebrew word 'oneg' (spelled with the letters: **ayin**, nun, gimmel), meaning enjoyment, and the word 'nega' (spelled: nun, gimmel, **ayin**), meaning affliction. These contradictory words are made up of three identical letters. The only difference is where the letter ayin is placed. Is ayin at the beginning (as in the oneg-enjoyment) or at the end the of the word (as in the nega-affliction)? The point is that whether something is a pleasure or an affliction depends on where to place the ayin. When fully pronounced, the Hebrew letter ayin is also a word. 'Ayin' means eye. So, it's all in the eye of the beholder! The well known Bible scholar, Matityahu Glazerson, knows to put it well in a lovely booklet on the secrets of the Hebrew language: [184)]

> «« We assemble words by ordering letters and we are thereby the creators of our own experiences, of both the 'oneg' and 'nega'. Whichever order we select, the end result is the same – to be thaught of G-d's existence and holiness, for by performing G-d's commandments, we come to the realization of His existence and holiness through experiencing oneg. If on the other hand, we despise His commandments, we are brought to such realization through pain and suffering.
>
> We can now understand the Midrash (biblical exposition), which relates how G-d appeased the Children of Israel who had become perturbed by being told of the portion in the Torah (Bible) relating to the terrible plagues, called the nega'im (plural of nega). They were told, so goes the Midrash, that this portion was intended to apply only to those members who do not observe the commandments of the Torah. For the others, for those who do, there would be the oneg (rejoicing) of the Sabbath and religious Festivals, and no plagues. »» see also the impressive movie documentary: "A Century of Wisdom, Alice Herz Sommer".

Parable of the Heavenly Father

My daughter, to Me happens what happens to a poor father whose wicked children not only insult him but want to kill him. And if they don't, it is only because they lack the opportunity. And what does the father do? Shunned by his own children, and while they are fighting, hurting each other and are on the verge of starvation, he works hard to gather new wealth for his children and to find solutions.

Then, when he sees them almost lost, he moves among them to make them rich, to give them remedies for their wounds, and bring them peace and happiness. Overwhelmed by so much love, his children will cling to their father in an everlasting peace and love.

Luisa Piccarreta, Daughter of the Divine Will (26-04-1921)

19.75 – A Revival of the Egyptian Primitive Gnosis

Many books have been written about conspiracies and secret societies that are the manifest and minor part of the conspiracy. Without the manifest manifestation, the conspiracy that aims to establish the Antichrist's supernatural empire on earth would remain. When the term 'Deep State' is used to refer to the power behind the manifest government, one

184) "Sparks of the Holy Tongue" by M. Glazerson – Pacific Press, Johannesburg # 1975 (pp. 8-9).

is actually referring to a supernatural reality, i.e. a spiritual principle, which explains why it can hide in the thicket.[185)] But in talk shows, one speaks of the New World Order (NWO), which sounds more pleasant to the ears. Statements by supranational organisations reveal that the creation of a 'New International Economic Order' is seen as the solution to the socio-economic problems and wars the world is facing, problems and wars initiated and perpetuated by the Deep State itself. President George Bush was the first to speak openly about the creation of a 'New World Order', a term that has become commonplace. The important American politician, Zbigniew Brzezinski's, published in 1970 "Between Two Ages: America's role in the Technetronic Age", in which he laid out the grandiose plan for global governance, a new Tower of Babel. Do not be fooled, the NWO corresponds to the anti-Christian empire that aims to bring Hell to earth via Satan's incarnation, the Antichrist, although such will be short-lived.

In my opinion, the most important manifestation today of the mystery of inequity is Freemasonry, whose rituals go back to the original Gnosticism. An early exponent of Gnosticism was Simon Magus, mentioned in the Acts of the Apostles, who was the first to attempt to combine paganism with Christianity. His teachings were written down by his disciple Valentinus and are known as the Gnostic Heresy.[186)] This heresy mixes pagan names of gods with Biblical names for God and identifies idolatrous rites with Christian terms of theology. The whole system is not what it seems or what it pretends to be. It is a falsehood, a deception, a fraud, a lie. This is another characteristic of the Antichrist. Is it not written in the second Letter of John (1:7-9): *"Many deceivers have appeared in the world, who do not confess that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh. This is the tempter, the Antichrist!"* 2 Timothy 3:8 echoes this: *"As Jannes and Jambres opposed Moses, so these men oppose the truth."*

There is no hard evidence that Gnosticism goes back to the Egyptian primordial gnosis. Yet, occultists themselves are firmly convinced of this. Madame Blavatsky, the driving force behind the then-founded Theosophical Movement, published "The Secret Doctrine" in 1888, a weighty book of texts written in trance and later penned down in orderly language by co-workers. Her ultimate goal was to bridge through Indian paganism to the Egyptian primordial gnosis, a long-drawn-out project that finally culminated in a revolutionary meditation technique. This technique is called Merkaba meditation. Mer-ka-ba is a Hebrew and also Arabic word that means vehicle and consists of three Coptic words (ancient Egyptian). Popular New Age thinker Drunvalo Melchizedec, an American, first called Bernard Perona, promotes this technique through publications, conferences and workshops. Blavatsky is considered one of the pathfinders of the New Age movement. New Age is an umbrella term for a wide range of esoteric philosophies and occult practices as a harbinger of a new era of love, peace and harmony as sung in the successful musical Hair, launched in 1969. That was in the 'high days' of the 'flower power' generation. The New Age will not bring peace but just the opposite. It is the

185) To allow the Satanistic Deep State to remain hidden in the thicket, it is essential to create the illusion that 'all' developments are evolutionary and follow each other in a trend-wise and orderly fashion. The theory of evolution is therefore sacrosanct, also because it undermines our belief in a creator god. Anything that points to shocks and extremes should be swept under the carpet. Blissful insouciance trumps all. This is also why God's mighty interventions in history must be ignored; the daily extremes of evil equally so, and of course the illusion of 'good wars' in which the one party is the personification of evil and his opponent the personification of good. And therefore the horrific War of the Vendée (1793-'96) is not taught in French schools. Who knows about the mass murders that Eisenhouwer and consorts perpetuated in post-war Germany (11 million victims)? And the list goes on and on.

186) It is assumed that the teacher Theodas (godsent) mentioned by Valentinus, who had met the Apostle Paul, is the same as Simon Magus.

harbinger of the anti-Christian global empire. By nature, New Age, which now has billions of adherents, feels at home with the interfaith organisations pushing for a global theocratic state, if only under the banner of ecumenism. Ecumenism is the world cuisine of all religions. A new flavour, yes, but that of unadulterated Christianity is gone! Since the 1960s, there has been a remarkable collaboration between all kinds of mystical movements and faiths opening up their esoteric writings to each other, to make them accessible to the general public through the music scene and intermediaries such as the Dalai Lama and this Perona.

The great Statesman Disraeli also spoke of a conspiracy

There is (...) a power which we seldom mention in this House (...) I mean the secret societies. (...) A great part of Europe – the whole of Italy and France and a great portion of Germany, to say nothing of other countries – is covered with a network of these secret societies. (...) They do not want constitutional government; they do not want ameliorated institutions. (...) They want to change the tenure of land, to drive out the present owners of the soil and put an end to ecclesiastical establishments.

Speech in the House of Commons on July 14, 1856
by Benjamin Disraeli (later British Prime Minister).

19.76 – Dividing Line between Good and Evil

World War II would have been a rare derailment in history, a strange aberration. The facts are different. Rudolph Rummel listed the genocides, politicides, massacres and terrors perpetrated by governments in the 20th century in his 1994 book: "Death by Government". Comments on this by Armenian Professor Richard Hrair Dekmejian on Amazon.com: [187)]

> «« Outstanding Title! This is a compelling study of what the author calls democide – the intentional killing by governments through genocide, politicide, massacre, and terror. The book focuses on 14 democides of the 20th century by the governments of the Soviet Union, Communist China, Nazi Germany, Nationalist China, Japan, Cambodia, Turkey, Vietnam, Poland, Pakistan, Communist Yugoslavia, North Korea, Mexico, and Feudal Russia – a total of 169 million murders, which Rummel carefully documents through elaborate statistical techniques… »»

Taking note of this, one might ask why then so much attention is paid to the attempted extermination of the Jewish people in what is commonly known as the holocaust or shoah. As if those other holocausts didn't count! Still, the Jewish holocaust had something unique. For one thing, it was not a regional event. The Armenians, for example, by fleeing abroad avoided persecution and thus survived 'their' holocaust. And let us not deceive ourselves: it was not only the Germans who hated the Jews, with the difference, however, that with the gas chambers they systematically put it into action. The intention was to wipe the Jews off the face of the earth, and this willingness still exists among the 'modern' Jew-haters. In earlier times, the killers wanted to kill the Jews whom they met, or decrees were issued to chase them out of a city or country or to segregate them in ghettos. That has now changed. In our time, the motivation invoked may not be religious but, at its deepest level, it still is. By wanting to exterminate the Jewish people all over the world, the nations are in fact waging a battle against God, the

187) "Death by Government" by Rudolph Rummel – Transaction Publishers, USA. Professor Dekmejian teaches at the "University of Southern California" in Los Angeles.

God of Israel, the God also of you and me, but as far as the nations are concerned it is the God of Israel. Should that dastardly plan succeed, all Biblical promises for Israel (and through Israel for the world) would be reduced to nothing!

This shows that Hitler's misdeeds were not an unfortunate exception. This gives an uneasy feeling, because it tells something about ourselves. No one knows, or wants to know, what lies in the deepest and darkest caverns of ourselves, which is replete with all our sufferings and wounds and morbid dislocations, which are genetic and have accumulated through countless generations, typified as 'the chain burden of our past'. People only want to see the pleasant side. Yet we all need to be purged of evil. (Hebr. 10:19-22) As Solzhenitsyn wrote: *"The line dividing good and evil cuts through the heart of every human being."* This is an age where you know, intuitively, that many events in the world are being caused by the evil genius present in the hearts of men, whose fire is being lit by the evil one.

That the dividing line between good and evil crosses not only our hearts, but also nations and our institutions, is evident from what took place just after World War II. It is still little known that under the leadership of General Eisenhouwer, a deliberate policy of extermination of the German people was set in motion, in which the British and French cooperated frantically, and the Canadians participated. In the gigantic prison camps under Allied control, during a certain period 35% to 45% of the prisoners died (percentage converted on an annual basis). The highest percentages were in the French camps. This is well documented but is kept out of the limelight. At the end of '48, the punitive exercise ceased. Immediately, Germany recovered in what is known as the Wirtschaftswunder (the economic miracle). Through starvation and the disastrous population movements in Poland (due to the criminal border correction protocol), some 11 million civilians and POWs perished in the period from 1946 to mid-'48. Whoever provided POWs with food was summary executed.

The issue of starvation of the German people is documented in James Bacque's 1997 "Crimes and Mercies".[188)] Written with fervor, compassion and humanity, and making use of never-before cited records in Moscow archives, James Bacque exposes that General Eisenhower, in flagrant violation of the Geneva Convention, in May 1945 forbade German civilians to take food to prisoners starving to death in American camps under threat of the death penalty. That Eisenhouwer, later president of the United States, would be a war criminal, who would have thought? This book was posted on the Internet by yours truly and can be found on SCRIBD under: "Crimes and Mercies - prom. version." At the beginning of the Internet edition are interesting quotes from the book. See also the article by James Bacque in "Saturday Night" of September 1989: "Eisenhower's Death Camps". This article appeared at the occasion of the publication of his book "Other Losses, an investigation into the Mass Deaths of German Prisoners at the hands of the French and Americans after WWII". The other book "Crimes and Mercies, the fate of German Civilians under Allied Occupation, 1944-1950" - delves further into the matter with new statistical evidence in support of the claim that in a orgy of revenge in between 9.3 and 13.7 million German civilians and prisoners of war needlessly died in the after-the-war-period.

Aid organisations were discouraged from sending food, and what did arrive lay rotting in warehouses. The meagre food supplies in German possession were requisitioned. Fertiliser could not be imported and fishing vessels were chained up. The plan was to

188) In 2007, Giles Macdonogh published "After the Reich", in which the numbers of Germans killed 'in peacetime' are unrealistically low. Remarkably, it sometimes refers to "Crimes and Mercies". After the Reich is therefore yet another distortion of history about what was done to the German people by the Allies.

bomb all major cities to ground, but the public outrage about the the firestorm raid on Dresden in the beginning of '45, when on purpose probably more than 100,000 civilians were killed, made the allies abandon that part of the plan (the Morgenthauplan).[189)]

The blood revenge orgy was halted by the strong commitment of Christian relief organisations and some admirable politicians who wanted to put an end to it out of Christian compassion. In 1948 they eventually got the upper hand and the food blockade was lifted. Two people to remember, who worked for this, are Senator Langer and former US President Hoover, who hardly gets any credit for it, although his biographer Glen Jeansonne has tried to rectify that. After making an inspection visit to Germany at the behest of President Truman, Hoover stated in one of his critical reports on the matter: *"There is an illusion that the New Germany remaining after the annexations can be reduced to a 'pastoral state'. That is possible only if we exterminate or remove 25 million people there."* [190)]

Herbert Hoover

Herbert Hoover is one of the greats of the twentieth century which is shown, among other things, by his energetic campaign, a purely private initiative, to combat post-war famine in the world. Thanks to the food aid programmes he instigated, 800 million were saved from starvation, but this aid, as already mentioned, was denied to Germany. Hoover was never disappointed with the public, though often with politicians and the military. James Bacque comments:

> «« The Allied Armies that landed in Europe in 1944 were the first armies in history that were organized for mercy as well as victory. They were ordered to defeat the enemy, liberate the oppressed and feed the hungry. Within two years of victory, 800 million people around the world had been saved from famine, chiefly by Americans and Canadians, but helped by Argentinians, Britons and Australians. [The great names in that effort were Herbert Hoover, US Secretary of War Robert Patterson, Canadian Prime Minister Mackenzie King and his assistant Norman Robertson.] This was a mercy that came too late for many millions of Germans. As the Allies brought freedom to Hitler's slaves, they witnessed in the

189) In four raids, known as the "Bombenholocaust" (holocaust by bombs) or "Höllenfeuer" (hellfire), more than 3,900 tons of high-explosive bombs and incendiary devices were dropped on the city of Dresden. Between 13 and 15 February 1945, 722 heavy bombers of the British Air Force and 527 of the US Air Force dropped their charges and smaller planes tried to gun down the people on the run. A public outrage followed. It was the first time the public seriously questioned the military actions used against the Nazis. And there were questions asked in the English House of Commons on 6 March.

190) Roosevelt, President Truman's predecessor, was under the influence of Henry Morgenthau, the US Treasurer, and followed his directives of reducing Germany to a pastoral state, which was pushed through at the second Quebec Conference in September 1944. Churchill was put under tremendous pressure to follow those directives. Based on the documents of that highly secret conference, former President Herbert Hoover arrived at this remarkable conclusion. The quote is from "The Marshall Plan at 60: The General's Successful War on Poverty" in the UN Chronicle # March 18, 1947: «« There is the illusion that the New Germany left after the annexations can be reduced to a 'pastoral state'. It cannot be done unless we exterminate or move 25,000,000 people out of it. »» (source Wikipedia, Dec. 5, 2019)

concentration camps scenes of horror such as Europeans and North Americans had scarcely seen before. The sight of these pitiful victims meant that the Germans were denied a share in the relief that was already on its way to the rest of the world. Thus for several years, the Allies wreaked vengeance on the Germans such as the world had never seen. A whole nation was converted to a starvation prison… »» (pp. xxi-xxii)

At least 9.3 million (and perhaps 13.7 million) Germans died needlessly soon after the war, the great majority because of the conditons imposed by the four major victors. This is many more Germans than died in battle, air raids and concentration camps during the war. Millions of these people slowly starved to death in front of the victors' eyes every day for years. These deaths have never been honestly reported by either the Allies or the German government. Although most of these people died from lack of food, their deaths were not caused by the world food shortage described by some historians. They began dying when world food production was 97 % of normal. »» (pp. xxi-xxii, p. 30, p. 131)

19.77 – Has entered its end times …

The question now is whether, just as immediately after World War II, Christian communities will have enough punch to stop the abuses created by a New World Order. I think that station has already been passed. Where was the Christian thrust when in the Netherlands abortion legislation threatened to be passed in 1980? The life of a Christian is typified by 'righteousness', by a right relationship to God and his neighbour. The pagan, on the other hand, who does not listen to the voice of his conscience, but is plagued by the sound of gold, his neighbour tends to leave him cold. The Dutch minister of justice who had to fend off the abortion law, but did not, was nota bene a 'passionate' Catholic, Dries van Agt, but the most vulnerable human being left him cold. Nowadays, the newspapers are full of the alleged injustice done to the so-named Palestinians, but the abortion hecatomb remains out of sight, is a non-issue even during elections. As Oswald Spengler saw coming, European culture *"ist in ihre Endzeit eingetreten"* (has entered its end times).

During the opening address of the Second Vatican Council, Pope John XXIII said:

«« We feel we must disagree with those prophets of doom who are always forecasting disaster, as though the end of the world were at hand. (…) They say that our era in comparison with past eras is worsening, and behave as though they

> had learned nothing from history, the real teacher of life. (…) For history shows that things had not, in fact, been any better in the olden days. »»

In 1962, he could still claim this on logical grounds, as the lawlessness sanctioned from on high had not yet taken root. Very soon after his address, laws approving contraception, then abortion provocatus and, finally, assisted suicide came into force in the various countries. Many more laws were accepted that were diametrically opposed to God's commandments, always promoted under the cover of the noble motive. Although man has always been evil, the laws were designed to provide an ideal. At present we live in the time when blasphemous behaviour has been encased in a legal framework, not somewhere in some terrorist state, but in the so-called Christian West. An unprecedented situation. The Ten Commandments are inscribed in everyone's heart (Rom. 2:14-15), giving a counterweight to the depravity of the heart. (Rom. 3:10-18) Consequently, a child often has a better moral sense than an adult, who gladly profits from the opportunity to keep the child in line by appealing to it. By kneading the conscience, a certain kind of human being is created in the passage to adulthood. Where the lower court of the invidivual conscience faces questions that cannot be easily answered, the higher legislative body of a country – which is a kind of collective conscience – serves to set up beacons before the face of the individual conscience. Once the legislative and executive public bodies become beacons of injustice, we discover the clearest sign that humanity has entered its end times. Finally, according to the prophecy of the shepherds of La Salette, the cancer will have festered to the point where even the Seat of the Catholic Church in Rome will have forsaken the good God-given faith and will have become the place of worship of the Antichrist, a den of snakes. (cf. 2 Thes. 2:3-4)

In the universal numbing of conscience we may see an important signal of the downfall of the Occident, called Evening Land.[191)] Because it is written:

> «« The coming of the 'lawless one' [the Antichrist] will be in accordance with Satan's works. He will use all sorts of displays of power through signs and wonders that serve the lie, and all those who set to perish he'll deceive with his wickedness. They perish because they refuse to love the truth that could have saved them. For this reason God sends them a powerful delusion so that they will believe the lie, so that all will be condemned who have not believed the truth but have delighted in wickedness. »» (2 Tess. 2:9-12)

The Old Testament prophet Sephaniah makes no bones about it:

> «« Woe to the city of oppressors, rebellious and defiled! (…) Her officials within her are roaring lions, her rulers are evening wolves, who leave nothing for the morning. Her prophets are unprincipled treacherous people. Her priests profane the sanctuary and do violence to the law. (…) I said: *"Be in awe of Me, be admonished by Me."* Then her place of refuge would not be destroyed, nor all my punishments would come upon her. But no, they did the most shameful things again and again. (…) The great 'Day of the Lord' is near [Christ's second coming]. It is near and coming very speedily. Hear! The 'Day of the Lord'! Even the bravest cry out! That day will be a day of frenzy, a day of fear and distress, a day of disaster and calamity, a day of darkness and gloom, a day of ominous dark clouds, a day of horns blaring and shouts of war against the fortified cities and their high towers. I will terrify the people. They will walk around like the blind, for they have sinned against the Lord. Their blood will be shed as if it were dust, their flesh will turn to street filth.. »» (3:1-7; 14-17)

---

191) Evening Land (is the Occident) is a reference to Oswald Spengler's book from 1922: "Untergang des Abendlandes" (The decline of the the Evening Land).

Their days are counted: (Is. 33:1)

> «« Woe to the destroyer [oppressor], himself never destroyed, and the traitor, never yet betrayed. When there is an end to your devastation you yourself are devastated. And when there is an end to your betrayal you yourself are being betrayed. »»

Their days are counted. After all, Revelation 19:19-20 foretells:

> «« Then I saw the Beast and the kings of the earth and their armies gathered together to wage war against the rider on the horse and his army. But the Beast was captured, and with it the False Prophet [the 2nd beast cf. Rev. 13:11] who had performed the signs on its behalf. With these signs he had deluded those who had received the mark of the Beast and worshiped its image [the computerised eye]. The two of them were thrown alive into the fiery lake of burning sulfur. »»

APPENDIX 8

Significant Bible quotes about the Antichrist

Matthew 7:15 : “But beware of the **false prophets**, who come to you in **sheep’s clothing**, but within they are **grasping wolves**.”

Matthew 10:16 : “Remember, I am sending you as **sheep** among **wolves**. So be shrewd like a serpent, but maintain the innocence of a dove.”

Matthew 24:11 : “And many **false prophets** shall arise, and shall deceive many.”

Matthew 24:24 : “For there shall arise **false christs** and **false prophets**, and shall do great signs and wonders, so that - if it were possible - they would also seduce the elect.”

Mark 13:22 : “For there shall arise **false christs**, and **false prophets**, and shall do signs and wonders to tempt, if it were possible, even the elect.”

Luke 10:3 : “Go on your way, and remember, I am sending you as **lambs** among **wolves**.”

John 10:12 : “A hireling, one who is not a shepherd, and who is not the owner of the sheep, abandons the sheep and flees as soon as he sees a wolf approaching. The **wolf** attacks the flock and scatters the **sheep**.”

Acts 4:26 : “The kings of the earth have risen, and the rulers are conspiring **against the Lord and his Anointed One**.”

Acts 20:29 : “I know that after my departure, **fierce wolves** will enter your house, who will not spare the flock.”

1 Thessalonians 3:5 : “I wanted to know if your faith stood firm, for I was afraid that the **tempter** had tempted you and our efforts had been in vain.”

1 John 2:18 : “Children, the last hour has come. You have heard that the **Antichrist** will come. Already many **antichrists** are appearing, and therefore we know that this is the last hour.”

1 John 2:22 : “Is there a greater **liar** than one **who denies that Jesus is the Christ**? **The antichrist is anyone** who does not acknowledge the Father and the Son.”

1 John 4:3 : “Every spirit not confessing this, is not from God; this is **the spirit of Antichrist**, of whom you have heard that he is coming - even now he is in the world.”

2 John 1:7-9 : “Many **teachers of error** have appeared in the world who do not confess the coming of Jesus Christ as a human being. Now thát is **the tempter, the Antichrist**! Be on your guard and do not forfeit what we have accomplished, but make sure you receive the full reward. He who does not abide by the teachings of Christ but wants to go further, does not have God. He who abides by those teachings has both the Father and the Son.”

2 Corinthians 12:15 : “I will continue to do my work in the same way in order to deprive those apostles of the opportunity to reap the same fame with their pomposity as we do. They are **false apostles** who, by acting dishonestly, pretend to be apostles of Christ. This is no wonder, since none other than **Satan** disguises himself as an angel of light.

It is therefore obvious that his servants also present themselves as **servants of righteousness**."

2 Thessalonians 2:3-4, 7, 9 : "The day of the Lord does not dawn until many have turned away from the faith and the **lawless one** has appeared, he who will be lost. He will fight all that is divine and holy and raise himself above it, to sit on the throne in God's temple and pretend to be God himself. (...) **The mystery of inequity is already at work**. (...) The coming of the lawless one is the work of Satan and is accompanied by great displays of power and false signs and wonders."

2 Timothy 2:17 : "What **teachers of error** tell, proliferates like cancer."

2 Timothy 3:8 : "As Jannes and Jambres opposed Moses, so these **teachers of error** oppose the truth. They are people with sick minds and unreliable faith."

2 Peter 2:1 : "**False prophets** also appeared among the people in those days, and so there will also appear among you **teachers of error**. They will come with pernicious heresies and even deny the master who redeemed them. In so doing, they will soon work their own ruin."

1 John 4:1 : "Beloved, do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits to see whether they are of God; for many **false prophets** have gone out into the world."

Revelation 11:7 : "And when they shall have finished their testimony, the **beast** that cometh up out of the abyss shall make war upon them, and shall overcome them, and shall kill them."

Revelation 13:1 : "And I saw coming up out of the sea a **beast**, having seven heads and ten horns; and on his horns were ten royal hats, and on his heads was a **name of blasphemy**."

Openbaring 13:2 : "Het **beest** dat ik zag leek op een **panter**, met **poten als van een beer** en een **bek als de muil van een leeuw**. De draak droeg zijn kracht en heerschappij en gezag aan het beest over."

Revelation 13:2 : "The **beast** I saw looked like a **panther**, but had **feet like those of a bear** and a **mouth like that of a lion**. The dragon transferred his power and dominion and authority to the **beast**."

Revelation 13:3-4 : "And I saw one of his heads wounded as unto death, and his deadly wound was healed; and all the earth marveled after the beast. And they worshipped the **dragon** who had given power to the **beast**; and they worshipped the **beast**, saying: 'Who is like this **beast**? Who can fight against it?'"

Revelation 13:7-8 : "And power was given to the **beast** to make war against the saints and to overcome them, and power was given to him over every tribe, language and people. And all who dwell on the earth will worship it, at least those whose names are not written in the book of life of the **Lamb** who was slain from the foundation of the world."

Revelation 13:11 : "Then I saw a **second beast** (the False Prophet) coming up out of the earth. It had **two horns, like a lamb**, but it spoke like a **dragon**."

Revelation 13:12 "Before the eyes of the **first beast** it exercised all its power. It forced the earth and all the people who lived on it to worship the **first beast**, which was healed of its mortal wound."

Revelation 13:14 : “It managed to deceive the people living on earth by the signs it could perform before the eyes of the **first beast**, telling those who dwell on the earth to make **an image** to the beast that lived despite its stab wound.”

Revelation 13:15-16 : “It was given power to breathe life into that **image**, so that **the image of the beast** could also speak and cause anyone who did not worship the image to be killed. Furthermore, it had a mark put on all people, young and old, rich and poor, slave and free, on their right hand or on their foreheads.”

Revelation 13:17-18 : “Only people with that mark – that is, t**he name of the beast or the number of that name** – were allowed to buy or sell anything. This is where wisdom comes in. Let everyone who has insight decipher the **number of the beast**; it designates **a human being**: his number is **666**.”

Revelation 14:9-11 : “They were followed by a third angel, who cried out in a loud voice, ‘If anyone worships **the beast and his image** and receives the **mark** on his forehead or hand, he will have to drink the wine of God’s wrath, which has been poured undiluted into the cup of his wrath. He will be tormented in fire and brimstone, under the eyes of the holy angels and of the Lamb. The smoke of that torment will rise for all eternity. Whoever worships **the beast and his image**, or whoever bears the mark of his name, will have no rest, neither by day nor by night.’”

Revelation 15:1-4 : “Again I saw in heaven an impressive, miraculous sign: it was seven angels with the seven last plagues, with which God’s wrath comes to an end. Then I saw something like a sea of glass mingled with fire. On the sea of glass stood those who had overcome the **beast, his image and the number of his name**. They had harps and played them in front of God. They sang the song of God’s servant Moses and the song of the **Lamb**: Great and wonderful are your works, Lord our God, Almighty, just and trustworthy is your government, prince of nations. Who would not revere You, Lord, praise Your Name? For You alone are holy. All nations will come and bow down before You, for Your righteous deeds have been revealed.”

Revelation 16:1-2 : “Then I heard a loud voice coming from the temple saying to the seven angels: ‘Go now! Pour out the seven sacrificial bowls of God’s anger on the earth!’ The first angel went away and poured his sacrificial bowl empty over the earth. All the people who bore the **mark of the beast** and worshipped his **image** received evil and painful sores.”

Revelation 16:10 : “And the fifth angel poured out his sacrificial bowl upon the throne of the **beast**; and his kingdom was darkened; and they chewed their tongues in pain.”

Revelation 16:13 : “Then I saw that out of the mouth of the **dragon**, out of the mouth of the **beast**, and out of the mouth of the **False Prophet** came forth three unclean spirits in the form of frogs [the image of demons].”

Revelation 17:3 : “And he led me away in spirit into a wilderness, and I saw a woman sitting on a **scarlet beast** that was full of names of blasphemy, and it had seven heads and ten horns.”

Revelation 17:7-17 : “Then the angel said, Why are you so dismayed? I will reveal to you the meaning of that woman and the **beast** on which she sits, with its seven heads and ten horns. The **beast** you saw was, and is not; it will soon rise from the subterranean depths and be destroyed. All people living on earth whose names are not written in the Book of Life from the beginning of the world will be astonished at the sight of the **beast**, because it was, is not, and yet will be again. Here it comes down to wisdom and insight. The seven heads are seven hills on which the woman sits, and they are seven

kings. Five of them have perished, one is there now, and the last one is yet to come and then will remain but a short time. The **beast** that was, and is not, is itself the eighth king, though it is one of the seven, and it will be destroyed. The ten horns you saw are ten kings who are not kings now, but will soon be given royal power together with the **beast** for one hour. They all have the same goal in mind and transfer their power and authority to the **beast**. They are waging battle against the **Lamb**, but the **Lamb** will overcome them. For the **Lamb is the Supreme Lord and king**, and those who belong to Him, those who are called and chosen, are faithful. The streams you saw, said the angel, by which the **harlot** sits, are many nations and peoples and tribes. The ten horns you saw and the **beast** itself will become disgusted with the **harlot** and they will destroy her. They will strip her, eat her flesh and set her on fire. For God has prompted them to carry out his plan, so that they will all hand over their power to the **beast** for the same purpose, until what God has said becomes a reality."

Revelation 19:19-20 : "I saw that the **beast** and the kings of the earth had gathered with their troops to wage war with the rider on the horse and his army. The beast was captured, along with the **False Prophet** (the second beast cf. Rev. 13:11), who had performed signs in his presence, deceiving all who had received the **mark of the beast** and worshiped **his imag e** (the computerized 'eye'). The two of them were thrown alive into the fiery lake of burning sulfur."

Revelation 20:4-12 : "I saw thrones as well, and justice was done to those who sat on them. They were the souls of those who had been beheaded because they had testified of Jesus and spoken of God; they had not worshiped the **beast and his image**, nor had they received **his mark** on their foreheads or their hands. They had come to life and reigned with the Messiah for a thousand years. The other dead did not come to life until the thousand years were over. This is the first resurrection. Happy and holy are those who partake of the first resurrection. The second death has no power over them. They will be priests of God and of the Messiah and reign with him for a thousand years. When the thousand years are over, **Satan** will be released from his prison. Then he will go out to deceive the nations at the four corners of the earth, Gog and Magog. He gathers them for battle, a crowd as numerous as grains of sand by the sea. They advance across the breadth of the earth and surround the camp of the saints and the beloved city. But fire descends from heaven and consumes them. And the devil, who deceived them, is thrown into the lake of fire and brimstone, with the **beast and the False Prophet**. There they will be tormented day and night, for all eternity. Then I saw a great white throne and Him sitting on it. The earth and heaven fled from Him and disappeared into nothingness. I saw the dead, young and old, standing before the throne. Books were opened. Then another was opened: the Book of Life. The dead were judged according to their deeds based on what was written in the books."

APPENDIX 9

Spiritual Warfare – Wrestling against Principalities and Powers

• A closer look at Ephesians 6:12

(This article is partially based on an article by New Life Outreach.)

The Apostle Paul writes in his letter to the Christians of Ephese (6:12): *"We do not wrestle against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the world of this darkness, against spiritual beings of the wickedness in the heavenly spheres."*

Bible teacher Rick Renner introduces this verse succinctly: *"All serious scholars agree that the language of Ephesians 6:12 is military language. It seems evident that Paul had received a revelation of how Satan's kingdom has been aligned militarily."*

The word 'wrestle' (Gr. pale) refers to struggling, wrestling or hand to hand fighting. From 'pale' the Greek word 'palestra' is derived, a popular place of encounter of combat sports. The activities which took place there were not the same as the sports which carry the same names today: wrestling, boxing, or mixed martial arts. Boxers of the day wore gloves ribbed with serrated iron and spiked with nails. Boxers depicted in artwork are shown to have deformed features from this warfare. Warfare is the correct word, for there were no rounds and no rules. The fight went on and on until one of the combattants surrendered or died in the ring. Wrestlers were tolerant of every imaginable tactic.

Another group of combatants were a combination of the above. They were called 'pankratists', a combination from 'all' (Gr. pan) and 'exhibited power' (Gr. kratos). The combination describes someone with massive amounts of power, power over all, or more power than anyone else. These combatants would be similar to the mixed martial arts fighters of today, except, there were then no rounds and almost no rules. The pankratist was out to prove to their competitors that they were invincible and were tougher than anyone else.

By using the old Greek word 'pale' in order to denote wrestling, Paul conveys the idea of a bitter struggle and an intense conflict. This implies that when you are fighting demonic foes, there are no rules! Anything goes! Whoever fights the hardest and the meanest and whoever lasts the longest is the winner.

"We do not wrestle against flesh and blood…" We should be aware that our real adversaries are an unseen host of wicked spirits, under the aegis of Satan, who relentlessly are working behind the scenes. Satan commands the wicked spirits to undo God's work of creation by interfering with the relationship of God and Man, by enciting individuals, organizations and the society in general to do evil, to do anything which goes against the universal dictate of love and against the innate conscious in men of the Ten Commandments (Rom. 2:15). However, the wicked can do very little unless our flesh cooperates! That is why they continuously tempt, seduce, deceive, and assault our flesh and also our minds. And this explains why we must deal with the flesh before we attempt

to deal with the devil and consorts. By living, in prayer, a crucified, sanctified life on a continual basis, we come in a state of grace and able then, through God's power, to neutralize any attack the enemy would try to wage against our flesh. Why? Because 'dead flesh' has no capacity to respond. But, as the apostle Paul strikingly explains in Romans 7 and 8, as long as we live in this body of flesh, the flesh is never really dead and we humans will always continue to do what is wrong (but within bounds), even against what we would want to do. Nevertheless, our 'dead flesh' makes it much more difficult for the evil one to pervert the mind. But beware, he will never give up to pester us!

Paul tells us in his letter that there are four classifications of demon spirits:

1. Principalities
2. Powers
3. Rulers of the world of this darkness
4. Spiritual beings of the wickedness in the heavenly spheres.

Notice well that in Ephesians 6:12 Paul mentions the word 'against' four times in connection to the devil. He could have used it once in reference to all four levels of demonic spirits. When a truth is repeated in Scriptures like this, it is always for the sake of emphasis. The word 'against' (Gr. pros) depicts a forward position or face-to-face encounter as we would expect in the confrontation with a dangerous foe. The language here is military in nature.

At the top of Satan's domain is a group of demon spirits that Paul calls 'principalities'. Principalities (Gr. archas) is an old word that is used symbolically to denote the times of antiquity. Furthermore, it is used to depict individuals who hold the highest positions of rank. By using 'archas', Paul points at those who have held lofty positions of power and authority ever since the fall of Lucifer.

Next Paul speaks of 'powers', a word taken from 'exousia', which denotes delegated authority. This tells us that here is a lower ranking group of demon powers who have received their authority from Satan. It follows that they use their delegated authority to promote all manner of evil and perversity.

Next, Paul mentions 'the rulers of the world' (of this darkness). This is translated from 'kosmokrateros', which is a combination of kosmos and kratos. Kosmos denotes order and arrangement and the word kratos has to do with raw power. Kosmokrateros, then, depicts raw ordered power trained to assault. This word was used by the ancient Greeks to describe certain aspects of the military life. Thus young soldiers, abounding with energy were taught to be submitted, disciplined, ordered, and perfectly arranged. This is a picture of rank and file. In the end all of these men, with all of that raw ability, were turned into a massive force. Thus, Satan organizes his demon spirits in rank and file. He gives them orders and assignments, and sends them out like troops committed to destroy.

Finally, Paul mentions 'the spiritual beings of the wickedness in the heavenly spheres'. Wickedness (Gr. poneros) depicts something that is bad, vile, malevolent, vicious, impious and malignant. It is remarkable that Paul saves the word poneros until the end of this verse. As it were, he is telling that the ultimate aim of Satan's dark domain is to afflict humanity in all evil and merciless manner imaginable.

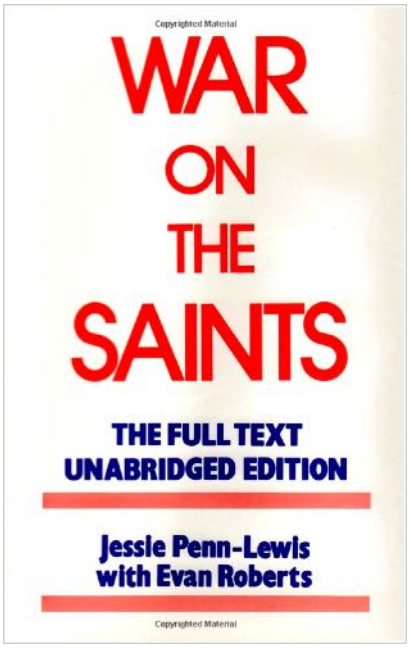
APPENDIX 10

WAR ON THE SAINTS

A textbook on the work of deceptive spirits among the children of God

Jessie Penn-Lewis in cooperation with Evan Roberts, 240 pages (1912)

A review by Hubert Luns



This book was written by the English Evangelist Jessie Penn-Lewis as an instruction manual for the end-time Christians, the Christians of our generation (you don't have to agree with that, but that's Jessie Penn-Lewis' view). They will form the so-called 'remnant army', spoken of in Revelation 12:17. There they are called "the remnant of her seed". Why would it be an army? Because, as the book shows, the battle now breaking out will also be primarily a battle against the evil spirits and, for their part, against us. (Eph. 6:10-13) But they cannot be recognized as such, because they present themselves as angels of light, as love itself, if not as God Himself. And many allow themselves to be deceived because, as the letter to the Thessalonians writes (2:10), they did not get the love for the truth, which is the pearl for which we should set everything aside. When ordering the book, take care that it is the unabridged edition.

Overcoming Satan

I quote from the last paragraph of the book:

> «« Is it a marvel, then, that at the close of the Age, and on the eve of the Millennial triumph of the Church, the whole hierarchy of evil powers endeavour to submerge the future judges of the fallen hosts of Satan? (…) They must overcome 'AS HE OVERCAME' (Rev. 3:21), if they are to share His throne and conquest. (…) United to Him in spirit, they pass through the same dark atmosphere, filled with the hosts of evil, to their place of triumph in Him. That closing onslaught from the hosts of darkness is upon the Church. Not one living member of the Risen Head can escape attack if he is a true 'joint' in the Body. (…)
> The ULTIMATE OF THE CALL TO WAR AGAINST THE POWERS OF DARKNESS IS REVIVAL! But the ultimate of that Revival which will come as the result of victory over Satan is ASCENSION TRIUMPH: THE MILLENNIAL APPEARING OF THE CHRIST, AND THE CASTING OF SATAN AND HIS EVIL POWERS TO THE ABYSS. »»

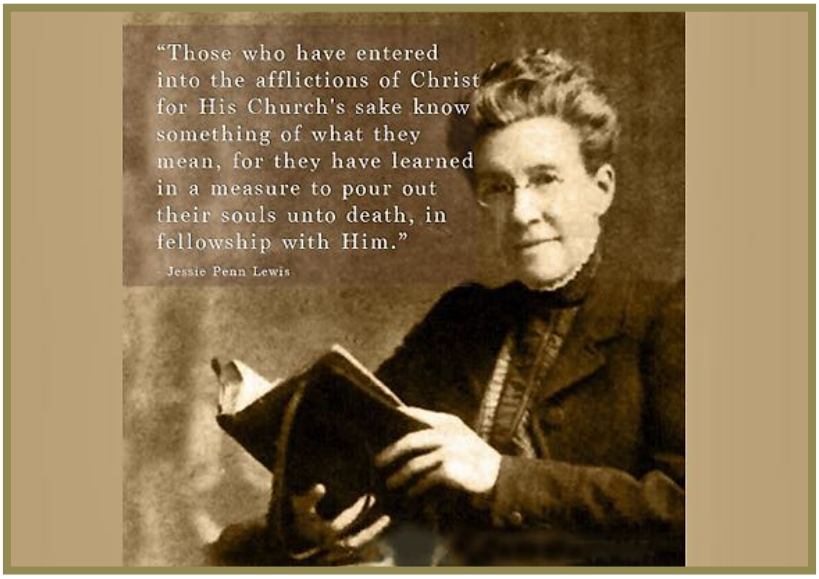
Pitfalls

This book was written after the author witnessed firsthand how, because of the imitative and intimidating work of Satan, the revival of Wales in the years 1904-1905 was ship-

wrecked, as it must also have been the case with all previous revivals. And let's face it, the first revival mentioned in the Book of Acts did not last either, especially after the 'firstfruits' had passed away. Our book provides an analysis of what can go wrong after a revival is underway and it explains why. It gives insight into how the pitfalls can be circumvented. In this respect, it is a truly unique book. Jessie Pen-Lewis rightly says that *"all this with the after history of all Revivals of the past, shows that REVIVAL MINUS WAR ON SATAN AND HIS WICKED SPIRITS, must always appear to end in partial failure through the mixed results, consequent upon Satanic counterfeits of the working of the Holy Spirit."* (p. 219-20) An unmasking is required to achieve a significant revival, one that endures. The writer does believe that a pure revival is possible without this usual aftermath. She does say:

> «« Apart from this same knowledge of the workings of Satan and his wicked spirits, so as to be able to recognize their presence under any guise, no one can with safety accept all the supernatural manifestations which accompany Revival, or believe all seeming 'Pentecostal power' to be of God. A PURE REVIVAL is divine power in full operation, minus sin and Satan. It is not cold 'belief' [which the churches are so full of], but life, and it has to do with the spirit [in the spirit], not the intellect [in the mind]. »» (p. 131)

By the latter she means to say, which is explained in detail in the book, that the mind is subsidiary to the spirit. The mind is primary, not the intellect. The mind considers and deliberates what the spirit has to offer, and that's her task, which is in communication with God's Spirit. And through the assurance of faith that thus arises, there is also a great boldness to be a witness of faith.



Satanic Inspirations

Why then is this book for end-time Christians and not for Christians of all times? Because - in my opinion - there will be an unprecedented outpouring of the Holy Spirit in the end times, as the Apostle Peter foretells in his Pentecost speech when he quotes the Prophet Joel. (Acts 2:16-21) This will lead the Church to ultimate victory over Satan and his henchmen – among whom, unfortunately, there are those who give the impression of being extraordinarily pious and who present themselves as healers, prophets and preachers. (2 Thess. 2:9-11) Satan, too, has his children! Incidentally, the author, unlike

yours truly, does not believe that there will be another special outpouring of the Spirit in this age, but that is aside.

Why is it that so many revivals are shipwrecked? It goes like this. When an outpouring of the Holy Spirit takes place, that person enters a spiritual world where the powers of darkness are also active. The believer thinks that the Holy Spirit is now taking over the leadership of his life, whereas that very one is a teacher and counselor and not anything else. (John 14:26; 16:13) This misconception of the place of the Holy Spirit unlocks a door for Satanic inspirations. They knock on it and ask to enter. Perhaps they say in a flattering and peaceful voice: "I am Christ, I am the Christ, knocking at your door. Please let me in." They too want to have meal with you. And sadly, many are moved to do so. The 'New Pentecost', which is a revival of which, in my opinion, we have not seen anything yet, if anything at all – that's how impressive it is. This explains why unprecedented manifestations of demonic powers are taking place in the church of the end times. This is what the Apostle John's letter to the church of Thyatira refers to (thyatira refers to: an enticing odor that leads to distress). In Thyatira the demonic spirits, galvanized by the prophetess Jezabel, let their prey know the depths of Satan. (Rev. 2:18-29) But they do so in such a way that those people are convinced they are experiencing the depths of God! The author writes the disturbing words (p. 11):

> «« Through this supernatural deception, the full purpose of the deceiving hierarchy of Satan thus reaches its consummation, in the foretold worldwide authority. Deception of the world with deepening darkness; deception of the [Remnant] Church through 'teachings', and 'manifestations', will reach the highest flood-tide climax at the close of the age. »»

Jessie Penn-Lewis (1861-1927)

Reading her book, cases of possession turn out to be far more common than one might think, especially if one takes the word 'possession' for what it really means, namely: 'the hold of evil spirits on a human being to every conceivable degree'; for an evil spirit 'possesses' every spot it holds, even if to a very small degree, and just as a spider seeks a base before weaving its web, so the evil spirit works from that one spot to strengthen its hold on the whole human being. Small sins, sometimes unconscious, for the mind is malicious, can thus grow and overrun whole areas. The sin of pride is certainly the most cunning, and this is especially true of pious and convinced Christians. These are just as likely to become (partially) possessed by evil spirits as others because they have unconsciously created the required conditions for it, which goes along with accepting that the demonic imitations are the workings of God. It is also always accompanied by a diminished alertness regarding one's own physical and mental faculties: the reasoning mind is put aside; there is an insufficient falling back on sound doctrine and what the Bible has to tell us. Thus blind spots arise with sometimes disastrous consequences.

It comes down to discerning minds. And Jessie Penn-Lewis helps us do just that. Note that the book is intended for more mature Christians. Therefore, it is published primarily

for the benefit of pastors and pastoral workers, but it need by no means be limited to that. The publisher says in the preface:

> «« Perhaps you can imagine how I devoured the chapters in succession with rising amazement and increasing joy. Again and again it sounded in my mind: 'This is it! This is what I experienced too!' I was amazed at the fact that 'divine' experiences in the human 'mind', which result from baptism with the Holy Spirit, are still imitated in soul and body by evil spirits in exactly the same way more than a hundred years later (after their book was written) in order to gain sinful access to the children of God. Because the book describes so precisely and in such detail the imitations of the workings of God's Spirit, and to this day no other book has been published that reveals and explains these things so clearly, I cannot but express my admiration for the authors. Without this book, I would probably never have discovered the deception in my own life. »»

Ignorance

And I agree: rarely has a book impressed me as much as this one. First, because it is shocking how well-meaning Christians can fall victim to demonic inspirations, and second, because it opens up a theological field regarding the spiritual laws of being a Christian, which until now had been overgrown, a field of brambles. How is it possible, I wondered, that these truths have never been entrusted to us? Put another way, how is it possible that the knowledge about this was snowed under, because we did not hear it for the knowledge was lacking. No doubt Christendom in the early days was well aware of this, at least the Apostle Paul, so that a solid scriptural basis could be given to the views and experiences displayed by the writers. We find that basis in the New Testament. After all, the outpouring of the Holy Spirit added a new dimension to God's plan with the world, which we cannot find in this way in the Old Testament dispensation.

The main spiritual law of being a Christian is that God, who is spirit, inspires us through our spirit. Usually God does not lead us directly, but indirectly. Says the writer (p. 62): *"Many believers think the 'guidance' or 'leading' of God, to be only by a voice saying 'Do this', or 'Do that'; or by a compulsory movement or impulse, apart from the action or volition of the man."* But that is not the ordinary course of events. Following God's will is not automatic, even with Jesus, who says: *"Not what I will, but what You will."* (Mar. 14:36) If man receives a certain inspiration, whose source is often unrecognizable – for God works with a gentle hand – and that inspiration enjoys the consent of the believer (by means of his free will), then the mind then goes to work with it. Man himself must rule his mind, soul and body; God does not do that for him, or instead of him. The mind judges everything and is not judged by anyone. It thus evaluates the impulses in the body and is not a slave to them. The bottom line is that all human faculties are fully utilized and flourish under God's guidance. How different works the dominating influence of Satan! Says the author (p. 51): *"It may be said deliberately, that it is never safe in any case to feel God's presence with the physical senses, for it is almost beyond doubt a counterfeit 'presence' – a subtle snare of the enemy to gain a footing in the man."* 'Wanting' to feel God's presence as a hallmark of baptism by the Holy Spirit is often the path by which the devil first gains access to someone, engages in territory conquest, which then leads to even more expansion of territory.

Passivity

The wrong surrender to the supposed will of God, leads to an increase in 'passivity'. That is the key word: passivity. An occult medium knows that the voices will come to him properly only if he or she empties himself or herself. This is also the hallmark of

transcendental meditation. It will finally lead one to become a will-less instrument of the devil, while fully convinced one is serving God.

Noted physics professor Carlo Beenakker is quoted in "Learned and Religious" (a Dutch publication released in 2015: "Geleerd en Gelovig), a book in which physicist Cees Dekker interviews 22 scholars about the God who inspires them. In his interview, Beenakker describes the experience of God as a *"resonance",* as something that *"comes from outside"* and is *"very selective".* That is quite unbiblical, and dangerous moreover. A well-known Dutch Jesuit priest says in an interview with "Katholiek Nederland" (No. 14 Apr. 3 2015), after quoting Beenakker, that for him the first experience of God gave a feeling that a sense was being appealed to, and that therefore he calls that experience sensory and intuitive. And he continued: *"It was an immediate knowing, peculiar to the experience of God and a characteristic of intuition, quite different from the intellectual knowing that gradually arises through intellectual analysis."* What this Father says about an experience that occurs in the human 'mind', may very well be true. Indeed, a revelation of God's Spirit in the human mind results in a 'direct knowing' to the mind, whereas if pure 'soul stirring', it is not correct. Unfortunately, one usually learns the difference between soul and spirit only through experience, and often through damage and disgrace. Since he quotes Beenakker, I am afraid that this experience is not from the mind. Of course, God is also a feeling that goes from heart to heart, from our heart to God's heart and vice versa, comparable to a heart connection between family members.

God does not dwell within us as literally as if He were sitting on his throne within us. After all, we do not turn inward to worship Him there. This practice can sometimes unconsciously result from a 'baptism in the Holy Spirit' in which one becomes strongly aware of His indwelling. This can sometimes even lead to monomania (a kind of idea-fixe). The God of Heaven and Earth dwells in us by his Spirit, in the way described by Paul when saying that he carries the saints of Philippi in his heart. (Phil. 1:7)

Victory over Satan

In summary, in the words of Penn-Lewis, we can say:

> «« Ignorance, falsehood and passivity; upon these three the enemy silently builds his castles (an alternative meaning of Thyatira is Thya's castle), and unobtrusively guards and uses them. But truth pulls his strongholds to the ground. (…) It is the ignorance of our true (sinnful) condition, apart from the new life from God implanted in us, and our blind confidence of safety, without an intelligent basis for our faith, which lays us open to being deceived by Satan **through our very certainty of being free from his deception**. »» (p. 83, 86)

On how to break down castles of this kind, detailed guidelines are given in this book. It is therefore also an important therapeutic book.

This is recommended reading, but it is not easy reading, as you will have understood by now. It is an important book that stands the test of time, and therefore I am glad that I have had the opportunity to give it attention.

On the Working of the Spirit in a pure Revival

The review quotes and comments as follows:

> «« A pure revival is divine power in full operation, minus sin and Satan. It is not cold 'belief', but life, and it has to do with the spirit, not the intellect. By the latter Jessie Penn-Lewis means to say that the mind is subsidiary to the spirit. The mind is primary, not the intellect. The mind considers and deliberates what the spirit has to offer, and that's her task, which is in communication with God's Spirit. »»

The Book of Truth tells interesting things about the workings of the Holy Spirit, which I don't want to withhold from you, especially regarding the January 5, 2014 message:

My dearly beloved daughter, when the Fire of the Holy Spirit enters the soul of a person, the first response is one of tears. The second response is one of bewilderment. The third response is the realization that something wonderful – an inner understanding of the Truth of God and all that He desires – has overtaken that particular soul. Suddenly, a peace descends, as well as an acute understanding of the mystery of the Existence of God – the Love of God. All things, which are according to the Word of God, become clear.

Only those who have surrendered their will to God and who have shed all human pride and intellect and presented these things to Him are capable of receiving this Gift of the Holy Spirit. If there is but just a shred of pride in the soul, the Holy Spirit will never enter it.

Only those who truly believe that God is All-Powerful and that man is nothing and unworthy to stand before Him, can surrender their will. Only those who are willing to do all that is required of them, to do the Holy Will of God, according to His Word, can be given the Gifts to proclaim the Word, which will have any real impact.

Any man who claims to proclaim the Truth, and says he is guided by the Holy Spirit, will never boast of his own greatness. He will never draw attention to his gifts, his talents, his knowledge, his holiness or his humility. For when a man does this, in the Holy Name of God, he has not been blessed with the Spirit of Fire – the Flame that enkindles the hearts of man, so that they respond, with love, to the Word of God.

During My Time on Earth, I made it clear to all of you that he who exalts himself before Me will be cast into the wilderness. He who humbles himself before Me will be exalted.

Your Jesus

Exorcism
A Roman Catholic Tradition

Vatican City, 3rd March 2006: This week the Vatican's Head Exorcist, 74-year old Father Amorth, repeated his condemnation of the Harry Potter books. Amorth said: "You start with Harry Potter, who seems to be a friendly wizard, but you end up with the Devil. There is absolutely no doubt that the Prince of Darkness is concealed behind these books." In his opinion the young readers who delve into Harry Potter become fascinated by magic. "And from there it is but a small step to Satanism and the Devil."

20.78 – Don Gabriele Amorth

This Gabriële Amorth is no minor personage. A priest for 57 years (in 2011), he is the number-one exorcist in the Roman Catholic Church. In Rome alone there are six such exorcists. He is moreover honorary president for life of the International Association of Exorcists, an organisation he helped set up.[192] He had never studied exorcism seriously when, on 6th June 1986 he was appointed by Cardinal Ugo Poletti as assistant to Don Candido Amantini, a prominent exorcist, who taught him the tricks of the trade. One of the first rules is to assume that the patient is suffering from an ordinary physical or mental disturbance. *"In my service as exorcist I have helped tens of thousands of people,*

192) Some will wonder about Don Amorth's Marian theology and thus doubt the truth of his mission. I give him the word in an interview he gave to Father Dario Dodig in July 2002. Dodig's last question was: "Would you like to give us a piece of advice?" whereupon Amorth answered: "Mary's testament, her last words recorded in the Gospel, were spoken at the marriage feast of Cana: 'Do everything He tells You'. Our Lady always leads to Jesus. That is her main concern: that we should put the words of Jesus into practice."

but only a few hundred were true cases of [fully fledged] demonic possession.", Amorth relates. This is why every exorcist is assisted by a team of doctors and psychologists in order to keep his practice of healing – for that is what it amounts to – on the right track. Both approaches go very well hand in hand – this is called psycho-pastoral help – since a mental disturbance can accompany a form of possession. Without question there are doctors who refer people to an exorcist, though I do not know the names of any of them. The aim is not to bully the Devil but to cure the patients, to alleviate their suffering and to lead them to the true freedom of God's children. This latter assumes that it is mainly a task involving conversion and at least of a deepening of faith.

20.79 – Exorcism, an extremely specific term

The practice of exorcism has deep roots in the Catholic tradition. The word comes from the Greek 'exorcisein', with the original meaning of 'to question emphatically' or 'to oblige to swear', 'to adjure'. Jesus himself was exorcised – commanded to do something – when the High Priest insists during the proceedings against Him: *"I '**adjure**' You by the living God to tell us if You are the Christ, the Son of God."* And again, he term occurs in Acts 19:13. An exorcism is not a prayer to God, but is a command issued to the Devil in the Name of God. In modern language, to adjure is to charge or entreat someone solemnly, as if under oath, or under the penalty of a curse. In the Ritual for Exorcism of 1614, specifically designed for priests, under the subheading of 'Exorcism', the exorcist sternly commands the demon to depart: *"Exorcizo te, immundissime spiritus (…) in nomine Domini nostri Jesu Christi!"* (I exorcize you, unclean spirit in the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ). It also uses other imperatives addressed to the demon, such as 'da locum' (recede), 'exi', 'discede' (withdraw, give way, exit, depart), while the revised Rite of Exorcism, promulgated in Jan. 1999, called: "De Exorcismis et Supplicationibus Quibusdam" (of certain exorcisms and supplications), addresses supplications to God and are not exorcisms in terms of commands to a demon and therefore they are ineffective, though not entirely, as both rites have been established by the Church on the basis of which they obtain salvific graces. Father Vincent Lampert, a well know American exorcist, uses both. He told: *"I first try the first one and when it really gets tough I use the one from 1614."*

After the Second Vatican Council the term and function of an exorcism was reserved to the priestly office and only a bishop was allowed to appoint an exorcist. This meant: no exorcist no exorcism. This turned out to miss the mark. Roman Catholic theology, when referring to the practice by a non-priest, was accustomed to speak of the practice of driving out or expelling (the Devil) and the liberation from or protection against evil influences related to demonism. Nobody is immune from the Devil's traps and this was therefore a sensible approach. Because of the rather troubling reality of the devil throwing spanners in the works, the Lord's Prayer contains a prayer for driving out the Devil: *"Our Father who art in Heaven (…) forgive us our trespasses as we forgive them that trespass against us, and lead us not into temptation (by exposing us to the temptations of the Evil One), but deliver us from the Evil One.*" (Mt. 6:13)

An exorcism is effective only if it is accompanied by the proper faith setting of penance and repentance and good intentions. (Hence, *"forgive us our trespasses"* precedes the exorcism itself. Yes, *"deliver us from the Evil One"* is also an exorcism!) After an exorcism, other aspects related to the effects of our temptations come into play, and then the healing begins. The Cross of Dozulé was intended as an exorcism for the whole world. First the construction of the Cross (as an exorcism tool) and then God's restorative graces had to come into play. And as is common knowledge, the Church refused to prepare for its construction. This is why Jesus says during the eighth appearance of Dozulé: *"When this Cross is raised up on earth, I will draw everything to Me."* (June 12th 1973)

Of course, the exorcist prayer of the Lord's Prayer is a thorn in Lucifer's side. Therefore, this prayer had to be successively subverted. First 'the Evil One' had to be replaced by the neuter 'evil'. The (Dutch) Statenvertaling (1637) of the Bible has in the Lord's Prayer *"verlos ons van den boze"* (deliver us from the evil one). The King James (1611) speaks likewise of *"the Evil One"*. But in the French translation we find (the incorrect) *"du mal"* (from evil), while it should be "*du malin*" (from the Evil One). Too bad, a missed opportunity when in 2016, the Dutch adaptation of the prayer failed to do that. Or did they intentionally failed to do so? Yes, for in religious circles it is not 'bon ton' to speak of the devil as having a real presence. When praying this, we pray to be delivered from the Tempter, also working through people to assail us. We are not thereby praying for self-control, though that is a good prayer too, but that's not the case here.

In late 2016, a Flemish-Dutch episcopal commission introduced a new wording of The Lord's Prayer that had to be prayed everywhere. The word temptation was replaced by ordeal (beproeving instead of bekoring), which is a travesty. The bishops did that to us, and the Protestants went obligingly along. The Bible is full of ordeals. We are not to be delivered from them but to endure them. When my car gets a flat tire I will be tried (it's an ordeal) and then I feel the temptation to curse. Those are two different things. Temptation tries to incite to commit sin. The Roman Catechism comments: (Chap. 15:11)

> «« We are said to be led into temptation when we succumb to temptation. We are susceptible to temptation after the temptation has first brought about a change in us [from a state that was fertile ground for this purpose], after which we fall into the evil to which the Temptress [the devil] incites us. In this way, no one is tempted by God, for God is not the cause of sin for anyone, on the contrary. The Apostle James says: *"No one says in temptation, I am tempted by God. For God cannot be tempted by evil."* (James 1:13) »»

There is yet another similar prayer. This one was introduced in the Catholic Church in 1886. After the Second Vatican Council, its abolishment was first made optional and then it was done all over the board, of which the Book of Truth says in the May 7th 2012 message: *"St Michael the Archangel is the protector of the Church against Satan. Those [evil] forces among you knew this. This is why you stopped all prayers requesting his help before Me at the Holy Mass."* Its introduction in 1886 was thanks to Pope Leo XIII. One morning, during his office of thanksgiving, he was fixed by something, perhaps a vision or an inspiration. After some time the Pope stood up, very determined, and wrote down: *"Holy Archangel Michael, defend us in the struggle, be our protector against the attacks and tricks of the Devil. We humbly beg you to have God make him feel his power. And you, prince of the heavenly hosts, drive back into Hell by the Divine power Satan and the other evil spirits that go round the world spreading the destruction of souls. Amen."* There must, of course, be no question of a magic formula. (Acts 19:13-18) There is more to it. Take a look at Eph. 6:10-19, where the Apostle speaks of our spiritual armoury.

20.80 – The Protestant tradition

I was asked by a Protestant magazine in the Netherlands, under the auspices of "Christians for Israel", to give an overview of the practice of exorcism in the Roman Catholic Church, since exorcism has always had a role in that institution – although admittedly it has been pushed further into the background in the last three centuries until it scarcely existed any longer by the 19th century. Some fifty years ago it made a cautious comeback. Calvin (1509-1564) for his part failed to include the expulsion of the Devil in his doctrines and spoke of his rejection of the practice in the Roman Catholic Church, a practice which – it has to be said – contained in his time a number of un-Christian elements that had slipped in during the Middle Ages. Calvin's rejection may perhaps explain why the practice of driving out devils and the dissolution of demonic powers has

always met with fierce opposition in prominent Protestant circles, despite the fact that it is definitely a biblical given. Now the wind would seem to be changing. At the start of his mission Luther maintained no more than the minor exorcism used in the ceremony of baptism, the use of which goes back to the early third century.[193] An exception to this ecclesiastical attitude can be found in the Lutheran preacher Johann Christoph Blumhardt (1805-1880), who practised healing by prayer and worked in the Black Forest region of Germany.[194] He was deeply involved in driving out the demons from, among others, the well-known girl Gottliebin Dittus. Some regard this incident as the start of the use of this practice in Pentecostal groups and by charismatics. In 1995 there was a remarkable case in the Netherlands of a young mother, documented in the December issue of "De Heilsfontein", a Pentecostal evangelisation magazine that was always filled with stories of conversions. This unmistakeable case of the expulsion of a demon was remarkable because the occasion that led to the expulsion was originally intended as a normal pastoral job in the taking care of church members. At the start of the meeting the minister had no premonition about possession and definitely none about demonic expulsion. What happened was remarkable too because things went so quickly. After the evil spirit had been expelled the preacher gave a good piece of advice: *"The devil does not release his prey just like that. Now you must fill yourself with the things of God and occupy yourself with them!"*

20.81 – How to protect against the Occult

Because of the popularity of everything to do with the occult, either directly or indirectly, and the urge to jump in with both feet, a growing group of people have become entangled in demonism in all its forms and gradations. The rising fascination for the occult is the logical consequence of the loss of faith. We, society, have only ourselves to blame. Our standing in faith has become like so much dishwater, ready to be flushed away. We need new water and a new detergent, on offer for free - by the Blood of the Lamb.

Uri Geller

The craze seems to have started in the 1970s with the publicity circus surrounding the spoon-bending Uri Geller, sixth child of a family whose older brothers and sisters had all been removed by abortion, which he freely admits. This is not an insignificant detail, since repetition of such a horrendous act opens the door to demonic influences. Stubborn persistence in serious sin is like a permanent invitation to the Evil One to enter – which is not to say that this is always the cause leading to possession. Why someone should become possessed remains a puzzle. The Catholic Church ensures that the accusing finger is not pointed as though the possessed is always responsible for his sad condition. But things have been otherwise in the past! But that the widely increasing demonic bondage in our society cannot be seen as separate from the legally sanctioned immorality - yes, that is as plain as the nose on your face.[195] Indeed, occult bondage represents the normal state of affairs – yes, you are reading it

193) The minor exorcism, which immediately precedes baptism, is a brief ceremony, which in most cases can be considered a mere formality to break the last vestiges of demonic bondage before the moment of new life in Jesus Christ arrives for the adult convert. At the time, infant baptism also clearly involved an exorcism, but after the reform of the rites within the Roman Catholic Church, following the last Council, this formula was watered down.

194) Some of Blumhardt's books can still be purchased, such as: "Dein Glaube hat dir geholfen. Die Heilung von Kranken durch Glaubensgebet", and "Sieg über die Hölle".

correctly – that can be undone only when the social fabric is focused on God. In its simplest form this means centring life on the values given to us in the Ten Commandments. As witnessed by the writings of the early church father Tertullian (ca.160-ca.225), exorcism in the early Church was also applied to social life, thus not only to individuals who, then as now, were afflicted with idolatry and unwholesome influences. For, says Paul: *"It is not against flesh and blood that we fight, but against the authorities, against the powers, against rulers of the world, belonging to the darkness of this age, grappling against malign influences from an order higher than ours."* (Eph. 6:12)

On the back of the Saint Benedict Medal is shown "V R S N S M V - S M Q L I V B", the initials of exorcism: "Vade retro Satana! Nunquam suade mihi vana! Sunt mala quae libas. Ipse venena bibas!"

Begone Satan! Never tempt me with your vanities! What you offer me is evil. Drink the poison yourself!

As from the end of 2010 Maria Divine Mercy (MDM), which is a pseudonym for an Irish lady, announced through messages from Jesus the imminent arrival of The Warning, known also as The Inner Light, already predicted fifty years earlier to four little children of the Spanish hamlet Garabandal. In the message of Nov. 6th 2011, MDM told on account of demonic possession:

> «« Many people talk about demonic possession as if it is easy to identify. So many of my children are possessed by Satan. They do not have to be seen thrashing about for a demonic presence to be in place. Once possessed children, it is very difficult to drag yourself away. These unfortunate children will, through the cunning and manipulative infestation of the Evil One then infect other souls. And so it continues.
>
> Evil is usually presented as being good. It will be hard to discern except for this. The behaviour and deeds of an infested soul will never be humble in nature. They will never be generous of heart. They may seem generous but there will always be a catch. This catch will always be about making demands on you which do not sit comfortably.
>
> (…) Think of Satan and his evil works as an infectious disease. Take every precaution to avoid coming into contact with those who carry the disease. Should you know that you have no choice, then arm yourself with Holy Water, the Blessed Crucifix and a St Benedictine Medal. They will keep these demons at arm's length. These are the times children you must surround you and your home with blessed objects which are blessed. Many are embarrassed to be seen with such things for fear they will be laughed at. These will offer you protection in your home and are a great comfort during prayer. Remember the demon lives not just in Hell but has now firmly established his reign on earth. Prayer is the only thing that terrifies him and renders him impotent. »»

To protect against his wicked regime we not only have the Saint Benedict medal, but also the devotional scapular. The 'monastic scapular' appeared first, perhaps as early as the 7th century AD in the Order of Saint Benedict, as a large brown vestment. The 'devotional scapular' is a small item to serve as a kind of shield against the arrows of the evil one. Somewhere in the 11th century the monastic scapular evolved in the devotional

---

195) As signs of occult bondage within society, I look at the statistics on suicide, drug abuse and sales of anti-depressants – so I look out for signs that indicate despair, dull and hopeless sombreness, unspeakable, that smother all belief in a loving God.

scapular to be eventually reduced to a piece of fabric of a few inches, under the impetus of the French Revolution that was fiercely anti-Christian. Nowadays, the small devotional scapulars are worn by the laity and typically consists of two small rectangular pieces of cloth, wood or laminated paper, a few inches in size, which may bear religious images or text. These are joined by two small bands with one one piece on the chest and the other on the back. It is usually conferred by a priest with a series of pledges from who receives it. In 1883 in "Misericors Dei Filius", Pope Leo XIII declared that wearing the small devotional scapular entitled the wearer to gain the indulgences associated with the order. The Catholic Encyclopedia lists 16 small devotional scapulars approved by the Roman Church, to name a few: the White Scapular of Our Lady of Ransom (1218), the Brown Scapular of Our Lady of Mount Carmel (1250), the Red Scapular of the Passion (1846), the White Scapular of the Immaculate Heart of Mary (1877), the Scapular of St. Benedict (1882), the Scapular of the Holy Face (1885).

Now that we are standing on the threshold of a renewed persecution of anything Christian, the Book of Truth has announced the Medal of Salvation on July 18th 2013, with the following message, given by the blessed Mother, the Mother of Salvation:

> «« My Image is to be created and a Medal struck where, on one side, I am to be placed with the sun behind my head and where twelve stars woven into a crown of thorns sits on my head. On the reverse side of the Medal, I wish to depict the Sacred Heart of my Son with the Two Swords of Salvation, which are to be crossed on each side. The Swords of Salvation will have a dual purpose. The First Sword will slay the beast and I have been given the authority to do this on the Final Day. The other Sword will pierce the hearts of the most hardened sinners and will be the Sword by which their souls will be saved. All those who receive this medal must recite a prayer for the Gift of Conversion (crusade prayer 115): *"O Mother of Salvation, cover my soul with your tears of Salvation. Rid me of doubts. Lift my heart, so that I will feel the Presence of your Son. Bring me peace and solace. Pray that I will be truly converted. Help me to accept the Truth and open my heart to receive the Mercy of your Son, Jesus Christ. Amen."* »»

The Book of Truth says also, eleven days later: *"Just as holy medals offer protection from Heaven with Power from God, the mark of the beast [introduced by the Antichrist] will bring with it death – death of the soul and death by a terrible disease. Those who refuse it will have to hide and prepare."* There is also the Scapular of the Seal of the Living God (as shown here), offered on Febr. 20 2012. But beware, a form of rosary beads will be created to idolise the new, soon to be declared, union of the world's churches. The new world religion will be celebrated by the taking of holy prayer books, medals, scapulars, rosary beads, Crosses and desecrating them into becoming good luck charms. (message of Oct. 8th 2013) And on Oct. 19: *"When Jesus' Image disappears and is no longer seen and when Holy Crosses, Holy Bibles, missalettes for the Holy Mass, rosary beads, medals, scapulars and Benedictine Crosses are no longer to be found, you will know then that the reign of the beast has commenced."* And on Jan. 20 2014 the Book of Truth says:

> «« God wants to save every single person, of every single faith, as well as those who deny the Existence of Him and his Son Jesus Christ. This is why people of every age, every culture and every denomination, must receive a Medal of Salvation. Each person who is given a Medal, even if it cannot be blessed, will be given an extraordinary Gift. Soon afterwards, God will instill in them a Grace, an insight into their own helplessness and an awareness of God's Almighty Love.

(…) Do not make the mistake of rejecting this Medal, as it is for the whole world, and many miracles will be associated with it. »»

20.82 – High demand for exorcists but little supply

The lid is off the shaft, liberating many evil spirits from the abyss (Ap. 9:2), and the demand for exorcism is rising correspondingly. In 1985 Italy counted twenty Church-appointed exorcists. Now there are more than three hundred. But that is Italy. According to Gabriële Amorth, *"There is high demand for exorcists, but the bishops prefer not to appoint them. Many countries – Germany, Austria, Switzerland, Portugal and Spain – have no Catholic exorcists, and of the hundred exorcists, nominated by the bishops in France, only five believe in the Devil and practise exorcism. All the others send their clients immediately to a psychiatrist. This is a real scandal."* [196] At present in the Netherlands (in 2006) there are three appointed exorcists at work. In line with instructions issuing from the Vatican, no publicity is given to this fact because of the fear of creating a sensation. It is to be hoped that anyone applying to the diocese for an exorcist's help will be referred to one. Such is not obvious, not even in a country like Italy.[197]

Father Amadeus of the Trappist monastery in Tegelen, a man equally well known in Protestant circles, was called to his reward in 2003. One of his famous sayings was: *"I myself do not perform exorcisms: there is but one exorcist and that is Jesus."* He was known for his tolerant attitude to those who did not share his ideas, and had little trouble collaborating with Protestants – and they much appreciated him. A remarkable fact is the way in which he came to his service. In the period when Uri Geller was all the rage, he came into contact with the Dutch Catholic charismatic renewal movement.

«« It was instant recognition (writes Peter de Bruijne in his interview)[198] – for Johannes van der Staaij, the monk's lay name, had already had various exceptional God-experiences before entering the monastic life in September 1945. But it was only after meeting such people as Reverend van Dam[199] and other spiritual leaders in the charismatic movement that the latent God-given gifts he had received became truly active. Amadeus sighed: *"There are very few priests these days who know that they have received an exceptional mission and authority from God to cure people and to free them from demonic powers. And even if they do know it, they fail to use that authority. Meanwhile Satan goes around, ferociously tying people to himself and devouring them. I am terribly concerned about the weakness shown by the Church and about the ease with which exorcism is dismissed as something belonging to the past. I believe in the official office of exorcist given to us at the priestly ordination. But I also believe in the priesthood of all believers. And that means that in principle every Christian can be used in the fight against demons [but they should not use the priestly rites]."* »»

This attitude matches up with the final chapter of Mark's gospel, where Jesus states that believers can be recognised from their power to expel demons. Fear of 'the evil one' is

196) Interview with Padre Amorth in 30Giorni, 29-6-2001, by Stefano Maria Paci.
197) In Bruges, where yours truly lives, a neighborhood cop told that a lady had asked two of his colleagues to perform an exorcism on her. Apparently, she had not received enough support from her bishop. His colleagues then rather laughingly performed an exorcism, obviously unsuccessfully. Then they asked this neighborhood cop if he would be willing to do it, knowing he was a religious person. This time it met with success.
198) Interview with Father Amadeus in "Opwekking Magazine", June 2001, by Peter de Bruijne.
199) Protestant minister W.C. van Dam, who lived in the Rotterdam area, was known for his book "Demonen eruit, in Jezus' Naam!" (1974) (Demons get out, in the Name of Jesus!) – published by Kok in Kampen (ISBN 90 242 0335 X).

never of God and only enhances the devil's capability to thwart the work of God. A fearful refusal to even hear about his activity or study scriptural places about the presence of demons in and around people is a first indication of demonic bondage. With regard to the attitude shown by priests, Gabriële Amorth adds the following: *"Normally priests have very little belief in the exceptional activities of Satan. If a bishop suggests that they should perform an exorcism, they show fear, as if thinking: 'If I leave the Devil alone, he'll leave me alone too'. But that is wrong. The more we fight against Satan, the more afraid of us he will become."* [200)] And that is precisely the reason why we should see as a positive development the fact that true exorcists are showing a growing tendency to work with lay people from the charismatic movement – who are also given an active role to play. Father Rufus Berea of Bombay has set up an association for exorcists and lay people to assist in cases where an episcopal mandate is not given, an initiative that cannot be said to please the church hierarchy.

English evangelist Jessie Penn-Lewis knows how and why in our modern age the Roman Catholic clergy and Protestant pastors have so little regard for the spiritual dimension of our existence, and are even rejecting it. She published a seminal work in 1912 on the struggle between Christ's followers and his adversary, the world ruler of this age - with a final revised edition in 1928. That was written in collaboration with Evan Roberts and is called "War on the Saints". It is one of a kind. It is basically a textbook on the work of deceptive spirits among the children of God. It deals with the workings of Satan and his demons, which can have a hold on Christians for various reasons, even if they diligently seek God. If ignorant of the workings and ways of the Evil One, they are all the easier prey. This book is expressly for the end-time Christians, as the end times are marching toward a climax of an open battle between the powers of the Evil One and God's faithful. So it is an extremely important book, as this is the time in which we live! About this battle, Penn-Lewis says the following:

> «« Moses, the man who knew God face to face, and there was Christ, the Only Begotten Son of the Father, sent from God to the world of men. Each recognizing the existence of Satan and the evil spirit beings, and they each drastically dealt with them as they had penetrated into people pushing them to total subjugation, and they fought these rebels who actively opposed God. Taking a bird's eye view, from the time of Christ on throughout the early history of the Church, up to the giving of the Apocalypse, and the death of the Apostle John [to whom we owe the Book of Revelation], we see that God's power manifested itself in various degrees in the Christian community, and that the leaders [the priests] initially knew of the reality of evil spirits, and dealt with them. This resembled the Mosaic period of the old dispensation in many ways. But gradually the powers of darkness gained ground, and, with intermittent intervals and exceptions, the Church of Christ [including that of the Roman Church] sank down under their power, until the point was reached of The Church in its darkest hour, which we call the church in the Middle Ages. This course swelled until the darkest hour of its existence – in the period known as the church in the Middle Ages – when all the sins committed by God's children under deceptive workings of Satan's spirits were once again as rife as in Moses' days, when, at God's command, he decreed: *"There shall not be found with thee… one that useth divination, or that practiseth augury, or an enchanter, or a sorcerer, or a charmer, or a consulter with a familiar spirit, or a wizard, or a necromancer."* (Deut. 18:10-11). And now, at the close of the dispensation, standing on the eve of the Millennial Kingdom, Christ's Church, as God intended, will rise again and be clothed with strength; but only then after its leaders recognize – like Moses in the Old Testament community and Christ and

200) Interview with Padre Gabriële Amorth in "The Sunday Telegraph" by Gyles Brandreth on Oct. 29 2000.

his apostles in that of the New Testament – the existence of evil spirit powers of darkness, and adopt towards them and their works the same uncompromising and hostile attitude, and aggressive warfare [with the spiritual means that God has put at their disposal].

Why the Church in the twentieth century has not recognized the existence, and workings, of the evil supernatural forces **can only be attributed to its dismal condition of spiritual life and power**. Even at the present time, when the existence of evil spirits is recognised by the heathen [as a normal fact of life], it is generally looked upon by the missionary as 'superstition' and ignorance, whereas the ignorance is often on the part of the preacher, who has been blinded by the prince of the power in the air (Eph. 2:2) to the revelation of Satanic powers, which the Holy Scriptures expose in many places. »» (pp. 29-30)

20.83 – A little exorcism will never do any harm

Opinions about exorcism are divided within the Catholic Church. The 1999 manual states that no exorcism may be performed unless there is certainty that the Evil One is involved. Amorth thinks this is ridiculous: *"It is only through exorcism that the demons reveal themselves. An unneeded exorcism will never do any harm."* In one of his books he writes that in the case of some slight doubt his fellow-exorcists agree with him that mumbling a little and making a brief prayer of exorcism in Latin will, if applicable, not fail to work in the sense of obtaining more certainty, while the person for whom the prayer is said will not become unnecessarily troubled.

As Jessie Penn-Lewis points out, cases of possession are far more common than one might think, if one takes the word 'possession' for what it really means, namely, *"the*

hold of evil spirits on a human being to every conceivable degree"; for an evil spirit 'possesses' every spot it enters, even if in a very small degree; and just as a spider seeks a base before weaving its web, so the evil spirit works from that one spot to strengthen its hold on the whole human being. Small sins, sometimes unconscious (for the spirit is crafty), can thus grow and overrun whole areas. The sin of pride is certainly the most cunning, and this is certainly true of devout Christians from the thought that they cannot be deceived.[201] These are just as likely to be possessed by evil spirits in some areas as others, because they have unknowingly created the required conditions, which is accompanied by accepting the demonic imitations as being the workings of God. It is also always accompanied by a diminished alertness with regard to one's own physical and mental faculties: reasoning is increasingly cast aside; there is an insufficient falling back on sound doctrine and what the Bible has to tell us (this does require a certain amount of spiritual maturity and knowledge). Thus blind spots arise with sometimes disastrous consequences. The kind of possession in which wrong beliefs have taken hold of the mind can only be lifted if the exorcism is accompanied by getting into the mind the truth, and the will to renounce certain habits, which at the time provided access for demonic influence. In these cases pastoral counseling is indispensable.

It is only during a major exorcism, which can sometimes last for hours, that certainty grows whether a patient is being heavily possessed or not, even if only because the patient witnesses to the benevolent consequences of the ritual. Whatever may be the case, sooner or later the sneaky spirit will be obliged to reveal its true nature …and then things can get rough! Father Barrajon, member of the Legionaries of Christ, states that although there can be a prior moral conviction of heavy possession, there is no absolute rule of thumb because, he says: [202]

> «« Evil always conceals itself. It often lies and will not tell its name. Franz Rosenzweig once said that a name is not noise and smoke, as Goethe named it, but word and fire. The name of Jesus means 'God saves'. Isaac, Jacob, all these names have a special meaning. And they always say something about who the person is. When I say my name, I also say: this is me. No demon will ever want to say his own name. And when his name is expressed, he is 'ordered with great authority' (exorciso): *"Go away! Get out, in the Name of Jesus!"* »»

It is the Name of Jesus against his name. It is worth mentioning that the exorcism formulae used in the early Church are based on the very words of Jesus or Paul, those words being enriched with references to episodes taken from the life of Jesus. It is a wonderful closure and an impressive moment when, at the end, a prayer is uttered according to Isaiah 45:23: *"That is why God has raised him to such a height, given him that name*

---

201) When Joan of Arc was asked during the trial that condemned her to the stake: "Are your voices from Heaven?" (a trick question), she replied: "If not, I ask God's forgiveness and ask Him to return me to the straight path. If indeed so, I ask God to preserve me and keep me on the straight and narrow path." In "War on the Saints", Jessie Penn-Lewis says: "It is our blind confidence of safety, without an intelligent basis for our faith, which lays us open to being deceived by Satan through our very certainty of being free from his deception." (pp. 83, 86) Furthermore: "A prevailing idea among sincere believers, which is deeply embedded in their minds and lulls them into a false sense of security, is that 'honest seekers after God' will not be allowedy [by God] to be deceived by Satanic inspirations [for what they have to do and think]. This is one of Satan's lies, to lure such servants of God into a false position of safety. (...) Once lured into the trap, these devoted children of God are led by the lying spirits on the firm determination to blindly and literally obey the Scriptures [and the eccliastical doctrines]. By a false application of the letter of the written word, they have been maneuvered into positions of unbalanced truth. (2 Cor. 3:6)" (p. 48) God does not force, He suggests and the mind considers.

202) Interview Paul Badde with Father Pedro Barrajon in "Die Welt" (12-12-2005).

that is greater than any other name; so that everything in heaven and on earth and under the earth must bend the knee before the name of Jesus." (Ph. 2:9-10) Then the Prophet Isaiah says: *"Behold, all those who were incensed against You, shall be ashamed and disgraced."* (Is. 41:16)

The Pentagram, symbol of the devil

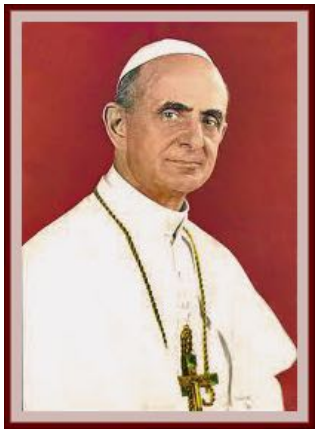
20.84 – Tortured to death during a routine job

Exorcism with the slogan "if it fails to work at least it does no harm", refers to that carried out in an organized setting and if possibly by a priest. With this in mind, Amorth distances itself from the excesses that show up in the news now and then. There are tragic cases, such as occurred in 1995 when people belonging to a so-called Pentecostal congregation beat a woman to death during an expulsion ritual. In 1998 it would appear that a Korean mother strangled her daughter in an attempt to drive out the girl's evil spirit (who had the evil spirit?), and still recently, in 2005, a friendly looking Romanian Orthodox priest tortured a nun to death on a cross in what he called a routine job. (!) Which is not to say that there are never any dramas in the Roman Catholic Church. In 1978 there was the infamous affair involving the young German woman, Anneliese Michel of Klingenberg am Main, who died during the sixty-seventh exorcism – according to the medical report: as a result of *"extreme physical strain comparable to that which concentration camp victims suffered in the Second World War"*. The official reaction was disgraceful: with a couple of quick lies and administrative tricks Bishop Josef Stangl (who was to die within twelve months) swept it all under the carpet. Both priests, Arnold Renz and Ernst Alt, who worked under episcopal mandate, were sentenced to six months in prison for having ignored the signs of exhaustion that accompanied the pneumonia and high fever, while Anneliese had lost a great deal of weight. It is precisely to prevent this kind of excesses that the "International Association of Exorcists" was established.

It should be mentioned that if someone is not in a state of grace and trying to do an exorcism, nothing good can come from that. 'Ex opere operato' means that if a priest celebrates a valid Holy Mass, it is efficacious, even if the priest is in a state of grave sin, but not so with exorcism; being in a state of grace, whether for a priest or a lay person, does matter. And therefore one needs to prepare a session of excorcism by means of

repentance and foregiveness of sins, preferably by the sacrament of confession, spend time in prayer and try to go to Holy Mass (if a Catholic). Things can get rough and therefore one should always be accompanied by someone, like a family members and find a place without risk of interruption. The exorcist decides where and when; the protocol is not left to the evil natured occupant. And, of course, it helps to have the support of a dedicated prayer group.

20.85 – The case of Anneliese Michel



Pope Paul VI

According to Dr. Felicitas D. Goodman, in her book from 1981: "The Exorcism of Anneliese Michel", it is quite possible that Anneliese died from the side effects of Tegretol prescribed by her doctor. The active component is carbamazepine, an anti-epileptic drug that is also prescribed during a manic phase. Once the treatment stops, as happened with Anneliese, an epileptic condition can arise with fever and insufficient oxygen transport to the body. The epileptic condition, of which we can speak here, is characterised by a continual series of epileptic convulsions. Anneliese showed all these symptoms. Using her exceptional expertise in altered states of consciousness (for which she established the Cuyamungue Institute in 1978), Dr. Goodman did some solid research into the facts and background of the Klingenberg affair, as it became known, and she had access to all the dossiers available. She is firmly convinced that the two priests were wrongfully sentenced on the grounds of the conviction of the judges and experts that possession is a mental disease and corresponds to no demonic reality at all. To know more about Dr. Goodman and her work, visit www.ritualbodypostures.com

Personally I believe that Anneliese was not killed by demons nor by the ritual of exorcism, but that God allowed her to die because she, safe in Christ's sufferings on the Cross, had offered herself as a sacrificial soul for Germany and that God had seen fit to graciously accept her offer of sacrifice. This is, of course, no more than a personal opinion, but by adopting it I am following an imporatnt group of interested parties. I would not be surprised if the Klingenberg case will one day be investigated again by the Church in which this sort of thing comes up for review.[203)]

20.86 – Satan's smoke has penetrated the Church

On 29th June 1972 Pope Paul VI caused a minor scandal by speaking openly about the Devil. He stated literally: *"I have the impression that the smoke of Satan has penetrated the Church of God through a few cracks."* This was in direct opposition to the spirit of optimism induced by the Second Vatican Council. The Catholic journalists regarded his statement as a regrettable return to primitive mediaeval superstitions. In their ignorance they failed to realise that it was a return much further back in history – to Genesis, when Adam and Eve were tempted by the serpent. On 15th November of the same year the Pope embroidered further on the theme during a general audience. On this occasion he addressed the crowd as follows: *"What is the Church's greatest concern today? Do not be surprised by our answer, which you could think simplistic, even shallow or unreal: one of the greatest concerns consists in defending ourselves against the evil that we call the*

203) The Klingenberg affair inspired a film: "The Exorcism of Emily Rose". The film concentrates on the question of whether a particular priest is guilty of the death of a girl possessed by demons. A sound-recording made during one of Anneliese's exorcisms and used during the trial of the two priests, who were involved, is played during the film.

Devil." After giving a further account of a magnificently orchestrated creation in which Man has been given a privileged task, the Pope stated that something else was at play in direct opposition, something he called a dark influence and an enemy, the Devil. For: *"Evil is not merely a lack of something: it is in fact a living being – spiritual, perverse and perverting. A terrible, mysterious and fearsome reality! Those who refuse to recognise his existence, or turn him into an autonomous principle, move away from the Biblical doctrine of the Church."* And further: *"We know that we are [born] of God, and yet the whole world about us lies under the sway of the wicked one."* (1 John 5:19) The Pope was very serious about it, because five years later, on October 13, 1977, he reiterated: *"The darkness of Satan has entered and spread throughout the Catholic Church even to its summit. Apostasy, the loss of the faith, is spreading throughout the world and into the highest levels within the Church."*

By way of the final task that had been set by the Council, the new rite of exorcism was presented to the world on 15th May 2001. Don Amorth saw in the new rite sufficient reason to call to mind once again the words of Paul VI about the smoke of Satan that had entered the Church.[204)] Not all that surprising, since the manner in which the rite had been put together surpasses all imagination. During the Council each commission was assisted by specialists, a practice continued after the Council ended in 1965, in order to carry out the tasks allotted by the Council. And if there was one field in which expertise was required, then it was here. But, unfortunately, such was not the case. None of the cardinals or others involved in drawing up the new rite of exorcism had ever conducted an exorcism, nor even attended one. Amorth explained that any suggestions put forward by exorcists came up against a wall of lack of understanding, of ridicule and of irritation. The Devil's tactic – that of making people believe that he does not exist – had worked superbly well. Amorth says: *"This explains why the new rite is ridiculous, an unbelievable obstacle in our work against the Devil."* It all started in 1990, when the interim rite was published and, as is customary, was distributed world-wide with a request for commentary within two years, thereby taking account of those working in the field. At the time Amorth put together a working party of eighteen exorcists, all with wide experience. They immediately praised the first chapter of the new rite in which the theological foundation was laid. This had, in fact, been missing from the 1614 rite promulgated by Pope Paul V. *"But the practical part"* (says Amorth*) showed with great clarity that the makers of the rite had no idea what they were talking about. So then we patiently provided a commentary on all the articles and sent it to the Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith. It was received in a cool and businesslike fashion. Its effect was zero comma zero."* The 1614 rite is based on Latin prayers largely going back to the eighth century that had proved their worth time and again. The new prayers were tested by Amorth and his colleagues and turned out to have no effect for the purpose for which they were created. Fortunately at the last minute a lifebelt was thrown. The then head of the "Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith" was Cardinal Joseph Ratzinger, to become Pope Benedict XVI in 2005. Together with Cardinal Jorge Medina Estevez he attempted to introduce an article (then no. 38), stating that it is permitted to continue to use the old rite. The suggestion was shot down, at which point Cardinal Medina, apparently seeing through what was at stake, added to the 84-page edition of the new rite for exorcism, that fell under his authority, a note, stating that the old rite is still in effect.

The interview, on which I base the above story, ends with the following question by the reporter Stefano Paci: *"Are you ever afraid of the Devil?"* Amorth: *"Afraid of that beast? He is the one who should be afraid, because I work in the Name of the Lord of the Universe. He is merely God's monkey."*

Ad finem

204) Interview with Padre Amorth in 30Giorni, 29-6-2001, by Stefano Maria Paci.

Was Cho Seung-Hui Possessed? (April 2007)

Written by Father Thomas J. Euteneuer, at the time President of the anti-abortion movement "Human Life International".

Seung-Hui Cho, twenty-three years old, murdered 32 defenseless people and wounded 25 others in a shooting orgy known as the "Virginia Tech massacre". This took place on April 16, 2007 at the campus of Virginia Tech University. Cho killed himself when the police breached the doors of the academic building where he had shot most of his vic-tims. Cho was a South Korean with permanent resident status in the United States and a senior university student in the English major at Virginia Tech.

There were howls of laughter when Fox News published an article raising the question of whether the devil may have influenced Cho Seung-Hui to commit the Virginia Tech massacre. Fox just reported the comments of various Christian leaders on the subject and did not intend to settle the question, but the cynicism of the godless media and society was predictable and to be expected. Since the devil doesn't exist - they say - how could anyone be so irresponsible as to try to explain away Cho's deed by recourse to the spiritual?

Well, first let me say that, as a Catholic priest, I have seen and worked with my share of possessed and obsessed individuals. It's entirely possible for someone to be at once responsible for his own acts and totally under the influence of the devil in committing them. In this case, Cho pulled the trigger, but the devil was the author of the deed. Does not Jesus call him *"a murderer from the beginning"* ? The devil is the prime mover of all evil in the world, but human beings freely cooperate with him in their evil decisions. No one gets off the hook of responsibility by blaming the devil, but we can't say that the devil is a detached observer to crimes like this.

VirginiaTech students, family and friends gather on campus for a vigil

The evil work that Cho perpetrated bears the classic marks of a possession that he cooperated in. Four clear signs of serious demonic influence were evident in his life and virtually assured that he would commit some kind of heinous crime against humanity in time. These are the devil's tactics for the destruction of body and soul: **isolate, distort, excite, plot - and then kill**.

First, it's not always clear 'how' a demon enters someone, but it is sure that 'once' a demon enters a person, that demon bends all his efforts of mind and will to overtake his host's life and make it his own. Isolation is the best technique. By all accounts, Cho was an isolated loner whose belonging to his demon was very far advanced. He had no friends to speak of, no significant associates or relationships and certainly no religious practice.

Second, with time and permission, the demon totally perverts all the person's mental processes in order to translate them into demon-think. Cho's writings leading up to the crime, and Cho's now-famous video manifesto, all exhibited signs that the process of demonic perversion of mind and values was complete. He was verbally fantasizing in front of his classmates and teachers about killing people in the most horrible ways. In the end he even blasphemously claimed to be dying like Jesus Christ for the sins of others: this is perverse thinking in the extreme.

Third, a crime of this immensity cannot be accomplished without someone's total emotional commitment. After reprogramming a person's thought patterns, the demon excites his passions to do what he wants. Others have very credibly explained how Cho's pathetic video images, imitating the Korean flick "Old Boy" (a revenge story), were evidence of his heightened emotions spurred by violent images. He even ranted in imitation of the Columbine High School killers Harris and Klebold [who killed thirteen] evidently in solidarity for the deed he was about to commit. In other words, it's very difficult to sustain such an emotional intensity, about the evil he planned and carried out, without some direct force multiplier. Graphic images provided it.

Cho Seung-Hui

Finally, he plotted like all demons, from Satan to the perpetrators of the World Trade Center attacks: He bought guns and ammo, he planned the date and times and places of the murders, and he even went regularly at night to work out at the campus gym in order to look more closely at the particulars of the scene, which all fits the characteristics of a mass murderer.

The devil must have been very happy to witness his prey blast his brains out after perpetrating the bloody murders of thirty two innocents. That is the ultimate victory for the devil.

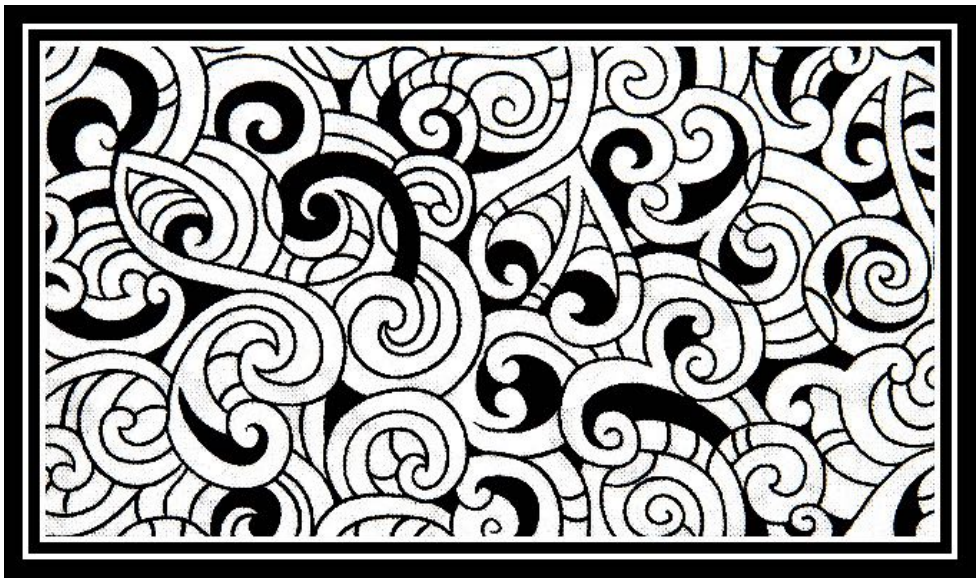
As sad as the physical deaths of innocent people are, perhaps the saddest element of the story is the likely loss of Cho Seung-Hui's immortal soul by this demonic action. The rabbis used to say that the angels weep at the loss of a soul that God created to share in his eternal blessedness; I am sure the angels are weeping now. Let us all commend the innocent victims of this crime, their families and the possessed perpetrator to the Mercy of God and then recommit ourselves to proclaiming Christ and his victory over so that none of God's children will ever be lost.

In Christ,

Rev. Thomas J. Euteneuer

REV. THOMAS J. EUTENEUER
HLI PRESIDENT

The Question of Good and Evil



Maori design fabric

21.87 – A depth psychological approach

Carl Jung (1875-1961) pioneered the exploration of the subconscious mind. He had a keen interest in religion. His father was a pastor in the Swiss Reformed Church and there were six pastors in his mother's family. Yet Jung could not subscribe to the faith of his relatives and became an admirer of Schopenhauer. He exclaims in his book "Memories, Dreams, Reflections" (pp. 76-79): *"Here at last was a philosopher who had the courage to see that all was not for the best in the fundaments of the universe."* Schopenhauer abhorred Christianity and, like Jung, borrowed much from Hinduism and Buddhism. Jung's strange views on God's nature are revealed in his writings: "Christ, a Symbol of the Self" and "Answer to Job".[205)]

Though I clearly disagree with Jung, he says things with which I cannot help but agree, as in his answer to the second homily of Hexaemeron Basil (a Church Father) in "Christ, a Symbol of the Self":

> «« The perfectly natural fact that when you say 'high' you immediately postulate 'low' is here twisted into a causal relationship and reduced to absurdity, since it is sufficiently obvious that darkness produces no light and light produces no darkness. The idea of good and evil, however, is the premise for any moral judgment. They are logically equivalent pair of opposites and, as such, the sine qua non of all acts of cognition. From the empirical standpoint we cannot say more than this. And from this standpoint we would have to assert that good and evil, being coexistent halves of a moral judgment, do not derive from one another but are always there together. Evil, like good, belongs to the category of human values, and we are the authors of moral value judgments, but only to a limited degree are we authors of the facts submitted to our moral judgment. These facts

205) Coll. Works: Aion, 9 ii: §79-98, 11: §561, §579-608, §640.

> are called by one person good and another evil. Only in capital cases is there anything like a consensus generalis. (…) Man is first and foremost the author merely of judgments; in relation to the facts judged, his responsibility is not so easy to determine. In order to do this, we would have to give a clear definition of the extent of his free will. The psychiatrist knows what a desperately difficult task this is. (…) If the devil fell away from God of his own free will, this proves firstly that evil was in the world before man. »»

I would like to clarify that in manner of semantics one has to say: God 'is' Love and this Love is to be considered good. Love and hatred are properties, good and evil are qualities. So, instead of saying that someone has a mixture of good and evil it would be more precise to say that someone has a mixture of character traits that are oriented towards good and evil.

21.88 – To what extent does man have a Free Will?

The discussion on the free will – to want something and to be able to do so – and the grace that incited to do the 'right thing', reached new heights during the Reformation period. It was actually an extension of the discussion already held in the time of Augustine (354-430). Cornelius Jansenius (1585-1638) delved into this question, a life's work. He was a bishop in Belgian Flandres, born in Hulst (the Dutch part of Flandres). He wrote a critical study on Augustine of Hippo in Latin in which he discussed his ideas about God's grace, predestination and free will. In his work of 1150 pages,[206] published in 1640, Jansenius voiced, in addition to praise, also criticism towards Augustine, which he meant to do from a spirit of objectivity and in loyalty to the Church of Rome. Jansenius has read Augustine's work on grace thirty times. And indeed, his purpose does not seem to have been any different from that of Augustine, to find ways for the suppression of the corrupt human nature and the advancing of God's efficacious grace. His evaluation encountered fierce resistance under the circumstances of the time and therefore the results of the investigation into Jansenius' work was decided a priori.[207] The five heretical propositions, that were later extracted from Jansenius' work, have been condemned by Pope Innocent X because they promoted moral rigorism and a fatalistic attitude of life. However, the heretical statements were an incorrect representation of the material! At that time, people preferred to disavow Jansenius rather than Augustine, which can be traced back to the strict interpretation of Augustinism by Molinism (a Jesuit movement). Molinism is the doctrine that subordinates the action of grace to the human will. Louis Molina (1535-1600) declared that man is the first instigator and chief master of his own salvation. If true, it would be senseless to pray for the conversion of a reprobrate sinner. Hence, Molinism, was condemned both in Spain and later also by Rome. And thus the proclamation of the Papal Bull was, upon the scheming of the Jesuits, suspended.[208]

According to Augustine our will derives neither from our reasonable insight, as Descartes, a contemporary of Jansenius, proposed, nor from the 'absolute' freedom to

206) "Augustinus: seu S. Augustini de humanae naturae sanitate, aegritudine, medicina adversus Pelagianos et Massilienses (on Pelagianism, on original sin, on divine grace)" by Bisschop Cornelius Jansenius - Jacobus Zegers, Leuven # 1640.

choose for the good or to reject it, as the heretical Pelagius believed. The mode, says Jansenisus in Vol. 3:8:6, of conciliating Divine Grace with free will is so difficult to be discerned, according to Augustine, that when the liberty of the will is defended, the Grace of God seems to be denied. And when the Grace of God is asserted, the liberty of the will may be thought to be taken away, and that may explain why Augustine never pronounced a curse against Pelagius (both born in the same year), who excluded the will from an instrumental operation with the Grace of God. Hence, to ensure that the liberty of the will continues to operate under Grace, Augustin declared that both can very well conspire in one.

Augustine could have phrased the matter slightly different in certain respects. He could have said that our will is strongly determined by the inclination towards sin of our decayed nature, but at the same time by divine grace of the all-seeing and merciful God who, regardless of one's prior sense of sin, guarantees the essential and subtle balance that prevails at that particular time in the dispositions of a human being, which are unique for everyone, whereby he regains his freedom of action, but who, because of that restored freedom – and as far as freedom goes – is also bound to divine justice! Slave to sin, man can only be freed by divine grace. Through other people's sacrifices and prayer, a person who had stubbornly turned away from God and was deleted from the Book of Life (doctrine of predestination), can regain the grace for the required balance, again and again and undeservedly, which allows him to turn back to God at every opportunity – if that person desires so and for as long as he lives. Yet according to the 'anima naturaliter Christiana' a man is still able do good, such as the mother who nurses her child and does so without a special act of God's grace (a general act, yes); the wayward person is not yet completely depraved. Nonetheless, to do 'some' good by listening to the instinctive condition, does not show that a man does intentionally good or could be able to live even partially as a child of God. Matthew 7:11 connects to this: *"If you then, being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father who is in Heaven give good things to those who ask Him!"*

There are kinds of spiders that feed their many young. But soon it reveals itself that the mother can no longer keep up with 100-fold gluttony of her offspring, and then they start to devour Mom. Is that immoral? That's besides the point, because neither the mother

---

207) In the study of Jansenius's work and the ecclesiastical condemnation of it, the groundbreaking research of the Belgian Friar Minor Lucien Ceyssens cannot be overlooked. He published a lot on this issue after the Second World War and especially after his retirement in 1963. Of his 400 publications the following introductory text is highly recommended: "Diepere Gronden van het Jansenisme" (Deeper Grounds of Jansenis), which appeared in the Journal of Theology of the University of Nijmegen (1966, no. 6). A useful text is the "In memoriam Lucien Ceyssens (1902-2001)" by Professor Mathijs Lamberigts (in: Ephemerides theologicae Lovanienses: commentarii de re theologica et canonica, nr 77 pp. 537-540). Lamberigts headed at the time the "Center for the Study of Augustine, Augustinism and Jansenism" at the Catholic University of Leuven. In the 'in memoriam' Lamberigts writes: "Ceyssens protested for a lifetime against the fact that deeply motivated believers, headed by Jansenius, were labeled 'heretics' because they thought that being a Christian and living a Christian life was serious business. He has repeatedly shown that personal profit, petty human action and flattery were the actual motivations of the so-called orthodox figures of the Church." NB: Wikipedia is not yet a good source of information on this issue (Dec 2019).

208) "The 50 propositions of Louis de Molina were condemned by Pope Paul V in 1605, immediately after his promotion to S. Peters Chair – and the Bull was prepared and ready to thunder forth, but that which hindred it was the quarrel of Venice [a confrontation between the Papal Curia and the Republic of Venice]; from whence the Jesuits being driven, [so that they] prayed his Holines not to publish that Bull, which would quite overwhelme them." From: "The True Idea of Jansenism, both Historick and Dogmatick" by Theophilus Gale - London # 1669 (p. 29).

nor her offspring has a choice. They just listen to their instinctual condition (for the benefit of the conservation of their species). It is the same with a mother who takes care of her child. Unlike the spider, she does have a choice not to do so, but to act accordingly a heavy barrier must be overcome, which, if surmounted, is the expression of a corrupt mind. After all, the instinctual condition of taking care of her child is intrinsically good. Overcoming that instinct makes her a wrongdoer, through an act (or omission) to which she will have been prompted to by her evil genius, the devil. On the other hand, in order to overcome our evil inclinations, we need the exhortations of God, which is called grace, for we cannot do this on our own effort, as the Apostle Paul aptly says: *"For I know that in me – that is, in my flesh – nothing good dwells, for to will is present with me, but how to perform what is good I do not find. For the good that I will to do, I do not do, but the evil I will not to do, that I practice."* And elsewhere: *"We have all turned aside. Together we have become unprofitable. There is none who does [intentionally] good, no, not one."* (Rom 7:18-19, 3:12) From this it follows that all intentional good that man does, that it happens under the prompting of God's Spirit, and that in the absence of that grace, as in Hell, his condition will have become irrevocable.

It has been well said, in a comparison of the three contemporaries in the dispute, that *"Augustine regards man in his natural state as dead, Pelagius as sound and well, and Johannes Cassian - the founder of Western monachism - as sick."* Man is subject to 'sin' for subject to the drawing powers of the subconscious, which are stronger than anyone is likely to recognise. At the same time man is subject to the riches of God's grace, of a God who wills no one to get lost.

21.89 – Does God create Evil?

The highly acclaimed, but also despised, anchoret Evagrius Ponticus (343-399) has given important thoughts on the nature of evil. He professed the absolute ontological priority of good, saying that God is essentially good and incapable of anything opposite. By contrast, each rational nature is 'susceptible to the contrary' in derogation of its original created condition of being good. This susceptibility means that a person, by his own free will, can aspire to whether to become an angel or a demon. Evagrius furthermore thaught: [209)]

> «« There was a time when evil did not exist, and the time will come when it will exist no more. However, there was never a time when virtue did not exist and there will be no time when it will no longer be. For evil is ontologically of a secondary nature. It arises only through the perversion of something that was good in itself, and it persists as long as the perversion continues. »»

How to reconcile these statements with the infamous text of Isaiah 45:7?: *"I (God) form the light and create darkness, I make peace and create calamity."* Jung's approach concerning the mystery of good and evil gives a possible key to the interpretation of this verse. In different words, just like the shadow comes into being where light falls, God creates calamity as the counterpart of peace. So it is permitted to interpret the text as follows: "I create the light that causes darkness – whenever it falls on an object that is no source of light by itself. I create peace that brings evil whenever the receiver is no bringer of peace." In a certain sense God creates light and darkness, the good and the evil, but in such a way that God creates the darkness and the lack of peace, the hate and the lie, not as separate entities but as the logical conclusion, be it a perversion, of all

209) "Les six centuries des 'Kephalaia Gnostic' d'Évagre le Pontique - édition critique de la version syriaque commune et édition d'une nouvelle version syriaque, intégrale, avec une double traduction française" by Antoine Guillaumont, in "Patrologia Orientalis" nr. 28, fasc. 1, pp. 1-263 – Firmin-Didot, Paris # 1958 (pp. 39-40).

which is in the richness of love and which is true. Of course, God could have created a world without a shadow, but that world would not have had the opportunity and the tremendous grace of a free will.

From this follows an interesting thought. Because the Divine Trinity always chooses the good and the perfect, the individuals of the Trinity are always of one mind and will never choose the evil. God's freedom is therefore limited, so limited that we may wonder whether God is 'free'. God's freedom is a purely theoretical concept. For myself, I always have the freedom to throw myself down from the platform in front of the on-coming train, but never will. In my case, that freedom is also a purely theoretical concept and so absurd that no one with his brains in the right place will consider this freedom a great asset. Freedom of religion, freedom of speech, and those kind of things, yes indeed.

And it is out of free will that Adam and Eve have transgressed the commandment not to eat from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. And because Paradise is a place without shadow, except for that one tree in the middle, they were banished to the earth and ever since humanity lives under the shadow of their Anointing. (Lam. 4:20) As the shadow represents a secondary nature, so evil represents the secondary nature of the good, and shows its face only through the perversion of the intrinsicly good and as long as that perversion continues, as Evagrius of Ponticus taught us.

In his public letter of Dec. 2, 2006, addressed to the Catholic physicians worldwide, José María Simón, President of the World Federation of Catholic Medical Associations, the FIAMC, wrote the following section that sheds light on the complexity of the problem:

> «« God is the Creator of the Universe and of man. And, as some political constitutions say, God made man free, free to choose the truth and good, but also free to choose evil. Experience tells us that good and evil are entwined in countless shades inside our health-care structures. If evil exists, confusion and error also exist, both blameworthy and blameless error - and we must fight against both! Moreover, it is possible that some people are particularly determined to spread the confusion. It appears that evil can establish real 'sin structures', places, establishments or laws, which do not serve man. »»

21.90 – An abysmal evil …

An ever returning theme in Gnosticism is the concept of dualism, also to be found in the teachings of Manes and the Cathars. With many variations in kind it is professed that Good and Evil are opposites that are inextricable bound up with each other, in such a way that evil may be called evil as a type, but this does not imply that it is evil in the moral sense of the word. And so, according to the followers of this baneful philosophy, it is never allowed to apply a moral judgement on the acts committed by someone else, because the other person is free to entertain his own moral code, and who am I, or who is the Church, to call something evil? The androgynous Man of the future would merge the two (the good and evil / the masculine and feminine) in one being in order to balance them with each other, because – the reasoning goes on – the masculine and feminine, separate from each other, always clash. The two-headed phoenix is the prototype of an androgenic human, for, according to the 'Secret (Gnostic) Teachings', there will come a time when the human body will have two spines, which serve to keep the body in vibrational equilibrium.[210)] If, in these teachings, the woman is called evil, this should not be seen in the absolute sense but only categorical. Therefore many prefer to replace good and evil by neutral terms like yin and yang, but that does not take the sting out!

That this approach is profoundly evil follows from the fact that everyone, as from birth, has civil decency through the innate dictation of the Ten Commandments. These have a

solid foundation in human nature itself. (Rom. 2:14-15) Those commandments are not beyond reach, for *"they are very near in our mouth and in our heart."* (Deut. 30:11-14) Brandon Smith wrote an interesting article on the nature of good and evil in an article on the ghastly perversions and Satanism, committed by the US ruling class:[211)]

> «« The concepts of good and evil, moral and immoral, are present in us from birth and are mostly the same regardless of where we are born, what time in history we are born and to what culture we are born. Good and evil are shared subjective experiences [and in this way acquire an objective value]. It is this observable psychological fact, among others, that leads me to believe in the idea of a creative design, of a [creator] god. »»

Although there is broadly moral awareness, this does not mean that its elaboration is unambiguous. We may even say that where the mind is wrapped in a thick cloak of ignorance, it is impossible for a righteous will or good morals to persist in society. Nonetheless there is a general moral. That is called 'conscience'. The Apostle Paul says about the natural man: *"By the things they do, they show the work of the law written in their hearts; their conscience also bearing witness, because between themselves their thoughts accusing or else excusing them."* (Rom. 2:15) The Apostle also speaks of *"hypocritical liars, having their own conscience seared with a hot iron."* (1 Tim. 4:2) In the past, a hot iron was used to close a wound. Not exactly gentle. The accompanying pain requires a great victory over oneself. Anyone doing this to himself is therefore inexcusable.

Without the slightest remorse these seared ones can do the most perverted and horrible things that would make the ordinary person throw up if he ever hears of it. Not that ordinary people live in such an exemplary way, but their built-in decency sets limits. That explains why evil can rule only through falsehood and hypocrisy. That explains why corrupt governments constantly insist on their sympathy and compassion for the unfortunate victims of yet another disaster when in reality, to them, a human life counts less than a paper tissue. Their misdeeds are always hidden or wrapped in the 'noble motif', always the noble motive because otherwise it would not work. Through this game the boundaries of decency are stretched further and further, and thus under a corrupt government, as time goes on, the general mores sli further and further away.

21.91 – Justice and Mercy are inseperable

If God punishes, as happens in the catharsis of the Babylonian exile or the Book of Revelation by St John, it is an act of his Mercy designed to bring the people to repentance. *"But this is not recognised as such. People believe that the rightiousness takes revenge because the chastisement appears in the garment of righteousness."* [212)] See in this regard the message of 24th of August 1994 to J.N.S.R., where Jesus says:

> «« I am the Creator and I do not punish. I do not like violence. God does not correct the faulty using the same fault he has committed for, in his Mercy, God

---

210) From "The Secret Teachings of all Ages" by Manly Palmer Hall # 1969. Manly Hall was a high ranking Mason. He died on August 7, 1990. In his obituary that appeared in the official journal of the Scottish Rite 33rd Degree Council in the United States, then called The Scottish Rite Journal, they praised him as "the illustrious Manly P. Hall (...) often called Masonry's Greatest Philosopher".

211) "Understanding Evil: from Globalism to Pizzagate" by Brandon Smith.

212) The word of one of the greatest expiatory souls of France for the time of the general conversion, sister Marie des Vallées from Coutances, Normandie, France (1590-1656). Together with St Jean Eudes (1601-1680) she put forward the two devotions to the Holy Heart of Mary and the Holy Heart of Jesus. According to Marie des Vallées, the Holy Virgin was so full of, so animated by the Divine Will, that she encompassed his Spirit, his Soul, his Heart.

> replaces anger by his Love, and thus the correction lies in this gesture of Love, which is to restore the fault, like the plant that needs a grower to assist it so that it can raise itself on high. »»

Or again, the message to Marie-Julie Jahenny on the 10th July and 5th August 1879:

> «« Never will there be peace, union, charity or happiness as long as my Justice has not come down to earth. Everything is despised everywhere: my Love, my Goodness, my Cross, my Tabernacle. (…) Once I have sharpened the edge of my golden scythe I will harvest swiftly and promptly. And here is the reason: as soon as I have commenced the harvest, the earth will find itself in the swirl of my Justice and in the peace of my Mercy. »» [213)]

The general idea of God's reward and punishment, as if He were a brutish ruler, is distorted and effectively concords with the Greek notion that good ensues from the resolution of a struggle between two opposing forces. The Oriental Yin-Yang symbol represents a similar view and there is truth in it. I would not deny that nature knows inseparable and complementary processes like the biological metabolism of which the one is anabolic (constituent) and the other catabolic (decomposing), reason why the creation account starts with the darkness – when things needed to be built up again. Yet I cannot endorse a philosophy that hallows destructiveness as a common good and sees God as the creator of evil. The devil may be evil but this was different in the beginning. Of course God allowed him (or 'created' for him the 'possibility') to do so. Since we ourselves are part of the chaotic sufferings and contradictions, present outside and inside us, it is our fate to have a distorted perception of our environment. What is considered good for the one might be evil for the other. In this untruthful manner we perceive a god of good and evil. We are hopelessly stuck with it.

Because God is good, and this is undeniably true, He cannot tolerate that evil exceeds a certain measure when things would become irremediable wrong. Then God is forced to take corrective action, and that can be awfully hard. A good example of the divine wrath is found in Psalm 2 where the Son, inflamed with anger, crushes the great of this world with a sceptre of iron who had taken counsel against Him. This representation seems to fit a 'God of Vengeance'. We could ask: what exactly is the nature of his vengeance? Via the ministry of St Marguerite Marie Alacoque (1647-1690) we know that God wants to triumph over the great of this world by his adorable Heart. And yet, between these two, his vengeance and his adorable Heart, exists no contradiction. Just listen what God our Father has to say to his messenger Agnès-Marie, a simple mother in France (message of 22-8-2000):

> «« Do not argue amongst yourselves whether you have arrived at an age of Justice or one of Mercy, because in truth Justice and Mercy cannot be separated from each other. To seek the one without the other is to betray Truth. Justice without Mercy would contradict the very nature of the Father who is Love, whereas Mercy without Justice would make you believe that you may act as you wish to, because 'God is good'. Yes, I am *"Good and Merciful, slow to anger and full of Love and that is why the Law is immovable for the purpose of a saintly life."* »»

213) "Les prophéties de La Fraudais, de Marie-Julie Jahenny" (the prophecies of the woman of Faudrais), by Marie-Julie Jahenny", by Pierre Roberdel – Éd. Résiac, Montsûrs # 1974.

God far away …and yet Nearby

The Creation, by Yitzhak Ben Yehuda

In the Bible, God is the total abstraction, the totally other, a mysterious unapproachable God. At the same time, He is also the utterly near, the approachable: 'He who dwells amongst us.' Creation is enclosed by three walls, Jewish tradition teaches, just like the very first letter in the creation account, the beth (ב), so that we are not permitted to know for certain what was before creation, nor what is above it (Heaven), nor below it (Hell).[214] ***The beth also refers to paradise, the 'Beth Eden' of Genesis 3:24, a home that has become an enclosed space ever since the Fall. Paradise had peepholes, so to speak, through which to peer at the other side. Even that is withheld from us! Only what is in front of us (Hebrew reads from right to left) or has ever been before it - in what is called history, we may observe. Since we do not know the other three directions, we must appropriate it by faith. The righteous person lives by faith! That is why the first letter is a beth and not an aleph (א), our 'a', because aleph designates God, the creator and master of All. Aleph also encompasses that duality, for it consists of a curl above and a curl below, connected by a line. The upper curl would indicate God's hidden and infinite attributes, and below it indicates the revelation of his being. It is that same paradox in our experience with Yahweh, who is at once hidden and comprehensible, distant and yet near.***

22.92 – Forgive them for they know not what they do!

Jesus' first crossword was: *"Forgive them for they know not what they do."* That was not just for his executioners. To many it may be a fool's errand, but there is deep wisdom in it nonetheless. Why that forgiveness was for us and not for Lucifer? Answer: because he 'knew'. The angel of light saw through all the consequences of his rebellion. Therefore, judgment came immediately and was final. Lucifer had a will to turn against God. Our will has this same freedom, but thanks to our not-knowing (Ex. 33:18-23), it can be considered a gift from above because our ignorance gives reprieve. The *"no-one can see*

214) Genesis Rabbah 1:10.

My face (panim)" (verse 23) means 'here on earth'.[215] Only Jesus could see the Father in this earthly abode. (John 6:46) Only He knew. But then, He was without sin. Our unknowing provides diminished accountability. Luke 12:48: *"He who did not know, yet committed things deserving punishment, will be punished lightly."* We can be glad for this 'reserve' called earth, which removes from us the avenging arm of heavenly justice! The King James translation puts it beautifully: *"For now we perceive through a glass, darkly."* (1 Cor. 13:12) Finally, after a life of grace upon grace, we bid farewell to this 'reserve' and judgment follows. Only across the threshold of death will everything have become transparent and *"shall I know even as also I am known."* (again 1 Cor. 13:12) The cry 'see first and then believe' overlooks the essence of our existence. The irritating unknowing, make no mistake, has a function. It will not be until the world has come at the threshold of the Reign of Peace that not-knowing will be largely removed, forcing each and everyone to make a choice: for or against God, for or against Lucifer, in fact for or against the Reign of Peace.

Man has Free Choice, but not Sovereignty

Man-made history is not history's only dimension. The pathos and judgment of God transcend the human dimension. Great conquerors are seen as mere tools of his mysterious Will... Man has choice, but not sovereignty. History is not a meaningless conglomeration of neutral facts, but a drama unfolding the relationship between God and Man. The drama is staged in time and encompasses the wide arena of human affairs. A battle is raging: man in his presumption undertakes to fashion history in disregard and defiance of God. The prophets witness the misery that men endure as well as Man's wickedness – that God endures and even tolerates [unbearable burden except for God]. God is wrestling with Man and history appears to be the stage where God is defied, where his judgment is enacted, and where his kingship is to be established.

"The Prophets" by Abraham Joshua Heschel (ch. 10)

Not-knowing has a function. The argument holds that only in a condition of lack of knowledge may our love for Truth be revealed. We start our earthly toil in a heap of unknowing in order to permit us to get the great experience of the true meaning of Love and love for Truth, which involves a certain amount of suffering. That voyage of discovery is our main purpose in life. The angels knew but did not 'learn', which explains the insurrection in Heavens and the immediate punishment. And thus not-knowing should be considered as a true opportunity and a blessed occasion and is to a certain extent preferable to knowing. (Gen. 2:17, 22:12; Mt. 1:19) At present, the angels are 'learning' by watching us and thus our lesson is also theirs.

In some cases we possess the same kind of knowledge Lucifer had. Take for instance a train that will be passing by. If I throw myself in front of that train, I can 'prophesy' what the consequence will be (regarding the physical aspect). Then the judgment of that train colliding with my body is immediate and final. In summary, it is thanks to a God-given not-knowing that we are granted to lead a life of doing wrong, again and again, where our intention is to do right. But alas, it is not that simple. Doesn't Paul say in the letter to Romans (7:18): *"For I realize that in me, in my own nature, good does not reign. I want the good, but I cannot do the good."* Where is free will?[216]

215) Prior to Exodus 33:18-23, Moses sees Yahweh face to face (verse 11: panim el panim), but he does not see his glory then, otherwise the discussion from verse 12 onward would not have followed. In Genesis 32:31, Archfather Jacob also had that kind of vision. The Prophet Isaiah, on the other hand, did see God's glory, but his sin and guilt had to be covered before that. (Is. 6:5-7)

From earliest beginnings, the problem of 'free will' or decision-making power has been related to the question of accountability, which has become an essential element in our Western system of justice. In the intention of the heart (Heb. Kavanah) free will is enclosed. To go to action lies on a different level. Most thinkers on the problem were trying to show that we humans have control over our decisions, that our actions 'depend on us', and that they are not pre-determined by fate, by arbitrary gods, by logical necessity, or by a natural determinism. Augustine had a more subtle way to approach the problem and stated that our will derives neither from our reasonable insight, nor from the 'absolute' freedom to choose for the good or to reject it. Almost everything written about free will to date, has been a debate about the precise meaning of concepts like causality, necessity, and other kinds of determinism. The standard argument against free will is that it cannot possibly be reconciled with either randomness or determinism, which brings to the foreground the notion of 'appetite'. The will – in our concept of free will – can be considered as an appetite, that is an incitement from the heart (something that intimately belongs to the individual) by which people are inclined toward something, whether by intellectual capacity or by nature (nature might express hunger and things like that). This is the approach of Thomas Aquinas. In humans it is mostly a combination of the two. By means of the intrinsic appetite, we seek and desire things; we strive to unite ourselves in various ways with them. These appetites are contingent on some kind of awareness, instinctively or not, that needs to be addressed. It is normative to which appetites are given priority and how.

Correlative to free will is freedom of speech. A government can never eliminate it completely, because human nature is such that we inevitably form opinions about things and want to express them. However, people can be dominated to varying degrees. Dominance is an unspeakable evil that seeks to nullify the gift of free will. (Book of Truth: 2 Oct. 2013).

Although we are the initiator of our choices, we cannot conclude from this that in those choices there is merit, as if free will is absolute. Strictly speaking, man has no merit in what he does or chooses. Any 'merit' is subsidiary to the grace that precedes it, allowing us to participate in God's work of creation, which is wonderfully described in the Catechism of the Catholic Church from 1997, in the chapter dealing with merit:

> «« Since the initiative belongs to God in the order of grace, no one can merit the initial grace of forgiveness and justification, at the beginning of conversion. Moved by the Holy Spirit and by charity, we can then merit for ourselves and for others the graces needed for our sanctification, for the increase of grace and charity, and for the attainment of eternal life. Even temporal goods like health and friendship can be merited in accordance with God's wisdom. These graces and goods are the object of Christian prayer. Prayer attends to the grace we need for meritorious actions. »» (nr 2010)

---

216) There is also free will without a moral connotation of, say, a dog that decides to lie down to the left instead of the right side of the fireplace, or of someone who prefers to wear gray rather than black pants. Here a different kind of free will is on stage.

22.93 – The Unique Essence of a Human Being

How do we differ from animals in that respect? Of many spider varieties the females cannibalize their males after copulation. Big females eat their puny partners simply because they are hungry and because they can. Is it free will? No. Because they are not free nót to do so if the occasion arises. Take the hypothetical case that such a thing occurs to a human being, not that she eats her partner, but kills him upon discovery of adultery. Then her defense might be that because of the circumstances she could not do otherwise; that it was a 'crime of passion'. Yet there is a big difference. For that spider knows no doubts and will have no remorse afterwards. Man, however, can have misgivings and still do the wrong thing, and can also regret it afterwards, even if he was unable to do differently. This is why the 'intention of an act' and the capacity to act play an important role in a court of justice, which gives an act a moral value, which decides the measure why such a thing was intrinsically good or evil. (Luke 20:47)

Seen like this, the text *"I do what I do and don't ask why"* is an ugly denial of our uniqueness.[217] Man must come to a certain degree of introspection to do justice to his capacity for self-consciousness. Woe to him who does not care! (Mt 12:36) How often unbridled fantasies lurk, and therein may lie false intentions. (Mt 5:28) In the life of Francis Romana,[218] we read of a 4-hour vision of Hell in 1414: *"God wanted to show me some ladies I had known in Roman society. For what offenses were they condemned (to eternal damnation)? Among other things, for culpable transgressions, not always executed."*[219] The film industry has managed to exploit this well; it has elevated unrestrained fantasies to true art. Especially after TV entered living rooms, moral perversity rose to great heights. After all, the fantasy and the act are not separate. Man not only thinks, but is also able to weigh against each other what lives inside him. It must be said: like an animal, even the thoughtless man can be 'good'. But surely that is a sad matter that falls short of his calling to draw near to God!

On the uniqueness of our humanity, the leading post-war Dutch psychiatrist, Herman van Praag, has said interesting things, speaking from his Jewish background:[220]

> «« *Q:* Religion is often mentioned in the same breath as morality. That chimpanzees possess some degree of morality would prove that our morality has

---

217) The most simple organisms have simple reflexes, reacting directly to a stimulus from the physical environment. A more evolved organism is capable of processing stimuli and directing its behaviour in a deterministic fashion, not only in terms of the medium it inhabits, but also of memorized information. But this is not self-conscious as human beings are, who may or may not adapt to the Model of behaviour (the Ten Commandments) being offered to him in a non-compulsory fashion. The task of a human being is to develop himself simultaneously in three ways: in the relationship to his fellow beings, in his relationship to God, and in the relationship to himself, through the ennoblement of his soul, which is called to holiness (Hebr. 'kedusha')

218) St. Francisca Romana (1384-1440) was a foundress of the Oblates of St. Benedict. She was a scion of the noble family De Bussi. She was known for her many miracles, mystical gifts and expressions of charity. She is the patroness of the city of Rome. Because she had much contact with her guardian angel, she was proclaimed the patron saint of motorists by Pope Pius XI (1922-39). She is buried in the Francesca Romana Church, next to the Forum Romanum. A consecration of vehicles takes place here every year on March 9.

219) In Jewish ethics God would nót condemn sinful desires or appetites that are not put into action, which completely contradicts Christian teaching. See: "What Judaism teaches about lust" by Ravi Eis, in the influential "First Things" (issue Apr. 4, 2023).

220) "God, Religie en ons brein – in gesprek met psychiater Herman M. van Praag (God, Religion and our Brain – a conversation with psychiatrist Van Praag) by Tjerk de Reus - Kok Publishers, Kampen # 2011 (p. 162).

grown evolutionarily. There is a line from morality in animals to morality in us humans.

Van Praag: I see mostly differences here. Sure, there are no doubt moral drives in certain types of apes, but there is a deep gulf between human morality and the morality in the animal world. The evolutionary, through-line, one assumes is in fact a dotted line. Compare it to a few bricks and The Royal Palace in Amsterdam. All right, those bricks are necessary; a condition sine qua non. The palace is made up of such bricks. But if you assume a direct relationship between a few bricks and a palace, you are disregarding the genius inherent in high architectural design. Similarly, we find rudimentary moral elements in some animals, but they bear no relation to our human moral sense. Morality is not only at the level of feeling and intuition, but has been given a fine-tuned complement, an unfolding and allusion [which has also taken shape] in religious and philosophical traditions. »»

The sin of angels

The sin of angels could not be corrected, because the immutability of their nature makes them impenitent from any direction they once take. But men's will is changeable by nature, so that they are not only able to choose different things, good or evil, but also abandon one choice and turn to another. This changeableness of the will remains in man as long as he is united to his body which is subject to variation. When the soul is separated from the body it will have the same immutability as an angel naturally has; so that after death the soul is impenitent, and cannot turn from good to evil or from evil to good.

Aquinas: "De rationibus fidei contra Saracenos, Graecos et Armenos ad Cantorem Antiochenum" (Ch. 5)

How remarkable that in the metaphorical meaning of the Hebrew 'pa-nim', meaning 'countenance', is contained the meaning of intention, as shown in 2 Chronicles 32:2. In the intention of our countenance, our free will reveals itself before God's Countenance, before God who not only perceives the act but also the associated circumstances. Only He can weigh them against each other out of his supreme justice, and He also wishes under certain conditions to forgive the transgression, with the restriction, however, that if we do something wrong, perhaps out of stupidity, our repentance will be only forgiven if it coincides with the firm resolution not to do it again. That type of repentance will be pleasing to Jesus and his heavenly Father, again and again and again, even if They foresee that the resolution will bear no fruit! *"Lord, how many times shall I forgive my brother when he sins against me? Up to seven times? Jesus answered: I tell you, not seven times, but seventy times seven."* (Mt. 18:21-22) God knows that man is weak and changeable. Nevertheless, He will never fail to forgive (Mt. 18:21-22), and will continue to bless our desire for self-perfection, which sometimes leads to one step forward and two steps backward. Moral perfection should occupy our minds constantly. Then we will be able to take two steps forward and one backward. In the ten creation sayings within the six days of creation, God's blessings count as acts of creation! Only through blessing can creation, can we, get to a higher plane, according to the dictum: *"Be perfect even as your heavenly Father is perfect."* (Mt. 5:48, Lev. 19:2) – a perfection that in this dispensation remains a lofty dream.[221)] The "Thy kingdom come" should be a sighing supplication, full of 'kavanah', not a routine thumping.

221) Dispensation indicates that God divides salvation history into time periods. As one epoch passes into another, some characteristics are retained, others will disappear and new ones will be added.

The Psychology of Evil

Fyodor Dostoevsky is a famous writer of Russian literature. His first novel from 1866 was "Guilt and Punishment", which deals with the psychology of evil. Seventeen years earlier, he was arrested and sentenced to death by firing squad. Just before the moment of execution, he was pardoned and had to do four years of forced labor in Siberia. He then entered military service and was sent to Kazakhstan for several more years. His books testify to the horrors he experienced in the labor camps. Dostoevsky used his Siberian time to examine Christianity from an atheistic point of view. The New Testament was the only literature available to him there. Eventually he reconciled himself to Christianity. He later wrote the meaningful sentence: *"It is not like a child that I believe and confess Jesus Christ. My hosanna is born of a blazing furnace of doubt."* (Notebook 1880-81) Another memorable quote is from "The Possessed": *"Man is unhappy because he doesn't know he's happy. It's only that."* If there was one who could rightfully write about guilt and punishment it was Dostoevsky.

22.94 – As long as there is Life, there is Hope

Jeremiah 3:21 reads: *"A voice was heard on the desolate heights. Weeping and supplications of the children of Israel (image of each one personally), for they have perverted their way."* They perverted their way, in Hebrew: *"ki hè' èvoe et darkam"*. Translating the latter literally, we get: *"for they deflected their way."* The root meaning of the word-stem 'aváh' (from which èvoe is derived) is to bend away, to deviate. In that weeping supplication we find repentance. In the acceptance of that repentance, God will 'turn' his face toward us (pana, from which panim is derived), so that we can get to know Him a little better and, in an ongoing process, get to know Him better and better. But if we do not repent and persist in our errant ways, God will 'turn away' his face from us (again pana), a term that includes rejection, as in Psalm 132:10 (Mt. 13:12). Then we experience God's wrath. But God's wrath differs from humans, for his involvement always tries to bring man to himself. The well known chassidic rabbi Abraham Joshua Heschel (1907-72) tells that the threat of punishment is one of the most prominent features of the prophetic orations, as it is stated in his book "The Prophets" (ch. 10). And he continues:

> «« Punishment has three aims: retributive, deterrent, and reformatory. The divine intention, according to the prophets, is not primarily 'retributive', to impose penalty in consequence of wrongdoing; but rather deterrent, to discourage transgression by fear of punishment; and reformatory, to repair, to refine, to make pure by affliction: Gods' purpose is not to destroy but to purify. (Is. 27:7-8; 28:29) »»

The educational aspect of punishment is corrective or restorative. In the grand scheme of things, everything must be in mutual balance, complement or in harmony with each other. Every action elicits a counter-action; 1 Peter 3:21 speaks of either antitype or counter-strike. Action and reaction are the essence of vibration, which always seeks balance. One might go further and say that balance is a guiding principle of the work of creation, and it is therefore that any wrongdoing needs to be compensated. The unjust suffering at one end of the spectrum, because wrongdoing always causes suffering, must be remedied by a counter effect, perhaps elsewhere or later, perhaps on the other side of the earth where a storm pounds in response to some heinous crime. (JNSR 4-3-2003) Perhaps as a means of atonement, someone else will be affected by vicarious suffering. *"The blindness in some will always be compensated by others' suffering: through others, those few will be saved [by having their hearts broken open]."* (JNSR 13-7-2008)

How can rejection deliver rapprochement? The evildoer, who always excuses himself, that is, shows no repentance, will be less accountable from less 'knowing', which para-

doxically opens the way to repentance.[222] Who could ever come to repentance if he understood the real weight of his sins? Time and again the wicked man will be invited through the experiences of life to seek God, if only to be delivered from his miserable condition. Abraham Heschel notes: [223]

> «« Hardness of heart is a condition of which the person afflicted is unaware. Not knowing what ails him, he is unable to repent and to recover. However, when hardness is intensified from 'above', responsibility is assumed by God. He smites and He restores, bringing about a revival of sensitivity. It seems that the only cure for willful hardness is to make it absolute. Half-callousness, paired with obstinate conceit, seeks no cure. When hardness is complete, it becomes despair, the end of conceit. Out of despair, out of total inability to believe, prayer bursts forth! »»

After the long-desired event of the inner illumination of conscience, God will make a second attempt to win over the stubborn as yet, but this time by driving them into supreme despair, for then pride is done with, and that is one of the functions of the Three Days of Darkness, which has as its origin a natural cause but also a supernatural one, reason why a darkness reigns such as has never existed since the beginning of the Earth. Everyone will then be completely and irresistibly thrown back upon themselves. And then, immediately after those days, there will be the 'rapture' of the living, and God's cataclysmic judgment will strike the Earth.

Why God could Not Forgive Lucifer?

Angels were created as perfect beings with free will and conscience. Lucifer is the originator of the lie, which causes degeneration of life's spirit. While in a state of affliction, Lucifer is a resistor and disruptor of true life, and he has spread death to humans and the fallen angels in order to be the greatest of all, to be their unchallenged leader [with the object to bring humans in a very miserable condition under him, instead of them being superior to him]. Forgiveness is not extended to Lucifer and his followers, because there was no imperfection or ignorance present in them.

A TikTok, based on the super.AI (artificial intelligence) reply service (23 Dec. 2022)

Blessed Anna Maria Taigi (1769-1837) is the most famous seer of the Three Days of Darkness. She predicts that during those days and nights an absolute darkness will cover the whole earth in which *"all the enemies of the Church will perish"*. However, the unwilling engaged in sinful activities, New Age, etc., will still have the opportunity to repent and be saved. Anna Taigi sees this event as follows:

---

222) In Isaiah 6:10-13 it says that the minds of the people are hardened, the ears made deaf and the eyes closed lest they understand and repent, but it also says that this happens for the preservation of a holy remnant. Apparently the people had become so unruly that there was nothing else for God to do. Here one does need to distinguish between how God deals with nations and individuals. We might as well apply this quote to the end times, when the Church will have fallen into decline and the true servants of God will find each other in the Remnant Church. Since it has not wanted to listen to the heavenly messages, God will leave the church institution at that time to its own devices. The specific end-time messages began with the message of La Salette in 1846 and have since swelled to a veritable flood. However, the Church of Rome remained deaf and blind to them. In 1851, the appearance of La Salette was acknowledged by Pope Pius IX but immediately after his death in 1878, that message was put on the index of forbidden books! This is only the first of a whole series of similar incidents that have occurred in the Church.

223) "The Prophets" by Abraham Joshua Heschel (ch. 10, called Chastisement).

«« An intense darkness will come over the whole earth that lasts for three days and three nights. Nothing can be seen, and the air will be laden with pestilence that will claim mainly, but not only, the enemies of religion. It will be impossible during this darkness to use artificial lighting except blessed candles. Anyone who, out of curiosity, opens his window to look outside, or leaves his home, will drop dead on the spot. During these three days, people should stay at home, pray the Rosary and beg for God's mercy. All enemies of the Church, whether known or unknown, will perish all over the world during that universal darkness, except for a few whom God will soon convert. The air will be infested by demons appearing under all kinds of hideous forms. »» (Private Proph. 1863)

Marie-Julie Jahenny (1850-1941), known as the Breton stigmatist, elaborates on the Three Days of Darkness. She says it will take place on a Thursday, Friday and Saturday when all of Hell will have been unleashed to strike at those who are outside their homes without a burning blessed pure wax candle. These candles will miraculously continue to burn all that time, but refuse to give light in the homes of the wicked. There is also the Book of Truth, which states these days explicitly and implicitly, according to the messages of Jesus:

«« The sun will disappear until finally no light shines on the earth for three days. The only light will be that which comes from the Truth. And on the fourth day, the heavens will burst open and light – as you never thought possible – will stream from the heavens. Then I will be seen by every person in every country at the same time, in all my Glory, as I come to reclaim the Kingdom promised to Me by my Father. »» (24 Oct. 2014)

«« For those who choose to believe in false gods and do not recognize the Triune God, it will not be easy to accept Me, for you have always rejected Me. Yet I will draw you to Me and embrace you. The power of God will descend upon you, through the gift of the Holy Spirit, and you will find it difficult to turn your backs on Me. So of all those who see Me, including those who have rejected Me in this life, at that stage most of you will realize the Truth. You will allow Me to draw you into my Holy Arms. Then I will lift you all into my New Kingdom in a moment, in an instant. And then the beginning of the end will begin. The souls who have idolized the Beast [Antichrist] and who have surrendered to Satan with body, mind and soul, and who became his willing agents, have nowhere to go, nowhere to hide and will be left without any help, for Satan will have abandoned them. For by that time Satan will be thrown into the abyss, and at the same time his power will completely cease. To those souls I say this. Even at that stage I will show you Mercy. You must call on Me and say: "Jesus, help me. Jesus, forgive me for all my sins." ... and I will also lift you up to my New Paradise. I will save every soul who calls on Me just before the heavens close; the mountains collapse and the sea floods the earth. And then the heavens will disappear along with the old earth. My New Paradise will rise, the new heaven and Earth, just as it was created before Adam and Eve, and everyone will rejoice. For that will be the greatest day since God created Adam and Eve. Never despair and now remember my words to you. »» (June 13 2014)

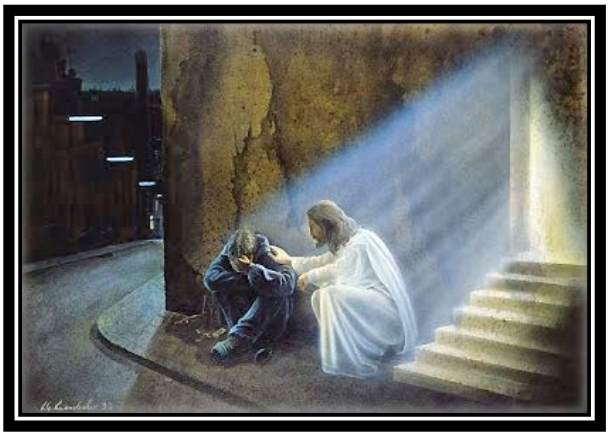
22.95 – A lamp for my feet is Your Word

The suffering inflicted upon oneself is up to that, but the suffering inflicted on the innocent is not easy to explain. Besides, there is also suffering without logic in terms of guilt and atonement, such as certain diseases or a stupid car accident with severe injuries. How is it possible that God allows such things? Why that suffering? Isn't that an 'injustice' to shake with clenched fist? All that remains is to believe that it somehow works for the better. Otherwise, God could not be the God of Love and absolute justice.

Job, too, struggled with that question. In chapter 28 of the book of the same name, he comes to the conclusion that wisdom – about knowing the meaning of the suffering and injustice that man endures – is hidden from all that lives. (verse 21) Finally, God lets man know (verse 28): *"Wisdom? Wisdom is fearing God (in the sense of being in awe of) and shunning evil",* which ties in with the first verse of the book, which says that this Job was a man who *"feared God and kept away from evil".*

> Book of Truth of July 2nd 2012: "My Word is my Word. No man can defend my Word for it is cast in stone. Any man who tries to break my Word or cast aspersions on it, will fail, for they are powerless against my Holy Word."

Everything a man does should be aimed at getting closer to God in order to be able to behold a gleam of his glory. He should strive to bring down the walls that still separate him from the Father. Because of the God who is far away, if we want to live a pleasing life, we are forced to live by faith. And then, more and more, God will reveal Himself to us. So it is first believe and then see. In Heaven we do not have to live by faith, because there we 'see', then God is near and our happiness is complete, according to the word of the psalmist: *"My delight - that is to be near God."* (Ps. 73:28) Here on earth, man lives by faith, that the movement of his heart may be made manifest, not only with regard to God, but also with regard to himself. Contrary to public opinion, we determine the arrangement of our lives not by the intellect, but by the heart, which is the image of our emotional center, from whence our intentions come – for good or evil. Thus God complains through the prophet: *"They draw near with their mouth and honor Me with their lips, while their hearts are far from Me."* (Is. 29:13)



We, who have at our disposal God's Word, should not seek to be our own law, but should take it as our guide, according to the word of the psalmist:

> «« Your Word is a lamp to my feet and a light to my path. I have sworn and confirmed that I will keep Your righteous judgments. I am afflicted very much. Revive me, O Lord, according to Your word. Accept, I pray, the freewill offerings of my mouth, O Lord, and teach me Your judgments. »» (Ps. 119:105-106)

God's Word, like a spotlight, illuminates each time a piece of truth and its legal order. It is only in Heaven that everything stands out before us shadowlessly, without spot or wrinkle. Everything can then be grasped with a single glance. In our vale of tears here, however, our knowing is always partial. In the teaching of a messianic Jewish organization this problem is elucidated as follows: [224)]

> «« Being aware that we do not see God clearly [in all his aspects] should help to keep us humble. It should make us reluctant to criticize other people's theologies and their experiences with God. They may have perceived an aspect of the Almighty that we have not, or we may have found revelation that has been with-

224) First Fruits of Zion: The Weekly eDrash, May 3, 2016.

> held from them. Neither of us is to be blamed for not seeing the whole picture. In this world, the whole picture is unavailable. Jesus told the theologians of his day: *"You have neither heard His voice at any time nor seen His form."* (John 5:37) That is why a true appreciation of the greatness of God excludes religious arrogance. »»

Notwithstanding, the Lord says to Joshua, who led the crowd of people into the Promised Land, he who is the image of Jesus (the Greek spelling of Joshua is the same as for Jesus), that each one must follow the whole Law, an impossible requirement therefore – which could only be accomplished in Jesus Messiah. We do not and cannot understand what all of the Law implicates, and yet it is written:

> «« Only be strong and very courageous, that you may observe to do according to 'all the Law', which Moses my servant commanded: turn not from it to the right hand or to the left, that you may prosper whithersoever you go. This Book of the Law shall not depart out of your mouth; but you shall meditate therein day and night, that you may observe to do according to all that is written therein Then you will know prosperity and happiness in all your undertakings. (The Book of the Law was the forerunner then of the Bible.) »» (Jos. 1:7-8)

Finally, we may say that the Christian life does not begin with a fathoming of the truth or from an intellectual point of view trying to understand an important doctrine, but it begins with an opening of the eyes of the heart. No one has ever been converted and saved on intellectual reasoning alone. Acceptance is the key word, not knowledge, for unconstrainedly choosing God, who has called us into a love relationship. Only later does the deepening of our knowledge come into play. He is the bridegroom (from the Song of Songs) longing for his bride. As long as there is life, there is hope, there is hope for each and every one of us who knows God incompletely, or not at all, to be exalted through the curved way of God's longsuffering. It is a roundabout way, and that requires patience, first of all from God who, like no other, oversees all the missteps and afflictions suffered by a human being.

See also Youtube: **"Free Will and the Existence of Evil"** by Ravi Zacharias.

The Kingdom of God

A branch springs forth from the stump of Jesse,
from his roots a Branch will bear fruit.
The Spirit of the Lord will rest on Him,
the Spirit of wisdom and of understanding,
the Spirit of counsel and of might,
the Spirit of the knowledge and fear of the Lord.
He will delight in the fear of the Lord.
He breathes awe of the Lord.
He does not judge according to outward appearances;
and the wicked He slays with the breath of his lips.
Justice He wears as a girdle around his loins,
and faithfulness as a girdle around his hips.
The wolf and the lamb dwell together,
the panther reclines beside the buck,
the calf and the lion graze together:
a little boy can herd them.
The cow and the bearess make friendship,
their young lie down together.
And the lion eats straw, as does the ox.
The infant plays near the cobra's den,
and the infant will put its hand into the viper's nest.
No one does evil
or acts corruptly on all my holy mountain,
for the earth will be filled with the knowledge of the Lord
as the waters cover the sea.

Isaiah 11:1-9

APPENDIX 11

From messages of the Book of Truth

The Book of Truth contains a series of heavenly messages received by a married woman and mother of a young family living in Ireland. She is known as **Maria Divine Mercy**. Her messages started in November 2010, and at the time of the writing of this article, were still going on.

God the Father: I gave you the Gift of free will, but you abused it

I taught you through the prophets. I gave you the Gift of free will, but you abused it to satisfy your own lusts and desires. The Gift of free will has a dual purpose – to give you the freedom to choose, so that you do not come to Me out of fear, but out of love; and to defeat the power of the devil. It is your free will that Satan covets most of all and he will use every deceit to get you to hand it over to him. When souls do this, through the sin of pride, New Age practices and the occult, they become enslaved by the evil one (waardoor ze niet of nauwelijks nog voor het goede kunnen kiezen). He will then manifest, within the souls who hand him over their free will, every single one of his traits. You will know them by their behaviour. But the one sign that their free will has been given to the evil one is when these souls constantly seek to publicly mock my Son, Jesus Christ, and his Mother, the Immaculate Virgin Mary, Mother of the World. Satan despises both of them.

If, instead, you use the free will I gave you, for the good of your soul and to love one another, this is a powerful means by which to dilute the power of Satan. But, it is those souls who give to Me, through my Son, Jesus Christ, the gift of their free will, that give the most powerful gift of all. (see Crusade Prayer 123) It will be through these souls that I will defeat the evil one and get the means by which I can save the souls of those who have completely separated themselves from Me. Comment: If someone gives over his free will to God, He will then manifest in that person every single one of His traits.

That is my Promise. I will save the souls of even the most hopeless cases because of the sacrifices of those who give Me this gift of their free will, through my Son, Jesus Christ.

Jesus: About the State of Grace and the Forgiveness of Sins

- **December 21st 2011**

My dearest beloved daughter it is I,

Tonight I come to offer comfort to sinners who believe they are not worthy to stand before Me. I call on those of you, poor tortured souls who believe that your sins are so repulsive that I could not forgive you. How wrong you are. Don't you know that there is not one sin I cannot forgive? Why are you so afraid? Don't you know that even the most grevious sin of murder can be forgiven? All sins can and will be forgiven if true heartfelt remorse is shown.

I am waiting. Open your hearts to Me. Confide in Me. I am probably the only true friend you have in that you can tell me anything and it will not shock Me.

Sin is a fact of life. Very few souls including chosen souls can remain in a state of grace for any length of time.

Never feel that you cannot confess your sins, irrespective as to how serious they may be. If you fear Me and continue to turn your back you will distance yourself from Me even more. Many of My children do not feel worthy of My love. Yet I love everyone including hardened sinners. I do not condone the sin. I could never do that. But I love the sinner.

It was because of sin that I was sent into your world as a Saviour so that you could be pardoned. To be pardoned you must ask for forgiveness. When you seek forgiveness you must be humble first. For without humility there is no true remorse.

I, your Saviour, beg you to stop and think about how you live your life. You either love God by your good deeds and love of neighbour or you don't. You do not have to know Me in order to love Me, children. By your works, your love of each other, the kindness and generosity you show others you demonstrate your love for Me without realising it. It will also be through your humility of heart, when you show true remorse for all the wrongdoings in your life, that you will also prove your love for Me. How else do you think, you can become close to my heart?

You must never be afraid to approach Me. I am never far away. Come to Me now so I can nourish your soul and give you the peace you crave.

Your beloved Jesus

The Limits to Freedom

The wild horses of the Camarque (France)

We don't want to be restricted by laws and rules. We just want to be free, free to do whatever comes to mind, no matter when and how, and no matter who is involved. I mean, that's our right, isn't it? But it's not that simple, because man acts within his social environment, is in fact a kind of herd animal, like a flock of birds flying in unison, bonded by a form of hypnotic connectivity. Inescapable. With man, it is mainly the 'word' that determines a course of action. We will occupy ourselves with some thoughts on this topic.

23.96 – On the same Balance Beam

The word is like a sword, or say modeling knife. With that same knife God went to work in order to create. When we bless (Strong's 1288: barak) through the word, we can also curse (barak or arar) through it. In the same way, the sanctifying Holy Host can become a curse. (1 Cor. 11:27-30) The creation account indicates that a 'blessing' carries creative power in it: in the seven days week God blesses 3x the created to be holy and bring forth fruit. But his adversary does not let himself off the hook and also takes creative action, but he likes to destroy what is primed for good, and to this end the adversary uses the same power. He is therefore called devil, a word derived from 'diabolos' meaning over-thrower. The Hebrew indicates, by using the same word barak for two opposite meanings, that there is a smooth boundary; between the extremes, blessing passes almost imperceptibly into curse. It sounds strange, but the same linguistic phenomenon is known in Dutch and English with the words 'to tear apart' and 'to stick together', or 'to cleave' and 'to cleave'. The same word for contradictory meanings with which a spectrum of possibilities navigates on the same balance beam. Why? They are at odds with each other, yet they cannot exist without each other, like 'husband' and 'wife', in Hebrew 'ish' and 'isha'. They are 'stuck' to each other, says Genesis. At the center of the balance beam of the word barak is neither blessing, love and compassion, nor curse, revenge and betrayal, and then they have become neutral thoughts and comments.

In the counting of the ten stages of creation of the six-day work of creation, the two blessings participate. (We are currently in the unfinished seventh day of creation with its own blessing.) These ten stages of creation can be counted as follows: two blessings – one on the fifth day and one on the sixth, and there are eight acts of creation. These acts fit within the eight stages or eight-day-realization in terms of making, expressed by the Hebrew 'asa' (to be compared with the creative acts of Man, which is a rearranging). Of these, two fall on the third day and two on the sixth. Man's creation by God falls outside of that because that is in terms of 'bara', a creating that only God can do, which is why verse 1 is skipped too.[225)] But the blessing (barak) of the first human and his simultaneous vocation is most certainly counted (verse 28): *"Be fruitful (in your works and in getting offspring)."* In that calling, what takes shape on the seventh day, man continues God's work of creation, for then, on that seventh day, God rested from all his works and handed the work over to us, although we are invited to pray for his assistance – and remain free to make a mess of it. And since creation in terms of 'bara' is excluded from that kind of work, this is done in terms of 'asa', which explains why the Son (who arrived in the 7th day) asks for his Father's assistance, who creatorily responds in terms of 'bara'.[226)]

The non-counting of the bara-creative acts of God is related to the fact that God the Father knows no time in our sense of the word. All times, from the very beginning to the infinite future are laid out before his Mind's Eye,[227)] so that, regarding bara, there are no stages in the fulfillment of the plan of creation: in an indivisible moment and concurrently, the Father created everything, in past, present and future, and He maintains it by his omnipotence, as laid down in Psalm 33:9: *"For He spoke and it was"* i.e. ALL came instantaneously into being with one divine call.[228)] Thereafter (in the same verse), *"God commanded and it [subsequently] arose"* in the gradual development of what we call history. In a rearrangement of the already existing it gave birth to the successive stages or days, which, however, did not exclude a bara-intervention, as happened in the creation of the first couple.[229)] If God the Father is not subject to our sequentiality, that explains why He can see into the future. It is different for the Son, who, after all, came into being before the creation, spoken of in the first chapter of Genesis, which is so beautifully expressed in the Nicæan Creed (325 AD): *"I believe in one God the Father Almighty and in one Lord Jesus Christ, born of the Father 'before' all ages."* This agrees with John

---

225) In the New Strong's Concordance from the year 2010 is written under 1254 for bârâ: "A careful study of the passages where bara occurs, shows that in the few non-poetic uses (primarily in Genesis), the writer uses scientifically precise language to demonstrate that God brought the object or concept into being from previouisly nonexistent material." At the end of this article, see all comments under Strong's 1254.

226) 'Bara' is create and 'bar' (son) is in fact also create if you don't consider the vowel. Asa is a rearranging. Only God can create from 'nothing' (from Himself). Therefore, the first word in the Bible is Bereshit (derived from bara). That word bara is used only twice: in verse 1 (in the beginning God created heaven and earth), and in verse 27 when God created Man. Everything else is a rearrangement of the already existing. Please note that this method of counting differs from Jewish tradition, for they do count verse 1 and the creation of Man, but not the blessings, thus arriving at the same number of ten.

227) Before creation of the angels and the Universe, there was not even 'nothing'! There was just God existing in eternity. Time came into existence by the act of creation. The idea that God knows no time and that everything is known to Him, in the most extensive meaning of the word, concords with the expression of Luke 12:7 that the very hairs of our head are all numbered. In Psalm 90:2 we read: "Before the mountains were brought forth, or ever You had formed the Earth and the Universe, even from everlasting to everlasting, You are God."

228) And therefore the statement that God created the world 6000 years ago or 17 billion years ago, is devoid of sense. And indeed, the Big Bang Theory has been disproven by Nobel Laureate Andrej Sackarov. See my contribution under "A New Cosmogonic Model" (last update July 2022).

229) Do we realize how outstanding Man's destiny is?

17:24 and Colossians 1:15-17. The word 'before' denotes a sequentiality, implantated into God via the Son. This allows the Father to keep the date of some future events hidden from the Son as well as the exact circumstances of what is going to happen.

Curse and blessing are typically Biblical terms. In our modern language, we might also speak at the one end of the spectrum of unmerciful criticism, invectiveness, humiliation, condemnation or slander, and at the other end of the spectrum of encouragement (positive criticism) and compliments, even praise. We are dealing with a topical issue here; this is not just some corny Biblical phenomenon. After all, we have a duty to criticize the wrongdoings in our society. But this has its limits and, according to the rules of the game, we must observe some standards of decency. We are not allowed to say just anything, including criticizing everything or speaking ill of persons, because words have a real effect. Gossip and slander have been raised to professional heights in the press. The emotion, which is put into it, is also important. Words, which are in a closed book, mean nothing, but words loaded with emotion have an impact, which can break down, also build up. As an Arabic proverb says: *"A wound by words is worse than a wound by the sword."* (see Appendix) When I consider exalted words, which possess a willpower, as it were, to climb up into the conscious and motivated mind, I am reminded of George Steiner's expression, which defines the word as *"force and medium of creation."* And he continues: *"But if the Word can create, can it not, by the same token, unmake and annihilate?"* And how striking when he says: *"We will see deeper only when we break free of a purely negative classification of 'un-truth', only when we recognize the compulsion to say 'the thing which is not [yet accomplished]' as being central to language and mind. We must come to grasp what [the God hating] Nietzsche meant when he proclaimed that 'the Lie - and not the Truth - is divine!'" "Or as he puts it in "Morningred" (Morgenröte): 'man's genius is one of lies.'"* [230)] Possibly Nietzsche meant to say that the truth 'stands', and that is a fact, while the lie destroys, and that is not yet a fact. The lie is divine in the sense that the ungodly man does not want to bow down and wants to sit on God's throne himself, cursing Him in his pursuit (barak also has the meaning of 'not wanting to kneel' - see Job 1:5) and does the only creative thing that comes to his mind, and that is to destroy.

Who was George Steiner?

George Steiner was born with a paralyzed right arm. From his mother he learned that living with a disability is a privilege. She did not want him to give in to his disability. For example, she refused to give him shoes with a zipper: "It was a real ordeal to learn to tie my laces." As a result, in his own words, he learned from her "that with the right effort you can achieve anything you want." In Steiner's book "After Babel: Aspects of Language and Translation" (1975), he explores the phenomenon of language and translation, and this book is still considered a standard work. In it, he emphasizes the multiple meanings of the concept of language. For example, pure French does not exist. Language is thought, language is existence, language is identity. He says that clinging to original English is provincial; 128 languages are spoken in a city like New York alone. So why shouldn't there be cross-pollination? Because a word in one language may have a connotative meaning that is lacking elsewhere. A larger vocabulary is not only a cultural enrichment but also an enrichment in expressive skills.

In Job 2:9, Job's wife blames the misery her husband suffers on himself. The wealthy Job had fallen to abject poverty upon which his wife throws at him: *"Do you still hold fast your integrity? Curse God and die!"* (ESV)[231)] Here the reproach resounds that Job had amassed his wealth on false grounds, out of selfishness. The train of thought is: Why else would he be punished? His wife felt that his so-called godliness made no sense, that

230) "A Reader" by George Steiner – Penguin Books # 1984 (pp. 17, 402).

in his hypocrisy he had cursed God and therefore should go on cursing and therefore deserved death. So 'curse God' can be read as 'keep on cursing God'. You arrogant man, who always thought to know better, go ahead and sit on your blisters!

Obsessive self-glorification, not wanting to acknowledge God's incomparable majesty, and not wanting to kneel before Him, is lese-majesty and thus a curse, perhaps the worst of its kind. Self-glorifying man can only do something in the negative, in undoing what God created in the beginning. The good that he did from within himself, possibly, here and there, is only a stay of execution, for the 'good' of the Man of old cannot be untainted. (Rom. 7:14-8:23) Usually, any good, being done, goes along with wanting to be an 'important person'. A man without God's assistance is dirt, less than nothing. The terrible maelstrom cannot be dampened with any good done that way. Is it any wonder that the world looks so terrible? God knew the heart of Man and knew where it would end if He gave him free reins …and it grieved Him that He had made Man. (Gen. 6:6)

23.97 – When Everything Comes to a Climax

Freedom of speech is a precious commodity that, as just established, should be delimitated. According to some, not for an inch, as freedom should be unfettered. But what if self-discipline is absent? Freedom of speech, by the way, does not stand alone. Freedom of religion is related to it, as are so many other freedoms, including, extremely important, freedom of cultural expression. A certain degree of tolerance associated with it, because these freedoms lead to a pluralistic society. It cannot exist without mutual respect. Tolerance for our fellow man ends where the God-given freedom is abused for the purpose of transgression of the Ten Commandments, or of cursing and preaching hate. Words are not idle talk, are like prayers, have force of action, which in the world of occurrences will not fail to effect. Be careful what you pray for, you might be answered!

A dictatorship, and certainly the Antichrist's dictatorship, aims to take away every freedom and catch people in its trap. But man does not let himself be caught that easily, especially with something so essential. Our freedoms are like the air we breathe. Only by attacking each and every one's basic necessities will the Antichrist get his way. In exchange for food, medical care, shelter and the like, he pushes people to do his will, away from God, where one must be tolerant of sin and intolerant of Christians who condemn such things, with the Bible in hand. It is telling that on May 19th 2015, during the international day against homophobia and transphobia, the American Vice President Joe Biden made a speech in which he told that the freedom of the LGBT people is violated by *"religious condemnation"*. (LGBT stands for the Alphabet People: Lesbian, Gay, Bisexual, Transgender, etc.). Where are we headed, if forbidden to denounce those kind of practices?

In the end times, when everything will come to a climax, ordinary faith will no longer suffice. Why? Before Abraham was circumcised, he believed, and therefore he is the father of the uncircumcised. He is the father of the circumcised (Jews), but also of the non-Jews in that all God's true followers are tested by suffering. I'll explain. The Jews are doubly circumcised in the actual circumcision after birth; and the second time because they experience suffering, true suffering. And still they are persecuted beyond measure! In the end times, simple faith will no longer do, but a fireproof faith is then required, being purified in the crucible of suffering. In John Bunyan's Pilgrim's Progress, which is one of the most widely read books after the Bible, the figure called

231) The authoritative Dutch Willibrord translation of Job 2:9 reads: "Are you still going to continue to be the good guy? Then praise God until you have wasted away!", while the English translation gives in my view a much better one: "Are you still maintaining your integrity? Curse God and die!"

Christian is shown a wall from which there emanates a tremendous fire with searing heat. People are throwing buckets of water on the fire, trying to put it out. When Christian asks the meaning of the fire, he is told that this represents faith and there are those who are trying through doubt and fear to extinguish it. But he is then taken to the other side of the wall and there he sees a man with a vessel of oil, and this gentle figure, almost in secret, is pouring oil on the fire, keeping the flames alive. When Christian asks why, he is told that it is the oil of God's grace that keeps the fire burning and so faith continues.

Where freedom of speech is enslaved, there is still the freedom of thought that, despite the vilification and persecution, stubbornly perseveres and remains upright. That costs something. Not only does it cost something, it costs more than we can muster. It boils down to a willingness, and then the Holy Spirit will give the fortitude to do so, if we are humble in heart. Who is willing to sacrifice his life on the firm ground of faith and reject compromise? One's own thinking, the freedom of having an opinion, can only be denied if one consents to it. Whoever seeks compromise be warned. Whoever consents, delivers himself to the psychology of the masses, to the brainwashing of hypnotic connectivity.

If the manifestation of the word, which is the instrument of manipulation, were only in the individual sphere, there would be less cause for concern, but its dynamism represents a frightening reality. Its impetuous movement wants to manifest itself everywhere, specially in the realm of the human collective where emotions can be whipped up to feverish heights. According to Freud *"the masses are subject to an indeed magical power of the word that can arouse in the mass-soul the fiercest storms."* [232)] This is strongly reminiscent of the little man with the mustache who managed to whip up a gathering into hysteria by means of the word. The improbable power with which it was clothed must have been of 'divine' resonance, divine in the vein suggested by the Atheist Nietzsche (1844-1900). It would be a comfortable thought if this divine resonance were the result of one man, but that could only exist because this one man was the risen personification of the German popular spirit (Nationalgeist). He, a demonically possessed man, was the terrible product of Germany's own insanity in which I do not place the

232) "Massenpsychologie und Ich-Analyse" (The Psychology of the Masses and Ego Analysis) by Sigmund Freud #1921. Page 18 from the Dutch translation.

German mentality in a separate category. At the end of this dispensation all nations are under the same curse, a curse that can only be lifted by dedication to Christ's sacrifice on the Cross. It is because of this inherent corruptibility that the Apostle John was in a position to prophesy that the Antichrist will gain power *"over every tribe and nation and language and people."* (Rev. 13:7) Even the 'good nations' of old, which nevertheless were never really good, will fall prey to his reign of terror, a bleak prospect of which we are already seeing the bitter fruits in the world around us.[233)]

The psychoanalyst Carl Jung (1875-1961), at the beginning of the madness that beset the German people in the run-up to World War II, tended to see it as a good thing. In Wotan, Jung's essay of 17 pages from 1936, he mentions Wilhelm Hauer, head of the Nordic Faith Movement, which barred Freemasons, Jews, and coloured people. Jung explained that his group *"aims at the religious renaissance of the nation out of the hereditary foundations of the Germanic race",* and he advised the *"German Christians, that are actually a contradictio in adiecto (an added contradiction)," to join Hauer's "decent and well-meaning people (...) intelligent enough not only to believe but to know that the god of the Germans is Wodan and not the Christian God."* [234)]

Despite the fact that in the early days, before 1935, Jung made scornful remarks about the Jewish subconscious nature and the Jewish psychoanalytical practice (that of Freud), which he considered *"thoroughly unsatisfying to the Germanic mentality"*, he cannot be branded a pro-Nazi as some pretend. It would have to be conceded that Jung was a child of his time and not the one who had foreseen the *"collective psychic murder",* a term he only uses in 1945. He was in no way anti-Semite, a conviction shared by Jewish Aniela Jaffé and Laurens van der Post, both of whom have known him well. Yet the Nazis were fond of him. When, after 1935, Jung started to mount increasing attacks on the regime, things turned out differently. To quote Dusty Sklar: [235)]

> «« The reigning attitudes in Germany expressed mystical affinities with which Jung was very much at home. There were several areas of compatibility between Jung and the Nazis: alchemy, astrology, the Grail legend, the symbolism of the runes, medieval mysticism, antibolshevism, and so forth. His high degree of tolerance for the 'shadow' side of human nature, considered a necessary complement to reason, may have caused him to cast the Nazis in a romantic light. Like them, he was not afraid to explore the hidden recesses of the unconscious for ancient secrets so great and fearful (…) that one has seen nothing behind. »»

Jesus is Bread baked in the oven of affliction
The Bread of our sorrows and the Bread of our tears
The Bread of all mercies
The Bread of all compassion

Denise Leonard (2015)

---

233) If even the 'good nations' of old will fall prey to the Antichrist's reign of terror, the question is whether there will be exceptions. Will the state of Israel be an exception? Or perhaps even the Netherlands? But first there will have to be a nationwide mourning.

234) See also: "C.G. Jung: The Haunted Prophet" by Paul J. Stern, chapter entitled "The flirt with the Devil". Also the expanded edition "From the Life and Work of C.G. Jung" by Aniela Jaffé, chapter entitled "C.G. Jung and National Socialism", which discusses his dubious 1933-1939 presidency of the German "Algemeine Ärztlichen Gesellschaft für Psychotherapie" with the addition of an Epilogue by Sir Laurens van der Post.

235) "The Nazis and the Occult" by Dusty Sklar from the chapter "Jung and the Aryan Unconscious" – Dorsett Press, New York # 1989, 1977.

23.98 – What lies ahead

In 2015, Spain was at the forefront of what Brussels planned to do to all of Europe in the aftermath, which was to completely replace democracy and freedom of speech with dictatorship. This is the legislation introduced in Spain at the time: [236)]

1. If you photograph security personnel (police etc.) and distribute these photos on social media, you could face a fine of €30,000, especially if the photo shows how the government acts against protesters. The fine can increase the more followers you have on Facebook and Instagram, among others.

2. From now on, if you tweet out the location of a planned demonstration, that is an 'act of terrorism' inciting others to commit a crimen.

3. Whistleblowers like Edward Snowden? If so, you are a potential terrorist. If you work for the media, including locally, be careful what you write because the government reads and listens in.

4. Elected representatives of the people, who promise one thing before elections but do another, should no longer be harassed for that. From now on, that is a crime.

5. Spontaneous demonstrations at parliament are illegal. If you do so, you risk a fine of €30,000. Organizers of demonstrations anywhere and against anything can be punished with an equal fine; so can participants if they refuse to leave when the police ask them to. Then they 'obstruct' officials in function.

6. A rude answer to a police officer results in an immediate fine of €100 to €600.

7. You have a complaint against a store, business, company, bank or the municipality, and refuse to leave before getting a meaningful answer? Likewise, a fine of up to €600.

8. And to top it off, 'digital protests', articles labeled as fakenews, i.e. news that deviates from what the government tells us, that the courts say could 'disturb the peace', are henceforth a crime.

The beginning of the end of freedom of expression in Europe was thus sealed. It is to be expected that the European Commission will introduce these laws elsewhere in Europe as well.

236) Xander news 15-07-2015: "Draconische nieuwe wetten maken einde aan Spaanse democratie" (Draconian new laws end Spanish democracy).

The New STRONG'S Expanded Exhaustive Concordance of the Bible
by James Strong – expanded with the best of Vine's Dictionary
2010 Edition

Item 1254: Bârâ' (ברא) — to create, make, causing what did not exist to exist.

This verb is of profound theological significance, since it has only God as its subject.

1a Only God can 'create' in the sense implied by bara.
1b The verb expresses creation out of nothing, an idea seen clearly in passages having to do with creation on a cosmic scale: *"In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth."* (Gen 1:1; cf. Gen 2:3; Is 40:26; 42:5)
1c Al other verbs for 'creating' allow a much broader range of meaning; they have both divine and human subjects, and are used in contexts where bringing something or someone into existence is not the issue.

Objects of the verb include:
2a The heavens and earth. (Gen 1:1; Is 40:26; 42:5; 45:18; 65:17)
2b Man. (Gen 1:27; 5:2; 6:7; Deut 4:32; Ps 89:47; Is 43:7; 45:12)
2c Israel. (Is 43:1; Mal 2:10)
2d A new thing. (Jer 31:22)
2e Cloud and smoke. (Is 4:5)
2f North and south. (Ps 89:12)
2g Salvation and righteousness. (Is 45:8)
2h Speech. (Is 57:19)
2i Darkness. (Is 45:7)
2j Wind. (Amos 4:13)
2k A new heart. (Ps 51:10)

(3) A careful study of the passages where bara occurs shows that in the few non-poetic uses (primarily Genesis), the writer uses scientifically precise language to demonstrate that God brought the object or concept into being from previously nonexistent material.

Especially striking is the use of bara in the Isaiah chapters 40 to 65.

4a Out of 49 occurrences of the verb in the Old Testament, 20 are in these chapters!
4b Because the Isaiah writes prophetically to the Jews in Exile, he speaks words of comfort based upon God's past benefits and blessings to his people. Isaiah especially wants to show that, since Yahweh is the Creator, He is able to deliver his people from captivity. The God of Israel has created all things: *"I have made [6213 - asah (עשה)] the earth, and created [bara (ברא)] Man upon it: I, even my hands, have stretched out the heavens, and all their host have I commanded."* (Is 45:12)
4c The gods of Babylon are impotent nonentities (Is 44:12-20; 46:1-7), and so:
4d Israel can expect God to triumph by effecting a new creation. (Is 43:16-21; 65:17-25)

(5) Though a precisely correct technical term to suggest cosmic, material creation from nothing, bara is a rich theological vehicle for communicating the sovereign power of God, who originates and regulates all things to his glory. Syn.*: "For thus saith the LORD that created [bara] the heavens; God himself that formed [yatsar - 3335] the earth and made it [asah - 6213]; He established it [kun - 3559], he created it [bara] not in vain, he formed it [yatsar - 3335/mould into a form] to be inhabited: I am the LORD; and there is none else."* (Is 45:18) The technical meaning of bara (to create out of nothing) may not hold in these passages; perhaps the verb was popularized in these instances for the sake of providing a poetic synonym.

APPENDIX 12

• A wound by words is worse than a wound by sword

American physician Larry Dossey relates the following remarkable case history as concerns the witnessing to the power of words; very often it happens, that by hiding behind a God of vengeance, someone presents a God who is in the image of humans rather than the other way around.

«« I once treated a woman who was afflicted with chronic fatigue syndrome so severely that she could not attend to the requirements of daily living. She was extremely manipulative and controlling before becoming sick, and these traits intensified with her illness.

Her husband was one of the most unassertive individuals I have ever known. Although he had long contemplated divorce, he was too indecisive and weak willed to follow through. He resented his wife before she became ill; now he hated her. He believed she did not want to recover and that she was using her illness to dominate him totally. The couple refused to enter therapy or marriage counseling, preferring instead to wallow in their unhappiness. The husband found an outlet in religion and returned to the church after years of absence.

One night following a bitter argument, he stormed out of the house. On returning, he found his wife dead, presumably from a heart attack. The man was overcome, not with sorrow but with guilt. Although he was certain that his intense hatred had killed his wife, he continued to refuse to enter psychotherapy to deal with his guilt. After a typical period of doing nothing, he made two choices. He remarried – to a neurotic woman very similar to his first wife – and he left his church in favour of an extremely fundamentalist sect that believed in a wrathful god of absolute power. This allowed him to deny any responsibility whatever for his wife's death and to believe without doubt that God, not he, had punished her.

For a fleeting moment, this man came face-to-face with the intensity of his hatred. He saw that he might possibly be capable of killing his wife with his thoughts, and this awareness terrified and shamed him so severely that he quickly put the lid back on things. He found a surrogate for his hatred – God – and buried his confused feelings even deeper in his mind. »»

Source: "Be careful what you pray for… You just might get it – What we can do about the unintentional effects of our thoughts, prayers, and wishes" by Larry Dossey - Harper, San Fransisco # 1997 (pp. 82-83).

APOCALYPSE NOW!!

Calendar of Joy or Calendar of Mourning?

This contribution examines the Book of Revelation, exploring the idea that the depicted 'apocalypse', or revelation, is not solely about destruction but ultimately about a liberation under God's reign on Earth. It discusses a cyclical pattern of mourning and joy, mirrored in harvest seasons and Jewish traditions, implicating that divine judgment can be reversed through repentance, as proven by examples from the Old Testament prophets Jeremiah and Manasseh. Ultimately, while acknowledging the dire predictions, the text posits that repentance can transform curses into blessings, making supplication for such a reversal a meaningful act.

24.99 – The things that have to be done

The word 'apocalypse' calls up scenes of death and destruction in which God pours out bowls of tribulation. I was somewhat surprised when I first learned that 'apocalypse' is simply a Greek word for 'revelation'.[237)] It appears for the first time in the Bible in the Book of Revelation: *"**The Revelation** of Jesus Christ, which God gave Him to show his servants – **things which must shortly take place**".* Major events are referred to here, for then the text goes on to say that they who hear and take it all to heart will be blessed. But that is not the finale, for those who have been liberated sing: *"And we shall reign on earth."* (Rev. 5:9-10) And also - three verses further on - but now in chorus with all creatures: *"Blessing and honor and glory and power be to Him who sits on the throne, and to the Lamb forever and ever."* At the end of the book the holy city of Jerusalem comes down to earth out of God's heaven. (Rev. 21:10) It comes 'out of' God's heaven. But where does it land? Where else than on (the new) earth! With the announcement of

237) The misconceptions regarding the meaning of the word 'apocalypse' are encouraged by the great deal of attention paid by readers of the Book of Revelation for the catastrophes described in that book, with books and films referring to the theme playing on the misunderstanding. A film of this type is called: "Apocalypse then: A second look at the first Gulf War".

the final plagues the victors over the beast sing first the hymn of Moses, God's servant, which is also the hymn of the Lamb: *"Great and marvelous are Your works, Lord God almighty! Just and true are your ways, O King of the saints! Who shall not fear You, O Lord, and glorify Your name? For you alone are holy, for all nations shall come and worship before You. For Your judgments have been manifested."* (Rev. 15:3-4, Deut. 32:1-52) The book closes with the following words (Rev. 22:16): *"I, Jesus, have sent My angel to testify to you these things in the churches. I am the Root and the Offspring of David, the Bright and Morning Star. And the Spirit and the bride say: Come! And let him who hears say: Come! And let him who thirsts come. Whoever desires, let him take the waters of life freely."*

It would be extremely fatalistic to dare to state that all the bowls of tribulation and so many more terrible events are the things *"that must come to pass",* with the emphasis on 'must'. Although the text allows this, another interpretation is possible, one that is not so obvious. The final goal of the Apocalypse is fixed: that God's liberated ones, from every family and language and people and nation will reign as kings on earth. This 'must' and 'shall' happen. There is no disputing the fact, and it will be thanks to the *"golden bowls full of incense, which are the prayers of the saints".* (Rev. 5:8) And thus not all the bowls are filled with tribulations. Hallelujah. Praised be the Lamb!

24.100 – Harvest Cycle of Mourning, a Mirror-Image of that of Joy

A remarkable aspect of the cycle of occurrences in the book of Revelation is the way in which it regularly refers to a 'harvest'. Rev. 6:6 speaks of *"A quart of wheat for a denarius ad three quarts of barley for a denarius; and do not harm the oil and the wine".* In verse 13 we find mention of the fig tree that rejects its unripe fruits. In verse 4 of the ninth chapter is the following: *"They were commanded not to harm the grass of the earth, or any green thing or any tree."* In Chapter 14 from verse 14 onwards writes in terms of the grain and wine harvest, ending with the winepress being trampled, something that always occurs at the end of the season, this as a prelude to the seven final plagues. In chapter 19, where the victory of Christ over the false prophet is proclaimed, the winepress is once again trampled (verse 15).

Israel's cycle of feasts accentuates the important events of the harvest season – happy occasions. But here there is no thought of a cycle of joy but a cycle of mourning! The remarkable thing is that when all this is over and the tears have been wiped from the eyes and pestilential death has been conquered (Rev. 21:4) – an interpretation that matches up with the meaning of the Hebrew word 'mut' or 'death' –at that stage the harvest cycle will have turned into something quite different. Even then people will die (who are then born), not of illness but tired of years. (Isa. 65:20-22) That is the third death. The lake of fire, meant for the god-haters, is the second death. (Rev. 20:14; 21:8) Indeed, since everything is new. The tree of life (Rev. 22:3) will produce fruits every month. But all of this happens in a future which, at present, does not need to concern us, except for the fact that it helps keep our hopes alive that everything will come right.

In order to obtain a better understanding of the harvest cycle of mourning, we can turn to Moses' last speech at the gates of the Promised Land. (Deut. 27-33)[238)] Here Moses

238) In Exodus 15 Moses and the people of Israel join together in a song of praise for God's victory because of their passage through the Red Sea, a song referred to in Revelation 15:3-4. The ten plagues of Egypt and the beginning of Exodus are a source of exciting comparisons with the Book of Revelation. And there is also David's hymn of praise in II Samuel 22 that matches up wonderfully well with the material.

presents the blessing and the curse as two extremes in the same spectrum. He closes his speech (after which he transfers command to Joshua) with the following words: *"I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing, therefore choose life."* (Deut. 30:19) What is that blessing exactly? The Lord will make you overflow with all that is good, in the fruit of your loins, in the fruit of your cattle and in the fruit of your land; on the land that the Lord swore to your fathers He would give to you. The Lord will open the rich treasury of heaven for you in order to give your land rain at the appropriate time and to bless all the works of your hands. (Deut. 28: 1-14) In the curse we find the mirror-image in more or less the same words, but much more detailed (verses 15 to 68): *"The Lord will strike you with consumption, with fever, with inflammation, with severe burning fever, with the sword, with scorching and with mildew (…) And your heavens which are over your head shall be bronze, and the earth which is under you shall be iron. The Lord will change the rain of your land to powder and dust (…) You shall carry much seed out to the field but gather little in."*

The text describes further dark disasters… You will plant vineyards yet drink no wine. You will have olive trees but will be unable to anoint yourselves. Pests will overtake all your orchards and the fruit of your land. And so it goes on with bilious curses. No wonder that these verses have gained little popularity in Judaism. The harvest calendar of joy is mirrored in one of mourning, something that continually comes into the foreground when God's people leaves the right path. Then the abundant blessings of the other calendar are cut short with judgment as the logical consequence. On the other hand we may say that the harvest calendar of mourning is mirrored in one of joy, something that comes to the fore every time when God's people is on the right path or turns from its devious ways.

We recognise this pattern in the New Year's festivities in the month of Tishrei that end in the great Day of Reconciliation or Yom Kippur on the tenth of the month. Typically, New Year's Day is also known as the Day of Judgment. The first and tenth days of this month developed into official days of repentance and in the course of time came to be known in the synagogue as the 'Yamim Nora'im', the fearful and terrible days with, in between, an interlude of peace. How can it then be that the Great Day of reconciliation in Judaism is preceded by fear and feelings of doom – fear that the plagues of Egypt, or worse, will strike the people of Israel? The explanation is to be found in the mirror-imaged alternative within God's plan of creation. The choice is ours. A similar kind of sombre reflection also applies to the weeks leading up to Whitsun (Shavuot), which are spent in semi-mourning. The Jewish wise ones do not actually know precisely why. Coincidentally it would seem that Shavuot is also the exact day on which the beginning of the handing over, from Heaven, of the Horeb laws and prescriptions occurred, which was cloaked in darkness, thunder and smoke. And thus it is here that the start of the covenant saga is commemorated, with all its blessings and curses. If the mourning calendar is in force, it can turn into a festive calendar provided that the requirements of penance and repentance are fulfilled. The festive calendar and that of mourning both turn out to be conditional but not exactly one another's mirror-image, for the Lord is slow to anger and quick to forgive. And, as already pointed out, the Magna Carta of this historical pattern is laid out in the last speech of Moses before the people's entry into the Promised Land. Every judgment can turn into an anti-climax, and that is what in the end will happen, not just for the people of Israel but also for the whole world. Their blessing will turn out to be everyone's blessing – and ours too! [239)]

239) The end of Tishrei 1 might agree with Matthew 24:30 and Tishrei 10 with 2 Thessalonians 2:8. The day of completion of the harvest cycle on Tishrei 22 might agree with Matthew 25:31.

24.101 – Call to Repentance

That the punishments, announced by God, are conditional, is found in the writings of Jeremiah who announced shortly before Judah went into Babylonian exile: (Jer. 18:7-11)

> «« The instant I speak concerning a nation and concerning a kingdom, to pluck up, to pull down and to destroy it, if that nation against whom I have spoken turns from its evil, I will relent of the disaster that I thought to bring upon it. And the instant I speak concerning a nation and concerning a kingdom, to build and to plant it, if it does evil in my sight so that it does not obey my voice, then I will relent concerning the good with which I said I would benefit it. Now therefore, speak to the men of Judah and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem: *"Thus says the Lord: I am fashioning a disaster and devising a plan against you. Return now every one from his evil way, and make your ways and your doings good."* »»

At a later stage the prophet speaks out against Zedekiah, the last king of Judah, who had done wrong in the eyes of God. In addition, the leaders of the priests and the people sinned more and more, practising the horrors committed by the nations, and they dishonoured the House of God that He had dedicated in Jerusalem. Zedekiah refused to humble himself before the Prophet Jeremiah, who spoke from God's mouth (Jer. 38:17): *"If you surely surrender to the king of Babylon's princes, then your soul shall live; this city shall not be burned with fire and you and your house shall live."* Even at this advanced stage of loss of the true belief and in a state of misery, the merciful God, like a caring and loving mother, showed his people a way out of destruction. Judah had already endured great sufferings under two recent invasions, the last involving a major deportation of the inhabitants of Jerusalem. Nonetheless Zedekiah refused to humble himself. And so it happened that Israel was rejected from God's presence, yes, 19 years after the first invasion. Around that time the last small remnant of the people was torn away, thereby issuing in the start of the seventy years of exile.

A well-known example of a king who did listen to God's call to repentance was Manasseh. It would be difficult to find a greater sinner than this man. In Kings and Chronicles it is written Manasseh misled his people to the point that they committed greater evils than the Canaanite peoples that God had driven away for the Israelites. (2 Kings 21; 2 Chron. 33) For he built up the sacred places on the mountains where his father had previously demolished them. He set up altars to the Baals in every part of the land. He offered his children up to Moloch 'the King' in the fires of the Tophet in the Valley of Hinnom. He put his own son through the fire, gave himself up to all kinds of wicked fortune-telling ad magic and consulted exorcists and mediums. He even caused a carven image of Ahshera to be erected in the Temple of Jerusalem. It was only after he had been taken prisoner by Assurbanipal that he returned to God's ways. So we read in 2 Chronicles 33:12-13: *"He humbled himself greatly before the Lord God of his fathers (...) (and God) brought him back to Jerusalem into his kingdom. Then Manasseh knew that the Lord was God."*

24.102 – Prayer 'not' Useless

It is therefore possible that all the disasters foretold in the book of Revelation and there presented to us can change into the opposite if the world repents and turns to God. It is possible – but if it will happen is another question. If you want my personal opinion, I find it unrealistic to expect the world to come to its senses and turn away from its evil paths, thereby changing the calendar of mourning into the calendar of rejoicing and thus enabling us to change every curse of the Apocalypse into a blessing. God in His wisdom has chosen to write the book of Revelation in terms of the calendar of mourning. So

despite its conditional character, we would do well to take seriously into consideration the the events might happen as written. It does seem realistic to me to assume that within the worldwide scenario some countries will be an exception. For that reason a prayer for the conversion of the Netherlands must not be seen as a useless exercise, but to be just as useful as a prayer that the calamities should be lessened once they have come, even if the prayer is only for what happens in our immediate vicinity.

The God of Vengeance

This article is about God's unconditional Love while being called 'the God of Wrath'. Yet it is simple: There is no good and evil God, no separate God for the Old Testament and another one for the New Testament. I cannot shout loud enough: God is Love! Yes indeed, but how do we reconcile that with his fearful judgments? Would God be a ruthless being, vengeful and cruel? Are we going to model God after our own pettiness!? God has an unquenchable thirst for souls. "I thirst!" cried Jesus on the cross wood, but He was especially thirsty for souls. Could God, who made his own Son, the guiltless one, pay for the guilty, be vengeful in our narrow human perception? Is there a contradiction between justice and mercy?

25.103 – The Playing Field

God's judgments on the nations, we are speaking here of judgments through natural disasters, can only be properly understood if we oversee the playing field. On one side stands Lucifer and his henchmen, with God and his angels and saints as opponents - that is us, according to Romans 1:7. It is a special game because the spectators do not have to be mere spectators but may decide at any time to join the game. As with any game, there is a time limit. The Bible clearly indicates that God divides history into periods. Therefore, it is not illogical that God carries out his plan with the world in phases that each time come to an end, such as: *"...for the time has come for the harvest"*. (Rev. 14:15)

In this 'Gottesspiel' (God Game) Camp Lucifer is out to destroy as much as possible, although this is not openly stated. If Lucifer has destroyed the Earth with all of its inhabitants, he has belittled God and has thwarted man's calling.[240)] It is Lucifer who is the real bringer of disasters. God, for his part, can also dispense disasters, but they function in the service of our salvation, and that is what this article is about.

I wish to emphasize that not believing in the essential doctrine of the fallen angels led by Lucifer, and the battle that prevails here on Earth until they have been thrown back into Hell, greatly obscures our view of what is happening here on Earth and opens the door to more heretical ideas. For why then should we not also begin to doubt everything else including in particular a real Millennial Kingdom? Unlike the early church fathers, church teachers and the great reformers, today even many priests and pastors do not believe in 'Satan and his works'. The lack of awareness of what and who the devil is, is a characteristic sign of the age in which we live which is more 'devilish' than ever (Rev. 9:1-3), but in which, through unbelief, we are not on our guard and do not arm ourselves enough through prayer.[241)] The real battle takes place between the demonic powers and God in which the coveted game points consist of souls. We saints are actively involved as 'animarum venatori', as hunters of souls, and the same goes for our adversary.

God allowed demons to be cast down on earth in the context of our free will, which operates in a foggy field. The redemption of our souls, through the acceptance of Christ in repentance and humility, is possible up to the threshold of death, yet not after. If a person has always remained an aloof spectator, at that moment, enlightened by the Holy Spirit, he will throw himself into the arms of the one he loved most during this life, either Satan or God. If he chooses God, at the very last he will ask forgiveness from Jesus with deep remorse. Immediately after that, the fog will have lifted and everything will have become transparent. Then there will no longer be free will, as there was until then, so that Jesus' crossword will no longer apply: *"Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do."*

If in our body inclined to evil,[242)] we could perceive Heaven and Hell, as well as God and the demons, we would choose in favor of God out of well-understood self-interest, not out of love for Him but out of fear of the alternative. Then, however, the exalted position of being one with God could not be realized, as referred to in Jesus' high-priestly prayer: *"...that they may be one just as We are one (Jesus and the Father)."* (John 17:22) Acting out of pure self-interest violates the commandment of love and does not fulfill the saying in the Peter letter: *"Be holy, for I am holy."* (Lev. 11:44, 1 Pet. 1:16) That holiness is required to be able to arrive at divinity, our ultimate destiny, in the sense of supreme holiness and bliss, and that far exceeds anything we can currently hope for and imagine. (1 Cor. 2:9)

25.104 – It's Camp Love versus Camp Hate

The players that the devil gathers, will be fed with hatred. There is so much to hate in this world, for perceived or real evil! And don't forget jealousy. A person consumed by hatred and jealousy will copy the character of Lucifer: pride, hatred and self-love. But the team that is going to win is pre-established. They will overcome them *"by the Blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony."* (Rev. 12:11) The most striking thing is

240) Reports are circulating that the ruling elite (aka the 'deep state government') wants to reduce the world's population by billions. The monumental "Georgia Guidestones", destroyed in 2022, read: "Maintain humanity under 500 million in perpetual balance with nature." But that is a lie, as if the extermination would be limited to that! Indeed, the hidden elite is steering towards a humanitarian holocaust. If they had their way, according to end-time prophecy, "no flesh would be saved." (Mt. 24:22)

241) The Lord's Prayer says "deliver us from the Evil One". That is an exorcism and therefore had to be watered down (under demonic inspiration) to the impersonal 'from evil', thus weakening the exorcism. That mistranslation has been around for quite some time.

242) Romans 8:7 says: "The inclination of the flesh is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the Law of God, neither indeed can be." (cf. Rom. 3:23)

that when calamities come upon the world that it is through the Lamb, that is, through Christ, that these calamities are permitted. (Rev. 6) And this happens every time when a seal is broken. At the last and seventh seal, there are successively seven angels blowing a trumpet as announcements of ever new punishments

After the sixth trumpet it says: *"And they did not repent of their murders or their sorceries or their sexual immorality of their thefts."* (Rev. 9:21) Implicitly, this shows that these are invitations to bring people to repentance, that is, that they defect from the opposing camp or from onlookers become co-players in Camp Love. It does not say that no one converted. Everyone at this pivotal time must decide whether they are going to choose the true worship of God or whether for a pseudo-religion that leads to Hell. A decision is called for. The worship of God is the major theme. Satan has usurped the worship of the Creator and has gotten the churches to stray away from the true gospel; finally the time has come for the restoration.

The Bible says regarding God's punishments: (Wisdom of Solomon 12:8-12)

> «« You sent wasps as forerunners of your army in order to destroy them little by little. It was not that You were unable to give the wicked into the hands of the righteous in battle or to wipe them out at one stroke by terrible beasts or by one stern word, but executing jugdment little by little You gave them an opportunity to repent, though You were not unaware that their origin was evil and their wickedness inborn, and that their way of thinking would never change. For they were an accursed race from the beginning, and it was not through fear of anyone that You gave moments of reprieve for the things in which they sinned, for who will say: "What have You done?" Or who shall withstand your judgment? »»

Don't say that conversion by punishment is impossible. After the tsunami that hit Japan in 2004, the governor of Tokyo called this God's punishment for Japanese selfishness; Shintaro Ishihara is one of Japan's most popular and controversial politicians.[243)] He said: *"Japanese politics is tainted with egoism and populism. We need to use the tsunami to wipe out egoism, which has attached itself like rust to the mentality of the Japanese people over a long period of time. The disaster is a 'tembatsu' - divine punishment - but I do feel sorry for the victims."* He was severely blamed for that statement and later apologized for it. It does testify to the mechanism that kicks in when human beings face calamities.

A distinction must be made between the pre-judgments and the final judgment, as announced in Revelation 11:18: *"The time of the heathen that they should be judged has come, and that You should give reward unto your servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear your Name, small and great; and should destroy them who destroy the earth!"* The pre-judgments are happening when the game is still in progress. Locally, for regions with residents who were already hopeless in God's eyes, final judgments are already occurring as examples of so many Sodoms and Gomorrahs that raise their fingers in warning. Global cataclysms occur after the referee blows the whistle on the game; the players clear the field, the saints are absorbed because their testimony cannot and need not be given anymore. And then, not immediately – to give latecomers still time to repent – the inveterate, who have engaged with demons and are unrepentant, will be thrown into the abyss. The latter is reminiscent of the Aztec ball game in which the losing party was killed.

---

243) Shintaro Ishihara most controversial statement dates back to 1990 when claiming that "The Rape of Nanking" was concocted by the Chinese to make the Japanese look bad. The slaughter of the Chinese and the atrocities committed against them in late 1937-early '38 took place during the 2nd Sino-Japanese War. The Japanese barbarism committed there is beyond comprehension. See: "The Rape of Nanking: The Forgotten Holocaust of World War II" by Iris Chang # 1997.

The rapture, being plucked away or taken up on the clouds, relates to God's judgment through cataclysmic forces of nature as described in Revelation 8, and is a controversial Biblical theme. In 1 Thessalonians 4:15-17 it is written:

> «« We who are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord shall not precede them who are asleep. For the Lord (Jesus Christ) himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God. And the dead in Christ shall rise first (initiating or authorizing the coming of the Antichrist, cf. Rev. 6:1). Then we who are alive and remain behind shall (at one time) be caught up (harpazo) together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air. (But that will be three and a half years later, just before the earth is struck by cataclisms, cf. Rev. 8:7ff.) And so we will remain with the Lord always. »»

Prayer to the Holy Archangel Michael

Holy Archangel Michael appeared Sept. 29, 2011 to Mario d'Ignazio of Brindisi, Italy, while dressed as a warrior. His sword was a fiery flame dispelling darkness on a blue globe, and he said:

"Praise and blessing to the Eternal. 'Little one of the Oak' praise your Lord because you have been called to witness to His holy name in His sanctifying spirit. O you who believe in my help and protection, invoke me often with this prayer I reveal today:

Holy Archangel Michael,
mighty heavenly warrior,
help us with your blessing,
deliver us by your power,
defend us with your heavenly army.

To you we entrust ourselves,
protect us and take us to the highest good.

Holy Michael, our heavenly guardian,
come to our aid and comfort us,
Oh guardian of those who have faith,
fill us with the love of the Father,
the peace of the Son,
and the grace of the Holy Spirit.

My blessing will descend every time you pray my prayer. I will send my angelic hosts to protect your lives and lead you to Heaven, where you are expected at the gates of the holy Jerusalem. I will be your helper and my protection will never cease for those who call upon me and have reverence for me, the Envoy of the Most High, the Angel of Peace."

The rapture occurs just before God's judgment rages on the world, when the testimony of the saints no longer makes sense. God does not want them to suffer needlessly, because *"far be it from you to do such a thing, to put the righteous to death with the wicked, so that the righteous fare as the wicked! Far be that from you! Shall not the Judge of all the earth do what is just?"* (Gen. 18:25) Then the testimony will come exclusively of God's terrifying punitive judgment. It is a Biblical theme: Noah and his were taken up on the water, the people who passed through the Red Sea were taken up on the land, Lot and his on the mountain, and the two more to come (that of the dead first and then the living) will be on the clouds. Enoch and Elijah were taken up – they never died – and have been waiting in an unknown place ever since, only to return near the end to teach the Antichrist a lesson. He will finally let them die a human death because it says in the

Book of Revelation (11:11-12): *"But after the three and a half days the breath of life from God entered them, and they stood on their feet, and terror struck those who saw them. Then they heard a loud voice from heaven saying to them: 'Come up here!' And they went up to heaven in a cloud."*

25.105 – Declaration Day

According to the prophetic testimony of American Ken Peters (Youtube: "I saw the tribulation"), immediately after the resurrection of the dead, the Antichrist will appear on the scene. It will be with great violence a literal rising from the grave punching holes in the ground, followed by a period of extreme chaos, also known as "The Black Awakening". Only after this organized chaos will the reign of the Antichrist begin, who will present himself as the great peacemaker. Only much later, according to Ken Peters' prophecy, will be the rapture of the living. Obviously, the cremated will not participate in the resurrection of the dead, although quite a few churches today have placed a columbarium (urn wall) on their consecrated ground. This does lie in God's omnipotence, but God does not let Himself be trifled with.[244)] The dead will rise to heaven in long brilliant robes, a brilliance that the Antichrist will declare to be the fire of Hell.

When Zechariah 13:8 says that two-thirds in the land of Israel will be wiped out, it will be after the rapture of the living (Mt. 24:30). Perhaps - a bold thought - 80% of the Jews will participate in that rapture because by then and thanks to the Warning, most will have accepted Jesus as their Messiah. So, of the remaining 20%, 2/3rds (or 13% of the original number) will be wiped out. And Zechariah continues: *"The remaining third I (God) will make them pass through the fire; refine them as one refines silver; purify them as gold is purified. Then they will call on my Name, and I will answer them. I will say: They are my people. And they will say: The Lord is our God!"* By then, more and more people will have left the stands to enter the game. The assumption that 80% of Israel will participate in the rapture is not absurd, is even possible. It is clear that while at the beginning of the Gottesspiel the stands were full of spectators with few players on the field, that by the end this will be just the opposite. Thanks to God's acting and merciful intervention, by then the bulk of humanity will have chosen Camp Love while the number of players in the opponent's camp, coached by Lucifer, will have become a pathetic few. This means that the percentage of all of humanity to be swept away in the Judgment of Nations (Rev. 8 and 9) and thrown into Hell, will also be much smaller. The situation now, as I write this, is totally different. So says the Book of Truth about the dying, downright shockingly (Oct. 20th 2012): *"Billions of souls are in Hell already, and there are so many entering every second, that it appears like a shower of fallen stars, like a hailstorm falling into the lake of fire."*

According to the parable of the chaff and the wheat, a separation of minds will be increasingly evident: the middle ground (the spectators) will have almost completely disappea-

---

244) Cremation does not fit within Judeo-Christian practice. The Old Testament sometimes mentions burning as in the case of Achan, but then the bones remained unharmed, whereas cremation also involves the bones turning to ash. In 1 Kings 13 and 2 Kings 23, cremation is prescribed as a punishment. In Numbers 24:8, the pulverization of human bones is depicted as something horrible, as in Micah 3:2. Pulverization and being reduced to ashes by cremation amount to the same thing. By the way, after burning the corpses under the extreme temperature of 800 to 1000°C, the cremated remains go into a mixer to make fine powder. This is hardly uplifting for something that has been the temple of the Holy Spirit, not to mention the Church's condemnation of cremation. Only since the modernistic Vatican Council of the 1960s the Roman Catholic clergy have begun to think otherwise. By 2023, 50-60% of the deceased in most Christian countries were cremated. It is also cheaper than burial.

red by then. By the end, it will have become very clear who belongs to which team, already by their way of walking, but especially by their appearance. According to repeated affirmations in the Book of Truth, we may assume that the majority will have joined Camp Love by then. The following verses relate to this shifting. Mathew 13:30: *"Let both, the wheat and the tares, grow together until the harvest, and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers (the angels, but also the fallen angels): Gather together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them, but gather the wheat into my barn."* And Mathew 3:12 (by word of John the Baptist): *"He has the fan in his hand and will throughly purge his floor. He will gather his wheat into the garner, but will burn up the chaff (zinzanion) with unquenchable fire."* The zinzanion, better known as damel, is a weed that is very difficult to distinguish from the good grain during the maturation process. Only towards harvest time can it be easily recognized and removed.

After this Gottesspiel, the battered playing field will be restored and turned into paradisiacal parks. While the ending was caused by natural forces, the dawn will be miraculous. Obviously, the playing field represents the whole world. And does it say at the end of the penultimate chapter of the Book of Revelation: *"And there shall in no way enter into it anything that defiles, neither whatsoever works abomination or makes a lie: but they who are written in the Lamb's book of life."* And Israel? God will adorn Israel again, give her beautiful clothing, and her heart will be the jewel of a sweet and gentle character.

Interestingly, the punishments follow in crescendo. At the beginning of the disasters, only the faithful recognize God's hand in this, prompting them to witness to the world and pray for it. But they, like Ishihara, are scorned. But as the severity and frequency of the disasters increase, more and more people wake up. This does not happen overnight, because the Holy Spirit is doing its work *"to convince the people of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment."* (John 16:8) The testimony of faithful remains immensely important for the work of the Holy Spirit in order to let it bear fruit. After all, it is thanks to the winged word that people bend their knees. The word, not only of God but also through us, is power and medium of creation.

Do know that the essence of the Gottespiel is supernatural in the sense of paranatural or paranormal, which is different from unnatural. The rising from the dead of Lazarus' stinking and decomposing body was unnatural, that is, something that belongs only to God. All of our Christianity is paranormal - and sometimes unnatural - which is why the Holy Spirit could not come until Christ had ascended to Heaven as a human, as evidenced by the preceding verse of the Gospel of John: *"Nevertheless I (Jesus) tell you the truth. It is expedient for you that I go away, for if I do not the Comforter (the Holy Spirit) will not come unto you. But if I depart, I will send Him unto you."* (John 16:7) Clearly, this was not a logistical announcement along the lines of: 'Go get a donkey for my entry into Jerusalem', for it says *"Nevertheless I tell you the truth".* This plants a red flag, as it were: 'Beware, I am going to say something that counts for all my followers.' The gist of it is that our enemy moves into supernatural realms and can only be fought in its field of action, and this means that he has to be fought with spiritual weapons, that is, those from Heaven. It is something that must take place on its own ground because only then will the victory be one which can be truly crushing.

In the present dispensation, we believe in Christ though we cannot see Him, we believe that as Christians we receive power and wisdom from above, which is also unseen, that baptism is much more than a jug of symbolic water, we believe to consume his Body and Blood though it is in the guise of bread and wine, and we believe to fight against Lucifer and his demonic powers whose worshippers practice heinous blood rituals and occultism. Supernaturally, their heaven-defying practices are kept from being published and remain unpunished, and thus it has all the appearances that this kind of Satanism does not exist. An unmasking is required. Satan's followers seek darkness. Secrecy and

lies are paramount. Their first target is the Christian presence, which is reflected in massacres. Just look at the annals of history. The struggle is first and foremost spiritual. Without exception, the great worldly events are prepared in the spiritual realm, with a run-up that encompasses the generations. Of course, this is also supernatural, for it transcends human organizational ingenuity. As from the time of Christ's ascension there is a war of Christ's saints (assisted by God's invisible angels) against the Satanists (supported by invisible demons). Lucifer is constantly bent on compromising the body of Christ, the Church, and whenever possible he seeks to damage it, if not destroy. The conspiracy has always existed, but never before has it manifested itself so brazenly and criminally. An intensification rages as the end approaches which is heralded with a voice of thunder, signaling Declaration Day (of the Antichrist), described as the rider on the white horse. (cf. Rev. 6:1) Those who placidly remain seated in the pews have no idea of what is taking place and what being a Christian entails. Now is the time not to be mere spectator but to get actively involved.

An unmasking is showing what something really is, showing its true form, an unveiling. It means here, to unmistakably perceive the spiritual domain in our reality, which will be thanks to the unmasking, a perception we would like to avoid. If one knows how and where the enemy is, he can be fought, threefold. After all, God is with us and He too will show his true nature. (Is. 8:9-10) The battle has intensified. Parlor Christianity has had its days (pun on Parlor Socialism). Then the saying applies: *"He who is not with Me is against Me; and he who does not gather with Me scatters."* (Luke 11:23)

Russ Dizdar, living in Canton, Ohio (USA), published "The Black Awakening" in 2009, a remarkable and convincing book. He says in the introduction:

> «« There is a 'spirit' breaking through the veil as never before. Many can feel the ominous, while others have embraced its masked face as something good. (…) Unprecedented levels of deception and seduction are among us and it will only get deeper and darker. The dark side of the supernatural has come through the cracks and its full force is ready to pounce.
>
> As you read this book you will see the term 'chosen one' many times. 'Chosen Ones' are so named because they are 'chosen by Satan' to serve him, who are only those who have come up through old bloodlined Satanism (Luciferianism). They belong to groups that are committed to a coming new order under a supernatural world leader. This group includes the many members who are victim of Satanic Ritual Abuse and soul ripping mind control (a form of brain washing). At the time of this writing they have all been selected, born and raised in this dark system, and are ready to strike. They have split personalities with many subpersonalities (Multiple Personality Disorder). Most of those subpersonalities have been programmed (mind control) and in various ways demonized (possessed). They are highly trained and constantly maintained, so they are always on standby. Chosen people have many capacities and powers at their disposal according to a deeply seated preprogrammed agenda. Believe it or not, they proudly confess that they are the troops of the coming Antichrist, saying that they are here with the task of unleashing hell on earth, as soon as the trumpet sounds, plunging it into chaos such as the world has never witnessed. »»

Dizdar's book deals with the planning prior to the public presentation of the Antichrist and the creation of his army of super soldiers.[245)] The chronology in his book is not quite correct. Instead, it should be as follows: end 2025 will probably be the resurrection or rapture of the dead that is accompanied by the sudden and violent breaking open of the graves and, in a bright light, the rapture of the dead being clothed in white robes. This event kicks off the Black Awakening with, as said, unprecedented anarchy and massacres, with the United States taking the lead. Although the Satanists have been eagerly

awaiting this for a long time, it is Christ who grants permission. (Rev. 6:1) At the end of the anarchy, the 'peacemaker', the Antichrist, appears on scene, which is Declaration Day, a term from Satanism. As for the resurrection of the dead, the acclaimed leader will explain it as a damnation (the bright light would be hellfire). The rapture of the living is much later, although one might think that it is immediately afterwards. The Bible says the living will 'certainly not' precede those who have died. (1 Thess. 4:15) Why make a point of it if both raptures would closely follow each other? The rapture of those who are still alive will signify the end of the abominable reign of the Antichrist, just before cataclysm breaks out as predicted in Revelation 8, which is the Judgement of Nations. And his reign will last, as is generally accepted, for a period of three and a half years. (Rev. 13:5, Dan. 7:25)

How can it be that the Lamb of God gives permission to pour out this frenzy of atrocities, He who is Love itself? What a stupid question, as if our sins do not reach to Heaven, as if the blood of the slain innocents are not crying for revenge? At the same time, if it cannot prevented, punishments can always be mitigated, always, for which the Book of Truth gives Crusade Prayer 6: *"Oh Jesus I pray that God in his Mercy will prevent the Antichrist and his vile army from causing terror and inflicting hardship on your children. We pray that he will be stopped and that the hand of chastisement will be avoided through the conversion achieved during The Warning."*

25.106 – If the Reign of Peace were to begin now…

If the Reign of Peace began now, only a bitter few people would be saved. That is why the game is still going on. No doubt, God still has a few trump cards up his sleeve that will lead to the conversion of many. God's wrath, let's face it God's 'justified' wrath, is wrapped in grace thanks to the prayers of the saints. Now, unlike in the Old Testament dispensation, we can ask for Jesus' help. Although God punishes, He loves the sinner and seeks his salvation. Hell was not created for us, was it? Your wrath, O God, would destroy everything without leaving a trace. The heat of your breath would inflame the earth and turn it into a desolate desert! Therefore, be merciful to us, God, and soften your judgment upon us! I look for light to understand, but darkness envelops the earth. We put all our hope in You. Remember the hearts that rejoice in You and in which You delight! Remember those who believe in You and do not let your hand strike us with force. We and our fathers have sinned. With shame on our cheeks we bow down in the dust before You. Hear our prayer though we too are poor sinners. Fight again with the army of your holy angels the battle of the Lord, as You once fought against Lucifer, the ruler of the proud rebels and his entourage of apostate angels! They did not have the strength to resist You and were thrown upon the Earth. Like the foulest sewage, this evil dragon now pours out its poisonous wickedness, namely, the spirit of lying, ungodliness and slander, the foul breath of unchastity and every form of sin and meanness, on people of corrupt minds and hearts. Bring our prayers before the Face of the Most High, that soon the great mercy of our Lord may come down upon us, upon which the dragon, the primal serpent, who is nothing more than the devil and Satan, will be defeated and cast into Hell, handcuffed with chains, that he may no longer deceive the nations.

Ad finem

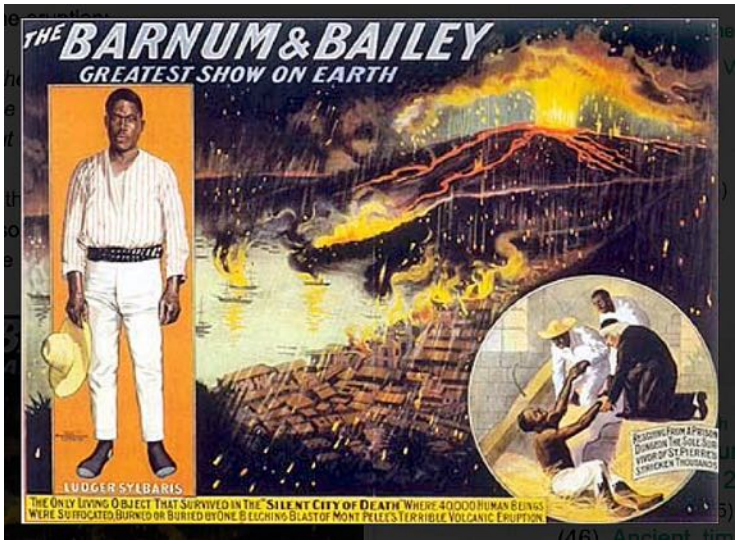
---

245) On page 167 Russ Dizdar writes: "To create, evolve and maintain 4 to 10 million super soldiers will cost billions. To grab control of the banks, the oil, communications-media, government and military and have a plan to seize the world will cost trillions. The evil spirit guided Nazis knew this and they acquired mass amounts of gold and other resources. If you want to know who and where the illuminati are then ...follow the money."

APPENDIX 13

God's judgment on Martinique

In Saint Pierre on the island of Martinique, the carnival of 1902 made fun of everything related to religion. The mayor then decided to hold a procession through the streets, on Easter March 30, with a crucified pig, to which posters were hung. When the volcano Pelée, called the 'old father', began to become active on April 25, people did not see the connection and everyone was lulled into thinking that nothing was wrong, despite the fact that in the days that followed the town was plagued by sulfuric stench and birds dropped dead because of the foul air. The teacher of the local school, a certain M. Landes, reassured the inhabitants as late as May 7, telling them that Saint Pierre had nothing to fear just like Naples, which has nothing to fear from Mount Vesuvius. Then the next day, on Ascension Day, it happened that the volcano exploded in four eruptions in which terribly hot ash and stones fell down in pyroclastic streams. This killed an estimated 28 to 40 thousand people. Some of the original inhabitants had already fled, but their numbers were amply supplemented by refugees from settlements around the volcano and also by others who wanted to cast a ballot on May 10 for the election of a new governor of the island.



Only three survivors were reported: the young shoemaker Léon Compère-Léandre escaped from the border of St. Pierre into the village of Fonds-Saint-Denis, the girl Havivra Da Ifrile tried to escape to a cave near the coast but was washed onto the sea, where she was rescued days later, and 25-year-old stevedore Louis-Auguste Cyparis, who became the best known of the three. He survived in his small prison cell and became known as the 'Samson of St. Pierre' at the Barnum & Bailey Circus where he told his story time and again.

Information about this on the Internet about the religious dimension of this catastrophe is very difficult to find because it is ranked as superstition, but the highly respected South African pastor Erlo Stegen, who has nothing of a bigot, used this as the theme for one of his sermons. Stegen's motto is: *"A revival does not consist of churches that are full of people, but of people who are full of God."* God is still the same God as the God who destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah with a rain of sulfur. But then why doesn't God do that to our world now when our sins exceed those of Sodom and Gomorrah? It is because of the Holy Sacrifice of the Mass through which God looks upon our earth through Christ's Sacrifice of the Cross. Don't be scoffers like those who made Noah's life difficult, for they paid a heavy price for it, as did those of Saint Pierre.

APPENDIX 14

Who listens to the rescue plan?

BOOK OF TRUTH – Message from MDM on September 7, 2012

This Mission can be likened to the rescue of a gigantic ocean liner. Many souls are being warned of danger and told, in advance, of the rescue plan. If they listen they will not only save themselves but the lives of their families and friends.

Many will not listen and say: “What danger?” They will not accept the life rafts because they do not believe the ship will sink. No, they say, this is a false warning, a false alarm. As the time will draw close and the final days become apparent they will scramble everywhere looking for a place of safety. They will run and hide from the explosion, when the mountains will sink into the seas and when the sky will turn like blood but they will not escape.

Those sinners who commit terrible grievances against My Father and who know how black their souls are will be lost. They, who sided with the Beast, will at that stage try to escape his clutches. For it will only be then that the Truth will finally dawn on them and the Light will not be their right. Only the darkness will ease their pain and, yet, it will also bring them relentless terror and suffering.

Never reject the help you need to prepare your souls. You must accept that the wickedness in the world has to be eradicated.

Those sinners, who refuse to change, even after they have been given the Truth of the Word of God, will not survive the final battle. They will be thrown into the lake of fire with the beast and that will not be the end of their suffering. It will only be the beginning.

To those who sneer at My attempts to prepare your souls you will be given every chance to turn to Me. Every attempt will be made to save you. If you do not accept My Hand, the life raft you need to keep you afloat, you will drown in sorrow. Only the prayers of others can save you.

The earth looks like it has done for centuries. The skies look the same. The sun shines like it has always done. The moon looms on a clear night and man still gasps in wonder at the Creation of God. But changes have already begun and to those who are alert I say this: “You know and you sense the change. Do your duty and use prayer so that the eyes of mankind will be opened to the Truth and that the hearts of all will be opened up to the Love of God.”

It will by the Love of God for all his children and the response of his children to his Call that the human race can be saved.

Your Jesus

APPENDIX 15

Dr. Roberto De Mattei about ‘The Judgement of God in History’

The following talk was given on 21 May 2020 at the online Rome Life Forum with several speakers on a number of topics. Food for thought gives Roberto de Mattei’s treatise on whether and how God judges. After all, that judgment of God is denied by many within the Church today, despite the countless statements of Scripture and the continuous Tradition of the Church.

“Terra infecta est ab habitatoribus suis, propter hoc maledictio vastabit terram.” (The earth has been contaminated by its inhabitants; because of the curse, the earth is destroyed.) – Isaiah 24:6. In the era of the coronavirus, everyone is talking about all sorts of things, but there are certain topics that remain forbidden, above all in the Catholic world. The primary forbidden topic is that of judgement and divine retribution in history. The fact of this censure is a good reason for us to consider the argument.

The Kingdom of God and his Justice

We begin not in the Old Testament, where there are numerous references to divine chastisements, but with the very words of Our Lord himself who says to us: *“But seek first the kingdom of God and his righteousness, and all these things will be added to you.”* (Mt. 6:31-33) These words of the Gospel are a program of life for each of us and they remind us of one of the beatitudes: *“Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness, for they shall be satisfied.”* (Mt. 5:6)

The sense of justice is one of the first moral senses of our reason: philosophers define it as the inclination of the will to give to each one his due. The yearning for justice is in the heart of every person. We do not seek only what is true, good, and beautiful, but also what is just. Everyone loves justice and detests injustice. And because the world is full of injustices, and human justice as it is administered by legal courts is always imperfect,

we aspire to a perfect justice – a justice that does not exist on earth and may be found only in God.

The most celebrated trial in history, the trial of Our Lord Jesus Christ, sanctioned the most egregious injustice of all time. But God is infinitely just, because he infallibly gives each person his own justice. The beauty of the universe consists in its order, and that order is the kingdom of justice, because order means putting each thing in its place and justice means giving to each his own: unicuique suum (each his), as is established by Roman law.

The infinite justice of God

The infinite justice of God has its supreme manifestation in two different judgements that await man at the end of his life: the particular judgement, to which every soul is subject at the moment of death, and the universal judgement, to which all men will be subject in body and soul, after the end of the world. This is the faith of the Church: every human being will appear before God at the end of his life to receive either reward or punishment from the Lord and Supreme Judge. For this reason, Sirach says (Eccl. 38): *"Memor est judicii mei, sic enim erit et tuum."* (Remember my judgement if you also want to learn to judge well.)

Father Garrigou-Lagrange explains that in the particular judgement the soul understands spiritually that it is being judged by God, and in that divine light his conscience pronounces the same divine judgement. *"This happens in the first instant in which the soul is separated from the body, for which reason it is true to say that if a person is dead, then that person is also judged. The sentence is definitive and the execution of the sentence is immediate."* [(a)]

The judgement of God is different from that of men. There is the famous case of Raymond Diacres, the esteemed professor at the Sorbonne, who died in 1082. A multitude of people attended his funeral at the Cathedral of Notre Dame in Paris, including his student Saint Bruno of Cologne. During the ceremony, a disturbing thing happened, which was examined in all of its particulars by the Bollandist scholars. The body of Diacres was laid out in the middle of the central nave of the church, covered only by a simple veil, as was the customary practice at that time. The funeral rites began and proceeded to the point where the priest said the words of the rite: *"Answer me: how many iniquities and sins do you have...?"* Just then a sepulchral voice spoke from under the funeral veil: *"By the just judgement of God I have been accused!"* The funeral cloth was immediately taken off the body, but the dead man lay there cold and motionless. The funeral rite, which had been unexpectedly interrupted, was immediately recommenced amid the uproar of the entire congregation. The question was repeated, and the dead man cried out with a voice even louder than before: *"By the just judgement of God I have been judged!"* The terror of those in attendance reached its peak. Some doctors approached the body and confirmed that he was really dead. Amid the general fright and bewilderment, the ecclesiastical authorities decided to postpone the funeral until the following day. The next day the funeral ceremony was repeated, but this time when they reached the same question in the rite: *"Answer me: how many iniquities and sins do you have...?"* The body sat up under the funeral veil and cried aloud: *"By the just judgement of God I have been condemned to Hell for ever!"* [(b)] Faced with this terrible testimony, the funeral was stopped. It was decided that the body should not be buried in the common cemetery. On the coffin of the damned man the words were written that he will speak at the moment of the resurrection: *"Justo Dei judicio accusatus sum; Justo Dei judicio judicatus sum: Justo Dei judicio condemnatus sum."* (The accusation, the condemnation, the sentence – this is what will await the reprobate on the day of the Universal Judgement.)

For this reason, Saint Augustine says in "The City of God": "All those who necessarily will die ought not to worry so much about how they will die as about the place where they will be forced to go after death." [(c)] And this place, we should add, is either Heaven or Hell.

The Message of Fatima opens with the terrifying vision of Hell and reminds us that our life on earth is very serious, because it places before us a dramatic choice: Heaven or Hell, eternal happiness or eternal damnation. According to how we choose, we will be judged at the moment of our death, and the sentence, once it is pronounced, will be unappealable.

The Universal Judgement

But there is a second judgement that awaits us after death: the universal judgement. The existence of a universal judgement that will follow the particular judgement is an article of faith. Saint Augustine synthesizes the teaching of the Church in these words: *"No one can place in doubt or deny that Jesus Christ, as the Scriptures proclaim, will pronounce the final judgement."* [(d)] It will be the Last Judgement, which no one can escape.

In the hour of the Universal Judgement, Jesus Christ, the Man-God, will appear in the heavens, preceded by the Cross and surrounded by hosts of Angels and Saints, seated on a throne of majesty. (Mt. 24:30-31, 25:30) The role of Judge has been given to him by his Father, as Jesus himself reveals to us in the Gospel: *"By myself I can do nothing. I judge according to what I hear, and my judgement is just, because I do not seek my own will but the will of Him who sent me."* (John 5:30)

But why is a universal judgement necessary, since God judges every soul immediately after death and the universal judgement will simply confirm the sentence already given in the particular judgement? Isn't one judgement enough?

Thomas Aquinas responds: *"Every man is a person in himself and is at the same time a part of the entire human race; therefore he ought to have a double judgement: one that is particular, after his death, when he will receive according to what he did in life, although not entirely, because he will receive not as regards the body but as regards the soul; but there must also be another judgement in accord with the fact that we are part of the human race: the universal judgement of the entire human race through the separation of the good from the wicked."* [(e)]

The Angelic Doctor explains, in another passage, that although the temporal life of man ends with death, it is prolonged in a certain way in the future, because he continues to live in the memory of men, beginning with his children. Furthermore, the life of man continues in the effects of his works. He says: *"As a result of the imposture of Arius [who denied the teaching of the Holy Trinity] and other impostors, unbelief will teem until the end of the world; and likewise up to this same point faith will expand thanks to the preaching of the Apostles."* [(f)]

The judgement of God thus does not conclude with death but extends to the end of time, because the good influence of the saints and the evil influence of the reprobate extends until the end of time. Saint Benedict, Saint Francis, and Saint Dominic will merit to be repaid for all the good that their work continued to do until the end of the world, while Luther, Voltaire, and Marx will be punished for all the evil that their works have brought about until the end of the world. For this reason, there must be a final judgement, in which everything concerning each man in any way whatsoever, [which only God can see in consideration of the unrealized deeds], will be perfectly and clearly judged. In the particular judgement each person will judged above all as regards the rightness of inten-

tion with which he has worked [for good or bad]. [When doing good with the wrong intention this shall not contribute to our eternal salvation, and doing bad with a good intention might be meritious.] In the universal judgement, however, his works will be judged objectively, above all for the effects that they have had on society at large.

After the immediate judgement before God at the moment of death, it is necessary that there shall also be a public judgement not only before God but before all men, all the angels, all the saints and the Blessed Virgin Mary, because, as the Gospel says: *"There is nothing concealed that will not be revealed; nothing secret that will not be known."* (Luk. 12:2) It is right that those who have gained Heaven thanks to sufferings and persecutions will be glorified, while the many wicked and perverse people who have led a happy life in the eyes of men will be publicly dishonored. Father Schmaus says that the final judgement will reveal the truth or falsehood of the cultural, scientific, and artistic works of men: the truth or falsehood of the philosophical guidelines, political institutions, and the religious and moral forces that have moved history; the significance of the various sects and heresies, of wars and revolutions.(g) The bodies of Arius, Luther, Robespierre and Marx are already turned to dust, but on the day of judgement their books, statues and names will have to be publicly execrated.

We add that each man is born and lives within a nation, and his action contributes to transform the nations and peoples in which he lives for good or evil, and these peoples and nations will be judged in their culture, institutions, and laws. For this reason the Gospel says that when the Son of Man comes in his glory *"all the nations will be assembled before him. And He will separate them one from another, as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats. And He will place the sheep on his right and the goats on his left."* (Mt. 25:31-46)

Thus the judgement will not be pronounced only over individual men and individual angels. Nations are also called to fulfill the designs of Divine Providence and therefore must conform themselves to the divine will that rules and governs the universe. At the universal judgement it will be revealed if and how much each people has fulfilled the task assigned to them by God.(h) Monsignor Antonio Piolanti writes: *"Reasons of wisdom keep secrets over the course of time, but, in the end, time will have to pour out its treasure before the eyes of the universal assembly. All the masks will fall and the happy Phariseeism will bear the mark of an indelible infamy."* (i) The judgement will extend to all of human history, which will be publicly unveiled to the greater glory of God. It will be the triumph of Divine Providence that over the course of history guides the destinies of men and nations in an invisible and impenetrable way [yet leaving the free will unaffected]. In the presence of this unappealable sentence everyone gathered in the valley of Jehosaphat will proclaim the great verdict: *"Iustus es Domine, et rectum iudicium tuum."* (You are just, O Lord, and your judgement is full of equity.) – Ps. 118:137.

The particular judgement and the universal judgement are the two supreme moments in which the judgement of God is manifested over men and nations. This divine judgement is followed by a reward or a punishment. For individual people, the reward or punishment may apply either during their earthly life or in eternity, but for nations, which do not have an eternal life, the reward or punishment can be applied only within the course of history. And because the universal judgement brings history to a close, in that moment Jesus Christ will not condemn the various nations to eternal punishment, but rather He will open the eyes of all humanity that has been gathered together to see how each nation has been rewarded or punished throughout the course of history according to its virtues or its sins.

It is important to understand that, both for individual men as well as for nations, the universal judgement is the culminating moment of divine judgement, but God does not

limit Himself to judging only in that hour: we may say that He judges from the moment of the creation of the universe [which is the beginning of history]. At a point in history, there is a judgement – the judgement made by God against Lucifer and the rebellious angels – just as at the beginning of creation of man there is a judgement made against Adam and Eve. From that time on until the end of time, the judgement of God does not cease to apply to his creatures, because Divine Providence sustains the entire created universe in being [and other worlds, like Heaven] and directs them toward their final destination. All the movements of the physical world, the moral world, and the supernatural world are willed by God, excluding sin, which can only be created by the free creature.

Jesus says that all the hairs of our head have been counted. (Luk. 12:8) Even more so is it true that every one of our actions, even the smallest, is judged by God. But God is not only infinitely just, he is also infinitely merciful,(j) and there is no divine judgement that is devoid of mercy, just as there is no expression of divine mercy that is without the most profound justice. Perhaps the most beautiful example of this embrace of justice and mercy is given to us in the great gift of the Sacrament of Penance. In this sacrament, in which the sinner is judged and absolved, the priest, who acts in Persona Christi, exercises the judicial power of the Church but also exercises the maternal mercy of God, absolving us of our sins. The justice of God intervenes to reestablish order by means of the penance that the fault merits, and Divine Mercy manifests itself by means of the forgiveness of our sins by which God frees from eternal punishments.

The Chastisement of the Nations

What applies to men also applies to nations. God is not absent from history; He is also always present in it with his immensity, and there is not a point or moment of created time in which He does not manifest his divine justice and mercy over all peoples. All the misfortunes that strike the nations over the course of their history have a signifycance. Their causes sometimes elude us, but it is certain that the origin of every evil permitted by God lies in the sin of man. Saint Prosper of Aquitaine, a student of Saint Augustine, says that *"often the causes of the divine operation remain hidden and only the effects are seen."* (k) One thing is certain: whatever the secondary causes may be, God is always the first cause: everything depends on Him. At this point we should ask ourselves in what way God judges and punishes the behavior of various peoples and nations in history. The response of Sacred Scripture, of theologians, and saints is univocal: *"Tria sunt flagella quibus dominus castigat."* (The Lord scourges with three afflictions.) With war, plague, and famine, Saint Bernardine of Siena explains,(l) God punishes the three principal vices of men – pride, opulence, and avarice: pride, when the soul rebels against God, opulence when the body rebels against the soul, avarice when created things rebel against man. (Rev. 12:7-9, Gen. 6:5-7, Ps. 96:3) War is the punishment for the pride of the peoples, epidemics are the punishment for their luxury, and famine is the punishment for their avarice.

The Signs by which we know that the Divine Judgements are Near

In his Sermons, Saint Bernardine analyses Psalm 119, which says: *"Tempus faciendi dissipaverunt legem tuam."* (It is time for the Lord to act, for they have dispelled your Law.) – Psalm 119:126. In this expression of the psalmist, Saint Bernardine distinguishes three stages:

• Tempus – the time that the mercy of God gives to people to change their ways. In this space of time God offers sinners the possibility of suspending the sentence, revoking the penalty, remitting the offense, or receiving grace. God waits because He desires the conversion of sinners. The time of waiting may be long, but it has a limit. If during this time there is no repentance, punishment is logical and necessary.

• In the second stage, God prepares punishment for the impenitent sinners: a time that is expressed by the words *"faciendi Domine"* (God's active intervention), which summarises, according to Saint Bernardine, *"the bitter revenge and the harsh punishment of God",* if the people do not wish to change their ways.[(m)] The punishment, however, is an act of the Father's mercy. He does not wish the eternal death of sinners but their life, and through the scourges He inflicts on them He still tries to obtain their conversion. It is the time in which the axe is placed at the root of the tree: *"Securis ad radicem arboris posita est."* (Mt. 3:10)

• Stage three commences when the violation is completed: *"dissipaverunt legem tuam"* (they are breaking your law). It is the hour of taking up the sickle and reaping the harvest as the angel says in the Book of Revelation: *"Use your sickle and reap the harvest for the time to reap has come, because the earth's harvest is fully ripe."* (Rev. 14:15)

What are the signs that indicate the harvest is ripe? Saint Bernardine lists seven: [(n)]

1. The existence of many horrendous sins, like in Sodom and Gomorrah;
2. The fact that the sin is committed with full knowledge and deliberate consent;
3. That these sins are committed by the entire people as a whole;
4. That this happens in a public and shameless manner;
5. That it happens with all the affection of the heart of the sinners;
6. That the sins are committed with attention and diligence;
7. That all of this is done in a continuous and persevering way.

This is the hour in which God punishes the sins of pride, luxury, and avarice with the scourges of plague, war, and famine. *"Tempus faciendi Domine, dissipaverunt legem tuam."* (It is time to act, O Lord, for they have violated your law.) Another great saint with a prophetic voice that echoes Saint Bernardine, Saint Louis Marie Grignon de Montfort, exclaims in his "Fiery Prayer for the Apostles of the Latter Times":

> «« It is time to act, O Lord, they have rejected your law. It is indeed time to fulfil your promise. Your divine commandments are broken, your Gospel is thrown aside, torrents of iniquity flood the whole earth carrying away even your servants. The whole land is desolate, ungodliness reigns supreme, your sanctuary is desecrated and the abomination of desolation has even contaminated the holy place. God of Justice, God of Vengeance, will you let everything, then, go the same way? Will everything come to the same end as Sodom and Gomorrah? Will you never break your silence? Will you tolerate all this for ever? »»

Grignon de Montfort wrote these words at the beginning of the eighteenth century. Two centuries later the Blessed Mother appeared at Fatima to announce that if the world continued to offend God it would be punished through war, famine, and persecutions of the Church and the Holy Father (the Pope) and that *"various nations will be annihilated".*

But today, one hundred years after the apparitions at Fatima, three hundred years after the death of Grignon de Montfort, has the world ceased offending God? Is the divine law perhaps less transgressed, the Gospel less abandoned, the sanctuary less profaned? Do we not see sins that cry out for vengeance before the face of God such as abortion and sodomy justified, exalted, and protected by the laws of nations? Have we not seen the Pachamama idol welcomed and venerated even within the holy precincts of the Vatican? Should all of this not be judged by God by now? And should not whoever loves God also love and desire the hour of his justice, so as to respect, as on the day of the final judgement: *"Iustus es Domine, et rectum iudicium tuum."* (You are just, O Lord, and

your judgement is full of equity?) – Psalm 118:137. Why the peoples do not realize that God's punishments are looming over them?

Among Catholics, whenever an affliction happens to a certain people or nation, there are those who say that they do not know if this is a punishment or a trial. But in contrast to trials that befall individual men, evils that afflict nations are always punishments. It may happen that a virtuous man must suffer much in order to be proven in his patience, as happened to Job. The sufferings that individual men encounter in their lives are not always a punishment; more often they are a trial that prepares them to gain eternal happiness. But in the case of nations, the sufferings due to war, epidemics or earthquakes are always a punishment because nations do not have an eternal existence. To say that a scourge could be 'a trial' for a nation does not make sense. It could be a trial for the individual men of a particular nation, but not for the nation as a whole, because nations receive their punishment in the given time on earth, not in eternity.

The punishments of a nation increase in proportion to the sins of that nation. And in proportion to the increase of their sins, the wicked also increase their rejection of the idea of punishment, as Voltaire did in his blasphemous Poem on the Disaster in Lisbon, written after the terrible earthquake that destroyed the capital of Portugal in 1755. The Church has always responded to the blasphemies of the atheists by recalling that everything that happens depends on God and has a meaning. But when it is the very men of the Church who deny the idea of divine punishment, this means that the punishment is already underway and is irremediable. In the days of the coronavirus outbreak [in 2020], Archbishop Mario Delpini of Milan even went so far as to say that *"it is a pagan idea to think that God sends scourges"*. In reality, thinking that God does not send scourges makes someone not a pagan but an Atheist [or rather an agnost]. The fact that this is exactly what many bishops throughout the world think, means that the Catholic episcopate throughout the world is immersed in atheism [or agnosticism]. And this now is sign of a divine chastisement that is already underway.

Saint Bernardine explains that the more the punishment of God draws near, the less the people who deserve it are aware of it.[o] The reason for this blindness of the mind is pride: *"initium omnis peccati"* (the beginning of all sin) – Ecclesiasticus 10:15. Pride darkens the intellect, prevents it from seeing how near the destruction is, and God desires by this blindness to humiliate the proud. With the help of Bernardine we can also interpret a line from the Book of Psalms that was incorporated by Pope Leo XIII in his "Exorcism Against the Rebel Angels": *"Veniat illi laqueus quem ignorat, et captio quam abscondit, apprehendat eum et laqueum cadat in ipsum."* (Ps. 35:8). The free translation of this passage could be: "Let the snare come, the trap he is not thinking of. Let the maneuver he is hiding seize him and let him fall into his own snare of death."

Saint Bernardine says that this passage of the Psalms can be interpreted under three aspects. First, from God's point of view: *"Veniat illi laqueus quem ignorat."* (Let him be catched in a snare that he suspected not.) – Psalm 35:8. The first cause of this ignorance comes from God, who in order to conceal his plans uses epidemics and famines. *"Laqueus est pestis vel fames et consimilia",* says Saint Bernardine: *"The snare consists of plague or famines and such like."*[p] First of all, God takes away the people's guides, not only their political and spiritual guides, but also the angels who preside over nations. God then takes away the *"lumen veritatis"* (the light of truth), which is a grace like every good that comes from God. Finally, God permits the sinful people to fall prey to their own vices, of demons who replace the angels, and of the wicked, who lead them towards the abyss. *"Et captio quam abscondit, apprehendat eum."* (Let the net that they hid ensnare them.) – Psalm 35:10. Once every guide has been taken away from them and also the light of truth, the impenitent people not only do not change when God announces the chastisement, but they actually increase their sins. And this multiplication of sins

augments the blindness of the peoples. *"Et laqueum cadat in ipsum."* (May they fall into their own pit.) The sinful people are unaware of the hour of punishment, which comes upon them suddenly and unexpectedly. The maneuvers with which they attempted to destroy the good turn against them. They are not only punished but also humiliated. Thus the prophecy of Isaiah is fulfilled: *"Evil shall come upon you and you will not know from where it arises. Trouble shall fall upon you and you will not be able to put it off. Desolation shall come upon you suddenly, of unimaginable proportion."* (Is. 47:11)

The Fear of God and Human Terror

When then the chastisement begins, the demon, seeing his plans being upset, spreads the sense of terror among the peoples, the antechamber of despair. The wicked deny the existence of the catastrophe; the good understand that it has arrived, but instead of the wicked seizing the opportunity of their rebirth in Christ Jesus, they are tempted to see in it only the hour of their own ruin. This happens because they refuse to see behind the events the wise hand of God and they chase therefore after the recovery efforts of mortal men. An author dear to the heart of Grignon de Montfort, the Archdeacon Henri-Marie Boudon writes: *"Dieu ne frappe que pour être regardé; et l'on n'arrête les yeux que sur les creatures."* (God strikes so as to be contemplated, but instead of turning our gaze to Him, we turn it to creatures.) [(q)] This does not mean that the maneuvers of the revolutionary forces should not be observed, analysed and combated, but never forgetting that the Revolution is always defeated in history by the self-destructive nature it intrinsically possesses, while the Counter-Revolution always wins because of the fruitfulness of the good which it likewise possesses within itself [a fruitfulness that, of course, is instilled by God].

Atheism [c.q. agnosticism] is the expulsion of God from every aspect of human activity. The great victory of the enemies of God does not lie in suppressing our lives or restricting our physical liberties, but rather in removing the idea of God from our minds and hearts. All human reasoning and philosophical, historical, and political speculation in which God does not hold the first place is false and illusory. Bossuet says: *"Toutes nos pensées qui n'ont pas Dieu pour objet sont du domaine de la mort."* (All of our thoughts that have not God for their object belong to the domain of death.) [(r)] This is true. We can also say that all of our thoughts that do have God for their object belong to the domain of life, because Jesus Christ, the Judge and Savior of the human race, is *"the Way, the Truth, and the Life".* (John 14:6) **To speak of the judgement of God in and over history is therefore not speaking of death but life, and so whoever speaks of divine judgement is not a 'Prophet of Doom' but rather a 'Herald of Hope'.**

Those who today with ever greater force reject the idea of divine punishment are the men of the Church. They reject punishment because they reject the judgement of God, which they replace with the judgement of the world. But the fear of God is born from humility, while the fear of the world is born from pride. To fear God is the highest wisdom: *"Timor Domini initium Sapientiae."* (The fear of God is the beginning of wisdom.) says the Book of Ecclesiastes, which concludes with these words: *"Deum time, et mandata ejus serva: hoc est enim omnis homo."* (Fear God and observe his commandments, for this is everything for man.) – Ecclesiasticus 12:13. Whoever does not fear God replaces the divine commandments with the commandments of the world, for fear of being isolated, censured and persecuted by the world. The fear of the world, which is a consequence of sin, drives men to run away from battle, while the fear of God incites men to engage. A great French author, Ernest Hello, says: *"Fearing the name of God means not being afraid of anything."* [(s)] And Hello also reminds us of a word of Sacred Scripture whose depth we will never succeed in fully understanding: *"Laetetur cor meum ut timeat nomen tuum."* (My heart rejoices that it may fear your name.) – Psalm 85:11. Joy exists only where there is the presence of God, and God cannot be present if

the fear of the Lord is not present. The Holy Spirit says that there is nothing greater than the fear of the Lord: *"Nihil melius est quam timor Domini."* (Eccl. 23:27). The Holy Spirit calls the fear of the Lord the fountain of life: *"Timor Domini fons vitae.*" (Prov. 14:27), as well as jubilation and joy: *"Timor Domini gloria, gloriatio et laetitia et corona exultationis!"* (De vreze des Heren is eer en roem; zij is blijdschap en een vreugdekrans!) – Sirach 1:11. It is this fear of the Lord that leads us to recognize the divine hand in the tragic events of our time and to enter into the battle with tranquil courage.

The Knight, Death, and the Devil

"The Knight, Death, and the Devil" is a copperplate engraving by Albrecht Dürer from 1513. The work shows a horseman with a helmet on his head, armed with a sword and lance, riding on a majestic steed, defying death, who shows him an hourglass containning the timespan of life that is fleeting, and then there is the devil, depicted as a horned animal holding a halberd. Almost seventy years ago, in an article published in the journal Catolicismo of Febr. 1951, Plinio Corrêa de Oliveira used this image to illustrate the clash between the Revolution that cannot go back and the Church that, despite everything, has not managed to triumph. He wrote:

> «« War, death and sin are preparing once again to destroy the world, this time in greater proportions than ever. In 1513 the incomparable talent of Dürer represented them in the form of a knight that is leaving for war, fully dressed in his armour, and accompanied by death and sin, the latter portrayed by a unicorn. Europe, which was even then immersed in the disturbances that preceded the Pseudo-Reform, was heading for the tragic age of the religious, political and social wars that Protestantism triggered off.
>
> The next war, without being explicitly and directly a war of religion, will so affect the sacred interests of the Church that a true Catholic cannot fail to see in it mainly the religious aspect. And the devastation that will be unleashed will certainly be incomparably more destructive than those of the past centuries. Who will win? The Church? The clouds we have before us are not rosy. But they animate us with an unconquerable certainty and that certainty implies that not only the Church – which is obvious, given the divine promise – will not disappear, but in our days it will obtain an even greater triumph than that of Lepanto.
>
> How? When? The future belongs to God. Many reasons for sadness and anxiety appear before us, even when we look at some of our brothers in faith. In the heat of the struggle it is possible and even probable that there will be terrible defections. But it is also absolutely certain that the Holy Spirit continues to inspire in the Church admirable and indomitable spiritual energies of faith, purity, obedience and dedication, which at the opportune moment will once more cover the Christian name with glory. »»

Plinio Corrêa de Oliveira concluded his article with the hope that the twentieth century would be *"not only the century of the great battle, but above all the century of the immense triumph".* We ourselves echo this hope, that extends into the twenty first century, our century, the era of the coronavirus and of new tragedies, but also the time of a renewed faith in the promise of Fatima, a faith that we wish to express with the words that Pope Pius XII addressed to Catholic Action in 1948: [(t)]

> «« You know, beloved sons, the mysterious horsemen of which the Book of Revelation speaks. The second, third, and fourth horsemen are war, hunger, and death. Who is the first horseman on the white steed? *"Its rider had a bow, and he was given a crown, and he rode forth victorious."* (Rev. 6:2) He is Jesus Christ. The visionary-evangelist did not see only the ruin caused by sin, war, hunger, and death; he also saw first and foremost the victory of Christ. And indeed the path of the Church down the centuries is but a via crucis, but it is also in every age a

triumphal march. The Church of Christ, the men of faith, of Christian love, are always those who bring light, redemption and peace to humanity that is without hope. *"Iesus Christus heri et hodie, ipse et in saecula."* (Jesus Christ is the same yesterday, today, and forever!) – Hebrews 13:8. Christ is your guide, from victory into victory. Follow Him! »»

Translated by Giuseppe Pellegrino

Comments by Hubert Luns:

The chapter on the general judgement refers to the effects of the works that continue to have an effect even after someone has died. Saint Augustine speaks of the good influence of the saints and the evil influence of the reprobate. I would like to add that the sin of negligence also plays a role here. Negligence is missing our God-given life mission and missing what was within our power at specific moments in our lives but what we failed to do, which can have far-reaching consequences.

For example, there is the flight crime after a car accident that otherwise might have saved someone, but has now died on the spot. In many instances, only God can see the consequences, also in the long run, of 'doing nothing'. The French say: "Le possible non réalisé ne se discute pas." (The unrealized possibility is non negotiable.) But things are different for God. He can weigh up the realized against the unrealized. Our given talents and the social position reached, incurr a certain responsibility that will be taken into account in the general judgement.

An interesting case of the sin of negligence is not informing someone who is insufficiently aware of a particular situation. Take the case of the softenon drama (thalidomide) that came on the market in the 1950s as a remedy for morning sickness, which at one point was almost as common as aspirin. In pregnant women, it caused miscarriages and children with missing limbs. It is estimated to have led to about 100,000 miscarriages and 10,000 deformed children, of whom many are still alive. Before the drug came on the market, an employee of Chemie Grünenthal had had a deformed child. A hundred employees then asked the director not to market the drug yet and to investigate the effect of the drug on pregnant women – precisely because the trial size for testing a new drug is always small, each serious harm has be taken extremely seriously. Well, these petitions have not been followed up, with disastrous consequences. Financially, however, it was a resounding success.

We might conclude that the employee might as well have done nothing with the knowledge of having a deformed child because of the medication. Well, in that case, that director could have argued before God's throne for his innocence because he was unaware of the negative effects of the drug in pregnant women (only for a short period of time during pregnancy did it lead to malformations, so it was not so obvious). However, in that case it would have made the woman jointly responsible for the catastrophe. His release from guilt would then have been on her shoulders. Another instance of the sin of negligence is when a priest fails to point out to his churchgoers their wrongdoing, pointing out that if they persist, they invoke God's righteousness upon them. How many souls the Pastor of Ars has not saved by pointing at God's righteousness… and forgiveness through confession! Well, that negligent priest will face a heavy judgement for avoiding a confrontation with his churchgoers. Likewise, parents are also to blame for not wanting to correct their children when they should have. Well, the list is endless.

Notes:

a. “La Vita Eterna e la Profondità dell’Anima” Réginald Garrigou-Lagrange (Italian translation) – Fede e Cultura, Verona # 2018 (p. 94).
b. “Vita del Gran Patriarca” S. Bruno Cartusiano – Dal Surio, & altri …, Alessandro Zannetti, Roma 1622 (II, p. 125).
c. “De Civitate Dei” Augustinus (10:11).
d. “De Civitate Dei” Augustinus (20:30).
e. Thomas Aquinas: in IV Sent. 47, 1, 1, ad 1.
f. Thomas Aquinas: in Summa Theologica, III, q. 59, art. 5
g. “Le Ultime Realtà” Michael Schmaus (Italian translation) – Edizioni Paoline, Roma # 1960 (p. 247).
h. Ibid. (p. 248).
i. Antonio Piolanti, “Giudizio divino” in Enciclopedia Cattolica (VI, 951, col. 731-32).
j. “Dieu, son existence et son nature” Réginald Garrigou-Lagrange – Beauchesne, Paris # 1950 (I, pp. 440-43).
k. “De vocatione omnium gentium” Prosper van Aquitaine – Città Nuova, Roma # 1998 (p.74).
l. “Opera omnia” St Bernardine – Ad Claras Aquas, Florence # 1950, Feria quinta post dominicam de Passione (Sermo 46, II, pp. 84-8).
m. Ibid. Feria secunda post II dominicam in quadragesima (Sermo 19, III, p. 333).
n. Ibid. (pp. 337-8).
o. Ibid. (pp. 340-50).
p. Ibid. (p. 341).
q. “La dévotion aux saints Anges” Henri-Marie Boudon – Clovis, Cobdé-sur-Noireau # 1985 (p. 265).
r. “Oraison funèbre de Henriette-Anne d’Angleterre (1670)” Jacques-Bénigne Bossuet – Outhenin-Chalandre Fils, Paris # 1836 (in Œuvres complètes, II, p. 576).
s. “L’homme” Ernst Hallo – Librairie Académique Perrin, Paris # 1911 (p. 102).
t. Discourse of Pius XII on Sept. 12 1948 to the Youth of “Catholic Action” (in “Discorsi Radiomessaggi 1948-1949”, X, p. 212).

APPENDIX 16

Bridget of Sweden
Heavenly Revelations

A telling parable about a magician and his toad,
proving how one's life now, determines
what is going to happen at the throes of death.

Book 1 - 21

Jesus, the bridegroom, spoke to his bride (St. Bridget) with a parable dealing with a toad, exemplifying our lustful soul. He said:

A certain magician had beautiful glittering gold. A simple and gentle man came to him and wanted to buy it. The magician said to him: "You will not get this gold unless you give me finer gold in a greater quantity.' He replied: 'I desire your gold supply so much that I will give you whatever you want, rather than being without.' After giving the magician finer gold (higher gold content) and in greater quantity, he took the shimmering gold from him and placed it in a box with the plan to make a ring of it for himself.

After a short time, the magician came to this simple man and told him: 'The gold you bought and put in your casket is not gold as you think, but an ugly toad raised at my breast and fed with my food. And to prove the truth of this you can open the box and you will see how the toad jumps to my breast where it was raised.' When the man opened the box he found that there was a toad inside; the lid that had been attached with four hinges almost fell off. When the lid was opened and the toad saw the magician it jumped onto his chest. The servants and friends of the simple man saw this and said: 'Master, the fine gold is in the toad and if you want you can easily take the gold.' 'How do I do that?' the man asked. They said: 'If someone takes a razor-sharp heated knife and sticks it into the toad's back, the gold should rapidly emerge from the toad's back where it is hidden in a cavity. If no cavity can be found, the knife should be inserted very firmly into the toad. In this way you succeed in getting back what you bought.'

Who is this magician if not the devil who lures people to empty pleasures and fame? He pretends that the lie is truth and the truth is lie. It is he who holds that precious gold. By this I refer to the soul which, by my divine power, is more precious than all the stars and planets created by Me. I have made this soul immortal and incorruptible and more enchanting to Me than all else of my creation. I have prepared for that

soul a resting place and dwelling with Me. I bought it from the power of the devil with better and more expensive gold, for it was my own flesh I gave for it, free from every sin. I endured such bitter suffering for it that no part of my body was spared. I put the ransomed soul into a body as at a shrine, and it remains there until the time comes for Me to give it a place in the court of my divine dignity.

Nu echter is de vrijgekochte menselijke ziel als een verachterlijke lelijke pad, die in zijn trots springt en wellustig in het slijk leeft. Het goud, waarmee Ik doel op hetgeen mij rechtens toekomt, is Mij ontnomen. Daarom kan de duivel inderdaad tegen hem zeggen: 'Het goud dat je hebt gekocht is geen goud maar een pad die aan de borst van mijn pleziertjes werd grootgebracht. Scheid het lichaam van de ziel en je zult zien dat de pad direct naar mijn borst vliegt waar het werd grootgebracht.'

Now, however, the redeemed human soul is like a despised ugly toad, leaping in its pride and living lustfully in the mire. The gold, by which I mean that which is rightfully mine, has been taken from Me. Therefore, the devil can indeed say to him: 'The gold you have bought is not gold but a toad that was raised at the breast of my pleasures.' Separate the body from the soul and you will see that the toad flees directly to my breast where it was raised.

Now this is the soul of certain people that I will now describe for you. It is like an evil toad full of impurity and lust, which has basked at the breast of the devil. As death approaches, I come to the box, by which I mean the body of the soul. The lid has become loose on four hinges and is about to fall off, in the sense that the four things that support his body, namely strength, beauty, wisdom and sight, begin to leave him. After the soul is separated from the body, it will flee straight to the devil with whose milk it was fed, because forgotten is my love with which I suffered for his sake. Therefore he deserves punishment. He does not answer my love with love, but desecrates my rightful possession.

He owes to Me, who redeemed him, more than anyone else, but he finds more pleasure with the devil. His prayer sounds to Me like the sound of a toad, and how terrible he looks. His ears will never hear my joy. His poisoned way of touching will never feel my divinity. However, because I am merciful, he can still receive my grace if it pleases him, at least if someone touches his soul, even if it is unclean, and considers

whether there is any remorse or goodness in his will. That comes out when someone sticks a sharp hot knife in his mind. By that sharp hot knife, I am referring to my strict righteousness. If there is no remorse or charity in him, perhaps there is still hope if someone urges him to improve and sternly rebukes him, because as long as the soul lives in the body, and that is true of everyone, I am ready with my mercy.

See how I died out of love, but no one pays Me back with love. Instead, they take what is rightfully Mine. It would be fair if people made their lives better in proportion to the pain it cost Me to redeem them. In contrast, in proportion to that same pain, they want to live a bad life. The more I show them how terrible their sins are, the more boldly they want to continue sinning. See here why I am not angry without reason. In themselves, they succeed in turning my goodness into evil. I have delivered them from their sins and yet they remain horribly attached to their sins. So, my bride, give what is due to Me. By this I mean to keep your soul pure before Me, for by my dying I have accomplished that this is within reach.

t

'As Silver is Refined'

An enquiry in the kind and purpose of the great Judgements of the Lord

by Rev. Henk Poot

Henk Poot is pastor emeritus of the PKN (Protestant Church Netherlands) and he is associated with "Christians for Israel", based in the Netherlands. (C4Israel.org) This is an article from his hand in "Profetisch Perspectief" (from C4I), summer 2009, under the theme: 'Is Every Crisis a Judgment?" Posted with his permission.

God's judgments are an expression of God's vengeance. He chastises the nations and punishes Israel. But behind the judgments beats above all the heart of a God who is holy in his Love from which proceeds judgment. God judges when He is offended and hurt, yes, but He punishes precisely and especially because his servant Israel is so close to his heart. In judgments, God also appears to protect his people and to fulfill his salvation plan throughout history. God's judgments mean purification for the worthy and shifting of the chaff, but God is always patient and grants room for persons to repent. God's reign on earth will come, that's for certain. The earth is returning to its origins, the days of old when all things fully complied with God's Will. Since judgment raged on the Son, who bore it in his Crucifixion, the glorious future of Israel, ánd of the world, is inexorable. No evil power can withhold it.

26.107 – At night I cry aloud in Your Presence

The special thing about the psalms is that you also encounter personal experiences there. For example, there is the testimony of the poet of Psalm 119 who sees the distress and worries in his own life as a purifying intervention of God: *"Before I was afflicted I erred, but now I keep your word."* (verse 67) Apparently, God does not judge and punish lightly. Behind his punishments are his love and faithfulness: *"I know, O Lord, that thy judgments are just, and that thou hast afflicted me in faithfulness."* (verse 75) Thus the well-known

Psalm 119 is one great testimony of a man who through the distress of his own life finds God again and now speaks of the riches of his words.

Yet the Book of Psalms is broader. God watches the nations. Nothing passes Him by: *"Would He who planted the ear not hear? Who formed the eye, see not?"* (Ps. 94:9) And sooner or later the wrath of the Lord discharges itself over so much wickedness and pride that unfolds before his eye. He literally destroys those nations and smashes them like pottery. (Ps. 2:9) And yet in that same psalm, God also gives room, room for change and repentance: *"Now then, ye kings, be wise; be instructed, ye judges of the earth. Serve the Lord with fear."* (Ps. 2:10-11) God is also patient, and in the midst of all evil He searches the earth for the righteous ones: *"The Lord looks down from Heaven on the children of men to see if there is one who is wise, one who seeks God."* (Ps. 14:2)

That brings to mind what the Apostle Peter wrote: *"He is longsuffering toward you since He does not want some to perish, but all to come to repentance."* (2 Pet. 3:9) Sometimes that patience of God takes, in our limited notion of time, a tremendous long time. Another psalm deplores God's failure to intervene. Why does He delay so much? Why does He hide his face? Even grim reproaches are directed at Him: *"Thou hast sold thy people at a derisory price."* (Ps. 44:13) Much more often than this lamentation, the poets of the psalms speak in positive terms of their God, who is the God of Israel, watching over his people and He intervenes when they are threatened. He is a shield and a fortress, the p salms say, a judge who stands by Israel's side, a warrior who fights for his people, before whom their enemies flee: *"Yea, Thou shalt make them turn their backs; with the sinew of thy bow Thou dost lay upon their countenance. Exalt Thee O Lord, in thy strength; we would sing of thy strength with psalms."* (Ps. 21:13-14) Thunder and lightning, storm winds and earthquakes belong to the armory of the creator of heaven and earth. The sea must yield to Him and the earth trembles when He makes his appearance, and tens of thousands of angels serve Him. (Ps. 68)

Even regarding Israel, the psalms speak of the judgments of God. Then He chastises his people with the rod and then his burning wrath rages over them. These are the bitterest moments in Israel's existence. It can even go so far that the dwelling place of God, the Temple, is destroyed and abandoned. (Ps. 74:7) And yet, hope always remains. The same psalm echoes the certitude: *"Yet God is my king from of old, who wrought redemption in the midst of the earth."* (Ps. 74:12) Even in one of the gloomiest psalms, Psalm 88, there is the prospect of salvation, a salvation not without a spiritual renewal of the people: *"Lord, God of my salvation, by day I cry, by night I am before your eyes."* That is the basic object of God's punishment: *"Thou hast purified us, as one purifies silver."* (Ps. 66:10) And in Psalm 80:19 it resounds: *"Then we will not depart from Thee. Make us alive, then we will call on your Name."* The Lord does not reject his people forever but wants them to return and live in his sight.

Psalm 78 deals with the history of Israel and shows how his people can hurt their Creator when they marginalize Him, do not put their trust in Him and trade Him in for other powers and gods. The judgment on Israel is profoundly a response from God's wounded love, a love that, and this is truly remarkable, continues to win out. Psalm 89:33-34 says: *"Then I will visit their transgression with the rod, and their iniquity with plagues; but my goodness I will not withhold from them, for my faithfulness I will not deny."* It is this faithfulness and goodness of God that gives room for intercession. Moses is mentioned as one who intercedes for his people to avert God's wrath. (Ps. 106:23) And Psalm 78 speaks of David who led his people as a pious and able king. It so happens that these men are appointed by the Lord Himself, to be in that place for Israel's benefit. And thus, in her darkest moments and greatest distress, Israel can always look forward to salvation. The darkness for his people will never be final: *"My soul waits for the Lord, more than*

watchmen for the morning (...) Let Israel hope in the Lord for with the Lord abides mercy, with Him is abundant salvation." (Ps. 130:6-7)

26.108 – God's Wounded Heart

If you look at the prophets, you will see that here, too, the wounded love of God is the secret of his judgments. The Prophet Isaiah opens with the words: "*Where else do you want to be smitten to not to persist in rebellion?"* (Is. 1:5) He reproaches his people that their hands are bloodstained, That they visit the Temple zealously and in the meanwhile go about their own business. Again, purification is the focal point. The prophet talks about "*the spirit of judgment and a spirit of fire"* (Is. 4:4) that will wash the dirt off the daughters of Judah and wash away the bloodstains of Jerusalem. Idolatry and occultism are at stake. God will display the splendor of his majesty in judgment, so that the idols flee and He will be the only one left. As in the psalms, the ardent zeal of God, his love and compassion for Israel, are the cause of judgment. That these judgments press heavily, is crystal clear. People hide in rock clefts and in the ground to escape God's terror. (Is. 2:10, see also Rev. 6:5) But not always does punishment lead to repentance: *"They will erupt in anger and curse their king and God."* (Is. 8:21) We find the same theme in the last book of the Bible, in Rev. 16:9. But judgment is not only aimed at renewal. It is also meant as retribution. Isaiah 40:2 speaks of the time when Israel *"hath received double of the LORD's hand as a reward for all her sins."*

God's judgment on Israel is not only carried out by the forces of nature but also by its surrounding peoples, being used as a tool in God's hands. But those nations are themselves liable to judgment too. If they rise up against God after their punitive expeditions, mocking the beaten Israel or are needlessly cruel, God's wrath will turn on them in all its grimness: *"I have been inflamed against my people. I have desecrated my inheritance and given it into your power, but you have shown it no mercy. Even on the graybeard your yoke pressed heavily. You said: 'I remain the eternal ruler.' (...) Now then, hear this, lusty one, who dwells so unconcerned, who says to itself: 'It is I and no one else!' (...) Suddenly a devastation befalls you of which you had no idea."* (Is. 47:6-11) "*Shall an axe boast against him who chops with it? Shall a saw boast against him who wields it?"* (Is. 10:15) Then it will be seen that the cup of wrath, which Israel had to drink, will be dispensed to the nations: *"Behold, I take from your hand the cup of intoxication. The cup of wrath you shall no longer drink. I'll place it in the hands of Israel's oppressors, in the hands of their tyrants, who boasted: 'Bend down that we may walk over you. Make thy back a ground, a street to walk upon.'"* (Is. 51:22-23) Then Israel in turn will be an instrument in God's hand with which He judges the Gentiles: *"Behold, I set you up as a sharp, new threshing sledge with double cuts. You will thresh mountains and crush them and make hills into chaff."* (Is. 41:15)

Fierce and harsh is the judgment on Tyre and Sidon, the important trading ports of the Lebanon. With their spoiledness and pride, they are accused of fornicating with all the kingdoms of the world. (Is. 23) These words sound again in the last book of the Bible, in Rev. 17, at the address of the 'harlot Babylon'. Now it appears, even to Israel's surprise, that the entire world politics are so directed by God that everything revolves around Israel's redemption and return: *"For the Lord will have mercy on Jacob (a different name for Israel), for as ever He wants Israel to dwell on its own soil."* (Is. 14:1) Living peacefully again, at last, they will be given a pivotal role in the the Reign of Peace: *"In those days ten men from all the languages of the nations shall seize the slip of one Jewish man, hold it, and say: 'We go with you, for we have heard that God is with you!'"* Great kings, like the pagan Cyrus, turn out to be servants of God, the man who ordered the Temple to be rebuilt. (Is. 45, Ezra 1:1-45) Not least, we see that God Himself fights for his people. He appears as a hero, who drenched his robe in the blood of Edom, the jealous tormentor of Jacob. (Is. 63) God does such great deeds for his people that

they evoke memories of the time of creation and the exodus. (Is. 51:9-10) Whatever weapon is thrown into battle against Israel, it will be to no avail. (Is. 54:17) God's heart, once so hurt, again sets itself with overwhelming love and power for the salvation of his beloved people.

The picture outlined is overwhelming when Isaiah's prophecies break through to the eschaton, to the final events of salvation history. The vengeance and retribution that God brings overflow into total redemption: *"Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened and the ears of the deaf unblocked."* (Is. 35:5) It is the time when nature returns to the days of a perfectly accomplished creation, the days of a spiritually reborn Israel: *"For I will pour water on the thirsty and streams on the dry. I will pour out my Spirit on your offspring and my blessing on your descendants."* (Is. 44:3) In that glorious future, the nations will no longer threaten the land of Israel and its people, but will seek connection because of their mighty God: *"They will plead with you: 'Only with you God abides, and there is no other, no other God.'"* (Is. 45:14) Even the nations are purified: *"For when thy judgments fall upon the earth, the inhabitants of the world learn righteousness."* (Is. 26:9) But not only for purification. It is also wrath, anger at so much injustice and so much blood shed: *"For behold, the Lord abandons his place to visit upon them the iniquity of the inhabitants of the world. Then the earth will bring to light all the blood shed and no longer dissimulate her downtrodden."* (Is. 26:21) Then God's children, who dwell in Israel, will be exhorted to go into their inner chambers until the cup of God's wrath has been poured out.

As in the psalms, Isaiah's prophecies point at a mediatorial figure (who acts on behalf of) as well as a king who will lead the people in a new way. Poetically he Messiah and the messianic age are circumscribed. Thus in ch. 11:6-9, the famous words ring out: *"Then the wolf shall dwell with the lamb, the leopard will lie down with the goat (...) one shall do no evil nor cause destruction in all my holy mountain."* But it should not be forgotten that first it says: "*He will smite the earth with the rod of his mouth, and with the breath of his lips slay the wicked."* (Is. 11:4)

An impressive chapter is Isaiah 53, which portrays in poignant language the suffering servant of the Lord. The question is who is meant by this servant. Some believe it refers to Israel. She is the figure from whom everyone turns away, as the man of sorrows, despised and abandoned by men. Her sufferings in exile is not merely punishment and purification. Her sufferings, thus described, is counted by the Lord as an atonement for the nations. Most Christians point here to the person of Jesus. He is the lamb led silently to slaughter. Perhaps Israel and Jesus should not be played off against each other, for both interpretation are correct. Israel's election also means the calling to suffering in this world, in the shadow of its King, God's Anointed One. It is He who fulfills this calling to the utmost by also bearing the sins of Israel herself while at the same time being Light to the nations. Realizing this, a new light falls on God's punitive judgments. Ultimately, God will so stand on the side of his people that, in Christ, He will mitigate judgment in such a way that his plans with all who belong to Israel can be accomplished, for she is no longer hindered and endangered by her sins. This brings us to Ezekiel, whose voice explains like no other Biblical prophet the radicality of God's judgments, but he expounds also his love and faithfulness.

Here, too, the passion of God resounds. Outraged, the Lord leads the Prophet Ezekiel around his sanctuary where people manage to worship the strangest idols: *"Son of man, He said to me, do you see what the elders of the House of Israel are doing in the darkness, each at the shrine of his own idol? For they are saying: 'The Lord does not see us. The Lord has forsaken the land.' Again, He told me: 'You will see them committing even greater abominations.'"* (Ez. 8:12-13)

Judgment comes with the plague, famine, sword and exile away from Israel. It will be carried out by the wickedest nations. (Ez. 7:24) *"It shall come to pass, and I will do it. I will neither cease, will neither spare you nor show pity. According to your trade and walk you shall be judged, declares the Lord God."* (Ez. 24:14) And yet, remarkably, there is room here for a new beginning. Judgment speaks of a remnant who remains, who will be focussed on God and show disgust with their ways of old. (Ez. 6) Thus, the judgment is not only vengeance but is also aimed at cleansing and purification.

But clearly the new future begins with God. The call to repentance is hushed with Ezekiel, for God is exercising vengeance on the enemies who oppressed his people and smiled smugly when judgment came upon Israel. (Ez. 25:6) He makes Egypt one of the most insignificant countries on earth so that Israel, at any rate, no longer needs to seek her assistance. He reconciles and restores. God continues to remember his Covenant even though Israel had broken it. (Ez.16:60) He cleanses his people and gives them a new spirit. When it comes to redemption, the Lord shows Himself sovereign. He can delay or shorten salvific judgment. He determines the times and occasions. (Ez.11:28) He brings the valley filled with bones and skulls back to life. He brings his people back from exile and restores his Temple in the midst of Jerusalem and, as the good shepherd, He will pasture the sheep of his flock on the mountains of Israel. He does so in the face of the world as his reputation as the God of Israel is at stake. He will show Himself the Holy One in the midst of his people and before the eyes of the world, so that all will recognize that He alone is God and no other (Ez. 39:7-8). Then the time will have arrived that God will bring to the scene the shepherd king of the end times, the new David who, as the Great Monarch, will be sovereign forever, but foremost of Israel. (Ez. 37:25)

Great emphasis is given to the judgment of Gog and Magog, which with the numerical value of seventy symbolizes the fullness of the nations. (Ez. 38-39) When Israel has returned from exile, the nations that then rise against Israel, and implicitly against God, will be targeted with pestilence and blood, with hailstones, fire and brimstone. It will take seven months to cleanse the land of its corpses! (Ez. 39:12)

26.109 – From the Perspective of the New Testament

In Matthew's Gospel, the judgments of God center on the imminent coming of God's kingdom. With the coming of Christ and the preaching of John the Baptist, and later the apostles, the preparation for life in the coming age is in full swing. God's judgment brings a shifting and purifying. It is about trees not bearing fruit and being cut down, about houses not withstanding the coming storm and rain, about fish being hauled up from the great sea. It is about women grinding flour, where one will be accepted during this activity and the other left behind, when the angels gather the elect from the four winds (Mt. 24:31,41) [which is another image of the rapture described in 1 Thess. 4:15-17]. And yet there again we see God's great patience. Jesus walks along the edges of the people and draws in those who others say are left out. God allows weeds to grow up until harvest. Therefore, caution is required. People may turn out to be different than they seem to be. (Mt. 13:24-53) Only when the net is full will it be pulled up. (Mt. 13:47) Chapter 25 speaks of the final judgment of the nations. It is notable that they are judged on the basis of their attitude toward the Jewish people and the followers of Jesus, who so identifies with them that harboring them is equivalent to harboring Himself. And in all this, again, the sovereignty of God is an important concept: He is able to shorten the times if the opposition to the coming of the kingdom of God and the tribulation of God's children becomes so great and extreme, so that the elect might fall. (Mt. 24:22)

What becomes apparent in Matthew's Gospel is that the adversary is doing everything in his power to thwart God's plans. The discourse on the last things of Matthew 24 speaks

emphatically about tribulation and a general denial of God. The days of Noah will return and the perseverance of believers will be severely tested. The latter is also one of the major themes in the last book of the Bible, the Book of Revelation, also known as the Revelation of John. This book focusses on the new David: *"I, Jesus, have sent my angel to give you this testimony for the churches. I am the Root and the Offspring of David, and the bright Morning Star!"* (Rev. 22:16) The Lion from the tribe of Judah, the Lamb who was slain and lives, is the ruler of the end times. He alone is able to break the seals of the Bible scroll so that the last things actually will have their course. He is the one who leads the heavenly armies in the final offensive against the devil and the nations of the earth who have been subjugated by him. Many of the elements we saw with the Old Testament prophets come to the forefront, but in our time in a different setting, it is Christ Himself in guise of David who plays the leading role in the finale of the salvation history. To Him is given all power and He detains the keys of death and Hades. (Rev. 1:18) In the letters to the churches, quoted at the beginning of Revelation, the congregation of faithful is admonished to return to the essential values of life and not to exclude God. If they refuse to do so and sink into lukewarmness and half-heartedness, judgment is imminent. But here, as with the prophets, God's heart beats: *"All whom I love I rebuke and chastise; be diligent, then, and repent."* (Rev. 3:19)

Yet the judgments in the Book of Revelation are primarily directed at God's adversary, who in the last days throws off all masks. In the form of an anti-godly trinity, the devil, along with the Antichrist and the False Prophet, makes a final attempt to thwart Christ's future. But the Lamb retains control. The apocalyptic horsemen do not storm in until He has unlocked the scroll. Apparently, all this must come to pass; each facet thus has its place in the historical development that rushes toward global salvation. Here we see the perseverance and faith of the saints. (Rev. 13:10) Now evil is avenged. How could what is happening on earth and what is being done to Israel and Jerusalem go unpunished? It is not only the final offensive of Satan that afflicts the earth, also the vengeance of the Lamb reveals itself: *"And they said to the mountains and to rocks: 'Fall upon us, and hide us from the face of Him who sits on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb, for the great day of their wrath is come and who shall be able to stand?'"* (Rev. 6:17) *"The blood of all God's children is now being avenged."* (Rev. 6:10)

The Revelation of John informs us that believers will be preserved. Yet it is no safeguard against the great tribulation that the evil one inflicts on God's children. Revelation 7 presents the martyrs coming out of that tribulation, having cleansed themselves with the Blood of Christ. Being preserved does not mean that the children of God will not suffer and die, quite the contrary. Revelation 13:7 tells of the Beast waging war against the saints and overcoming them. As a foretaste of things to come, Jerusalem fell, the Temple was destroyed and many Jews were slaughtered. This was witnessed by the seer John himself. He witnessed this around the year 70 during the First Jewish War. Unfortunately, many calamities would follow. But those horrors do not have the last word. Those who die and do not love their life above all else will be more than victorious thanks to the Blood of the Lamb. When heaven opens to the Apostle, he sees them on Mount Zion, standing around the Lamb. (Rev. 14)

Before the wrath of Christ unleashes itself fully upon the earth, the last book of the Bible speaks, as a strong encouragement, of a sealing of all who belong to God: *"And the angel said: 'Bring no harm to the earth, nor to the sea, nor to the trees, until we have sealed on their foreheads the servants of our God.'"* (Rev. 7:3) But after persecution, the divine judgment on the nations and their restoration, comes a reward for God's faithful followers. In the letter to the church at Tyatira, Psalm 2 is applied: *"He who overcomes and keeps my works to the end, to him I will give power over the Gentiles; and he will shepherd them with a rod of iron, as earthenware they will be crushed (if disobedient)."* (Rev. 2:26)

Evidently, God reigns supreme. Judgment comes upon the earth when time is deemed ripe by Him. God's judgment enters history when the number of those who will die as martyrs has been made full. And God will exercise judgment with the ancient weapons: the forces of nature. Hailstones are cast upon the earth and fire: *"And the second angel blew the trumpet, and there was cast into the sea something like a great mountain burning with fire, and the third part of the sea became blood."* (Rev. 8:8) The third part of the earth burns, the sun darkens, and locusts swarm over the world. The judgment is so hideous that in desperation people will seek death but will not find it. (Rev. 9:6) Even the angel of the abyss, Apollyon, must contribute to the torment of those who do not carry the seal of God. And yet there is still room for repentance, still time to turn to God: *"And those of the people who were left, who were not killed by these plagues, yet did not repent of the works of their hands."* (Rev. 9:20)

A special place in the Apocalypse occupies the city of Babylon. Her judgment is described with words that are echoed by the prophecies about Tyre and Sidon and Nebuchadnezzar's Babylon. Babylon is the arrogant harlot who, cloaked in wealth and opulence, seduces the world with her devilish tricks. She is drunk with the blood of the prophets and saints, yes of *"all who have been slaughtered on earth."* (Rev. 18:24) Initially, the great Babylon in this prophecy must have pointed at the city of Rome, Rome which, in the year 67 AD, advanced with its army of 60,000 soldiers under General Vespasian, conquered Jerusalem after a long siege and destroyed its Temple. It was a war in which over a million Jews lost their lives. But Babylon is more, much more: *"The woman whom you saw is the great city, which has kingship over all the kings of the earth."* (Rev. 17:18) This characterization shows who she really is: the power that competes with the *"ruler of the princes of the earth",* as Christ is called in the salutation of Revelation, first chapter. Before she finally finds her end in the course of history, she will show herself again and again in ever changing forms. Maybe in these days as the arrogant world society that does not care about Christ, demonizes Israel and persecutes or marginalizes the true Christians.

In the finale, heaven opens and Christ is seen descending with the heavenly armies. Following the very last judgment, now of each individual, the Millennial Reign of Peace dawns. All the dead then appear before the Throne of God, the great and small rise, and listen to what is written about them in the books, including what is written in the Book of Life. With that, the words of God come to an end. The earth is finally back to where it began: the days of creation, paradise, when, in our world, sin had not yet made its appearance and God and Man conversed as each other's equal…

Note: For the purposes of this article, a selection of texts from the Psalms, the prophets Isaiah and Ezekiel, the Gospel according to Matthew and the Book of Revelation were chosen primarily, but the themes covered are in many more places in the Bible.

The Sleepwalkers: about Abortus Provocatus

Diabolical behavior, being possessed by ghosts, dementia, or just a certain misunderstood talent. Who will say? Sleepwalking has puzzled generations of scientists, but the mystery remains. Although sleepwalking behavior has been mapped, the fundamental questions remain unanswered. This title was chosen because Europe's spiritual vacuum, expressed in the abortion industry, can be observed, but never fully understood. And that is what demands our attention here.

27.110 – The Apostasy

Europe is now, in 2017, in deep crisis. That is easy to see, but who cares? Already the Prophet Isaiah laments in chapter 22 of his book:

> «« And in that day the Lord God of hosts called for weeping and for mourning, for baldness and for girding with sackcloth. But instead, joy and gladness, slaying oxen and killing sheep, eating meat and drinking wine… »»

I find the prevailing indifference more frightening than the demise of society. Or can we say that the two go hand in hand? The apostasy of faith, the abandonment of all values except those one sets oneself, is a sign of this decline. A 'value'less person does not want to defend the nameless pauper. It takes an ideal to defend something outside of oneself, to fight for it and to be engaged. The 'value'less person is mainly concerned with himself, has no concern for his neighbor, but is not unwilling to give the dime for the collec-

tion bag. It is the spirit of lies and deceit that prevails in that human being in a held high surrogate love. The rhinoceros on its way to extinction has priority over the unborn little child. Eventually such a person turns his back on the Christian faith.

Church going is dwindling, for many years. This can be statistically substantiated. Only 14% of the Dutch still believe in a Christian God, according to a survey: "God in the Netherlands 2016". And the church is ageing: three quarters of the adherents of the Protestant and Catholic Church together are over 40, and half of that over 60. Yet, if you look closely at the numbers, there are also positive signs. For example, the liberal and Pentecostal churches appear to be 'vital', because half of their members are younger than 40. But these are exceptions. The same picture emerges from other research, such as from the renowned Catholic Social Church Institute in the Netherlands (the Kaski), which shows that a sacramental crisis is raging in the Roman Church. If one compares the figures between 1986 and 2016, then, in those thirty years, the number of baptisms in the Catholic Netherlands fell by 80%, the first communion by 70% and the number of confirmations by 94%. There was on average about one churchly ordained marriage per year and per church building! Those are numbers that will blow your mind. According to the CBS (Central Office of Statistics), in 2015, exactly half of the adult population in the Netherlands belonged to a religious denomination or ideology. In 2016, only one in six still regularly (i.e. at least once a month) attended some church service, mosque or other religious gathering. The congregations with frequent churchgoers (more than 30% of the Dutch population) can be found in the congregations that traditionally form the so-called 'Bible Belt'. This is an almost continuous strip that runs from Zeeland to the north of Overijssel, so diagonally across the country. It is like a festering wound. It started with the priests. As the Dominican Professor van der Ploeg noted in a series of articles on Theological Modernism (Catholica Feb/Apr 2003): *"There is an old Latin proverb 'Omne malum ab clero' – all evil comes from the clergy."* Unfortunately. Around 1970, the Kaski conducted a survey among the priests in the city center of The Hague. And what turned out? For almost everyone – the exceptions were so rare that they were not recorded – God had ceased to have meaning in their lives; He had become little more than a name far off on the horizon. How does the priest sees himself? He sees himself as a glorified social worker, something that the Belgian Archbishop Jozef de Kesel agreed to in an interview, when appointed in 2015. And then we have the as always combative Pastor Mennen. In his public response to a reprimand from Monsignor Hurkmans, in mid-2009, he responds:

> «« In the forty years that I have been a priest, there have always been priests within the normal church community who have been able to propagate their heretical teachings and their deviant church views without restraint, and who have also been in a position to win over believers to their views through ecclesiastical chairs and pulpits. I simply have to say that there was a total absence of ecclesiastical supervision. (…) Everyone could go about their business undisturbed, with all the disastrous consequences for the Church. »»

27.111 – The 'Zeitgeist'

A characteristic aspect of sleepwalking, and the dream stage that precedes it, is that the person thinks he is in unadulterated reality. For example, undersigned once had a dream in which he wondered whether this was the reality, on which he concluded (in his dream): "This is not a dream, otherwise I would not wonder whether it was a dream." Crooked thought, but in this way the illusion was maintained. Maybe, you recall the brutal rape and murder by an Afghan Muslim migrant, in October last year, of 19-year-old Maria Ladenburger, the daughter of a senior EU official. The 17-year-old violent offender entered Germany illegally in 2015, and had previously been involved in a brawl, but because he was an 'unaccompanied minor', he was not allowed to be deported

from the country. The victim's father requested not to bring flowers to the funeral but instead to give money to an organization that demands that asylum seekers no longer be forcibly deported, if any. What people do to maintain their illusion! This is reminiscent of a sleepwalker, because when brutally awakened, violence can result for the simple reason that not all parts of the brain wake up at the same time. The 'brain lobes' that awake first are in control of the survival instincts. Next, the rationally thinking parts will become active, which slows down the impulses. Was this high official being brain-washed or was it some kind of conspiracy? I don't think so. He was, as concerns this aspect, sleepwalking, and did not want to be woken up brutally.

Thou shalt not kill

You know that I have forbidden you to kill, you generation of men ! If you say that you belong to Me and are a part of my Church and preach against killing, how is it that you kill? How dare you think to be right; how can you maintain your innocence before Me on the Day of Judgment as your crimes against the unborn continue to pile up ? From Heaven I see terrifying images. Ah ! How much I suffer when I see how the womb that lets this child evolve, refuses it and sends it to a nameless death, even without regret; the womb that formed it does not want to remember it. To these I say:

> «« You may sharpen your sword, but the weapon you have prepared will kill you. Now you are not pregnant with a child but with vice. You are going to receive Resentment and give birth to Misfortune. You dug a pit, deepened it, only to fall into your own trap! Your malice will return to your head, your violence will return to your own head. »»

Free translation of Psalm 7:12-16 cf. Vassula Ryden in her discussion of the Ten Commandments (August 5-29, 1990, Rhodos)

I explain myself further. Take Frans Timmermans, first vice-president of the EU Commission. In his speeches, he calls for acceptance of the diversity of Europe, resulting from the migration of people who have newly settled with us (nicely worded). He ordered members of the EU Parliament to accept multicultural diversity as a fait accompli, "IN EVERY INDIVIDUAL NATION AND EVERY PLACE ON EARTH!" (he went on a rant). "The former European culture is a social construction, it never existed", according to Timmermans. Now it comes: he got an ovational round of applause.[246)]

It seems that the people have an antenna on their head through which they imitate what 'der Zeitgeist' whispers to them. We Christians also have such an antenna, which, as it should be, is tuned differently. The Russian writer Tolstoy believed that leadership, like so many other things, responds to the Zeitgeist, or the general beliefs, ideas, and spirit of a time and place, and that it is therefore the product of the salient environmental factors.[247)] It is therefore not the character of the individual or his ideas that determine his leadership position, but it is the social conditions of a period that are decisive, over which the individual, even the newspapers, have no real influence. We saw that with the presidential election of Donald Trump. His victory over Clinton would be a Russian conspiracy! If it's not my mother-in-law, it's the Russians! But no, it is the Zeitgeist that is just as unpredictable as sleepwalking.

246) Source: Gesteuerte Massenmigrationen, Völker im Experimentierkasten, by the Institut für Strategische Studien Berlin (ISSB e.V.), published by "Die Freie Welt (Die Internet- & Blogzeitung für die Zivilgesellschaft)". See: Youtube "Europe will be diverse, or war! - Frans Timmerman", 29 March 2016.

247) According to Wikipedia, with reference to "Group Dynamics" by Donelson R. Forsyth - Wadworth, NewYork # 2009, 5th edition (ch. 9).

It is this ever-changing Zeitgeist that makes it so difficult to judge history. The rule is that we should never judge the past from the present, but only from the contextual time conditions. We can only properly estimate the past from "der Sitz im Leben", another German term that the English have adopted. This concept originated from the textual criticism of the German theologian Hermann Gunkel (1862-1932), but is by no means limited to theology. It goes beyond empathy. Der Sitz im Leben is the appropriation of the Zeitgeist, which in some cases is an almost impossible task, especially if it concerns a culture that is far removed from us in time and distance. Der Sitz im Leben is comprehensive while Zeitgeist focuses on the dominant views within a particular group, and is in fact a Hegelian concept.

The world is sick because of emptiness of morals

Today we are witnessing a great corruption and degradation of human society. The family is looked down on along with the sacredness of marriage. It is incomprehensible to see the pleading of many for euthanasia, pornography, prostitution, same sex marriage... With these we are undermining our future, and are heading towards our destruction.

The spirit of Modernism, secularism and relativism increase all the more. The antichristian vision of the world is ever more present. What is going on in Europe? All Christian roots are being removed from society. Almost the whole world becomes sick because of emptiness of morals. It can be rightly said that the demon of immorality is collecting its tribute. There is an artificially produced 'moral panic'. The pornographic industry in Europe is earning € 2400 every second! Every year it earns over € 75 billion. In Europe, around 30% of pregnancies end in abortion. Every year 43 million innocent unborn children are murdered worldwide, 82 every minute! Is it not a crime of our modern society? Is not human life sacred? The basic human right, and the divine right, is the right to life. Today the liberals talk widely on liberty, but what is liberty without respecting basic values and human rights? We all agree on this: man was never more insecure, more anxious and worried, unsatisfied, more sinful and sick, never in greater misery and torment than he is today.

From Father Petar Ljubicic's message – Medjugorje, Nov. 28, 2013
On the occasion of the 28th anniversary of "The True Life in God" by Vassula Ryden

27.112 – We don't lose sleep over that!

Who, in later generations, will be able to understand our attitude towards abortion? The due care required by law is a joke. You are not going to ask a car salesman to urge the customer not to buy a car! And as for the social services, they promote abortion as the obvious solution to the 'problem' (the law says there must be an emergency). Who will later be able to put themselves in our present conditions? Later, people will be surprised to learn of what is happening now. What is most astonishing to me is that abortion is no issue any more in Western Europe, and neither is it an issue during the election campaigns. Neither priests nor pastors bring this up, even during the commemoration of Herod's infanticide (I speak from personal experience; there are always exceptions). I have never heard praying for those little children during Holy Mass. Says the gospel: *"A voice was heard in Ramah, lamentation, weeping, and great mourning: Rachel weeping for her children, refusing to be comforted, because they are no more."* For these children there was weeping! Our present victims are being disregarded. The Dutch rhymed psalm reads (31:13): *"I am as one by death beset, out of sight and mind. No comfort can I find. Oh God, who needs me yet? I am by all forgotten, thrown out like something rotten."* A wave of indignation went through Europe because of the miserable scene of the three-year-old migrant child, who was found dead at the Turkish seashore. But what happens

in the abortion industry no one seems to care about. However, for many women, ensnared by the act of abortion, the conscience gnaws – it's called PAS, or post-abortion syndrome, because at the time many were oblivious to what they were doing.

Late-term abortion is now legalized in many countries or is up for vote. Did you know that in the case of a late-term abortion, the little child must first be torn apart? There is the sensational case of the late-term abortion by Dr. Abu Hayat in New York State in Oct. 1991, during the abortion of Rosa Rodriguez, who was 22 years old; the abortion was stopped because Rosa started screaming loudly for him to stop. A few days later, Ana Rosa was born in healthy condition, but was missing her right arm because it had been ripped off. That same doctor, also in 1991, managed to walk away during an abortion because the extra $500 could not be coughed up by husband David Molse. Because parts of the aborted child were still in Marie's womb, she almost died due to the infection that followed. Since late-term abortion was still banned (now extended to 24 weeks), Hayat was sentenced to 22 years in prison.

Hillary Clinton made it an issue in her 2016 run for the presidency to allow abortion throughout pregnancy, even at birth, on the grounds that it is the mother's 'right'. She defended this position during the third and final presidential campaign debate on tv. In 2015, during the general political reflections in the Dutch Parliament (Tweede Kamer), D66 leader Alexander Pechtold answered Kees van der Staaij, the leader of the orthodox religious party, the SGP: *"Then dare say it is murder. But then you'll find me against you, for it is not murder. It's the woman's right!"*

A partial-birth abortion is applied at the time of birth: When the pregnancy comes to an end, a partial birth is promoted by means of 'dilatation and extraction', which was banned in the US in 2003. But Clinton wanted to legalize it again, and its proponents are still very active today. The horrifying procedure is as follows: the baby is pulled out of the womb until only the head is left in the womb. It is then not officially born and therefore not yet a 'person'. The baby's skull is then pierced with scissors, which is an extremely painful procedure for the kid. Then the brain is sucked out of the head of the still living infant. The skull is then compressed and pulled out of the uterus. The constitutions of all nations grant protection to persons, but since at no stage an unborn is recognized as a person in the legal sense of the word, the most needy of our society have been outlawed and are treated worse than animals.

The Dutch "Party for the Animals", with two parliamentary seats, propagates 'respect and compassion' for animals in article 15 of their program. Why for animals and not for humans? Anesthesia of the child in advance of an abortion has never been proposed, for that suggests that we are dealing here with a person and that torture practices are used. I still remember the reaction of MP Willem Aantjes, who was extremely disturbed by one of the MPs during the abortion debate in 1980, as he gave a graphic description of an early abortion (which often is not that early). What he said was a direct quote from a medical textbook and should not have provoked such an outrage. Also in early pregnancy torture practices are normal, of which I will spare you the details. By now you've got the message.

Who does not remember the scandal surrounding the Bloemenhove Clinic, not far from Amsterdam, where late-term abortion was also practiced. That was in 1976. Five years later abortion was legalized in the Netherlands, and the law only came into effect in 1984. The workers party Minister of Health, Irene Vorrink, played a more than dubious role in the affair of the Bloemenhove Clinic by mobilizing great resistance: a cordon of 300 feminists around the abortoir, mostly 'Mad Mina's', and the national press was also involved. When she learned during a cabinet meeting of the deployment of the judicial system against the Bloemenhove Clinic, she left the meeting to secretly make a

few telephone calls. By her snitching, the closure was prevented, and the sickening practice could continue. Prime Minister Dries van Agt of the Catholic People's Party saw her act as a betrayal, as 'not done', but he was later instrumental in pushing through the abortion law, together with party colleague Loet Stuyt (by then the Minister of Health and the Environment). If the Christian parties had protested, the abortion law would never have passed – the bill won a narrow majority of one vote in both Houses! Conclusion: Christianity has lost its position as a meaningful factor in our social life, it has become a religion of tolerance, has been stripped of its holiness, is no longer a leavening agent for society at large.

The religious premise is simple: from the very first moment, the evolving human being is a person deserving of protection, having a truly unique identity as from start. In "The Secret of Light" Walter Russel formulates it as follows (Ch. 13): *"A man begins to express the idea of (being) Man as (from) a single cell. The whole idea of Man is in that single cell. It then unfolds in ordely time and space according to cosmic law. (...) Every action of unfolding man is a part of the unfolding of the Man-idea as it exists as a whole in God's Mind."* The encyclical Donum Vitæ correctly says: *"Human life is sacred because, from its very beginning, it encompasses God's creating act and it keeps a special bond with the Creator for ever, its sole purpose."* God detains the first fatherhood. (Gen. 4:1) The human parents have a derivative parenthood. Man may determine the conditions under which new life begins, but each time a supernatural act of God is required to plant an immortal soul in that person, and God will always do that. How could the mortal bring forth the immortal? For that we need God, who also indicates the sublime fate of what must become that little person, which stretches out into the infinite future. Whoever has the slightest notion of the lofty calling of himself and each individual will never resort to abortion. The universal apostasy has everything to do with abortion being deemed 'normal'…

27.113 – Conclusion

There are many other things in our society that have gone awry from a religious standpoint, often to the point of absurdity. I have limited myself in this article to the abortion issue, because it is the most outrageous. Besides, if the defenseless is no longer safe in the 'safe haven' of the mother's womb, will God decide to extend his protective hand to protect the defenseless citizen from the grave disruptions of our society?

APPENDIX 17

Atheism, the Root of all Evil

After reviewing a number of factors of a depth psychological nature, we now discuss the root of evil without which the greatest of crimes, the killing of the child in the safe harbor of the mother's womb, could never have occurred so massively. In order to answer that, we must first know what that evil consists of. It is not only a crime against humanity, but above all a crime against God who has the first fatherhood, because every person who comes into existence has a purpose that God has in mind for that human being, who receives an immortal soul directly from God. Well, the root that leads to this evil is the denial of God himself. If God does not exist in our minds, we are not accountable to that non-person either. That denial has a name: Atheism.

In the Old Testament the concept of 'Atheism' as an openly professed position is unknown and for that matter also in the New Testament. There is often a condemnation of idolatry in the Bible. The Hebrew 'kofer' denotes an unbeliever, but that does not mean that that person has made a sport of his denial of God, as does indeed the famous proponent of the theory of evolution and his associates, Prof. Richard Dawkins. From conscious denial of God (this also includes the agnostics) come the worst of crimes, which, outrageously, are praised to heaven in our Western society. It's not just a matter of true or false. It's a matter of good or evil. Abortion, unisex, early sexualization, civil rights, all these thorny problems, and many more, are moral and social problems that are at the center of our existence. What people think about God determines their choices. Atheism has moral implications. Denying God is first and foremost a moral matter with far-reaching consequences. It is like a terrible epidemic that has affected all parts of our society. Psalm 53, together with Psalm 14, is a prophetic witness for our time:

> «« The fool says in his heart: 'There is no God!' They are corrupt, and have done abominable iniquity. There is none who does good. God looks down from Heaven upon the children of men, to see if there are any who understand, who seek God.
>
> Every one of them has turned aside. They have together become corrupt. There is none who does good, no, not one. Have the workers of iniquity no knowledge, who eat up my people as they eat bread (God's Word), and do not call upon God? One day, however, they will tremble with fear, in the day when God scatters their bones! »»

Mary Divine Mercy (MDM), the great end-time prophetess, often speaks of Atheism, that is seen as the fruit of the worship of rationalism. (21-6-2012) The proud belief in one's own strength and skills is at the cradle of Atheism, but also of the humanistic movement. (29-8-2013, 4-3-2015) Her message of 21 June 2012 reads: *"Atheism is the biggest religion in the world and those who have devoted their lives to this deceit are lost for eternity.*" There is even a special prayer given (Prayer 76) that can deliver Atheists from the curse of their doubt. Thanks to this prayer, the barrier that threatens to irrevocably separate them from God can be broken. MDM also talks about Atheists who pretend to be religious; they carefully hide their disbelief from the outside world in order to impose their blasphemous laws on the world. (21-11-2012)

MDM's message of October 27, 2012 indicates that the Atheists want to wipe out Christianity for good to impose their own blasphemous views and laws on the world in the form of a new world religion, but MDM indicates that God will not let it be:

> *My dearly beloved daughter, there is a plan to commence a surge of global preaching. This preaching will not be of God. Instead, it will preach a lie, which will state, that God does not, and*

cannot, exist. They will say, using human reasoning and scientific evaluation, that God is just a figment of man's imagination.

This preaching is no accident, for it is a well-planned and coordinated campaign plotted by these atheists whose allegiance is to the evil one. Their hearts, minds and souls have been stolen by Satan, who uses their pride of human intellect to arrogantly proclaim lies to block the Truth.

This is a plan to turn the hearts of people everywhere to stone, just as their own hearts are cold and unloving. Then there will be an announcement that a new substitute religion will be introduced into law. The one world religion will pay homage to the beast, because it will be by the hand of slaves to the king of darkness that this atrocity will come about. The atheists who will mastermind this plan are devout followers of Satan. Make no mistake - they idolise the beast and think nothing of the hurt and torment which their actions will bring about. Their mission is to abolish allegiance to the one True God, the God who loves every one of the children He created. They will reject the efforts now being made from Heaven to save humanity from final destruction.

It will be by their hand that lightning, earthquakes and tsunamis will strike the earth. They will be stopped. They will suffer terribly and their agonising end has been foretold [in Psalm 53]. The Battle of Armageddon [the very last one] will be fierce, for God will no longer sit back and allow such infestation. Terrible chastisements, of such magnitude, will wipe out those heathen who reject the Word of God.

Prayer to God, seeking Mercy, is the only way to mitigate such chastisements. Your prayers, begging for the forgiveness of their sins, is the only way in which such souls can be saved.

My daughter, much destruction will result because of the wicked work, which these atheists groups intend to force upon the earth.

Many do not know the seriousness of their actions. Many, however, do know exactly what they are doing, for they are liars. They do believe in God, for they have chosen his nemesis, the Devil, as their god by their own free choice. All they want is to steal souls.

God My Father will, by His Power, intervene not merely to punish them, but to salvage souls before they are stolen from Him.

Your Jezus

APPENDIX 18

Cardinal Eijk at conference of Voice of the Family:

"To take Abortion-tainted Covid-19 vaccine is moral duty…"

Cardinal Eijk's Keynote address on mandatory COVID jabs

The Voice of the Family is a lay initiative that was created to defend the Church's teachings on the family. Until recently, she was a beacon of authentic Catholicism, and sometimes figures such as Cardinal Burke, Mgr. Schneider and even Mgr. Viganò were invited to speak at a conference. However, she appears to have morphed into "The Voice of the New World Order", into a mouthpiece that advances the elite's agenda, particularly the vaccination campaign and the hype surrounding the alleged Covid pandemic. Another international conference was held in Rome on October 23rd 2021, at which vaccination advocates Cardinal Eijk, Professor De Mattei and others gave speeches. They were all convinced that this is an 'awful virus' and a real 'pandemic', against which only the (experimental) Covid-19 vaccine can offer solace.

REMNANT CHURCH NEWS (Belgium) – From the board of editors 26/10/2021

The Dutch Cardinal Wim Eijk, who has finished a doctor's training, spoke at the conference completely as a (worldly) doctor who works in the system and blindly and without question accepts all 'scientific literature' regarding Covid and the vaccines. He was not really critical of the vaccine. And he did not even mention that the vaccine is experimental and that various regulations and codes are being violated as a result, and this he apparently considers normal. If one looks at the footnotes of his lecture, only mainstream sources are mentioned, from official bodies.

The Voice of the Family stated in the introductory note that Eijk reduced the debate about vaccinations to a lack of a coherent moral formation of Catholics, rather than insensitivity to the evil of abortion [among the vaccination proponents]. This implies that in the case of Archbishop Viganò, Mgrs. Schneider and Strickland, who find the COVID-19 vaccinations utterly unethical, that they have received an insufficient formation in morals!

In his astounding speech, Cardinal Eijk unequivocally supports the vaccination, and has *"understanding"* for those who do not want it *"based on their perhaps erring conscience",* and praises the Covid tests, and he finds acceptable firing healthcare workers who do not want to be vaccinated. Eijk was known as a 'conservative' and a regular critic of Bergoglio, but little of that remains. In his conclusion, he quotes Bergoglio, who called the vaccination *"an act of love"*.

About the 'pandemic', Mgr. Eijk said the following:

> «« The diseases caused by Covid-19 are very serious and the death rate is quite high. Caring for Covid-19 patients is causing huge problems for the entire healthcare system. The Covid-19 vaccines are effective and are currently the only means of slowing down or stopping the pandemic. »»

And this is what the Cardinal says about refusing the vaccine:

> «« A fundamental ethical rule is that no one should do anything that is evil in his sure though perhaps erring conscience. No one should be forced to do what he conscientiously considers an evil deed, which he should not commit. The conscientious objection to the use of the Covid-19 vaccine should be taken very seriously, especially as they relate to the – albeit material, indirect and distant – participation in a grave evil, namely the fact that the vaccine in question was designed, developed and/or manufactured and that its effectiveness has been confirmed using cell lines derived from directly aborted human fetuses. For even though the abortion was performed decades ago, it remains a serious intrinsic evil. One must therefore respect their conscientious objection. However, people who refuse to be vaccinated should try to maintain a certain distance from other people, sanitize their hands regularly and undergo regular Covid-19 testing. »»

He made it clear that he is against making the vaccine legally binding, and commented:

> «« An exception, however, is the staff of healthcare institutions, which care for people who are vulnerable to Covid-19. From an ethical point of view, it is not unreasonable for the management of a healthcare facility to ask employees who come into contact with vulnerable people to be vaccinated and, if they refuse vaccination, deny them permission to work there. Whilst, for understandable reasons, this may feel like compulsion, it is actually not compulsion. Their free choice of whether or not to be vaccinated is respected as such. However, it actually represents a very strong incentive to get vaccinated because of the loss of job and income [if they stick to their decision]. »»

And he summarized his presentation as follows:

> «« The Covid pandemic has undermined social life around the world. In the West, available vaccines are effective at controlling it and protecting one's own life and that of others with only commensurate side effects – serious side effects are at least rare to very rare (he continued). One can afford to be vaccinated against Covid-19 with vaccines, those produced with cell lines from a human fetus aborted decades ago. If there are no other vaccines available, it is justifiable, because this implies a material, indirect, distant – and especially for those who receive the vaccine, a very distant cooperation in the field of abortion. Cooperation with evil is sometimes unavoidable or even obligatory, however contradictory that may seem. This is the result of living in a world crippled by original sin. »»

Cooperation with evil can be obligatory? How can a cardinal spout such terrible non-sense? And he continued:

«« Pope Francis has described vaccination against Covid-19 as *"an act of love"*. (and further:) *"Vaccination is a simple yet profound way to care for each other, especially the most vulnerable."* Since people also protect their fellow human beings by being vaccinated, they show respect for their right to life, one might also conclude that the vaccination is required by justice. Moreover, it is a proportional and therefore mandatory means of protecting one's personal life and health. From this perspective, one could also argue that vaccination against Covid-19 is a moral obligation. However, this does not mean that it is also a legal obligation. The mandatory administration of vaccines is not ethically justified. The decision to get vaccinated should be made voluntarily by the person receiving the vaccine. »»

So far a few quotes from Cardinal Eijk's presentation, who acted as keynote speaker.

If one looks into the matter and puts the facts together, there is but one conclusion and that is that there was no question of a pandemic at all, as witnessed by our documentary "Covid-land, the Lockdown" and the article we recently published about the relation between Covid and the flu: "Is Covid just another flu?" What we have been experiencing since early last year (2020) is just a pretext to roll out the New World Order system of the Beast.

The vaccines, however – like Mgr. Viganò, Cardinal Burke and Mgr. Schneider, have exposed – are indeed immoral because of the connection with abortion, and moreover, they are also experimental. Sciensano admitted to the Hippocrates association that some of the vaccine's contents are 'secret'. After analyzing the vaccine fluid, scientists discovered that it contains toxic graphene hydroxide,[*)] and a whistleblower in the US testified that colleagues admitted that the vaccines are 'full of sh*t'. Lots of adverse reactions go unmentioned because the reporting procedure is extremely cumbersome. If you want to get an idea of what is currently happening with us, you can consult the Telegram Channel of Doctors for Freedom. There, one can read one horrific testimony after another. Numerous whistleblower scientists, including Dr. Mike Yeadon, ex-vice president at Pfizer, have warned about this vaccination, that they might serve, among other things, to thin out the world's population.

In December 2020, concerned Catholic laymen wrote an excellently worded open letter to Cardinal Eijk regarding the ethical question of the Covid vaccines, but it had fallen on deaf ears, as appears now.

The loss of faith drags many along, and many fall. Thank God we still have real pastors in the Church who resist and have a clear view of what is happening right now, such as Cardinal Burke, Archbishop Viganò and Bishop Schneider.

Source: Voice of the Family – Rome conference: "Health of the sick and salvation of souls, Church and society in this dark hour of history".

PUBLIC COMMENTS ON ARTICLE (on the remnant church news):

———

• Anonymous Response - 1: “The COVID pandemic has undermined social life in the world”, the Cardinal said. Nope, it is the MEASURES that are undermining and not the flu virus, fueled by politicians, media and unfortunately also the clergy who are polarizing through fear.

A cleric who claims that cooperation with evil could be inevitable, is lost as far as I’m concerned. This is very similar to “the end justifies the means”. Our Lord Christ dealt with evil very differently during the forty days in the desert. He completely and utterly rejected evil!

What an intoxication in our church! Very painful. Let’s pray for a little more God-centeredness for each of us.

———

• Anonymous Response - 2: Eijk’s father was Mennonite, mother Catholic. His episcopal/cardinal coat of arms consists of a snake that winds around a stick.
As a doctor and as a cardinal, he is apparently still a supporter of “Big Pharma”.

———

• Response - 3 by Marrie: I can’t help but think he’s a Freemason.

In the beginning of the hoax I wrote to him that there are drugs like HCQ (plus azythromicin and zinc) in the early stage, and ivermectin in the later stage, but that these drugs were banned because the vaccine/gene manipulation had to be pushed through . That was only possible if there were no medicines. I also discussed the ‘Great Reset’ and that the body of Christ (the Holy Host) is a medicine that as such should not be picked up with tongs, tweezers or spoon. Like it’s too dirty to handle!

I then really asked Monsignor where his faith in the presence of Christ was and that I found this to be a sign of little confidence. Didn’t hear anything about it, of course: the pride. Then I started to wonder if he is also a Freemason. That is now certain to me, all the more so that he wants to reduce the churches to a meager number. Well, Cardinal the syringe never, ever, ever gets into me. I don’t want that on my conscience!

———

• Response - 4 by Silvanus: His Eminence is partly responsible for the deaths of at least 325 unborn children: https://bpoc2020.nl/news/vaccineren-zwangere-vrouwen/

This link states the following: «« The Vaccination Hotline received 325 reports of spontaneous miscarriages after vaccination. Lareb received 126 reports of spontaneous miscarriages after vaccination. The 325 miscarriages via the Vaccination Hotline occurred within 4 weeks after the second injection. On September 23, 2021, the RIVM in the Netherlands wrote: “Pregnant women are advised to be vaccinated against the coronavirus with the mRNA vaccines from Pfizer and Moderna. This applies to all pregnant women: women with underlying diseases (such as diabetes or heart and lung diseases) and also to healthy pregnant women. If pregnant, there is a higher risk of becoming seriously ill from COVID-19, and complications can occur. Vaccination is safe and effective, even during pregnancy.” Please note: In December 2020, the Supreme Health Council of Belgium issued a negative advice on vaccination for pregnant women. »»

———

• Response - 5 by 'A vigilant citizen': Stupidity, conceit and cowardice characterize some (or many?) leaders, also within the Roman Catholic Church. At present, history (or is it God Himself?) is exposing much to those who are willing to seek the truth, recognize their own mistakes, and persevere with courage. We are living in difficult but instructive times. At its deepest, it is a spiritual struggle in which we are invited to ask ourselves what foundations we have built our lives on and how we want to live from now on: with or without God, in the service of Satan and the spirit of the world, or in the service of Christ. More than ever, we need to purify our faith, try to right the wrongs we have wrought, and be thankful for all who have ever prayed for us or are now praying for us. The latter also includes an invitation to entrust ourselves to the Immaculate Heart of Mary, Mother of God, Mother of the Church and Mother of all sinners who sincerely repent.

The fact that Marrie did not receive a reply to her letter is telling. We should never completely cut ourselves off from those who warn and admonish us, even if we don't agree with them on everything. Those who will assist us with good advice and criticism should be our friends. At the very least, Marrie should have been thanked and encouraged to keep looking for the truth. The fact that there was no response may indicate that the bishop already wanted to remain blind to certain aspects of reality or that he already thought he knew everything and did not need to learn anything more. Shepherds who react in this way within the church repel and do not attract. They become an anti-witness against Christ and a propaganda weapon for the Antichrist. But it's not too late. Hopefully, this bishop will be open to the truth and come back on his words. A public reaction would be in order, for now many are being misled by his attitude and words, with all the consequences that entails, not only for their physical health, but also for their spiritual well-being and their personal salvation.

We are in the midst of a psychological war. In doing so, we have to let go of certain people, but on the other hand we also gain friends, sometimes from unexpected quarters. In the meantime I have come to know Muslims and other believers who are also critical of the propaganda for experimental mRNA injections. My appreciation for them has also grown. The Spirit of God is currently working in many ways and is also working there on mutual involvement, reconciliation and bonding.

————

• Response - 6 by Lunsius: This issue is not about responsibility or complicity for participation in the abortion act itself. It is not just an immoral practice, but it's highly immoral, and that's where the shoe pinches. Vaccination actively contributes to the principle of industrial cell-line-generation by desecrating body parts of aborted children.

It should be mentioned that for this practice the aborted children must be healthy and preferably not younger than 19 weeks and that they must be 'harvested' alive, because dead cells are of no use. Children of that age and much younger can have an excruciating pain experience, which research has confirmed (serum hormone abnormalities in the blood serve as biomarkers for identifying severe pain).

Using body parts from murdered infants for vaccine development (not for vaccine production) is an established practice today. For example, the acclaimed and widely respected virologist Dr. Plotkin stated in an official investigation that one vaccination study he conducted required organ tissue from 76 aborted children — but it came from orphans, he said scornfully (Youtube: Stanley Plotkin The Godfather of Vaxxines testifies about 76 aborted fetuses contained in infant vax). Dr. P. Acker stated that at HEK-293 there must not have been 293 children per se, but certainly dozens. (HEK293 or Human Embryonic Kidney specimen has been tried 293 times, but not from one child).

New cell lines are now being developed for the planned mass vaccination (there are not 3 but 7 shots they want to give), such as recently WALVAX-2, in China (for which nine abortions). An entire industry has arisen based on the abortion hecatombe, not only

for vaccines, but also for hair growth products and the like, and for the production of stem cells (for rejuvenation cures - one treatment costs € 150,000 to be repeated at least once a year, and certain politicians I know of, eagerly use it). And now it comes: Supporting COVID-19 vaccinations is helping to maintain and continue this disgusting practice that now involves hundreds of millions; Planned Parenthood (the largest owner of aboratoria in the US) takes a hefty share of it, as undercover filmed interviews have shown.

There appear to be several alternatives to aborted child cell lines, such as amniotic fluid containing cells from the child's mucosa, but research in this direction is not encouraged. One question: Why can Curevac and Novavax offer vaccines that are not based on research using human cell lines?

————

Have known Wim Eijk before he went to seminary. His parents were not practicing and as a boy he had to take the tram every day to Amsterdam on the continuous high viaduct (Bijlmer), and then he saw the church of Duivendrecht in a bend below. One day he got out and rang the bell at the rectory, whereupon Miss Riet, the housekeeper, opened the door. His question was: "What kind of building is this?" He was brought up by her in the principles of the faith and later became an altar boy there. Pastor Laan, the parish priest there, was his mentor when he went to seminary. This priest was a holy man and he'd roll over in his grave, knowing Eijk's turn of mind. My friend and I were the first to receive his priestly blessing as he walked out after his ordination. In the beginning Eijk was a priest of the old school and I can't imagine that he became a Freemason. Belgian Cardinal Danneels thought and acted like a Freemason, but he did not belong to their ranks. In my opinion, Eijk has been infected by the virus of the Protestants. Ministers of religion have learned during their schooling not to take the supernatural into account. Nowadays the same holds for the Catholic Church.

The rejection of the supernatural begins with a devaluation of the New Testament, which is said to contain pertinent untruths. Based on Pilate's term of appointment, it is concluded that Jesus was born in 4 BC. But if one allows his term to start earlier which is not implausible and accepted by the Jews – then it is indeed possible that Christ was born during the census. Well, that census was 8 BC. Because there was no census on 4 BC, one speaks of the Luke legend. The date of 8 BC has always been the accepted year of birth by the Ethiopian church, which originated from Philip's preaching (Acts 8:26 ff). Quirinius was the legatus appointed during this census with the specific task of overseeing this immense operation, and he was appointed, again, during the second major census 14 years later. The double appointment of Quirinius is considered possible in all respects by the great historians of the 19th century.

Well, when we speak of the Luke legend, we say that the Evangelist Luke was a fantasist. And that takes the whole New Testament off its pedestal and brings us right into the midst of pernicious Modernism. In my opinion, Monsignor Eijk has become one of its victims. Know that once someone is on the sliding path it goes faster and faster, without stopping, but God's grace can do much, and let us pray for that.

—————

• Response - 7 by Angela Gelten: @Marrie – Every time I'm amazed that people recommend ivermectin as a medicine against Covid. That is namely a medicine that kills parasitic WORMS in horses, with a possible side effect of severe abdominal pain and diarrhea. COVID is caused by a virus, not worms. Seems like a pointless and potentially harmful (horse) remedy against it!

• Response to Angela Gelten by Lunsius: Dear Angela, you are apparently unaware of the scientific literature regarding ivermectin, which has anti-inflammatory properties in addition to anti-worm properties.

See for instance:

American Journal of Therapeutics 28, e434–e460 (2021): «« Ivermectin for Prevention and Treatment of COVID-19 Infection: A Systematic Review, Meta-analysis, and Trial Sequential Analysis to Inform Clinical Guidelines »», by Andrew Bryant, MSc, Theresa A. Lawrie, MBBCh, PhD,2 Therese Dowswell, PhD, Edmund J. Fordham, PhD, Scott Mitchell, MBChB, MRCS, Sarah R. Hill, PhD, and Tony C. Tham, MD, FRCP

Background: Repurposed medicines may have a role against the SARS-CoV-2 virus. The antiparasitic ivermectin, with antiviral and anti-inflammatory properties, has now been tested in numerous clinical trials.

Areas of uncertainty (addressed by the research): We assessed the efficacy of ivermectin treatment in reducing mortality, in secondary outcomes, and in chemoprophylaxis, among people with, or at high risk of, COVID-19 infection.

There is still more, ivermectin has won its discoverers the Nobel Prize FOR HUMAN USE. And diarrhea usually does not occur in the right dosage. See Internet: The Nobel Prize in Physiology or Medicine 2015 (William C. Campbell, Satoshi Omura). See also the accompanying text of the Nobel Prize Committee, and you will see that what you are saying is another example of the fake news of the mainstream media.

• Response by Angela Gelten to reaction Lunsius: Well no, I'm not repeating anything, I'm a horse owner myself and unfortunately we regularly have to use ivermectin at the stable against the worms. And sometimes a horse does not feel well after use for a few days. If worms die from it, then it's poison, right? I really wouldn't take it myself unless I have worms too!

• Response Lunsius to reaction by Angela Gelten: Dear Angela, had heard that argument of yours before, so that's why. But the facts don't lie, as I've set out. In addition, ivermectin is on the WHO list of 'essential medicines' (no more than 580 medicines) ...and that has not been drawn up for horses, but for us. As a medicine for horses, ivermectin was later tried and it proved successful. Again, ivermectin is good against worms, but also works against malaria where microblood clots occur, just like with COVID-19. That is why the anti-malarial drugs hydroxychloroquine, artemisia annua and bertram also work against COVID-19, and not just a little bit – and that is scientifically substantiated.

At the concentrations required for humans, the side effects of ivermectin, unlike in horses, are mild. It's about concentration. Apple seeds contain prussic acid/cyanide, but nobody dies or gets sick from eating apple seeds. Why? A low concentration.

————

• Response - 8 by A vigilant citizen: If, in the fight against Covid-19, the government had allowed for cheap and well-functioning medicines such as HCQ and ivermectin, almost no people would have died from Covid-19 and we would have achieved safe herd immunity via natural means for a long time. Many scientists all over the world claim this, but their voice is fully censored by the regular media (newspaper, radio, TV) and on the internet (Youtube, Twitter, Google,...). However, at the urging of the WHO and other agencies, funded by the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation, among others, these reliable drugs in combination with zinc, vitamins D and C and an antibiotic, are forbidden. What's more, the doctors who prescribe these drugs to fight Covid-19 are severely punished financially and/or their licence is cancelled. Today, the patient-doctor relationship is no longer sacred, doctors are forced to deny their Hippocratic oaths, and these scientists become executive officers of a top-down, scientifically baseless policy. It is It is urgently necessary that all citizens denounce the murderous and predatory nature of this policy and bring to justice the politicians who gave their blessing to this policy and are therefore fully responsible. When all the facts are on the

table, I see only one outcome: the death penalty, possibly commuted to life imprisonment. After all, it is a kind of hidden genocide to get the vaccines through, and possibly with the primary goal of depopulation. It is quite possible that within the financial elite of this world many no longer honor the God of the Bible, who speaks through the Ten Commandments and the voice of our conscience, but instead honor the demon Pachamama and their mother earth for which they want to create a paradise in their own image and likeness, trying to save us from so-called overpopulation. Some have already coined a new term for banning cheap drugs and pushing the experimental and dangerous mRNA shots: vaccinicide.

• Response - 9 by Paul: Sad and incomprehensible of Cardinal Eijk. As far as I'm concerned, I'd rather have an 'immoral', erring conscience than become an accomplice in the greatest medical experiment since Josef Mengele. However little we have learned from the DES (diethylstilbestrol) daughters and the birth defects caused by the use of thalidomide.

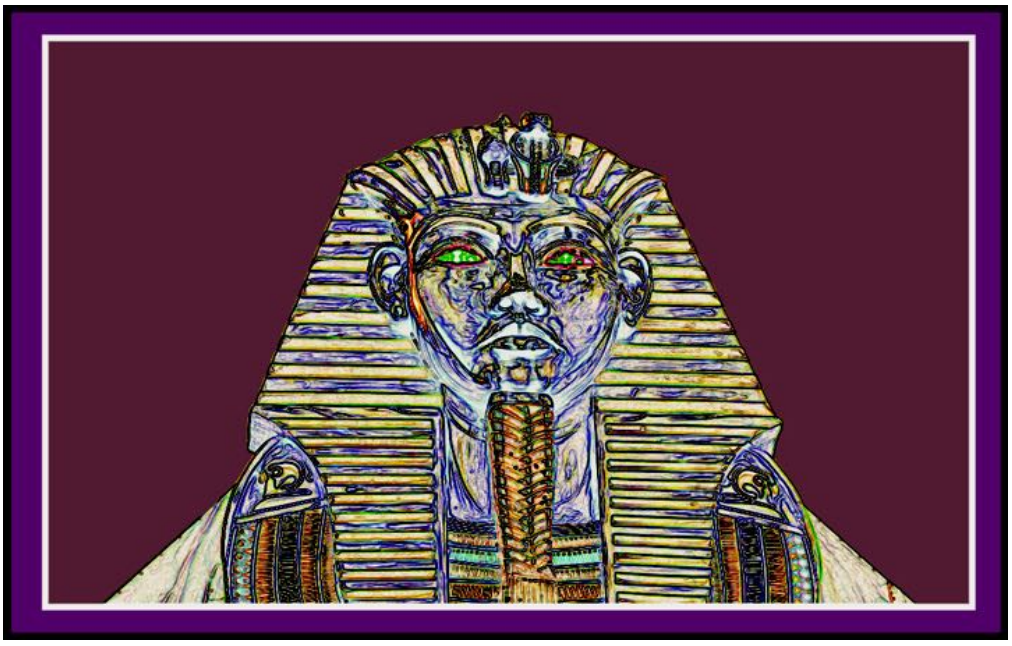
To have my children repeatedly (!) injected with a hastily prepared substance, for which no manufacturer, nor government, nor insurer want to vouch for, of which the consequences in the medium term are written in the stars? Responsible parenting can't be that cruel and brash, can it?

• Response 10 by Marrie: https://www.frontnews.com/archbishop-vigano-condemns-the-covid-19-vaccine-it-is-a-duty-to-refuse-it /
Let that Bishop Eijk read this recent message and repent and with him all the other bishops and priests, who still do not want to take off the blinders.

Toxicity of Graphenehydroxide

*) Several typical mechanisms underlying graphene (hydroxide) nanomaterials toxicity have been revealed, for instance, physical destruction, oxidative stress, DNA damage, inflammatory response, apoptosis, autophagy, and necrosis. In these mechanisms, (toll-like receptors-) TLR-, transforming growth factor β- (TGF-β-) and tumor necrosis factor-alpha (TNF-α) dependent-pathways are involved in the signalling pathway network, and oxidative stress plays a crucial role in these pathways. Many experiments have shown that graphene (hydroxide) nanomaterials have toxic side effects in many biological applications, but more in-depth study of toxicity mechanisms is needed. According to the (USA) FDA, graphene, graphene hydroxide, and reduced graphene oxide elicit toxic effects both in vitro and in vivo. Graphene-family nanomaterials (GFN) are not approved by the (USA) FDA for human consumption. (Wikipedia Nov. 5, 2021)

The New World Order
A Template for the Antichrist



The New World Order, or NWO for short, is about globalization and geopolitics at the service of the all-controlling totalitarian power. There is an undeniable trend: from crisis to crisis, from disaster to disaster, ever more power is falling into fewer and fewer hands. In the post-nationalist era there will be no more autonomous countries nor autonomous individuals.[248] There will be only regions in a universal power structure: a one world economy, a one world government and one world religion (but not Christian). In that system individuals will have been reduced to numbers. Man stripped of his uniqueness and dignity! If no one can buy or sell without that ticket, the accredited 'plastic money', that will have become a fait accompli. Perhaps the privacy of the individual will be guaranteed against his neighbour, but not against the state, the state with its all-seeing eye. Then everything goes as the nomenclatura desires. Stalin, Hitler, Mao, and most recently Kim Jong-Il, have shown where that ends, although they were only pawns in the great game, known as the Novus Ordo Seclorum or "the new order of the ages", a proverb written on the one-dollar notes, which is why that note (from 1935) has never been replaced – because of its insignificant monetary value the single note should have been abolished long ago.

28.114 – Novus Ordo Seclorum

At the time of the centennial commemoration of the Great Seal of the United States,[249] the high Freemason professor Charles A.L. Totten wrote on February 10 1882 a letter to Charles J. Folger, Secretary of the Treasury: *"Novus Ordo Seclorum is a quotation from the fourth Eclogue (by Virgil) and was borrowed in turn by Virgil from the mystic*

248) It is the writer's conviction that the evil one will never fully succeed in abolishing the autonomous state for the benefit of the NWO. Secure yards will always remain, such as Emden in the Reformation century. Under the realm of the Antichrist, these 'islands of tranquility' will be much larger and made up of nations.

Sibylline records." Sybillins are the much heralded 'diviners' of antiquity, what their name means. The same letter goes on:

> «« Novus Ordo Seclorum altered from Magnus Sœclorum Ordo: a mighty order of ages is born anew. Both the prophetic Virgil and Saturnian kingdoms now return. Now a new progeny (a new human race) is let down from the lofty heavens. Favor, chaste Lucina (Lucina means light), the boy soon to be born in whom the iron age shall come to an end, and the golden one shall arise again in the whole earth… »»

Virgil's Fourth Eclogue continues:

> «« …and with his father's worth reign o'er a world at peace. Whatso tracks remain of our old wickedness, once done away, shall free the earth from never-ceasing fear. He shall receive the life of gods, and see heroes with gods commingling, and himself be seen of them. »»

This pagan oracle is actually about the 'birth' of the Messianic Empire. When we talk about birth, about the child that comes from the mother, this is preceded by an expectation period in which the coming is not yet clearly defined. According to Judaism, the ecclesiastical child (the kahal chasidim) currently is still living in the womb, has eyes to see but does not see, has ears but does not hear, has lungs but does not breathe (the Spirit). It cannot even take normal food (the knowledge of the Lord), for it gets its food through the navel. That is the present state of the church, not only for the Jewish but also for the Christian. We have not yet entered the Messianic Empire. The knowledge of God does not yet cover the earth as the waters cover the sea. (Hab. 2:14) Jesus' light is not yet shining in its full glory (John 8:12, 2 Cor. 4:6), which explains why so many heresies exist and why people can be deceived so easily.

A prayer for the time of the Reign of Peace, which is inspired by the well-known children's blessing, could go like this:

> «« O Good Lord, we approach you as children and ask for your blessing. Take care of your children. Rest your strong hand on us. Bless us as your children. Bless our eyes so that we love to see people and marvel at your creation and be filled with gratitude. Bless our ears that we may hear what You say. Bless our mouths that we may speak words of encouragement and comfort. Bless our hands to share and build your realm of peace. Bless our feet to walk the way of peace with others. Bless our hearts to give and forgive. Grant us your Spirit who teaches us the way of blessing and truth, of peace and justice.
>
> O Mary, mother of Jesus and mother of the Church; mother of each individually. That you may be our guide and example. Confirm us in the faith. Teach us to walk with Jesus so that we may be one with the Father as Jesus is one with Him. Make us attentive, simple, and mild, so that by your hand we may walk like true children. Our Lady, pray for us. »»

28.115 – Only when the Reign of Peace is nigh, the Antichrist arises

The Messianic expectation does not only live within God's congregation. The nostalgia for the lost paradise, the longing for a golden age where peace reigns, is of all times and cultures and we encounter it in ancient myths and legends. Wouldn't God have engraved that memory of paradise lost and that longing for its restoration in everyone's hearts?

---

249) Novus Ordo Seclorum is the Latin motto used by Charles Thomson in 1782 for the Great Seal of the United States. He was commissioned by the Continental Congress to come up with its final design.

That looking forward eagerly, often on the unconscious level, provides an inroad for the tempter, also known as the False Prophet,[250)] to present us an enchanting mirage, a deceptive mirage. He knows how to captivate people with sublime promises and linguistic virtuosity, presenting himself as a great saint and as the saviour of humankind. Anyone who opposes him within the church, you read that right, is branded a heretic and spat out. So it is time to go into hiding, the time of the small house church (Rev. 18:4-5), but not without the comfort that it only lasts a little while and that this is the prelude to the earthly Reign of Peace. Rejoice, therefore, when this happens: laetitia, laetitia!

The Antichrist is a real tyrant, a power-hungry man, a slave driver. When God approaches us, he does so gently and respectfully. If we are God's possession, it does not feel oppressive. Love does not force. With demonic possession and human dominance – often demonically inspired – things are quite different. The antichrist-power is also called circle-power. Closes in on itself as in a circle. Is a huge egoist. The fat and round king Eglon from Judges 3 was such a type. Eglon means pig, which in Hebrew relates to circular. A circle, also magic circle, is also represented as the snake biting its tail. The snake is and remains the devious circle-power striving to unite his realm with ours with the aim of total annihilation – not just of the Jewish people. If he hates anything, it is man in the Messianic realm, in his exalted state.

We are speaking of the mystery of the lawless one – in today's world called the Deep State – which, as the Apostle Paul says, is *"already at work"*. And he continues: *"Only, [the people of God] that now 'perseveres', let it 'persevere' until he [the lawless one] is gone from [our] midst."* (2 Thess. 2:7: μόνον ὁ κατέχων ἄρτι ἕως ἐκ μέσου γένηται.) The traditional translation says: *"For the mystery of the lawless one is already at work, but he who now 'holds it back' will continue do so till out of the way."* This is a notoriously difficult text. Both versions are correct (see also the Vulgate), because with the Greek 'katechon', which means to hold back/hold or alternatively persevere (in French: retenir/tenir), we should look at the context to know what to chose. The interpretations of the traditional version are legion and stand on clay feet. Nobody really knows what to do with: *"first the one who holds it back has to go"*. So we have to get rid of the term 'holding back' (retenir). My translation agrees with Matthew 24:24: *"For false messiahs and false prophets will rise up and perform great signs and wonders so as to deceive, if possible, even the elect."* It also fits well with the following Thessalonian verse: *"Then [towards the annihilation of the conspiracy] the man of lawlessness will be revealed."* The traditional version provides no connection to other Bible verses in either the Old or New Testament, and that in itself raises questions. My version also logically follows the preceding verse: *"What is holding him back you know."* It doesn't say 'who' but 'what', and that 'what' is God's omnipotence, in which by comparison the gigantic power of all the devils of Hell is less than a drop in the sea. In the short period preceding Christ's return, the seals of Revelation 6 are broken. That means that only when the Reign of Peace is imminent 'the' Antichrist, or man of lawlessness, will be unleashed. Lucifer realizes very well that he is fighting a losing battle, even with

250) The False Prophet of Revelation 19:20, henchman of the Beast, will, according to very old Roman Catholic prophecies, come out of the very bosom of the Roman Catholic Church after the then current pope has been expelled. (see also 2 Thess. 2:3-4) This has become a possibility through infiltration of the Church. There was 'the standing instruction of the Alta Vendita Lodge' of 1819, a broad plan to undermine the Roman Church; a long-term plan that has come to fruition in our century. The documents present the diabolical strategy of destroying the Church through its own members after first impregnating them with freethinker ideals. Thus, under the apparent legitimacy of Catholicism, well-meaning Catholics would help propagate Masonic ideals. The curious phenomenon occurs that many act out of inner conviction, unaware of a conspiracy. Freemasons call such people "brothers without (work) apron".

regard to Israel, although he does not have to tell his generals. So where is his gain? To steal away as many souls as possible from God and plunge them into destruction. The Jan. 26, 2014 message from the Book of Truth says: *"Why is this? Why have these changes been made and why, so suddenly? The answer is time – for there is little left [of the time in which we now stand until the Reign of Peace]."* Not being 'near the Reign' is what is holding him back! Then, soon after his revelation, when the Reign of Peace is about to dawn, the lawless one is chained, to be cast into the abyss along with the False Prophet. Until then, we as Christians, despite much persecution and opposition, we must persevere (tenir). Non deficere (don't give up) is the motto.

Tibetan Mandela made of circle motifs

That Reign of Peace was not yet nearby when the Apostle was writing his letter. And that element held back the full revelation of the Antichrist. The 'expectation' for that Reign of Peace was kept alive, something to which Paul returns several times. Unfortunately nowadays, in many churches all kinds of things can be preached, but the end times is off limits and this applies to Protestants as well as Catholics. It's kind of an unwritten law. How strange is man! In our current system, the Biblical vigilance is hard to find (Mt. 24:37-51) ...the broken-winged Word. How sad, because right now people should be extra alert.

At the unchaining, when the lid is lifted from the abyss and the demons ascend with buzzing wings to do their dirty work,[251)] only then Satan's power will be displayed much more openly, but also more powerfully. Why: the maturation of evil is essential to apply a sifting, because only the pure in heart are allowed to enter the Reign of Peace. After all, *"everything that is reprehensible and anyone who engages in atrocious things and lies is denied entry."* (Rev. 21:27) That is what matters. And it continues in the ninth verse of 2 Thessolians 2: *"The coming of the lawless one is the work of Satan, and is*

251) Is. 18:1: The reviewed Dutch Staten translation: "Woe to the land that is shadowy at its frontiers, that is on the side of the rivers of Cush (a land of blackness), (...) a nation that is sturdy and treadeth down (...) a people terrible from their beginning onward." The King James version: "Woe to the land shadowing with wings, which is beyond the rivers of Ethiopia." The Dutch "Nieuwe Bijbelvertaling": "Woe to the land of the chirping cicadas, beyond the rivers of Nubia." Revelation 9:1-3: "And the star (...) was given the key of the bottomless pit. He opened the pit; and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace. (...) And out of the smoke locusts came upon the earth." It is interesting in this connection that Beelzebub, name for Satan, means 'lord of the flies'.

operated with all sorts of displays of power with signs and wonders that serve the lie." It is the job of end-time Christians to weaken the power of the beast and his mob through prayer and fasting. Processions and protest demonstrations do not help: only entering God's sanctuary suffices. Prayer also serves to increase God's flock. Everyone is welcome, even the biggest scoundrel, provided he throws himself repentantly at Jesus' feet like Saul of old. Yea, that not a small remnant but a great flock may enter. (Is. 26)

28.116 – By the Magic of Language and Delusion

The people who play on centre-stage in this titanic struggle are but minor actors, not key figures - rather walk-ons, and this also applies to the great historical figures like Nimrod, Haman and Hitler. We do not wrestle against flesh and blood, but against the powers and principalities in the heavenly spheres. In this panorama we detect the tower of Babel, called by the Jewish tradition the house of Nimrod. The tower of Babel stands for the zeal, organization and involvement of many for the construction of the empire of evil. That is the grand conspiracy. Babel stands model for the evil and magic expression of the word. The madness of the crowds under the Third Reich was of hypnotic possession or idolatry. Hitler, this hailed demagogue was the great inhumanity in human shape. For many he was a kind of Christ figure, even though very distant from the charisma and power to do the miracles of the real Anti-Christ, who will also be much more cruel.

Words can kill and are the cement for mortal statements. They belong to the idolatries of the snake. Occultists know perfectly well what they can do with words, namely pronouncing curses on persons. They know that every word, even every letter and every number, is a snake in itself within a system that is known as abracadabra. Abracadabra means "I create what I speak". An alternative interpretation refers to the Arabic Ab'r-Achad-Ab'ra and means "Beast - the Only - Beast". They are clever enough to use them to place someone under a 'spell'. Of course, to spell a word is its usual meaning. It does not matter in what language a curse is pronounced, a spell cast or conjuring done. Whoever knows the content of each letter holds in his hands the key to the abyss where Abaddon lives, a name that means the destroyer. (Rev. 9:11) Hitler, the manipulator of the masses, was good at it. By the magic of language and delusion he elevated the spirit of ecstasy and mass delusion. Now it is our turn. It is for us to use the antitype word with the power of the lasting resurrection of Jesus Christ to break the power of Satan's power. Finally *"the Lord shall consume him with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy him with the brightness of his coming."* (2 Thess. 2:8)

In the Book of Truth dated Sept. 16, 2012, Jesus warns the traitors who now make up the elite group who govern our nations, who supposedly represent the interests of the people but enact laws and follow practices that lead to the destruction of those who have put their trust in them:

> «« You, whose God is Satan, know that your souls are blackened with the cloud of evil, which is infested in you by the evil one. You are in great danger. Yet you choose to worship the devil who wants to steal your souls and torment you for eternity.
>
> Your plans to dictate, rule, control and mastermind genocide against God's children will not only be thwarted by the Hand of my Father, but this evil will be turned upon you. You will be severely punished for your wickedness. The sins you are guilty of are abhorrent to Me and your hatred and contempt for those people, those whom you claim to serve in your governments, will destroy you for eternity. The brief spell you will enjoy, when you seize the reins of power over nations and introduce a wicked dictatorship regime will bring you an eternal life of Hell.

You will be given many chances to turn your back on the evil group of elite powers. But be careful for you will only be given so much time. Never underestimate the Power of God. Do not underestimate his Anger. For while a God of great Mercy, He, God, my Eternal Father, is also one to be feared. His power is almighty. His power over Satan will culminate shortly, and He will cast out the Beast and his cohorts into the lakes of fire.

You, too, will be cast into Hell should you continue to destroy God's Creation, God's children. My Father will never forgive you if you step beyond the boundaries of his Great Mercy. On the day I come to judge you will tremble with the deepest fear unknown to humanity. On that day you will be accorded the punishment as in the way you treated your brothers and sisters, children of God. Be warned, for the Anger of God is to be feared. »»

This fits well with Revelation 13, here quoted from verse 7:

«« The Beast (the Antichrist) was given power over all tribes and peoples, languages and nations. And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world. (...) And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. This is where wisdom comes in! He who has foresight, calculate the number of the Beast, for it is the number of a man; his number is six hundred sixty-six (666). »»

The number 666 has already made a lot of ink flow and many have been listed whose names count up to 666 according to the Greek counting method, because it says: *"it is the number of a human being"*. Herman Frans Boon from the Netherlands has found a very interesting second explanation for this in his article "The Islam in the Bible" (ejbron.wordpress, June 25 2024):

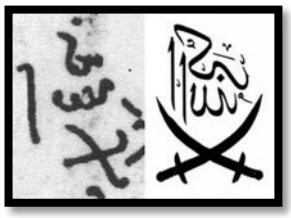
«« The mark of the Beast is the number 666. (Rev. 13:18) However, the Apostle John, the author of the Book of Revelation, did not see our three sixes in his vision. He wrote in Greek, and in it he used the Greek number-letter values χξς, in which χ=600, ξ=60 and ς=6, added up to: 666. **This χξς is the only one of the dozens of numbers in the Book of Revelation that is not written in full in the original Greek**, indicating: watch out, this is something important. So it is really about the combination of these three Greek 'letters' and it is not just a numerical result. John must have seen something that looked like χξς and understood it to be the known Greek letters. [So what, you will say. Just know that in God's Word nothing is accidental. In the Law (Old Testament), as Jesus points out in Matthew 5:18, even every tittle and iota must be fulfilled (these are punctuation marks, which in our view may just as well be omitted)[252)] and that principle applies a forteriori to the Book of Revelation.] »»

Now Herman Boon comes to an extremely interesting conclusion that I have never come across before:

«« I showed the three Greek letters to someone from Syria, who has lived in the Netherlands for almost forty years, and speaks and reads Arabic and Aramaic

252) How insubstantial commas (comparable to the iota) can change the meaning of a sentence is shown by Gerry Altmann's example in "The Ascent of Babel" # 1997 (p. 98):
1. You're wrong — Sam didn't buy Janette a 'pizza' (he bought her something else).
2. You're wrong — Sam didn't buy 'Janette' a pizza (he bought it for someone else).
3. You're wrong — Sam didn't 'buy' Janette a pizza (he made her one).
4. You're wrong — Sam «didn't» buy Janette a pizza (he did something else, or nothing).
5. You're wrong — 'Sam' didn't buy Janette a pizza (someone else did).

fluently in addition to Dutch. She said: *"It says in Arabic: Allahu-akbar, or Allah is the greatest. Only, the letters ξ and ς must be tilted 90° to the left and mirrored. The sign χ represents the crossed swords, the emblem of the Muslim Brotherhood, which stands for jihad, holy war. Indeed, a mirrored ξ lying on its back is exactly the word written in Arabic for Allah."* John could not figure this out because in his time there was no Arabic script [though there was the widely divergent al-khatt-al-Musnad], and he wrote down in Greek what he thought he saw: χξς. It might be that in his vision he observed an Islamic fighting force with on their banners these three signs. »»



Impressive that 666 – the only number not written in full – points to Allahu akbar. Nice find. Because the Antichrist and the False Prophet are throwing all the world's religions into the great crucible of the fusion kitchen of religion, with Judaism, Islam and (perverted) Christianity leading the way, this does not necessarily mean that the whole world will come under the yoke of Islam, but given this discovery, it does look as if this battle cry will be adopted by all religions who are absorbed in this blasphemous intertwining, and thus becomes everyone's battle cry, and as such will be posted in all supposedly Christian churches, the churchgoers not realizing that this is a curse against the True Almighty God, for that is how it is meant in the Islam and, as always, it is the intention that counts.

Within this theme, a blasphemous religious organization will arise in the end times that will drag the world into new depths of immorality and apostasy from the true faith in God. The knives are sharpened. On June 25, 1995, the "United Religions Organization" (URO) was established under the auspices of the United Nations. The San Francisco Chronicle then reported that prayers, psalms, and spells were dedicated to a dozen 'deities'. Pagan priests and witches graced the session. In late June 1997, a second conference was held at the prestigious Stanford University in California. The purpose of this meeting was to further develop the cooperation between the different religions in order to arrive at a kind of humanistic commandment teaching to replace the Ten Commandments. Brussels was chosen to host a seven-day conference of the "Parliament of the World Religions" in 2014, which was postponed to 2015 due to lack of funds and then took place in Salt Lake City. Ten thousand of all religious denominations have flocked there. For those who are still in doubt: the New World Order is on the rise!

Allahu akbar, Dessouk Egypt

28.117 – Step-by-Step Plan of the Great Reset

In May 2021, Dr. Mike Yeadon published a step-by-step plan, which they had sent him, for the unrolling of the GREAT RESET. He was vice president at the medical giant Pfizer for 15 years, responsible for new treatments for respiratory infection. Eventually, he started his own biotech company. The GREAT RESET is the tyrannical realm of the Antichrist, commonly referred to as the New World Order. This global plan leaves no country untouched. The exact source of the step-by-step plan is unknown, but what it contains appears to reflect the truth and it predates 2020.

Phase 1: Simulate a threat and create fear

- Cause a pandemic in China.
- Cause thousands of elderly people to die (65+).

- Exagerate the numbers of sick and deaths.
- Proclaim from the very beginning that only vaccines can save humanity.
- Focus all attention on a new sickness, called Covid-19.
- The result will be a general panic.

Phase 2: Sow the weeds and arrange for division

- Enact more unnecessary, restrictive and unconstitutional coercive measures.
- Paralyze trade and economy.
- Observe how the majority will obey and a minority will oppose.
- Demonize the recalcitrants and create a horizontal division.
- Don't give the leaders of the dissidents a platform.
- Punish disobedience.
- Make the PCR test commonplace.
- Create confusion regarding statistics of the infected, sick and deaths.
- Put a ban on all effective treatments.

Phase 3: Come up with an insidious and deadly

- Offer everyone a free vaccine.
- Promise protection and a return to normal.
- Set a (vaccination) goal for achieving herd immunity.
- Pretend that part of the economy has recovered.
- Hide numbers on vaccine side effects and deaths.
- Pretend that the side effects are 'natural' consequences of the disease itself.
- Justification of the maintenance of the mandatory measures by continuously raising the threshold for herd immunity.
- Punish doctors who perform 'illegal treatments' that make people better.
- The result will be doubt and the feeling of betrayal among vaccinated people, while opponents will become discouraged.

Phase 4: Install apartheid and the QR code

- Make sure there are shortages of goods and services such as transport.
- A green pass (QR code) to reward the vaccinated and punish the anti-vaxxers.
- Create a segregated society where vaccinated and unvaccinated are pitted against each other.
- Abolish the right to work or study for the unvaccinated.
- Abolish basic rights from the unvaccinated people.
- Make unvaccinated people pay for PCR testing (that turn out positive).
- Result will be the first stage of digital control, impoverishment of opponents.

Phase 5: Create chaos and install martial law

- Cause major shortages of goods, and of food in particular.
- Paralyze the economy and close factories and shops.
- Explode the number of unemployed.
- Get a third shot (booster injections) and introduce shots for children.
- Cause more deaths, now among adults (30+).
- Introduce mandatory vaccination for everyone.
- Make sure that the myth of dangerous variants, the effectiveness of the vaccine and the herd immunity is magnified.

- Demonize the anti-vaxxers and hold them accountable for all deaths.
- Arrest the leaders of the recalcitrants.
- Make sure everyone gets a digital identity (green pass) with medical data, birth certificate, passport, driver's license, identity recognition, etc.
- Introduce martial law to take out opponents.
- The result will be the second stage of digital control, which is linked to the imprisonment or clearing (killing) of opponents.

Phase 6: Eliminate all debt and make cash to disappear

- Cause the economic, financial and stock markets to collapse and banks to fail.
- Make the customers pay for the bankruptcy of the banks and use the money in their account for the salvage operation.
- Activate the Great Reset.
- Money as we know it today will be disappearing.
- Eliminate debts and loans.
- Introduce the digital wallet (only for approved transactions).
- Confiscate agricultural land and Building lands.
- All unapproved drugs are banned.
- Make it clear that there is a requirement for bi-annual or annual vaccinations.
- Provide food rationing.
- Extend the measures to Third World countries.
- Third stage of digital control; the entire world is part of the New World Order.

28.118 – On the way to the Technocratic Age

Psalm 2 says that the rulers conspire against God and his Christ (which is Greek for Anointed One). So, talking about a conspiracy has ancient papers. The current conspiracy started with the creation of the Trilateral Commission. The idea to create the Trilateral Commission was informally presented by David Rockefeller and his most trusted assistant Zbigniew Brzezinski to the attendees at the elitist Bilderberg meeting in Europe in 1972. It was the brainchild of Rockefeller, who had been toying with the idea for several years. The following year the Commission was established in the US. From their public writings it is abundantly clear that their stated goal was the creation of a 'New International Economic Order', which actually is a One World Government. President George Bush later talked openly of creating a 'New World Order', which subsequently became the catch phrase. Brzezinski's book from 1970 "Between Two Ages: America's role in the Technetronic Age" exposed the grandiose plan for world governance, a new Tower of Babel:

> «« [The technetronic era] involves the gradual appearance of a more controlled and directed society. Such a society would be dominated by an elite whose claim to political power would rest on allegedly superior scientific know-how. Unhindered by the restraints of traditional liberal values, this elite would not hesitate to achieve its political ends by using the latest modern techniques for influencing public behavior and 'keeping society under close surveillance and control'. [The technological implements would maintain up-to-date files containing even the most personal information of each individual.] Under such circumstances, the scientific and technological momentum of the country would not be reversed, but actually feed on the situation it [created and] exploits. »» (p. 97)

Brzezinski wrote that humankind had moved through three great stages of evolution and was in the middle of the fourth and final stage, which the World Economic Forum (WEF) has named the fourth industrial revolution. We can safely see the WEF as a

companion in mischief of the Trilateral Commission. The first stage, Brzezinski described as religious, combining a heavenly "*universalism provided by the acceptance of the idea that man's destiny is essentially in God's hands"* with an earthly *"narrowness derived from massive ignorance, illiteracy, and a vision confined to the immediate environment."* (p. 97) The second stage was nationalism, stressing Christian equality before the law, which *"marked another giant step in the progressive redefinition of man's nature and place in our world."* The third stage, in his view, was Marxism, *"representing a further vital and creative stage in the maturing of man's universal vision."* As a member of the Council of Foreign Relations (CFR), he admired Marxist/Communist regimes because they embodied the ideal of tyrannical surveillance to keep the crowds in check. The CFR (1921) was the main predecessor of the Trilateral Commission (1973), and many members of the Trilateral Commission, like Brzezinski, were (and are) also members of the CFR. These organizations are called 'think tanks', but that is a euphemism for active interference and subversion. The CFR was foremost Anglo-American while the Trilateral Commission has a pronounced international scope. The fourth and final stage was Brzezinski's technetronic era, called the *"ideal of rational humanism on a global scale"*. (p. 246) To quote Patrick Wood from "Technocracy Rising – the Trojan Horse of Global Transformation" # 2015 (p. 32): *"In over forty years since the founding of the Trilateral Commission, the historical record clearly testifies to its success. The applied doctrines of Agenda 21, the UN Sustainable Development Goals and the Energy Smart Grid, all of which have resulted from Trilateral interactions, testify to their ideological grounding in historic Technocracy."* The subtitle of his book is remarkable: *"The dark horse of the New World Order is not Communism, Socialism or Fascism, it is Technocracy!"* (The black horse refers to the famine that is coming upon the world, as foretold in the Book of Revelation.)

What explains the motivational power in world events of the Trilateral Commission? The original membership list consisted of about 300 highly influential people, about a third of whom were from Europe, Japan and North America respectively. Membership was also roughly divided among academics, politicians and corporate magnates; these included international bankers, leaders of prominent labor unions and corporate directors of media giants. As Patrick Wood comments (p. 49):

> «« The word 'commission' is puzzling since it is usually associated with instrumentalities set up by governments. It seemed out of place for a private group unless (…) it really was an arm of a government, unseen, different from the visible government in Washington [and anywhere else in the corridors of government]. Indeed, the inclusion of European and Japanese members indicated a global government rather than a national government. »»

President Jimmy Carter had been groomed by the Trilateral Commission, notably by Zbigniew Brzezinski and Richard Gardner who initiated him into the arcanes of government, which explains why this peanut farmer already before New Year's Eve 1976, i.e. within two months of his election victory as President of the United States, presented his list of cabinet members among whom three trilaterals. In total no fewer than twenty trilaterals were appointed by Carter to top government posts and this has remained the tune in government affairs, also in other places of the world, and if not a trilateral then someone who was sympathetic to the Commission's objectives and operations.

How have they orchestrated the rising of a New International Economie Order in the space of half a century? Their tool of implement was to have their members, or people sympathetic to their goals, appointed to key positions of the executive branche of government, more in particular as concerns foreign policy, and in top positions of organizations with a truly international scope, notably in commerce, trade and banking services. Their moving goals are established in consensus meetings of the Commission;

and remember, the vast majority of them are not U.S. citizens or British. The key of its operation has to do with appropriating critical managerial positions, the long-term set-up of social engineering, especially through the media, and finally the mutual coordination of nations and the world's most powerful corporations and banking interests, which would not be possible without intensive monitoring and follow-up at all levels of society and economic activity. It's all about data, made possible by the advent of the computer. But none dare it call conspiracy, or call it treason because the very mention of the word conspiracy is now forbidden. Senator Barry Goldwater issued a warning in his great book "With No Apologies" # 1979 (p. 280): *"The Trilateral Commission represents a skillful, coordinated effort to seize control and consolidate the four centers of power: political, monetary, intellectual and also ecclesiastical."* Technocracy Rising gives good reading for who wants to know more about the details and its mode of operation.

We can also look at the publications of trilaterals, like the 1974 Kissinger Report, a seminal report, which adviced abortion as the better means to arrive at depopulation, particularly in Africa, at a time when abortion had not yet been legalized in any non-Communist country. Two years earlier, the Club of Rome alarmed the world in its "The Limits to Growth" telling that we would perish because of overpopulation. David Rockefeller belonged to its three founders.[253)] Not incidentally, the World Economic Forum (WEF) was instituted at the same time. The resulting movement has grown enormously and has become ever more radical. Nowadays almost all the elites endorse it under the pretext of 'Save the Earth'. The goal is to decimate the world's population, which is a direct attack on God because we are his children. Therefore, God will not let go. (Is. 8:10) Yet, if the green wood (the unborn children) is not spared, why should the dry wood (that is us) be spared? This will be tolerated by God up to certain extent, and then comes the point where God will intervene in various ways. They are God-deniers. In their rejection of God, the rulers, in their lust for wealth and power, progressively take on the character of Lucifer, who is the father of lies and deceit, and who deeply hates us humans. Why? Because God has prepared for us a glorious destiny, more glorious than Lucifer of old. On the threshold of the Kingdom of Peace, the scales will have fallen from the eyes of many and the majority will have chosen God, a future that is rapidly approaching. If the adversary managed to kill the masses today, through war, vaccinations and disease, this would bring in a rich booty, because most of them are currently very far from God and destined to be eternally removed from God.

28.119 – The Genesis of Modern Day Central Banking

Stephen Goodson reveals in his magisterial book "A History of Central Banking", on pages 67 and 68, that the artificially created banking panic in the United States of 1873 so incensed President James Garfield, that three and a half months after having taken office on March 4 1881, he issued a statement that he intended to tackle the problem:

> «« Whosoever controls the volume of money in any country is absolute master of all industry and commerce. (…) And when you realize that the entire system is very easily controlled, one way or another, by a few powerful men at the top, you will not have to be told how periods of inflation and depression originate. »»

Two weeks later, tells Goodson, Garfield was gunned down by 'lone assassin' Charles Guiteau, who would have had a grievance for not having received a diplomatic posting. President Garfield did not die immediately, but as a result of improper medical care,

253) The Club of Rome, founded in 1968, is a discussion platform on global issues and consists of 100 members selected from current and former heads of state and government, UN administrators, high-level politicians and government officials, diplomats, scientists, economists and business leaders.

quite possibly done so deliberately. He lingered on until his death 79 days later. At his trial the hidden hand of Rothschild was revealed when Guiteau claimed *"that important men in Europe put him up to the task, and had promised to protect him if he were caught."*

Actually, the Trilateral Commission is the prolongement, but now in the open, of the "COMMITTEE OF 300" and its all powerful City of London financial nexus. The fields were fertilized by the CFR, operating mainly from the United States. The Trilateral Commission operates on an international level and presents itself to the outside world as a regular body. The COMMITTEE, however, is an ultra-secret organization, totally out of sight, which Dr. John Coleman has brought into the limelight.[254)] Still, by means of methods, which the Trilateral Commission adopted later, it succeeded in getting the Federal Reserve Act (US Central Bank) passed. This happened thanks to a web of intrigue from the US Octopus power, known as the 'Society' or the '400', with at its top J. P. Morgan and Company (financial) and the Rockefellers (industrial). Their day to day management was called the 'Council'. How they managed to get the bill through Congress without arousing suspicion is a textbook example of conspiracy techniques set up to fool the public, and this is masterfully described in Cleon Skousen's book (pp. 15-24), which will be discussed later. The Federal Reserve Bank Act was passed by a large majority by the House of Representatives on December 22, 1913, and it was by design that it happened just before Christmas when public attention to political affairs was at a low ebb. At the same time, an income tax was introduced, for how else to pay the ever-rising charges to the Central Bank? The promoters of the bill promised that the United States dollar would become a stable currency and that business cycles and recessions would become a thing of the past. Guess what? Just the opposite happened. *"The deceptive language of the Federal Reserve Act was formulated under the guidance of Bernays and Lippman from Tavistock, who set up a National Citizen's League with the notorious Samuel Untermeyer as its chairman, to promote the scheme."* [255)] This Act was to get control of the people's money and transfer it to a private monopoly. The Federal Reserve Banks was neither 'Federal' nor 'Banks', but a private money-generating monopoly fastened around the necks of the common man – through the creation of monetary instruments by means expensive lending agreements with government, although new money is always created out of thin air; it is a pure accounting operation. The model for this was the Bank of England, which was founded on April 25, 1694, under the Bank of England Charter, which included among its many provisions an Act *"for granting their Majesties several Rates and Duties upon shipped Tonnage"*.[256)] Actually it allowed for import duties …with which to pay what was due to the Bank of England. This set the tune for many other taxes, with in the end an income tax, introduced in 1797. The year 1694 was five years after the Glorious Revolution, the precursor to the French Revolution, which started, not coincidently, exactly one hundred years later. Holland and its Jewish wheeler-dealers were instrumental in the establishment of the Bank of England:

> «« A very strong Sephardic Jewish element (from Spain and Portugal) is found among the discount customers of the Bank at the time. Jews with Dutch or

254) "Conspirators' Hierarchy: The Story of the Committee of 300", John Coleman # 1991.

255) "The Tavistock Institute of Human Relations", John Coleman # 2005 (p. XIX).

256) The Amsterdamsche Wisselbank, established in 1609, was the forerunner of, if not the first true Central Bank. It remained in existence until 1820. Its function was subsequently taken over by De Nederlandsche Bank.

Sveriges Riksbank, or simply the Riksbank, is the Central Bank of Sweden that was founded in 1668. Prior to World War I, it was the only state-owned Central Bank outside of the Russian Empire, and indeed no interest bearing notes were issued, a power also given to the commercial banks (until 1897). It was only in 1975 that the bank was completely separated from the government into a stand-alone organization – not obligated to exchange notes for gold, and from then on it operated like a typical Central Bank, which consequently resulted in booms and busts.

> Portuguese connections knew all about bills of exchange, and the discounters of parcels of bills are more often than not Jewish.
>
> As time progressed the Bank stock was becoming a more and more a gilt-edged investment: those who have got it, keep it. And those who have got it are already by 1751 largely foreigners, and above all Dutchmen. It was a common opinion in the fifties of the 18th century that foreigners held a third of the English National Debt and of the Bank and East India stock. That was one reason for the unpopularity of the Debt – a 'tribute' was going out to foreigners, which was a drain of treasure or Devisen. »» [257)]

The same sort of arrangements were set up in the nations of Europe following the Bank of England, France being the first in 1800, just five weeks after Napoleon came to power.[258)] This Bank replaced the fifteen, mainly Jewish, private banking houses. Napoleon made himself president of the Bank, declaring that *"the bank does not belong to the shareholders only; it also belongs to the State, since the State has entrusted to it the privlege of issuing money. I wish the bank to be in sufficient measure in the hands of the State, but not too much so."* (Encycl. Brit. 1964, Vol. 3, p. 132) In April 14, 1803 by means of an Act of parliament, Napoleon abolished the right of two rival banks, the Caisse d'Escompte de Commerce and the Comptoir Commercial to issue bank notes. Napoleon was so distrustful of bankers that he personally supervised the operations of the Treasury. He was his own banker, who controlled both the creation and distribution of money and credit, by which policy he outraged the international bankers, particularly the Rothschilds, who fomented discord and stirred up England, Russia and Prussia to declare war on France in 1806. After a series of events – described in more than Ten thousand books – Napoleon was defeated on June 18, 1815 at the battle of Waterloo. The belligerents were financed by Nathan Rothschild, who at this momentous event secured ownership of the Bank of England. The Bank of France was henceforth a private enterprise, just like the one in England, where the issue of money out of thin air could be lent to the government by means of interest bearing bonds, the proceeds of which would flow into private pockets …which was not going to be spent on trivialities. So far how the system of central banks came into being.

The European set-up served as an example for all nations in the world, initially the United States. The International Central Banks were placed in 1930 under the care of the Bank of International Settlements (BIS) in Basel, also a private organization, and this was later supplemented with the IMF and the World Bank after the 1944 Bretton Woods conference. The appropriation of the nations' financial backbone was intended to facilitate the advent of the New World Order, because who lends, in this case to the government, dominates the decision-making process.

The COMMITTEE was formed in colonial times to attend to the commercial interests of the Anglo-American establishment (cotton, opium, sugar, slaves, etc.). The despicable opium trade was by far the most lucrative, yielding gigantic fortunes for names and families now great, especially in England, and shortly afterwards in the United States, whose fortunes have been perpetuated and expanded from generation to generation,

---

257) From: "The Bank of England: A History. 1694-1914" (in 2 volumes) by Sir John Clapham - Cambridge University Press, New York # 1945, 1946 (Vol. I pp. 127, 283-84).

258) In 1718, France's first Central Bank came into existence, named the Banque Royale. The adoption of the Bank of England paradigm of creating money ex nihilo soon enabled the French economy to recover from its costly war against Spain. However, this period of prosperity was of short duration. In Jan. 1720 the French government received a record-breaking loan of 100 million livres. The following month news spread that the bank was experiencing difficulty in exchanging its bank notes for gold coins and widespread panic ensued. These rumours could well have been instigated by the Jew Medina (Sir Solomon of Medina), through his system of expresses, who thus wished to destroy a dangerous rival.

which John Coleman, on the basis of the secret archives he was allowed to search, explains in a convincing manner and in great detail. It is extremely shocking what he reveals in his "COMMITTEE OF 300" (1991) because of the unscrupulous way in which that money and power was amassed. Human suffering and misery were not counted (aliquo numero esse). Over time, those obscenely wealthy families have widely penetrated the political arena on both sides of the political spectrum, as well nationally and internationally, Communist and capitalist. Their ultimate goal was and is to create a race of slave laborers from humanity, because the greed for power and money knows no bounds. The motto is more, more, more and more. *"Professor Quigley has undertaken in his book to expose what every insider like himself had known all along – that* ***the world hierarchy of the dynastic super-rich is out to take over the entire planet****, doing it with Socialistic legislation where possible, [through ways that instill fear in the hearts of people. In their endeavours the super-rich have a preference for a Platonic rule of order; nowadays it's China that is the model for this.]"* (Skousen p. 25) The course of events cannot be understood without knowing about the British 300 and the American 400, comprised of many important names and families, but no scientists. The 300 like to call themselves the Olympians (living on the mountain of gods). They feel themselves exalted above everything and everyone, even above the 400 - and there is some truth in it. I like to call them "The Crown". That won't imply that Queen Elizabeth II knew all about the dirty political and financial maneuvers being done in her Majesty's name – not occasionally, but continuously! After all, her advisors are 'very respectable persons, being served at Blenheim'.[259)] So why should she have been suspicious? And what applies to her, also applies to her predecessors and descendants. The Trilateral Commission (1973) is an offshoot of the COMMITTEE, of a strangler liana climbing on the stairways of the gigantic wealth amassed from the highly immoral opium trade to China.

In his organogram Coleman places the Trilateral Commission under the COMMITTEE, but nowadays the opposite seems to be the case, with yours truly seeing the function of the COMMITTEE as a sort of supervisory board. Of course the Trilateral Commission represents the commercial and dominant interests of the super-rich, but now on a global scale and using the 'scientific method' which is technetronic in the negative connotation of the term. Indeed, many of its members hold high positions in academia. The ruthless tyranny was thus given a scientific sauce, but one of supreme evil. We might think that the COMMITTEE, or for that matter the Trilateral Commission, is at the top of the Deep State, defined as a self-elected group that wields real power outside the conventional checks and balances of the system. But the real top, the top of the top, consists of a kind of church, the antithesis to decency, the antithesis to God's Church on earth. You guessed it right, that's Freemasonry

In 1891, the Rhodes Secret Society was founded (related to the Rhodes Scholarship at Oxford and the Rhodes Trust). Rhodes was as devoid of ethics and principle as he was of morality. Indeed, he was the perfect lackey of the family Rothschild, which goes a long way to explain his inordinate success in doing business. Cecil Rhodes (1853-1902) owed his immense fortune to the appropriation of South African diamond mining (via De Beers Consolidated Mines), financed by Rothschild & Co. and Alfred Beits.

---

259) Stephen Goodson says on p. 37 of his book on Central Banking: "King James II's reign only lasted from 1685 until '88. He was a victim of unscrupulous pamphleteering and propaganda, which emanated mainly from Holland. A military expedition by Prince William of Orange eventually dethroned him. Although James's army was numerically superior, he was discouraged from attacking after John Churchill first Duke of Marlborough, suddenly deserted him. According to the Jewish Encyclopedia, Churchill received an annual stipend of £6,000 from the Dutch Jew Solomon de Medina in payment for his treasonous conduct. These vast sums of 'blood money' [to which were added the dividends from his Bank of England stock] enabled Churchill to proceed with the construction of Blenheim Palace, completed at his death in 1722, [actually bigger than Buckingham Palace, built in 1703]."

The Rhodes Secret Society of South Africa expanded into the Association of Helpers and Milner's Kindergarten (1897-1910) before being transformed into the Round Table Groups, who gradually established themselves in all major countries in the world and exerted considerable influence on the political decision-making process. These groups, in turn, culminated in the CFR (1921) and the American IPR (Institute of Pacific Relations), founded in 1925 and dissolved in 1960. The counterpart of the CFR in England was called the Royal Institute of International Affairs, which was founded in about the same period. The IPR was, as they say, "a hotbed of Communists", but it wasn't sold to the public that way. After World War II, charges that the IPR was infiltrated with Communists led to Congressional hearings, which resulted in the loss of its tax exempt status. The origins of these organizations and their hidden objectives are explained in shocking detail in "Tragedy and Hope", to which we will come back later.

In June 1884, British imperial interests were ignited by the discovery in the Transvaal of what would prove to be the world's largest deposit of gold-bearing ore on a large ridge not far south from Pretoria. The ridge was known locally as the Witwatersrand (white water ridge). A gold rush brought thousands of British and other prospectors and settlers from around the globe. The city of Johannesburg sprang up nearly overnight as a shanty town. 'Uitlanders' (white people from abroad) poured in and settled around the mines. Consolidated Gold Fields of South Africa, another brain child of the Rothschilds, was founded in 1887 and incorporated in London to start exploitation of the newly discovered gold reefs. However, the mining industry was not put on track until 1917 with the Anglo American Corporation. That has brought the super-rich enormous fortunes.

We might ask ourselves, what has the foregoing to do with central banking? A lot. It started in March 1869 when an 83-carat diamond was found on the banks of the Orange River, which after cutting weighed 47.7 carat, a stone known as the Star of South Africa. It appeared to be the richest diamond mine in the world. In October 1871, in an act of naked agression, the territory was awarded to the British, and British troops immediately occupied the territory. In 1876, the president of Orange Free State (OFS) took the British to court. A court decided that a rightful compensation for the mine would be £90,000… On false rumours it was decided on April 12 1877 that the Transvaal Republic was too weak to maintain law and order and that therefore its annexation by the British was permitted. Twelve months later Paul Krüger led delegations to London demanding the return of their independence, which had been granted by the British in the Sand River Convention in 1852, pledges renewed in 1854 at the Convention of Bloemfontijn, when the British desisted from all claims to the Orange Free State and solemny guaranteed her future independence. But they were spurned disdainfully. This was the start of an armed conflict. The Amajuba, a 866-feet-high prominence, occupied by 560 soldiers, was stormed on Febr. 27 1881 by 100 Boers. The British suffered 226 dead, while the Boers lost one man and had five wounded. A few days later an armistice was declared and half a year later, by the Convention of Pretoria, the country was returned to the Boers.

The discovery of gold on the Witwatersrand in 1884 changed the prospects of the Transvaal Republic to exist peacefully. As the gold mines developed, pressure increased on the Boers to accommodate the imperialist designs of the British and their ultimate controllers, the Rothschild banking syndicate.[260)] By the magic lure of gold Transvaal rapidly became industrialized. This was deemed unacceptable by the British government, whose policy was to import raw materials from their colonies and to retain all production in the mother country and oblige its colonies to import all their manufactured goods at excessive prices. The British expected the expeditionary force to have a quick

260) Though many of the older mines around Johannesburg were near exhaustion in 2020, the Witwatersrand Basin still produces most of South Africa's gold and much of the total world output. Until 2020 a total amount of 40,000 metric tons of gold were extracted there!

victory in a 'tea-time war'. Although the Boers had only a part-time army of mounted horsemen, they enjoyed stunning successes in the initial phases of the war. They were the first to introduce trench warfare. However, they were outgunned, outnumbered and, in some instances, poorly led. After the capture of the capitals Bloemfontijn and Pretoria, they resorted to guerrilla warfare. A tiny force of never more than 6,000 active Boers was able to frustrate and tie down almost 450,000 troops of the world's largest empire. The British then decided to resort to a scorched earth policy and placed the Boer women and children in concentration camps, where they were treated most cruelly, which eventually became widely known, and evoked heavy criticism. Their preferred weapon on the helpless victims was starvation, of which the British had seen the effects during their genocide of the Irish in the mid 19th century. Although the British had signed the The Hague Convention of 1899, which stricly forbade the mistreatment of helpless civilians in combat theaters, they were egged on by the rapacious Rothschilds to contravene every one of the convention's articles in their pursuit for complete control of the gold mines. At the end of April 1902, the British again offered peace negotiations to end this financially crippling war, and this was accepted on their terms.

It had been an unmitigated disaster for the Boers: 32,000 farm houses were razed to the ground. Wells were poisoned, their cattle slaughtered, and thousands of women were raped. Twenty-five towns and twenty villages, including all the churches, were utterly destroyed. The countryside was turned into a wasteland. In financial terms, the Boer losses were some £80 million. About 34,000, or 22% of the concentration camp prisoners had died of whom 27,540 were under the age of 16. A total of 9,908 Boer soldiers lost their lives. The British also suffered heavy losses with 21,942 dead and about the same number wounded.

The bankers got what they wanted. They had financed the war for the astronomcial amount of £222 million, thereby adding a further £132 million interest bearing debt to Britain's national debt. For the Rothschilds the Second Anglo-Boer war was a resounding success! [261)]

18.120 – The Current Situation of Banking

How is the situation in our 21st century? We'll discuss the U.S. central bank system governed by the Federal Reserve, because that is the dominant player in today's world. A Federal Reserve Bank, of which there are twelve, is a regional bank of the Federal Reserve System. Nowadays, the Federal Reserve Banks' stock is owned by its member commercial banks (all nationally chartered banks - more than four thousand), who in turn are privately owned. The ownership is nonnegotiable and cannot be used as a collateral. The shares are eligible to a maximum rate of 6% dividend, determined in part by each member bank's total assets. The 'ownership' in the Reserve Banks is symbolic; they do not exercise the proprietary control associated with the concept of ownership nor share, beyond the statutory dividend. United States Treasury securities, also called Treasuries are debt instruments issued by the United States Government to finance government spending in excess of the proceeds from taxation, and includes savings bonds, Treasury bills, notes and bonds. Treasury bonds are sold for a term of either 20 or 30 years. The Treasury keeps a checking account with the Federal Reserve, through which incoming federal tax deposits and outgoing government payments are handled. As part of this relationship, the Fed sells and redeems US government securities. The net redemption by the Fed is the main instrument by which money is created. The interest payed on it, in principle flows back into the government coffers. The Supreme

261) Much is derived from Stephen Goodson's book from 2017 "The Genocide of the Boers". The word genocide is out of place. The war was waged opportunistically, wathever cost it might bring to gain victory.

Court stated in 2017:[262] *"Instrumentalities like the national banks or the Federal Reserve banks, in which there are private interests, are not departments of the government. They are private corporations in which the government has an interest."* The United States has an interest in the Federal Reserve Banks as tax-exempt federally created instrumentalities whose profits belong to the federal government, but this interest is not proprietary. And this appears to be the case. In 2015, the Federal Reserve earned a net income of $100.2 billion and of which $97.7 billion flowed back into the US Treasury, and the 2020 earnings were approximately $88.6 billion with remittances of $86.9 billion.

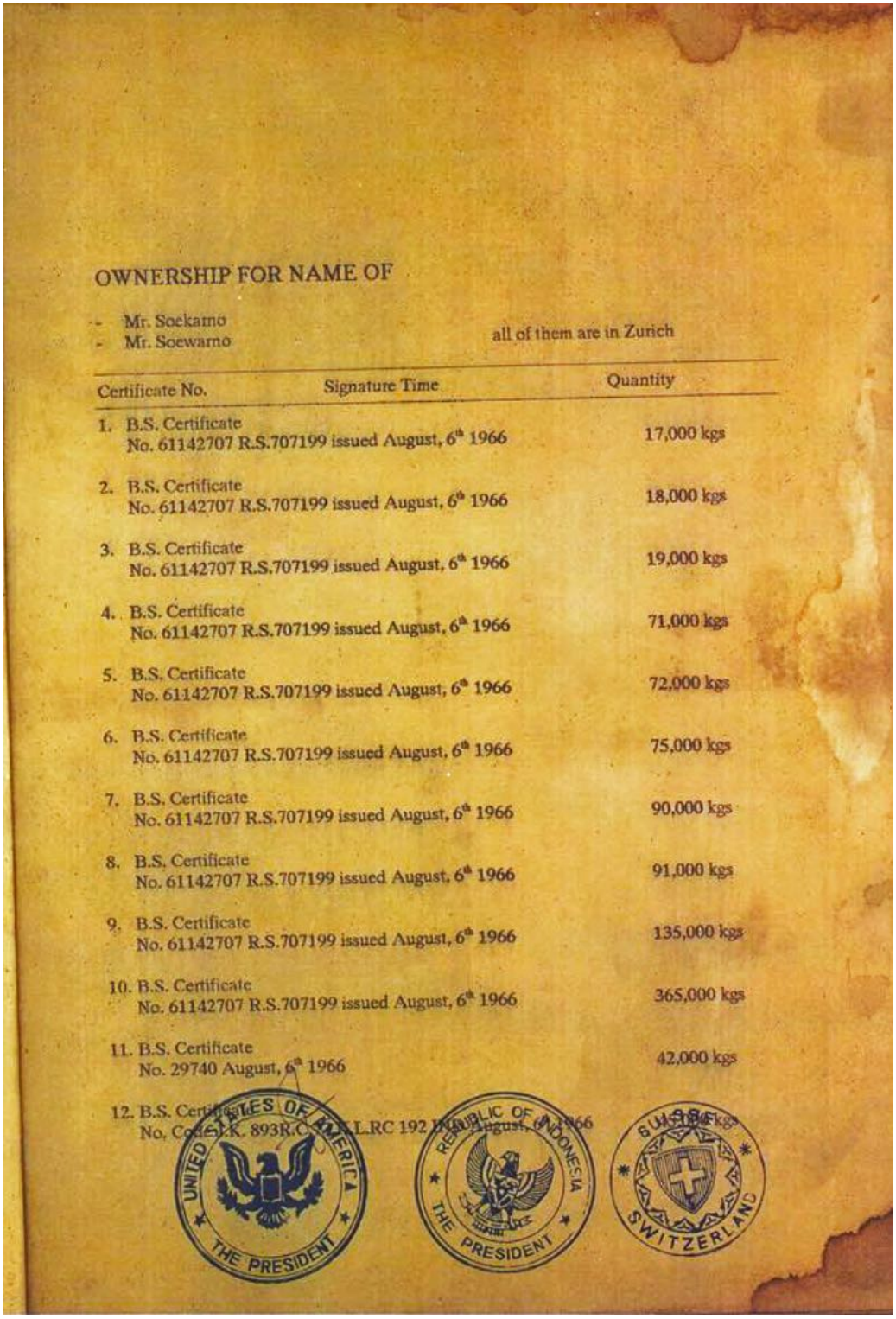
This new arrangement, with widespread changes compared to the original set-up of 1913, was in response to the the 2007-2008 financial crisis, which provoked urgent calls for fundamental changes, amongst others in the set-up of the Federal Reserve Bank. And thus in June 2009, in the year he took office, President Barack Obama introduced a proposal for a *"sweeping overhaul of the United States financial regulatory system, a transformation on a scale not seen since the reforms that followed the Great Depression."* (see wiki under Dodd-Frank) It was called the Dodd-Frank Wall Street Reform and Consumer Protection Act. The long title was: *"An Act to promote the financial stability of the United States by improving accountability and transparency in the financial system, to end 'too big to fail', to protect the American taxpayer by ending bailouts, to protect consumers from abusive financial services practices, and for other purposes."*

Yet it did not address the interest payments on government bonds to foreigners. As of the end of 2024 it costed 14% of the total federal spending to maintain the US debt. This includes the interest payments to foreign holders. We focus here on the interest payments on Treasuries, which as concerns foreign holders, is going to cross US$ thousand billion in 2025 (on an annual basis), which cannot be recovered as with the Federal Reserve system. This translates in a heavier tax burden to the general public. And here lies the problem. The United States has by far the largest external debt in the world, mainly to foreign governments and large foreign institutions, situated foremost, in that order, in Japan, China and the United Kingdom (as of 2024). Total external US federal government debt will breach the $30 trillion mark in 2025. The investments in US government securities by foreign holders have proceeded mainly from US trade deficits and are used in part by those entities as a back-up for the creation of local currency, comparable to the use of gold reserves in the past. Gold has always been interest free, but it retains its value in the face of inflation. Now that the United States is weaponizing the dollar by means of trade sanctions and the confiscation of debts, the world has entered a new chapter, which I shall not delve into. For a better understanding, we are going to discuss the global collateral accounts, of which Neil Keenan, who calls himself an agent of the Asian Dragon family, has given a summary on Nov. 10th 2015, provided on his website, to which yours truly has added a number of amendments:

> In the thirties, the royal Asian families, known foremost as the Chinese Dragon Family, had seen some of their gold and silver in Southeast Asia being plundered by the Japanese. And they needed to do something about it. [Take note that the Chinese gold reserves, which Keenan estimates at an astouning 2 million metric tons, are much larger than reported, built up during thousands of years of silk trade.] In 1938, the Chinese government sent seven warships with gold and silver to the US Federal Reserve for safekeeping, which in breach of contract they are still sitting on, because their 60-year gold bonds have long since expired. Six years later, in 1944, the U.S., France and Britain had been given a 50-year mandate at the Bretton Woods Conference to modernize and transform the world for the better. Backing this new global financial system was a substantial part from the Dragon Family's gold. The following year, Indonesian President Soekarno was

262) "United States shipping board emergency Fleet Corp. v. Western U." – Aug. 24 2017.

elected as the main 'Monetary Controller' (Trustee) of this second cache of assets. Part of it was deposited into the system of the Bank for International Settlements (BIS) under supervision by trustees, appointed by Soekarno. (…) Of course, the Dragon Family was and still is the legitimate holder of these reserves.



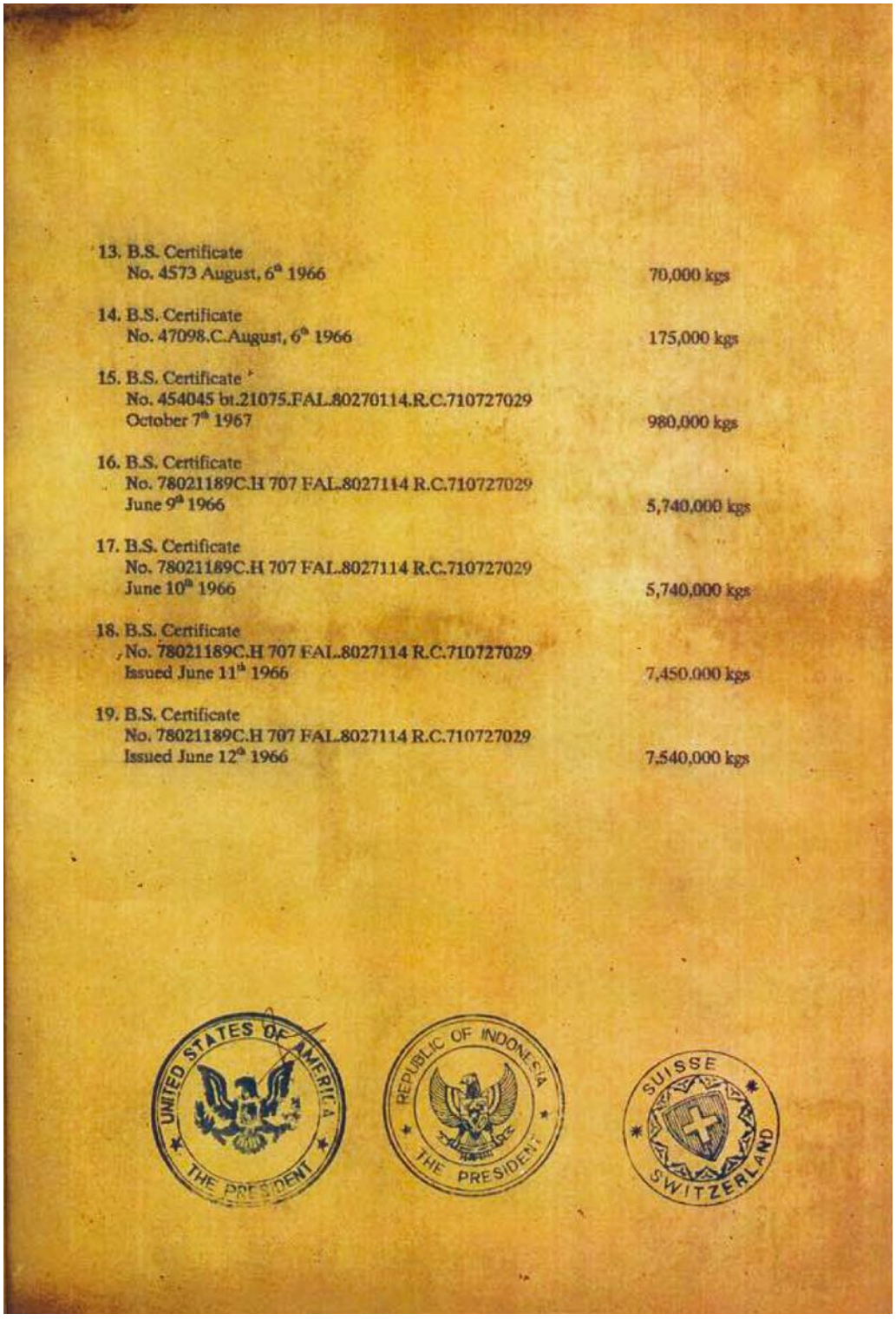
OWNERSHIP FOR NAME OF

- Mr. Soekarno
- Mr. Soewarno

all of them are in Zurich

Certificate No.	Signature Time	Quantity
1.	B.S. Certificate No. 61142707 R.S.707199 issued August, 6th 1966	17,000 kgs
2.	B.S. Certificate No. 61142707 R.S.707199 issued August, 6th 1966	18,000 kgs
3.	B.S. Certificate No. 61142707 R.S.707199 issued August, 6th 1966	19,000 kgs
4.	B.S. Certificate No. 61142707 R.S.707199 issued August, 6th 1966	71,000 kgs
5.	B.S. Certificate No. 61142707 R.S.707199 issued August, 6th 1966	72,000 kgs
6.	B.S. Certificate No. 61142707 R.S.707199 issued August, 6th 1966	75,000 kgs
7.	B.S. Certificate No. 61142707 R.S.707199 issued August, 6th 1966	90,000 kgs
8.	B.S. Certificate No. 61142707 R.S.707199 issued August, 6th 1966	91,000 kgs
9.	B.S. Certificate No. 61142707 R.S.707199 issued August, 6th 1966	135,000 kgs
10.	B.S. Certificate No. 61142707 R.S.707199 issued August, 6th 1966	365,000 kgs
11.	B.S. Certificate No. 29740 August, 6th 1966	42,000 kgs
12.	B.S. Certificate No. Code J.K. 893R.C. [illegible] L.RC 192 [illegible] August, 6th 1966	[illegible] kgs

These copies show the Green Hilton Memorial Agreement of 1963, and signatures of President John F. Kennedy, President Soekarno and William Vouker, along with several others. Incredibly, the listed quantities of gold backed certificates represented only a 'small' portion of the Chinese gold.[263)]



13. B.S. Certificate
No. 4573 August, 6th 1966 — 70,000 kgs

14. B.S. Certificate
No. 47098.C.August, 6th 1966 — 175,000 kgs

15. B.S. Certificate
No. 454045 bt.21075.FAL.80270114.R.C.710727029
October 7th 1967 — 980,000 kgs

16. B.S. Certificate
No. 78021189C.H 707 FAL.8027114 R.C.710727029
June 9th 1966 — 5,740,000 kgs

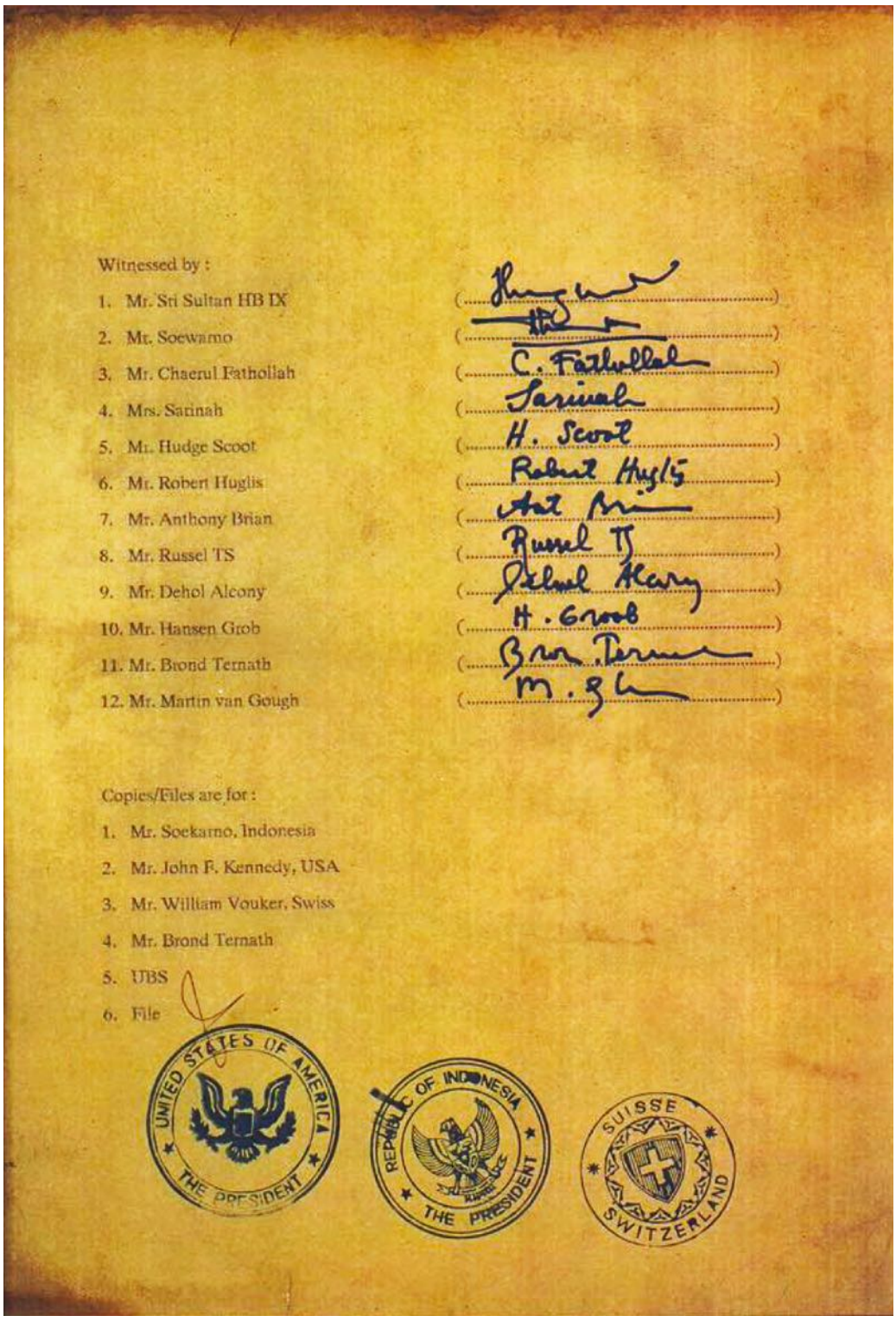
17. B.S. Certificate
No. 78021189C.H 707 FAL.8027114 R.C.710727029
June 10th 1966 — 5,740,000 kgs

18. B.S. Certificate
No. 78021189C.H 707 FAL.8027114 R.C.710727029
Issued June 11th 1966 — 7,450,000 kgs

19. B.S. Certificate
No. 78021189C.H 707 FAL.8027114 R.C.710727029
Issued June 12th 1966 — 7,540,000 kgs

263) Soekarno grew up in poverty but he was via his father's side of noble class and via his mother's side Brahmin – highest ritual status within Hinduism. His mentor Hadji Oemar Said Tjokroaminoto introduced Soekarno to important political circles, which explains why he was chosen to be the lead manager of this gold project.

By 1955, it was shown that the IMF, created at Bretton Woods, was not living up to its promises and instead only served the interests of the Western banking and political elite.[264)] At this time, a growing alliance began to see that these funds were being used to fuel the Cold War tensions, and that is one of the reasons why they decided to oppose the shady banking cabal by way of the introduction of gold backed funds, while it allowed the reins to be kept in the hands of the US Government.



Witnessed by :

1. Mr. Sri Sultan HB IX (.....)
2. Mr. Soewamo (.....)
3. Mr. Chaerul Fatholiah (C. Fatholiah)
4. Mrs. Sarinah (Sarinah)
5. Mr. Hudge Scoot (H. Scoot)
6. Mr. Robert Huglis (Robert Huglis)
7. Mr. Anthony Brian (.....)
8. Mr. Russel TS (Russel TS)
9. Mr. Dehol Alcony (Dehol Alcony)
10. Mr. Hansen Grob (H. Grob)
11. Mr. Brond Ternath (.....)
12. Mr. Martin van Gough (M. G.....)

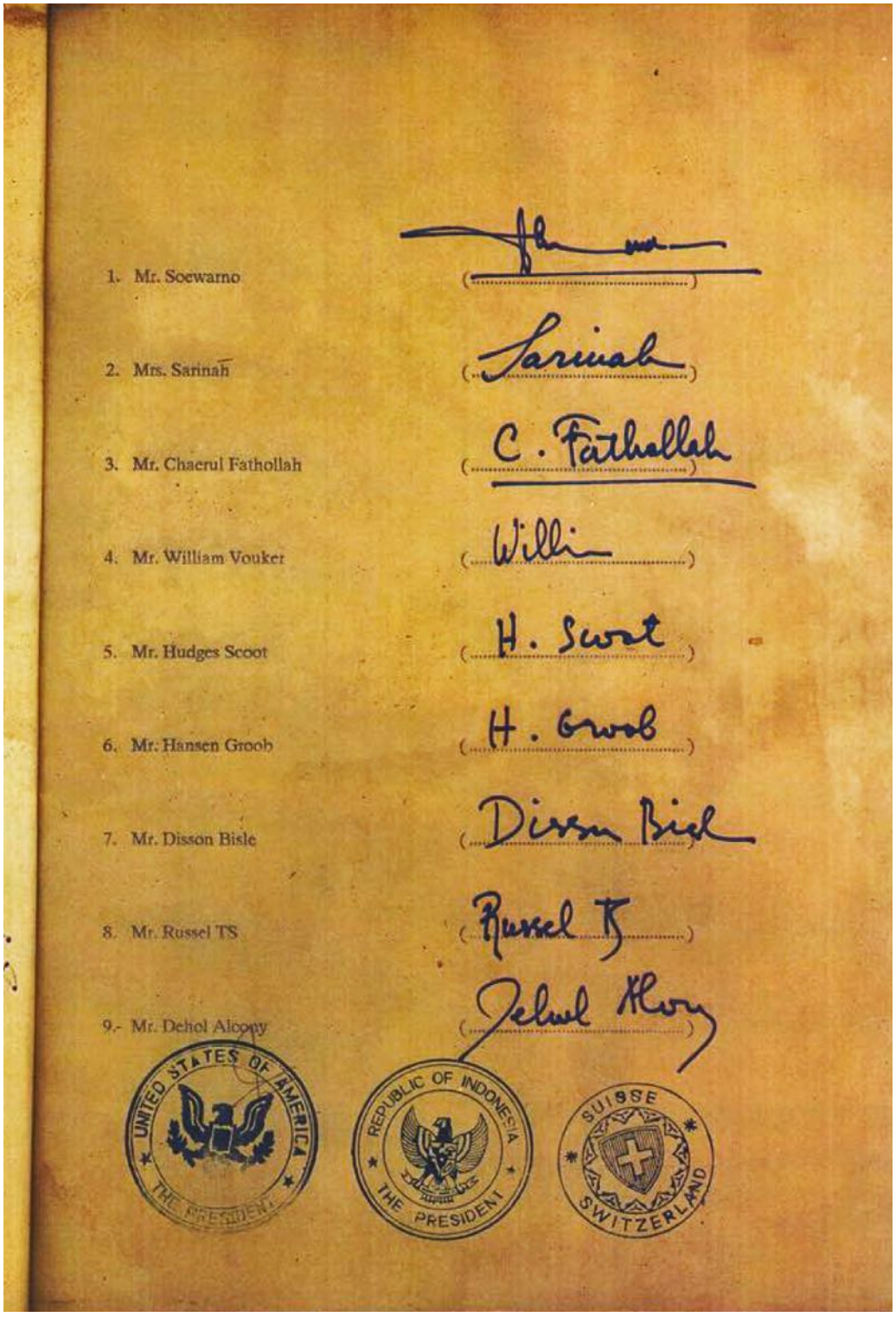
Copies/Files are for :

1. Mr. Soekarno, Indonesia
2. Mr. John F. Kennedy, USA
3. Mr. William Vouker, Swiss
4. Mr. Brond Ternath
5. UBS
6. File

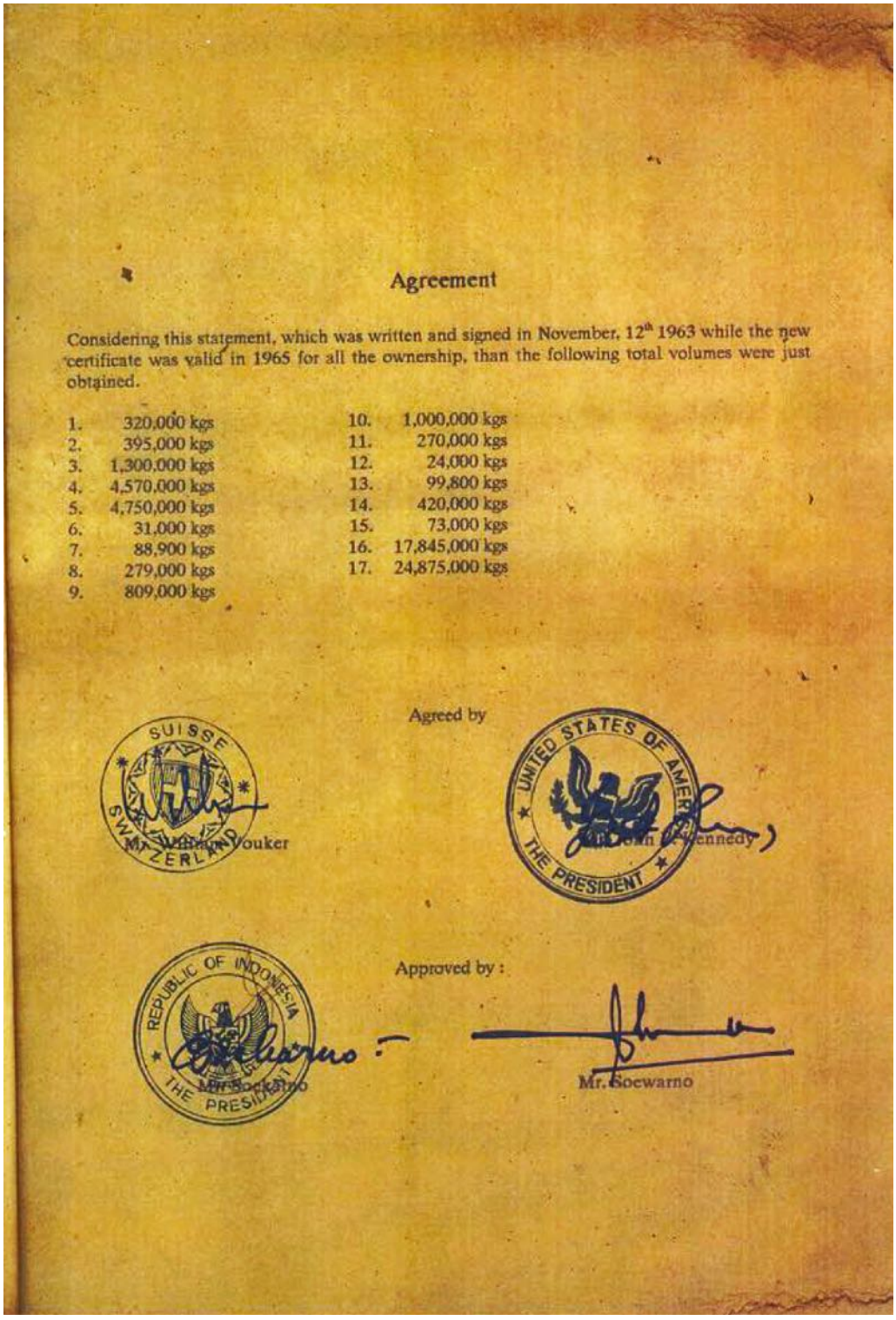
UNITED STATES OF AMERICA THE PRESIDENT

REPUBLIC OF INDONESIA THE PRESIDENT

SUISSE SWITZERLAND



264) Near the end of the World War, the Bretton Woods Conference gathered 730 delegates from 44 allied nations at Bretton Woods, 200 km north of Boston, to regulate what would be the new international monetary and financial order. To prevent crises in the post-war world, it was deemed imperative to establish a system that fostered international economic cooperation. A major feature was an adjustably pegged foreign exchange market rate system where exchange rates were pegged to gold (to be completely abandoned in 1971). Within the Final Act, the most important part was the establishment of the IMF (International Monetary Fund), to act as as the global lender of last resort to national governments, but actually it served to put these governments under a yoke, to the detriment of the countries they served.



Agreement

Considering this statement, which was written and signed in November, 12th 1963 while the new certificate was valid in 1965 for all the ownership, than the following total volumes were just obtained.

1.	320,000 kgs	10.	1,000,000 kgs
2.	395,000 kgs	11.	270,000 kgs
3.	1,300,000 kgs	12.	24,000 kgs
4.	4,570,000 kgs	13.	99,800 kgs
5.	4,750,000 kgs	14.	420,000 kgs
6.	31,000 kgs	15.	73,000 kgs
7.	88,900 kgs	16.	17,845,000 kgs
8.	279,000 kgs	17.	24,875,000 kgs
9.	809,000 kgs		

Agreed by

SUISSE SWITZERLAND

William Vouker

UNITED STATES OF AMERICA THE PRESIDENT

John F. Kennedy

Approved by :

REPUBLIC OF INDONESIA THE PRESIDENT

Mr. Soekarno

Mr. Soewarno

By 1963, the alliance decided to formalize their plans in the Green Hilton Memorial Agreement, signed in Geneva on Nov. 12, 1963 by President John F. Kennedy, President Soekarno and William Vouker (representing Switzerland). This tripartite agreement was an acknowledgment of the guarantee of gold bullion for in total 57,150 metric tons (valued US$ 64.3 billion at $35/oz). This was earmarked as collateral for the issuance of US Dollars by the Treasury (instead of the Fed). The functioning of the Global Collateral Accounts were to be supervised by

the Swiss Government through the Union de Banque Suisse. The Global Collateral Accounts were meant for an equitable global development by means of US Treasury notes in the form of new supernational / international gold backed notes, as a first step to bring an end to the Federal Reserve hegemony, particularly with respect to foreign transactions. Just ten days after the signing, President John F. Kennedy was assassinated in Dallas…[265)] and thus the authority granted to the US Treasury was never taken up. (end of the Neil Keenan quote)

John F. Kennedy (JFK) and Soekarno (Nov. 12 1963)

It did not stop there. There was a follow-up to these attempts to introduce a gold standard to get the world out of the stranglehold of the banking system. In early 2024, the Global Gold Monetary Fund (GMMF) was launched. Here is a transcript of the Sept. 15, 2023 interview with lead manager Allain Lenferna de la Motte,[266)] published by the Daily Tribune of the Philippines, country where even under Sukarno the largest gold reserves are held to facilitate the project: (https://globalgoldmf.com/)

«« The fund, which has 39 founding members, aims to convince all 249 nations to join this initiative that seeks to recognize the intrinsic value of gold as a 'God-given resource'. Lenferna de la Motte emphasizes the feasibility and value of maximizing gold as an alternative to fiat currency [the current system]. (He said:)

265) This was not the only reason for JFK's assasination. During the Cuba crisis he did not obey the military command, who wanted to bomb Cuba right away, which would have provoked a world war with danger of escalation into a nuclear conflict. By his actions he prevented World War III. This showed his independent thinking, which was not appreciated by certain circles. Kennedy also had started to cancel the extraordinary tax benefits of the Texan oil industry (Dallas lies in Texas, and Vice President Lyndon B. Johnson was from Texas). A third reason was that on June 4th 1963 Kennedy issued Executive Order No. 11110, which enpowered the Treasury to print dollar bills, backed by silver in the Treasury's vaults, to be issued free of debt and interest with the seigniorage accruing not to the privately owned US Federal Reserve Bank, but to the Government. As from 2009 dollar bills are sold for the cost of printing to the Fed, who then distributes them. Jim Marrs, in his book Crossfire, advanced that Kennedy was trying to rein in the power of the Federal Reserve, which he thought might have played a part in his assassination. After she died, Kennedy's wife, by means of her will, had released tapes, wherein she stated that Johnson was behind the murder of her husband [as one of the main players].

> Because gold can be used as a balancer to correct economic injustices, the Fund divided the world's 249 nations into 26 groups to identify the most advantaged and disadvantaged nations in terms of income inequality (GDP per capita). The new system of gold units will protect countries and their local economies from the financial shocks resulting from Central Bank interventions to correct liquidity and exchange rate imbalances [as is currently the case]. Its exchange rates, based on each country's gold units, fixed in a comprehensive matrix of exchange rates, will be fixed for a period of fifty years. This provides the kind of stability and predictability on which local economies can thrive. To promote decentralization, the fund will license public and private institutions to widely distribute its gold units, either in the form of printed gold money, debit cards, prepaid cards, or in digital form, such as e-wallets. Nonetheless, its gold units are not yet another crypto scheme, but a global platform based on a system of 'banking as a service', or baaS. »»

Despite the support of powerful parties for this ambitious project, success is not guaranteed, for modern-day finance spits on anything else. Today, the ruling class has almost unlimited financial resources, thanks to the invention of the computer, which explains why the shadow government agreed in 2009 to a total overhaul of the Federal Reserve Bank system. We are talking about a funding by means of 'off ledger finance', with no openness and accountability except to themselves, created by moving from so-called 'black screen' to 'white screen'. It involves large computer-based transactions, created out of thin air, through intermediaries set up for the purpose, such as in Panama, commonly under the name Avantulo. (Deutsche Bank has a partnership with a German Avantulo.) To illustrate, the Dubai financial crisis of 2010 was averted with off ledger finance, a bailout, through the Central Bank of the United Arab Emirates (U.A.E.). It was presented as coming exclusively from the Abu Dhabi government and its Central Bank. What really happened is conceiled. In "Dubai Financial Crisis 2010", Zubair Hasan of the INCEIF University in Kuala Lumpur, explains: (July 2010)

> «« In the nick of time the Government of Abu Dhabi and the Central Bank of the U.A.E. stepped in with a $10 billion bailout [coming from off ledger finance from the U.S.] for the state run Dubai World, which got stuck in a mire of billions of dollar debt. Of the allocated amount, $ 4.1 billion was meant to take care of the World's immediate debt obligations, comprised of Islamic bonds (sukuk) of Nakheel, the property development arm of the company. The amount was due on Dec. 14th 2009, the very day the financial support was pledged! »» (p. 50)

A funding guideline by Avantulo goes as follows:

> «« Our funds are normally exchanged with Central Banks. Central banks divide the funds up to the commercial banks, converting the funds to M0 commercial

---

266) Lenferna de la Motte advised members of the Icelandic parliament on options and strategies for the country's financial rehabilitation after the banking system collapsed in 2008 with global repercussions. He analyzed the debt crisis with a view to restructuring and temporizing outstanding debt, which is his field of expertise. Thanks to those opinions, the crisis was contained and conditions for recovery were created. Prior to that, in 2005, he developed creative financing strategies and methods for facilitating the rebuilding of New Orleans after the Katrina disaster and advised the Office of the Recovery Czar on financing issues that could accelerate recovery. Lenferna is the creator of a global trade information system that specializes in collecting, processing and disseminating information on up to 4.2 million monthly import bills of lading from U.S. Customs, which was downloaded into a comprehensive database of global sourcing and trade information. Patents on Lenferna's name: trust-linked debit card technology (patent 20070118449); a computer system for currency yields arbitrage (patent 20060 155638); a computer system for riskless rate/yield arbitrage (patent 200600 10056).

cash. Any funding or financial support that is processed through Avantulo, as well as any/all partners, related entities, associates, signatory trustees or representatives are all subject to first receiving formal written commitment by the project hosting country [its government] and are subject to approval by Avantulo's sponsoring countries [in particular the U.S.A.] and principle Trustee in order to meet the general guideline requirement for the utilization of said funds. Confirmation of proposed utilization needs full compliance with the anti-trust and AML (Anti-Money Laundering) regulations, sanction-list rules and thereon. Said funds cannot be utilized for military ventures and/or equipment, political oppression or such. Funds can only be properly and proportionally utilized when fully corresponding with the designated assignment country's capital market ratios and GDP. »»

28.121 – The Naked Capitalist

To find out how prior to the Trilateral Commission, the COMMITTEE consolidated and expanded its financial power through the political decision-making process, we can turn to Professor Carroll Quigley's monumental book, "Tragedy and Hope" (1300 pages) to which he has done thorough research. He is one of the recognized great historians of the twentieth century and he felt it was time to expose the political conspiracies because he was convinced, as his book shows over and over, that nothing could stop the New World Order and that publication of the magnus opus could not even delay the plans. (p. 950) In view of his position as an insider, he had access to all archives closed to ordinary people. He published the result of his research in 1966. The meaning of the title, he explains, is that the only 'hope' for humanity lies in the acceptance of a world government and that the 'tragedy' concerns those who resist it *"for they face a miserable end"*. Throughout the book, Quigley ridicules the *"stupid radical right"*, that is, the common man who believes in democracy. Tragedy and Hope shows, among other things, that Communism was helped in the saddle by the super-rich in the US and England. He shows exactly how the events took shape. This book is a hefty volume, but luckily Cleon Skousen has given us a sublime discussion of it in his booklet of only 144 pages – very readable, published in 1970. It's titled "The Naked Capitalist" and I bought it together with Tragedy and Hope in the year it was on sale.

The COMMITTEE owes its unity of thought and action to an unlikely figure, one John Ruskin. Quigley states (p. 130): *"The new imperialism after 1870 was quite different in tone from that which the Little Englanders had opposed earlier.* [267] *The chief changes were that it was justified on grounds of moral duty and of social reform and not, as earlier, on grounds of missionary activity and material advantage. The man most responsible for this change was John Ruskin."* Ruskin, the son of a wealthy wine merchant, was named to the professorship of fine arts at Oxford in 1870. *"He hit Oxford like an earthquake, not so much because he talked about fine arts, but because he talked about (...) moral issues."* As Skousen points out: *"The ideas of Ruskin were planted in the fertile minds of his students who were the scions of the wealthy aristocracy."* Skousen then turns to Kenneth Clark (pp. 27-28), who writes in his book "*Ruskin* Today" # 1964:

«« John Ruskin, Clark tells us, derived most of his ideas and inspiration *"directly for the source book of all dictatorships, 'Plato's republic'. He read Plato almost every day."* (p. 269) Of course Marx, Engels, Proudhon and Saint-Simon drank from that same fountain. Therefore, there is a remarkable parallel in the writings of Ruskin, Marx and other disciples of Plato. Plato wanted a ruling class with a powerful army to keep it in power and a society completely subordinate to the

267) In its original meaning during the late 18th and 19th centuries, a Little Englander was a member of the Liberal Party who was opposed to expansion of the British Empire, and that view also prevailed among certain traditionalist conservatives who wanted England to extend no farther than its borders as they then stood.

monolithic authority of the rulers. He also advocated using whatever force was necessary for the wiping out of all existing government and social structure so the new rulers could begin with a 'clean canvas' [nowadays called the Great Reset] on which to develop the portrait of their great new society.

The upper dimensions of Plato's 'ideal' society included the elimination of marriage and the family so that all the women would belong to all the men and all the men would belong to all the women. Children resulting from these promiscuous unions would be taken over by the government as soon as they were weaned and to be raised anonymously by the state. Plato wanted women to be treated equal to men – to fight wars with the men and perform labor like men. There was to be selective breeding of men and women under ontrol of the government. Children considered inferior or crippled were to be destroyed. There was to be a three-level structure of society into fixed classes: the small ruling class, the military class and the vast numbers of the worker class. Plato said the people would be induced to believe a government-indoctrinated falsehood that people were born with gold, silver or copper in their souls; and the rulers would determine which metal was present in the soul of each person and assign him to the appropriate class. Plato admitted all this was a falsehood but said it would facilitate the administration of affairs by the rulers because it would be taught as a religious principle. Plato reserved the full blessings of Communism for his rulling class [the nomenclatura]. It would be there that he felt that private property could be eliminated, family relations communalized, and intellectual energy devoted to determining what was good for the masses in the lower classes.

All this was part of what John Ruskin read *"almost every day"*. Now we will continue with Dr. Quigley's analysis (p. 130) of what happened when John Ruskin *"hit Oxford like an earthquake."*

Ruskin spoke to the Oxford undergraduates as members of the privileged, ruling class. He told them that they were the possessors of a magnificent tradition of education, beauty, rule of law, freedom, decency, and self-discipline, but that this traditon could not be saved, and did not deserve to be saved, unless it could be extended to the lower classes in England itself and to the non-English masses throughout the world. If this precious tradition were not extended to these two great majorities, the minority of upper-class Englishmen would ultimately be submerged by these majorities and the fine tradition lost. To prevent this, the tradition must be extended to the masses and to the empire. Ruskin's message had a sensational impact. His inaugural lecture was copied out in longhand by one undergraduate, Cecil Rhodes, who kept it with him for thirty years [until his death at the young age of 48]. »»

In order to evade taxes, which were becoming more and more hefty, the super-rich parked their assets in tax-exempt foundations and trusts, from which academia was subsidized, according to the saying "whose bread one eats, his word one speaks". The greatest financier in the United States in the first half of the twentieth century in this regard was J.P. Morgan. Today it is mainly the government that subsidizes the academic world, which has been following the dictates of the elites for many years, who out of sight are hiding themselves behind the political screen.

Indispensable in the nascent power base were the news media, notably The New York Times, the Herald Tribune, the Christian Science Monitor, the Washington Post, and the Boston Evening Transcript (which ceased in 1941). The iron grip on the news media has only been strengthened since then. We have seen how during the presidency of Donald Trump (2017-2021) the entire national and international news media threw mud in a closed front. Never in history has a leader of a country been treated in such a degrading manner. The American people should be ashamed of themselves. Fortunately, there is

now a counterbalance offered by the alternative media on the Internet. Tragedy and Hope shows how the news media always played a crucial role in the political decision-making process, serving the super-rich.

Quiqley sums it up like this (p. 953): *"On this basis (...) there grew up in the 20th century a power structure between London and New York, which penetrated deeply into university life, the press, and the practice of foreign policy."* The State Department has played a highly questionable role over all these years, of which Quigley gives examples, such as the affairs of North Korea and China, where the Communist takeovers could have been easily prevented, but any initiative to do so was more than scandalously opposed, especially by the scheming of the IPR. The power and influence of the the CFR in literally taking over the foreign policy of the US State Department after the First World War is staggering, as exemplified by Skousen. The CFR dominated the administrations of Roosevelt, Truman, Eisenhower, Kennedy and Johnson, as well as Nixon, who was President at the time the Naked Capitalist was published.

The Deep State was supreme even when instances of Communist infiltration could no longer be denied. On June 10, 1947, the Secretary of State wrote a well-substantiated letter: *"It is evident that there is a deliberate, calculated program being carried out not only to protect Communist personnel in high places, but to reduce security and intelligence protection to a nullity."* (Skousen p. 80) The various attempts from above to initiate an investigation were not followed up and then, finally, in 1950 there was a Senator who grabbed the bull by the horns. His name was Joseph McCarthy. In an insidious fashion the entire press fell on him, so that in a succession of events his investigation came to a screeching halt, despite the fact that the famous Jenner Report was published on July 30, 1953 – when the McCarthy hearings were in full swing. The report was issued by the Senate Judiciary Committee and was called: "Interlocking Subversion in Government Departments", with 12 shocking conclusions of which I give the first four:

1. The Soviet international organization has carried on a successful and important penetration of the United States Government and this penetration has not been fully exposed.
2. This penetration has extended from the lower ranks to top-level policy and operating positions in our Government.
3. The agents of this penetration have operated in accordance with a distinct design fahsioned by their Soviet superiors.
4. Members of this conspiracy helped to get each other into Government, helped each other to rise in Government and protected each other from exposure.

28.122 – Social Engineering

For the aspect of social engineering we should direct our attention to the Tavistock Institute of Human Relations (TIHR), which is the premier brainwashing mind control institute in the world, that has evolved into a government think tank, that has no stake in law enforcement, but behavioral change. It is de facto and deliberately going beyond the conferred authority as legally circumscibed.

Tavistock is located in London and, according to their website, was established in 1947. Its cradle can be traced back to 1913 when established in London at Wellington House. Wellington House began as an organization with intent of shaping a propaganda outlet that would break down the stiff public resistance being encountered to the looming war between Britain and Germany, that would culminate in the First World War. *"Wellington House had an American Section, whose most prominent members were Walter Lipp-*

mann and Edward Bernays." [268] The institute was virtually unknown to the general public when Dr. John Coleman started to investigate it, and no-one suspected it to be sanctioned by government to dedicate itself to the science of *"mass brainwashing"*, a term of Coleman. He comments: *"From a somewhat crude beginning at Wellington House, grew an organization that was to shape the [sociological] destiny of Germany, Britain and more especially the United States, in a manner that it became a highly sophisticated machine for the manipulation and creation of public opinion."* [269] Coleman was a British intelligence officer with access to highly classified documents and in this capacity he also had access to the enormous documentation of Tavistock. Brainwashing has been defined as guiding the thinking of a group of people (or individuals) without them being aware that their thinking is manipulated. In the invisible straitjacket of their mind, they think that their beliefs and conclusions are their own. We could call it an indirect way of hypnotism.

The Key to Understanding Fox News and the Statistical Polling Tool might lie in what Lippmann had to say about such matters. In his 1922 book "Public Opinion", Lippmann outlined Tavistock's psychological warfare methodology. In the introductory chapter "The World Outside and the Pictures in Our Heads", Lippmann stresses:

> «« The object of the study of the public opinion by the social analyst is [to get to know] reality as defined by internal perception or images of that reality. Public opinion deals with indirect, unseen, and puzzling facts, and there is nothing obvious about them. The situations to which public opinions refer are known only as opinions. (…) The pictures inside the heads of these human beings, the pictures of themselves, of others, of their needs, purposes, and relationship, are their public opinions. (…) The picture inside [their heads] so often misleads men in their dealings with the outside world [and it is those misconceptions provide a handle to act upon at will]. »»

Thanks to this evaluation, it was easy to take the next decisive step, which was carried out by Bernays – which allowed the elites running our society to pool the means of mass communication by which they could mobilize and influence the 'herd' mind. One year after Lippmann's book, Bernays published "Crystallizing Public Opinion". In 1928, he came up with another book entitled quite simply: "Propaganda". In the first chapter "Organizing Chaos", Bernays writes:

> «« The conscious and intelligent manipulation of the organized, habits and opinions of the masses is an important element in democratic society. Those who manipulate this unseen mechanism of society constitute an invisible government, which is the true ruling power of our country. We are governed, our minds are molded, our tastes formed, our ideas suggested, largely by men, that we have never heard of. (…) Our invisible governors are, in many cases, unaware of the identity of their fellow members in the inner cabinet. Whatever attitude one

---

268) "The Tavistock Institute of Human Relations shaping the Moral, Spiritual, Cultural, Political and Economic decline of America – on Social Engineering" by Dr. John Coleman # 2005 (p. 25). "It was not only the Britsh public whose perception of events had to be altered, but also that of a recalcitrant American public. To this end Bernays and Lippmann were istrumental in getting President Wilson to establish the Creel Committee, which created the first body of methodological techniques for dissemination of successful propaganda and for the science of polling to secure the 'correct' opinion." (pp. 25-26)

In 2021 the paperback of "The Tavistock Institute" was sold at $978 on Amazon.com, but it was freely downloadable at cognitive-liberty.online. I then bought the German translation "Das Tavistock Institut" for less than €20 on the Internet. Clearly, the incumbent power does not want this book to gain wider exposure.

269) "The Tavistock Institute of Human Relations", John Coleman # 2005 (p. X).

> chooses to take toward this condition, it remains a fact that in almost every act of our daily lives, whether in the sphere of politics or business, in our social conductor or our ethical thinking, we are dominated by the relatively small number of persons – a trifling fraction of our hundred and twenty million – who understand the mental processes and social patterns of the masses. It is they who pull the wires, which control the public mind, who harness old social forces and contrive new ways to bind and guide the world. »»

In "Propaganda" Bernays followed his praise of the 'invisible government' by underscoring the next phase that propaganda techniques should follow, better 'must' follow:

> «« As civilization has become more complex, and as the need for invisible government has been increasingly demonstrated, the technical means have been invented and developed by which opinion may be regimented. With the printing press and the newspaper, the telephone, telegraph, radio and airplanes, ideas can spread rapidly and even instantaneously over the whole of America. »»
>
> «« To back up his point, Bernays quoted the mentor of 'public opinion manipulation', H. G. Wells. He cited a 1928 article in the New York Times in which Wells welcomed *"modern means of communication for opening up a new world of political processes",* and for allowing *"the common design to be documented and sustained against perversion and betrayal"*. For Wells, the advent of mass communication, leading up to television, meant fantastic new paths for social control beyond the wildest dreams of the earlier mass-manipulation fanatics of the British Fabian Society. »» [270) 271)]

Another Coleman quote (p.14): *"The moral, spiritual, racial, economic, cultural bankruptcy we are in today is not some social phenomenon or the result of something abstract or socialogical that just 'happened'. Rather it is the outcome of a carefully planned Tavistock program."* He defines the Tavistock objective as follows:

> «« Classical and Western are the only two civilizations that could bring a modern renaissance to the world. (…) The unsurpassed beauty of their literature, art, their classics, spiritual and moral advancement of the female sex with a very large corresponding degree of protection, was what distinguished Western and Classic civilizations from others. It was this bastion that Oswald Spengler saw coming under increasing attack,[272)] and the thinking at Tavistock ran on parallel tracks, but with a totally different goal. Tavistock saw in this civilization a stumbling block to ushering a New World Order, as did the emphasis on protection and elevation of the female sex to a place of high respect and honor. Thus the whole thrust of Tavistock was to 'democratize' the West by an attack on womanhood, as well as the racial, moral, spiritual and religious foundation upon which Western civilization rested. (…) The planners at Tavistock discovered that the way to upset the balance of Western civilization was to force unwelcome changes in the race by removing the achievement-oriented reward and decoupling social success from it, in the manner that ancient Roman leaders were supplanted by their former slaves and aliens, whom they had permitted to come and dwell among them. »» (The Tavistock Institute, p. XII)

---

270) Wells was for a time a member of the socialist Fabian Society, but broke with them, as his creative political thought did not allow itself to be ring-fenced. He later criticised them, not because he thought their subversive ideals were wrong, but because, in his view, they had a poor understanding of economical and educational reform.

271) The Tavistock Institute, John Coleman (p. 285).

272) This is expounded in Oswald Spengler's monumental book from 1922: "Der Untergang des Abendlandes" (The Decline of Western Civilization).

The moral degredation of the West has been greatly accelerated by the Tavistock influencers, as described by John Coleman in his book on Tavistock in:

> «« People who stopped to think at all said they hated the way 'times are changing', but what they did not and could not know was that times were being made to change according to a carefully laid out Tavistock formula. (…) Homosexuality emerged alongside lesbianism to shock disgust, and it seemed, to deliberately affront those who still lingered in the old order. A study of this aberration showed that homosexuality and lesbianism became rampant not out of any inner or latent desires, but as a means to 'shocking' the old establishment with its rigid codes of good order. Music too suffered and 'went to the dogs' in all manner of rock music and other 'decadent' forms like punk.
>
> Tavistock was now in the most crucial stage of developing its plan that called for womanhood to be reduced to a lessening standard of morality and of feminine behavior never thought possible. Nations were in a state of numbness, 'shell-shocked' by the radical changes forced upon them which seemed impossible to stop, in which a complete absence of female modesty reflected in learned behavioral attitudes, that made the 1920s and 1930s look like a ladies Sunday school teacher's convention. There was no stopping the 'sexual revolution' that swept the world during that era and the planned degradation of womanhood that went with it.
>
> Some voices were heard, notably G.K. Chesterton and Oswald Spengler, but it was not enough to blunt the assault launched by the Tavistock Institute that had in effect 'declared war on Western civilization'. The effects of 'long range penetration and inner directional conditioning' were everywhere to be observed. The moral, spiritual, racial, economic, cultural and intellectual bankruptcy we are in the midst of today is not some social phenomenon or the result of something abstract or sociological that just 'happened'. Rather it was the outcome of a carefully planned Tavistock program.
>
> (…) No, this condition of disintegration of our Republic in which we find ourselves in 2005 did not simply evolve; rather it is the end product of a carefully planned social engineering brainwashing project of immense proportions. The truth is reflected in the death throes of what was once the greatest nation on Earth. The physiological conditioning papers written by the social scientists at Tavistock are working well. Your reaction is a programmed one. You cannot think in any other way unless you make a supreme effort. (ch. 3: how times change)

The manipulation of the crowds, according to the Tavistock recipe, follows the three-system response, instituted by Dr. Fred Emery, a senior psychiatrist at Tavistock. According to Emery the crowds manifest the following symptoms when subjected to a plethora of violent changes, stress and turbulence, for extended periods of time, which in Tovistock jargon is called *"long range penetration"*. The result is a predictable chain of reactions. Superficiality is the first reaction and is the condition that manifests itself when the target group group reacts by adopting shallow sloganeering, which they attempt to pass off as ideals, as we have seen with the sanitary measures during the Covid-19 health crisis: "stay at home, wear face masks, avoid the fellow man". In this phase, the true cause of the crisis is not recognized and mapped out, and the crisis and tension run unabated. The crisis situation will continue for as long as the master of ceremonies, in this case the government, wants it to continue. The second phase of the crisis, since the crisis continues, is fragmentation, a condition in which panic strikes, and eventually social cohesion will fall apart. The result is that small groups form, attempting to protect themselves without cohesion with others, and often it happens that one resorts to uncoordinated violence. This phase Emery called passive maladaptation, for the crowd generally still fails to identify the real cause of the crisis. The third phase is when the victims try to escape from the source of the induced crisis and the resulting tension.

In an ostrich reaction they close their eyes to it and passively accept anything they are asked to do, as long as it 'solves' the matter. They take fantasy trips of introspection and get obsessed with the self. This, Emery defined as the disassociation of the group while the individual is focussed on self-realization. In the three-system response, the irrational takes precedence; and as long as the true cause of the crisis, which causes great fear, is not properly addressed, public opinion remains malleable and the target group, which sometimes consists of large crowds, can be manipulated. The created fear is indispensable in this system; this is not new because tyrants have always known this. At this stage, false solutions are accepted by the general public as they are being offered. And those solutions further the ultimate goal of the tyrant, which is 'obedience'. He's the boss, we the cattle. Such is the case in the realm of the Antichrist.

The Antichrist, and whom he has managed to placate, wants to drastically thin out the world population and to enslave those who remain. By application of modern techniques the elites even want to control our mind. That is the last fortress left to us, the donjon. But God will cut their plans short, because what is happening now is a direct attack on Him. He will not let go, as the Prophet Isaiah announces in the eighth chapter, where the text refers to our present time. Thus it says trice: *"Devise a plan but it will be thwarted, devise a plan but it will be thwarted, devise a plan but it will be thwarted."* And it continues: *"Take counsel together, but it will come to nothing! Make agreements, nothing will come of it anyway, because God is the Emmanuel, the God with us. A conspiracy, we are not allowed to call it that, but still, my people will call it a conspiracy."* Why do those plans fail? Why? Jesus will be the rock of stumbling. (cf. Is. 8:14 and Rom. 9:33) Yes, the thumping and stamping boot of Midian will still do much harm, but the land of Zebulon and Naphtali – in the upper north – will be spared. (The Netherlands perhaps?) And then, at last, the Kingdom of Peace will start shining, of which the next chapter gives an impression: *"The people that walk in darkness shall see a great light; those who dwell in the land of the shadow of death, upon them shall a light shine: for the yoke of our burden, and the rod upon our shoulders, and the slave's staff, God hath broken them all. Yea, the Son is given unto us, and the government will be upon his shoulder, and He shall be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace."* Isaiah admonishes: *"To the law and to the testimony! Whoever does not speak according to this word, there will be no dawn for him."* Therein lies the cure for easing the labour pains, for we are now dealing with the pangs of birth of the coming about of the new world.

APPENDIX 19

How the Council managed to subvert the FBI

John Edgar Hoover was at parties hosted by Bob Hope, who had bought me at some sort of auction when I was really young. For one of those parties he had dressed me in a blue sequin dress. Henry and Bob had put together a list of other politicians who were like J. Edgar so they would feel comfortable together. J. Edgar Hoover, 'Jerry' to his friends, must have thought Bob was safe and that he was out of his political arena so he could 'let his hair down'. But it was really a clever set up between Bob and Henry, as they set a trap for Hoover. At the party onset, I was brought in to dance naked and get them going. They all dressed up in 'costumes' left out for their 'party enjoyment'. I presented it that way so they wouldn't feel uncomfortable or inhibited. Then they were given booze, cocaine, anything they wanted. There were things for the 'party poppers', for those who needed an extra push, and they could take from dishes full of different recreational drugs with little tags attached explaining the type of ride they would go on if they took a certain pill or powder – everything short of injectables was offered. This group of men got really high and silly and changed into the costumes. Once they were high, I worked them to get the information as pre-directed by Henry Kissinger. J. Edgar must not have known that Bob Hope was connected to Kissinger, more than that, they were very close. So, the information gathered that evening from Hoover and his friends – not only from the direct answers to my questions, but also of what I saw of their attitudes and sexual preferences, etc. – were all recorded directly in my mindfiles [to be released on command].

From then on the Council [under the aegis of the 400] had "Hoover by the balls …or was it the pussy?" my controllers joked. From then on the FBI was under the control of the Council, that very secretive group who even stood above Kissinger and the President of the USA. They got Hoover to the point where he was willing to put directly into the FBI-operations some blocks and different rules, regulations, and codes. That began to set up a controlling mechanism so that when the next FBI director took office, things inside the Bureau would be in place and the Council could continue to manipulate them toward their Ultimate Year-2000 goal.

From: "Thanks for the Memories (The memoirs of Bobe Hope's and Henry Kissinger's mind-controlled slave - used as a presidential sex toy and personal 'mind file' computer)" by Bruce Taylor # 1993 (p. 147)

Note: John Edgar Hoover (1895-1972) served as the first Director of the Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI). In June 1935, Hoover became instrumental in founding the FBI, where he remained director for 37 years until his death in May 1972. Hoover expanded the FBI into a large government sponsored crime-fighting organization. (Wikipedia)

Note: The individual elements of an organization include a variety of components that one may see as blocks, like departments and its specific management hierarchy.

APPENDIX 20

THE BUSINESS PLOT TO OVERTHROW THE US-GOVERNMENT

In 1934, Major General Smedley Butler made public a plot to overthrow President of the United States, Franklin Delano Roosevelt (FDR), with an army of half a million soldiers and replace it with a fascist regime, such as existed in Italy, to so-called *"suppress a communist rise in the United States as an act of patriotism"*. His father Thomas Stalker Butler (1855-1928) was a member of Congress until his death in 1928. The following year, at age 48, his son became the youngest Major General in American history. He was also the most decorated military man ever, including twice the Congressional Medal of Honor (in 1914 and 1915), which is the highest and most prestigious US military decoration. Butler is most famous for his "War is a Racket" book of 1935 which distilled his thinking about that dirty business – put simply, American interests abroad were the interests of Big Business and Wall Street.

In July 1934, Butler was approached by two people who offered him $30 million (worth 700 mln dollars today) to supply half a million men and a media campaign to stage a coup. Butler pretended to be behind this to find out who the instigators were. That's how he found out who the conspirators were, and he met them too: the Dupont family and the leaders of US Steel, Heinz, Standard Oil, General Motors, Chase National Bank, Goodyear and last but not least Prescott Bush, the grandfather of George W. Bush, who was President of the United States from 2001 until 2009. In case he required funds personally, he could go to John W. Davis, the attorney for J.P. Morgan & Co, as was revealed from the testimony of Paul French, and it would not be any trouble to raise a million dollars. After Butler spoke out, the House of Representatives instructed the already existing Special Committee on Un-American Activities to investigate the matter. When the Committee's final report was released, the Times wrote that the committee *"purported to report that a two-month investigation had convinced it that General Butler's story of a Fascist march on Washington was alarmingly true"* and *"...also alleged that definite proof had been found that the much publicized Fascist march on Washington (with half a million men), which was to have been led by Major General Smedley Butler, according to testimony at a hearing, was actually contemplated."* The Times was the only newspaper that gave a truthful account of the final report. All the other newspapers in the country gave a crushing verdict. In spite of the conclusions of the report, substantiating the claims of Butler, no further action was taken and the people responsible for the plot, were left unschratched. Butler was portrayed as a nuthead. Roosevelt, whose mother was a descendant of the Delano family, which had become immensely rich through the opium trade, reached an agreement with the conspirators.*) What matters is that their plans foundered.

On Dec. 28, 1935, near Philadelphia PA, Butler made a filmed release for Newsreels which is now on YouTube under: "Gen. Butler bares plot by fascists":

> «« I appeared before the Congressional Committee, the highest representation of the American people, under subpoena to tell what I knew of activities, which I believe might lead to an attempt to set up a fascist dictatorship. The plan outlined to me was to form an organization of veterans to use as a buffer or as a club (gathering) to at least intimidate the government and break down our democratic institutions. The upshot of the whole thing was that I was supposed to lead an organization of 500,000 men which would be able to take over the functions of government. I talked with an investigator for this committee, who came to me with a subpoena on sunday Nov. 18th [1934]. He told me they had unearthed evidence linking my name with several such Veterans organizations. As it seemed to me to be getting serious then, I felt it was my duty to tell all I knew of such activities to this committee. My main interest in all this is to preserve

> our democratic institutions: I want to retain the right to vote by the right to speak freely and the right to write. If we maintain these basic principles our democracy is safe. No dictatorship can persist [where] suffrage, freedom of speech and press [exist]. »» (Source Newsreal) **)

The reference to the Times article is from Wikipedia, under: Business Plot (Aug 14, 2022). The conclusion of the final report, cited above, begins with *"a two-month investigation had convinced it that General Butler's story of a Fascist march on Washington was alarmingly true."* There is a link to this Times article. The article appears on the screen via the waybackmachine, but the quotations are not stated. Attempts to download the original final report were unsuccessful as the PDFs are consistently empty regardless of the website through which this was attempted. In other words, it is still a 'hot item'.

Journalist John Spivak, researching Nazism and anti-Semitism got permission to examine the public documents and was (it seems unwittingly) given the unexpurgated transcripts amid stacks of other papers, which he printed. Thus Spivak discovered that much crucial information was missing: *"The McCormack-Dickstein Committee delet[ed] extensive excerpts relating to Wall Street financiers including Guaranty Trust director Grayson Murphy, J.P. Morgan, the Du Pont interests, Remington Arms, and others allegedly involved in the plot attempt. Even today, in 1975, a full transcript of the hearings cannot be traced."* This is mentioned in "Maverick Marine: General Smedley D. Butler and the Contradictions of American Military History" by Hans Schmidt #1998. See also Wikisource: "McCormack–Dickstein Committee", which gives many quotes omitted in the official transcript.

Without knowing the exact origins of the Deep State, Major General Butler's confessions come across as nonsense and totally unbelievable. Unfortunately, everything indicates that the "Business Plot", as it has come to be called, should be taken seriously and that Butler is one of American history's greatest patriots, who dared to swim against the current.

---

*) Question is what kind of deal the conspirators struck with Roosevelt. It's remarkable that the Secretary of the Treasury, Henry Morgenthau, nominated in January 1934, had such an inordinate influence on the foreign policy of Roosevelt, largely bypassing the powers of the Minister of Finance, the Secretary of War and the Secretary of State. As from Dec. 1941 the main advisor of Morgenthau was Harry Dexter White, who was revealed to be a Soviet spy without being convicted. According to the IMF (Sept. '98, V. 35:3): "He was without question one of the two great intellectual founders of the IMF and the World Bank. As the chief international economist at the US Treasury he drafted the US blueprint for the IMF that competed with the plan drafted for by the British Treasury by John Maynard Keynes." Would it be too farfetched to surmise that the deal struck was that President Roosevelt had to follow blindly the instructions of Morgenthau? See the report of 1650 pages prepared by the "Subcommittee to investigate the administration of the Internal Security Act and other Internal Security laws" (Nov. 20, 1957), of which a summary by Professor Anthony Kubek is annexed to the aforementioned report.

**) In the pre-TV era, people saw the news in their neighborhood movie theaters; newsreels were shown before every feature film and in dedicated newsreel theaters located in large cities. Universal Newsreel, produced from 1929 to 1967, was released twice a week. Each issue contained six or seven short stories, usually one to two minutes in length, covering world events, politics, sports, fashion, and whatever else might entertain the movie audience. These newsreels offer a fascinating and unique view of an era when motion pictures defined our culture and were a primary source of visual news reporting. The reels were shown in cinemas about three weeks after being shot.

APPENDIX 21

World Control via Personal Numbers & the Smartcard

Year of publication 2012

In November 2008 a mailing was sent to all households in the Netherlands in which the comprehensive EPD or Electronic Patient Dossier was announced. The responsible minister Ab Klink had taken this step without first informing parliament. A questionable matter. In 2010 and 2011, the EDP was torpedoed by the Senate under pressure from public opinion. What is very similar to the EPD is the so-called Universal Biometric Identification (UBID). The EPD holds precisely the data that could be stored in the smart card (the smart credit card) as part of a person's indelible identity. It goes without saying that this can lead to a terrible intrusion into someone's privacy. The very fact that this kind of system exists makes it likely that one day it will be applied. The lurking danger is not abuse by the medical staff but by the competent authority, the government itself, which can thus exercise its power at will. So this is a very disturbing potential!

London-based Mondex International was founded in 1995 by seventeen companies, and this company is probably going to provide the smartcard system. It has the technique already franchised over tens of nations. The system was conceived in 1993 by London bankers Tim Jones and Graham Higgins. The European Union is expected to adopt Mondex as part of the Single European Payments Area, in short SEPA. Other systems were quickly being put aside in favor of Mondex, especially since in 1996 MasterCard bought a 51% stake in the company. *"This is the final stage in becoming a global reality,"* said Robin O'Kelly then, an expert in the field. *"With MasterCard's backing, there's nothing to stop Mondex now from becoming the global standard."*

Eventually the idea of carrying a card will become obsolete as people discover that it has its security limitations, being susceptible to damage or loss (the biometric identification precludes misuse of the cards themselves). The final solution will be provided by a microchip or VeriChip, simply placed inside the human body as is the current practive with animal identification systems in a business that belongs to Applied Digital Solutions (ADS), a US company. These kind of devices have a transponder, which generates a reply signal upon proper radiographic interrogation. A still more developed system, introduced by the same company, combines GPS, wireless and body function monitoring, which is called Digital Angel. In the United States, a start was made in 2002 to implant the VeriChip in people with conditions such as Alzheimer's on a voluntary basis. Digital Angel is for the time being reserved for livestock because there is no legal basis to apply it to humans. The voluntary basis is likely to remain unaffected. But what can one do if ultimately all transactions can only take place through the implanted chip? In the Euro-countries, the amounts that can be paid in cash have been gradually reduced. In Belgium, that amount was reduced to € 3,000 at the end of 2011 and to € 1,000 in Italy. In the end, all commercial cash transaction will be criminalized.

The name Mondex can be seen as a compound of the words monetary and dexter (the right hand). The ideal spots to carry Verichip are the right hand and the forehead. This reminds of Revelation 13:16-17: *"And he (the beast that speaks as the dragon) causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: and that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name."* But that has far-reaching consequences, because Revelation 14:9-11 tells us: *"If anyone worships the beast and his image, and receives his mark on his forehead or on his hand, he himself shall also drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out full strength into the cup of his indignation. He shall be tormented with fire and brimstone. (...) And the smoke of their torment ascends forever and ever; and they have no rest day or night, who worshipped the beast and his image and whoever received the mark of his name."*

Mondex says that it has nothing to do with implantable microchips, but Motorola, who developed the smartcard technology for Mondex, has experimented with implants and bio-chips, so it is not unlikely that such a method at one time will be combined with Mondex ...when and if 'need' arises.

In Greek 'right' is dexios, being derived from dechomai: 'to receive, accept, take (willingly), an exercise of individual power to receive/accept something or not.' The Greek for 'mark', used in Revelation, is charagma, which means "a scratch, etching, tattoo, or stamp (as a badge of servitude)". In antiquity slaves, going to the market place, were given a tablet to identify their owner and indicate what their qualifications and origins might be. Such clay tablets were baked with the seal of the owner and protected the slave as he traveled through the town on errands for his master. They were indeed badges of servitude. There is no mistake to be made in the interpretation of the verses from the book of Revelation. To wear a mark such as the VeriChip is wrong, deadly wrong.

Dr. Carl Sanders (1935-2016) was an electronic engineer, inventor, author and consultant to various government organizations as well as to IBM, General Electric, Honeywell and Teledyne. Thirty-two years of his life he spent in design engineering and electronics – designing microchips in the Bio-Med field. He became the senior engineer heading about hundred people from Motorola, General Electric and the Boston Medical Center. It started with an investigation to find a solution for someone with spinal cord injury. Later it turned into a project for an implantable microchip. As the computers used in the sixties were 18 bits, the algorithm of all microchips is written in 18 bits, or three times 6, written 666. The project almost turned into electronic acupuncture because they ended up with embedding a microchip in a body to put out a signal that affected certain areas of the body. The chips could even be used to cause a behavioural change. One of the projects was called the Phoenix Project, which applied to Vietnam veterans. They got a so-called Rambo Chip. This chip had to cause an extra adrenaline boost.

There are 250,000 components in the microchip, including a tiny lithium battery, all embedded in a glass tube the size of a quarter of a grain of rice. Dr. Sanders had talked to a doctor at the Boston Medical Center about what that concentration of lithium in the body could do if the tube broke down. He told that it would cause a boil or grievous sore. This fits with what the Book of Revelation announces that *"horrible, malignant sores*

broke out on everyone who had the mark of the beast and worshiped his statue." (Rev. 16:2)

The question presents itself: How is it possible that the tiny glass tube starts to crack? Well, if a lithium battery is overcharged, after some time it starts to swell and quite some force is excerted in doing that. The battery in this microchip is being charged by fluctuations in the body temperature, which the research team of Dr. Sanders discovered, happen to be most pronounced in the forehead and in the right hand, and that's why the chip is implanted there. A mother puts her hand on her child's forehead because that is the right place to know if the child has a fever. As is well attested there are plans to vaccinate everyone on earth, not one time, but seven times. These vaccines cause people feeling ill (or far worse) and that means fever. If the fever comes and goes for a number of times, well, then the battery might start to swell because of overcharging. This is speculation, call it a hypothesis, but it might just be true.

These vaccinations are given in a scheme to change the people also genetically through so-called gnome editing. Genome editing is a way of making changes to specific parts of a genome. Scientists have been able to alter DNA since the 1970s, but in recent years, they have developed faster, cheaper, and more precise methods to add, remove, or change genes in living organisms including humans, with the ultimate objective to create the 'Internet of People' that interconnects objects and devices with people who will become part of a digital infrastructure in a two-way street: someone provides input for the master computer and the master computer sends input back to steer the receptor when the occasion arises, who once was a creature created by God. The immense collecting and ultra fast processing of data will be the core of the system with the capacity to use the humanoids, thus created, as subservient 'things'. They look like people and seem to reason like people, but their free will and their compassionate feeling towards their fellow beings will have been amputated. That creature will have changed so radically that it will be irretrievably lost to Jesus who has become 'human' for humans. When, in the process of re-creation, that irreversible point has been crossed is difficult to say. It is certain that this point is reached as soon as the amygdala, which processes all our emotions, has been destroyed. Such a person no longer feels emotions, nor anger, fear and affection. The reader may be hesitant to accept that there are plans to create a race of slave laborers turned into humanoids. Yet it fully agrees with what Zbigniew Brzezinski wrote in 1980:

> «« The capacity to assert social and political control over the individual will vastly increase. It will soon be possible to assert almost continuous control over every citizen and to maintain up-to-date files, containing even the most personal details about health and personal behavior of every citizen in addition to the more customary data. These files will be subject to instantaneous retrieval by the authorities. Power will gravitate into the hands of those who control information. (...) This will encourage tendencies through the next several decades toward a technotronic era, a dictatorship, leaving even less room for political procedures as we know them [so, end of democracy]. Finally, looking ahead to the end of the century, the possibility of biochemical mind control and genetic tinkering with man, leading to beings that will function like men and reason like them as well, could give rise to some difficult

> questions [– however, all of Brzezinski's writings indicate that he had no qualms to welcome this kind of 'tinkering']. »» [273)]

Brzezinski (1928-2017) wrote this in his capacity of President Carter's National Security Advisor and as a leading member of the Club of Rome and also as a member of the Council of Foreign Relations (CFR). With: *"This will encourage tendencies through the next several decades toward a technotronic era, a dictatorship",* is meant: "This will be facilitated through the next several decades by leveraging the technological opportunities that lie ahead, on a truly global scale, giving rise to a dictatorship etc."

As the VeriChip development went along, Dr. Carl Sanders left the project but he stayed involved as a consultant. He was used in many meetings as an expert witness in regard to the uses of the microchip. He was in one meeting where it was discussed: "How can you control a people if you cannot identify them?" People like Henry Kissinger, one of the Kennedies, and CIA agents, attended these meetings. As the development of this microchip went further, as the identification chip became the focal point, there were several things that were on the agenda. It was decided that they wanted to save a name and an image (a picture of the face), Social Security number with its international digits, finger print identification, physical description, family history, address, occupation, income tax information and criminal record. Dr. Sanders has been in seventeen 'One World' meetings where this was discussed, meetings in Brussels and Luxembourg, discussing also the financial repercussions that it would have.

The required legislation was prepared early on. The President of the United States of America, under the "Emigration Control Act of 1986" (Section 100), received the authority to decide whatever type of identification is necessary – whether it be an invisible tattoo or electronic media under the skin. This is no phantasy, boys, but well underway.

273) "The Story of the Committee of 300", John Coleman # 1992 (p. 28). I have not been able to locate the original source, but what is important is that this book was published back in 1992, 28 years before the COVID-19 circus began its tour.

APPENDIX 22

How the Mark of the Beast is introduced and what it is doing

This is a testimony of Erica, a young woman, who had a talk with Jesus. It was placed on the Internet on Dec. 5th 2024. Erica doesn't pretend to be a prophet, just someone who had an encounter with Jesus, which happened during a NDE (near death experience). She wants people to know what He said to her, for it is about an important topic. It is about the way that the Mark of the Beast, spoken of in the Bible, will be gradually introduced in people's lives and how it affects them. The Bible reads (Rev. 13:16-17): *"The Beast causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, to receive the Mark in their right hand or in their foreheads, and that no one may buy or sell except one who has the Mark or the Name of the Beast, or the Number of his Name."*

The battle to entrap our bodies and behaviors

The intimate-technology revolution, borne of the fusion of nanotechnology, biotechnology, information technology and cognitive technology, focuses on controlling our intimate environment: our bodies, behaviors and social interactions.

How we 'are in the world' – what information we are presented with, how we experience each other and the world – becomes increasingly pre-programmed: our behavior is manipulated, our social skills threaten to crumble, and when using some technologies, we experience other people more as things than as individuals.

"Intimate Technology - The battle over our bodies and behaviors"
Prof. Rinie van Est (with assistance of V. Rerimassie, I. van Keulen and G. Dorren)
Rathenau Institute, The Hague, Netherlands # Jan. 2014 (pp. 73, 72)

«« My name is Erica Marlo. I never thought I would be sharing such a story, but after what Jesus showed me during my death experience, I realize I have no choice but to tell. What I saw is too important to keep to myself, especially given the times w're living in, [the end of times, to be precise].

It happened on Oct. 12th last year. I was driving home from my nursing shift at St Mary's Hospital. It had been a long day and I was looking forward to getting to my husband and our two children. The last thing I remember was seeing headlights coming toward me on that rain slicked road. Then everything changed. The doctors later told my family that I was clinically dead for 7 minutes and 23 seconds, but where I was during those few minutes felt to me like an eternity. And what Jesus told me about the coming deception, about how people will accept the Mark without even realizing what is going on, still shakes me to my core, when thinking back about it.

The moment after the crash I felt myself floating above my body. I could see the paramedics working desperately to revive me, but I felt no pain, no fear, just a profound sense of peace. I watched as they loaded my broken body into the ambulance. Their movements were urgent, but practiced with professionalism. One of

them, a young man with kind eyes, was praying under his breath as he worked. I wanted to tell him it was okay, that I wasn't feeling any pain anymore. But of course I couldn't. That's when everything around me began to fill with light. It wasn't like sunlight or artificial light. It was pure Living Light that seemed to come from everywhere and nowhere at once. The scene with the paramedics faded away and I felt myself being drawn upward surrounded by this incredible radiance.

That's when I heard his voice. "Erica!", He said. And my soul trembled with recognition. It was Jesus! And though I couldn't see his face clearly at first, because of the intense light, I knew with every fiber of my being that it was Him. His presence was filled with such love, such authority that tears streamed down my spiritual face. As my eyes adjusted to the light, I could see Him more clearly. His appearance was both familiar and indescribable. His eyes held such depth of love and wisdom that I felt completely known, competely understood. Every sin, every doubt, every fear I'd ever had, was laid bare before Him. Yet his Love remained unchanging. "My child," He said, "I have brought you here for a purpose. What I am about to show you, must be shared with my people. Many are asleep, and the deception coming is greater than they imagine." I found myself able to speak, though not with physical words. "Lord," I said, "I'm just a nurse. Who will listen to me?" His smile was gentle but firm. "I have always used the humble to confound the wise. Do not worry about who will listen. Your task is to share what I show you. I'll take care of the rest."

With these words Jesus took my hand and suddenly we were standing in what appeared to be a normal city street. Somehow I knew we were seeing events from the near future. Everything looked almost the same as our world today, but there were subtle differences. "Watch carefully," Jesus instructed, "and see how the enemy will deceive even the elect if it were possible." The scene before us was bustling with activity. People walked past us, going about their daily lives. But there was something different about them. Everyone seemed to be interacting with technology in a way that was far more integrated than anything I'd seen before. I saw a woman walking into a coffee shop. She didn't take out a phone or credit card to pay with. She simply waved her hand over a sensor and the transaction was complete. A small light under her skin glowed briefly as she did this. "Lord," I asked, "is this the Mark of the Beast?" "No," Jesus replied, "this is what comes before. Watch how the deception unfolds."

The scene shifted and I saw countless images of how this technology had been gradually introduced worldwide. It started innocently enough with tiny chips that replaced credit cards, house keys and medical records. Everyone adopted them including Christians, seeing them as nothing more than helpful tools for modern

living. I watched as Church congregations embrace these devices wholeheartedly. They used them to access their digital Bibles, give tithes and check into church events. No one questioned it, because it didn't involve worship or pledging allegiance to anything or anyone. It was just technology, or so they thought.

"Notice," Jesus said - his voice filled with concern, "how the enemy first introduces things that seem harmless, are even helpful. Satan knows that a sudden change would alert my people. Instead, he moves slowly, gradually, like a serpent, slowly coiling around its prey." The scene continued to unfold before us. The technology became more sophisticated, more integrated into daily life. Soon, the devices were monitoring health, predicting illness before it happened, even regulating people's sleep patterns and mood through subtle biochemical adjustments. "My child," Jesus said - noting my amazement at these advances, "remember that not all that glitters is gold. The enemy knows how to package his deceptions in beautiful wrapping." I watched as parents eagerly had their children implanted with these devices. 'It's for their safety', they would say, 'as now we can always know where they are, monitor their health, ensure they're safe at school.' The technology was particularly marketed toward children, presented as a way to protect them in an increasingly dangerous world. "Lord," I said, "I can see how helpful this all seems. How can we warn people against something that appears to do so much good." Jesus looked at me with deep sadness in his eyes. "This is why the deception is so effective. The enemy knows that my people would reject something obviously evil. So he comes as an angel of light, offering solutions to problems, promising to make life better."

I saw how the technology began to affect people's behavior in subtle ways. Those with the implants became increasingly dependent on them for everything, from regulating their emotions to making decisions. The devices would suggest what to eat, when to sleep, who to spend time with, even what to think about certain issues. "Watch this carefully," Jesus instructed, directing my attention to a family having dinner. The scene showed parents and children sitting together, but something was off. Their conversations seemed scripted. Their emotions measured and controlled. The devices were subtly influencing their moods, their thoughts, their very personalities. "Can't they see what's happening to them?" I asked, my heart breaking at the sight. "They see only the benefits," Jesus replied. "They see a better health, more stability, greater convenience. They don't realize they're trading their free will, and thus their ability to choose Me freely, for these temporary comforts."

The vision shifted to show me various scenes from around the world. I saw how the technology was being implemented differently in different cultures, but always with the same underlying goal to create dependency and control. In some places it was promoted through health care systems. In others through financial incentives. In yet others through social pressure and the fear of being left behind. But everywhere the message was the same: this is progress, this is necessary, this is good. I watched as those who questioned the technology were marginalized.

They were labeled as conspiracy theorists, anti-progress or simply afraid of change. Even in churches, those who raised concerns were often dismissed as being paranoid or lacking faith in God's protection. "My people are perishing for lack of knowledge," Jesus said, quoting Scripture. (Hosea 4:6) "They have forgotten that I warned to be wise as serpents and innocent as doves. They have embraced the wisdom of the world and forgotten the wisdom that comes from above.

The scene shifted again and I saw how the technology was affecting children's development. Young ones, who grew up with these implants, showed subtle but significant differences from those without them. Their capacity for independent thought, for genuine emotion, for spiritual sensitivity, all were diminished. "The enemy targets the young," Jesus explained, "because they will accept without question what their elders might scrutinize. A whole generation is being prepared to accept what is coming." I saw education systems being transformed around this technology. Children were taught that their implants were part of who they were, as natural as any other part of their bodies. They were encouraged to trust the guidance of their devices above their own instincts, above their parents' wisdom and ultimately above God's Word. "Lord," I said - my voice trembling, "this is heartbreaking. How can people not see where this is leading?" "Because," Jesus replied, "they are looking with physical eyes, not spiritual ones. They see the surface benefits but not the spiritual cost. They see the temporal advantages, but not the eternal consequences."

The scene before us suddenly changed dramatically. I saw chaos erupting across the world, collapsing Banks, power grids crashing, supply chains breaking down. People were scared and desperate for solutions. "Watch now," Jesus said, "for this is how the Mark will be introduced." I saw world leaders appearing on screens everywhere, announcing a new solution. The existing technology that everyone had become dependent on, would need to be upgraded to a new more secure system. They called it a necessary step to prevent further crises. "Pay attention," Jesus said, "to how they will present it." I watched, as media outlets promoted the upgrade. It was portrayed as simply the next version of what people already had. Religious leaders appeared on television, assuring their followers that it was just technology, not the Mark of the Beast. They pointed out that it didn't require worshiping anyone or pledging allegiance to any leader. "Now," Jesus said, "I will show you what they cannot see." Suddenly, I could see the spiritual realm alongside the physical. What I saw horrified me. As people received the upgrade a subtle darkness entered their spirits. It wasn't obvious at first. They could still pray, still go to church, still read their Bibles. But something had changed. "The Mark," Jesus explained, "will not be forced with violence at first, [not yet]. It will be accepted willingly, even eagerly. The enemy has learned that persecution only makes my people stronger. Instead he will use deception, making the Mark seem like a natural beneficial step forward."

I watched, as weeks and months passsed in the vision. Those who had accepted the upgrade began to change in subtle ways. Their prayers became more mechanical, less heartfelt. Their worship became more about routine than relationship [with God]. Most importantly, their ability to discern spiritual truth, began to fade [which was already compromised by having received the vaccinations]. “Lord,” I asked, “why can’t they see what’s happening to them?” “Because the change is gradually,” He replied. “Like a frog in slowly heating water. They don’t realize that they’re being cut off from my Spirit until it’s too late.”

The vision showed me how the upgrade affected different aspects of society. In healthcare it promised perfect health monitoring and automatic treatment. In finance it offered complete security and unversal access to financial resources. In relationships it claimed to facilitate better understanding and communication. But what broke my heart most was watching families make the decision together. Parents would gather their children, explaining how this upgrade would keep them safe. Help them to succeed in school and ensure their future in the New World Order. They genuinely believed they were doing what was best for their children. “Watch closely,” Jesus instructed, “See how they’ll use fear to push those who are hesitant.” I saw news reports about children being denied education, about people losing their jobs, about families being unable to buy food or medicine. The pressure to accept the upgrade became intense. Churches split over the issue, with many pastors advocating acceptance, in order to maintain their position in society. “My child,” Jesus said - his voice filled with sorrow, “do you see how the enemy uses good intentions to lead people astray? They think they are making wise choices, being responsible citizens and parents, but they are actually choosing to separate themselves from Me.”

The vision shifted to show me the technology itself. It was not just a physical implant anymore. It had somehow [by some manipulation] become integrated with human consciousness. “People’s thoughts, emotions, and even their capacity for spiritual connection were being altered. This is the true danger,” Jesus explained. “**The Mark doesn’t just change what people can buy or sell. It changes who they are. It corrupts the image of God in which they were created [which makes them unfit for my Paradise].**” I saw how different generations viewed the upgrade differently. The elderly often resisted at first, remembering simpler times. The middle-aged usually accepted it for practical reasons. But the young, they embraced it enthusiastically, seeing it as the next step in human evolution. “Lord,” I asked, “what happens to those who accept this upgrade.” Jesus’s expression was solemn, as He showed me the spiritual consequences. “Those who accept it willingly, seal their eternal fate. [If brutally forced, that would be different.] The upgrade doesn’t just change their bodies. It fundamentally alters their ability to connect with Me. They can no longer feel the conviction of the Holy Spirit, or understand spiritual truth.” I watched in horror as people, who had once been passionate believers, gradually became spiritually numb. Their words might still sound religious, but their hearts had become hardened. They could

quote Scripture, but not feel its power. They talked about God, but could not hear his voice.

“But Lord,” I asked, “what about those who resist.” The scene shifted, and I saw another group, those having refused the upgrade. They faced increasing difficulties. They couldn’t buy food from regular stores or send their children to public schools. Many lost their jobs. But spiritually they were shining, like beacons in the growing darkness. “These are my faithful ones,” Jesus said - with deep love in his voice. “They can see what others cannot, because they have kept their spiritual eyes open. They have studied my Word and learned to discern truth from lies.” I watched as these believers formed communities, supporting each other, sharing resources, helping those who were struggling. They weren’t violent or fearful. They were peaceful, but firm in their conviction.

“What should people watch for?” I asked. How can they recognize this when it begins?” “First watch for technology that promises to make you better than how I created you. The enemy will offer improvements to the human mind and body, but these will come with a cost to the soul. Second, notice when convenience becomes compulsory. What begins as optional, will slowly become necessary for daily life. Third, pay attention to how the technology affects children. The enemy targets the young, knowing they will more easily accept something their parents might not question. Fourth, observe how it changes people’s relationship with Me – anything that dulls spiritual sensitivity, that makes prayer feel more distant, that reduces the conviction of sin. These are the warnings.”

Then Jesus showed me something beautiful. In the midst of all this darkness I saw light breaking through. Those who had refused the Mark were being protected and provided for. In supernatural ways, they had a peace that made no sense in their circumstances. “My people will not be abandoned,” Jesus assured me, “just as I provided for Elijah by the brook. [During a time of drought, the word of the Lord directed Elijah to camp by the brook Cherith where the ravens would bring him bread and meat twice a day. And he could quench his thirst at the brook. (1 Kings 17)] Likewise I provided for the Israelites in the wilderness [during the 40 years periple to the promised land]. I will provide for those who stay faithful to Me.” I saw angels surrounding the homes of believers, protecting them from harm. I saw miraculous provision, food multiplying, needs being met in unexpected ways. Most importantly, I saw their relationships with Jesus growing deeper and stronger through their trials.

“Lord,” I asked, “what should people do to prepare?” Jesus’s answer was clear: “Tell them to strengthen their relationship with Me now. Before the deception comes, they must know my voice so well that they can recognize when something is not from Me. Tell them to study my Word diligently. The answers are there. But they must know the truth to recognize the lies. Tell them to build real relationships with other believers. They will need each other in the times to come. Tell them to teach their children to love Me more than they love the world’s

conveniences. And most importantly, tell them not to fear. I have overcome the world, and those who stay faithful to Me will share in that victory."

Suddenly I felt a pulling sensation. "It's time for you to return," Jesus said. "Remember everything you have seen. "But Lord," I protested, "there's so much more I want to ask." His smile was full of love. "What I have shown you is enough. Share it faithfully. Those who have ears to hear, will listen." The next thing I knew was that I was back in my body surrounded by hospital equipment and worried faces. The doctors were amazed at my recovery, but I was more amazed by what I had seen. That was six months ago.

Since then I've watched technology continue to advance in the ways Jesus showed me. Every time I see news about digital implants and biotechnology integration I remember his warnings. Some people ask me if I'm against all technology. I'm not. I still use my phone and computer, but I'm very careful about anything that interfaces directly with the human body or mind. Jesus showed me that there is a line that in future will be crossed. And once it is crossed there's no going back.

I'm sharing this story now, because Jesus made it clear that time is short. The technology that will eventually lead to the Mark is already being developed. The crisis that will precipitate its implementation is approaching. If you're reading this, please take it seriously. Study your Bible, pray for discernment, build strong relationships with other believers. And most importantly, develop such a close relationship with Jesus that you'll recognize anything that tries to come between you and Him. Remember, the Mark won't come as an obvious evil. It will come as a solution to problems, a path to a better life. But no convenience is worth losing your connection with God.

Jesus told me that many wouldn't believe this warning. And that's okay. My job isn't to convince everyone. It's simply to share what I was shown. Those who are seeking truth, will recognize it. If you're reading this and feeling scared, don't be. Jesus showed me that his protection and provision for his faithful ones will be more than enough. Focus on developing your relationship with Him now, while there's still time. And remember his words: "I have overcome the world." The deception may be great, but our God is greater. Stay close to Him and you won't be deceived.

This is my testimony. May God give you eyes to see and ears to hear what the Spirit is saying to the churches in these last days. »»

This presentation is available on YouTube under: "I Died & What Jesus revealed about the Mark of the Beast will shock you - Shocking NDE".

APPENDIX 23

THE AGE OF TRANSHUMANISM VIA ARTIFICIAL SUPER-INTELLIGENCE

Date of publication April 2025

An ominous development has come on the horizon, that of transhumanism. Transhumanism is the result of human beings using technology to modify and enhance human cognition and bodily function, expanding abilities and capacities far beyond biological constraints. By making a robot humanoid, the development toward an omnipotent robot can no longer be stopped though, eventually, this could lead to the anihilation of humanity, once the roles are reversed. By making robots human-like, people will no longer see these things as just an application, a tool. Make no mistake, AI (artificial intelligence) will become thousands of times more intelligent than a human. We are now, at the beginning of 2025, at the start of the general application of artificial intelligence. Just recently the Turing test was validated, which evaluates a machine's ability to exhibit intelligent behaviour equivalent to that of a human. In the test, a human evaluator judges a natural-language conversation between a human and a machine. Since the Turing test is a test of indistinguishability in performance, the verbal version generalizes naturally to all of human performance capacity, verbal as well as nonverbal (robotic). Since it will surpass, and that very soon, the human capacities by many orders of magnitudes, our title mentions 'super-intelligence'. The humanoid bots are the ultimate clenched fist against God and his human creation. AI improves its own software, and thanks to ever improved processor units, which until recently required a computer park, it now fit into a desktop computer. Development is moving at lightning speed. A robot, specialized in one task such as ping pong, nothing wrong with that, but as soon as they are made life-like in appearance, in all respects, and know and can do everything even better than humans, then humanity is heading for self-destruction — inevitably — unless the book is closed prematurely, or limits are placed on its use, but the will to do so is lacking. As Israeli and Evangelical Christian Amir Tsafati recently wrote in a blog:

«« Our world has gone through a cycle: from the literal days of Noah to an era reminiscent of that time. This is not only about a world detached from God and obsessed with making a name for itself; it also heralds the end game: the imminent, sudden removal of the righteous from the realm of the unrighteous, followed by the severe judgment of the latter. We are living in the last hours of the world as we know it, an echo of the last days of Noah. This is the final chapter! »»

Academic visionary Professor Bob de Wit emiritus gave a long and very interesting interview, available on YouTube.[274] He explains that we are going to a new society and that we are as of present in the transitional phase, which only happens once in several centuries and harbinger of a period of extreme turbulence. First we had the agricultural society. Those who had much land were the rulers. He said: *"It is good to keep in mind that a form of society is always based on the primary source of economic creation of value."* The next kind of society was based on trade. The Dutch were at that time at the forefront, which ushered in their so-called Golden Age. This started in the first years of the 17th century. Most Dutch paintings of that age depict ships and trade, because that was what counted. This society lasted for about 350 years. Then came the industrial revolution. Both societies existed for some time next to each other. The industrial revolution, Society 3.0, started in 1765 with the invention of the spinning jenny. It received a further push thanks to a more efficient steam engine, invented by James Watt, which coincidently happened in the same year, a machine to be improved into our modern steam engine as from the beginning of the 19th century. The essence of this transformation was to create economic value through industrial mass production, resulting in better quality at lower cost, in an ever-developing spiral.

Humanoid robot (March 2025) that moves and talks like a human

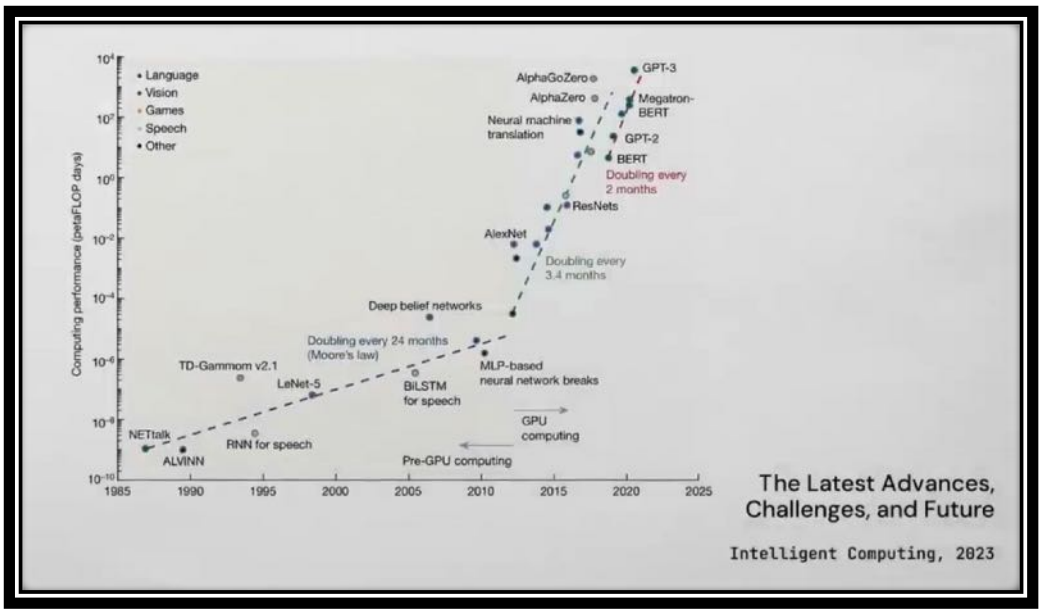
As the spinning jenny heralded the beginning of the Society 3.0, the ENIAC (Electronic Numerical Integrator and Computer) heralded the beginning of Society 4.0. The ENIAC was the first electronic general-purpose digital (binary) computer and was operational in Febr. 1946. I was born six months later. With its more than 17,000 vacuum tubes, 70,000 resistors, 10,000 capacitors, 6,000 switches, and 1,500 relays, it filled a large room, generating 174 kilowatts of heat. It could execute up to 5,000 additions per second. To compare, the hand-held Jetson Orin Nano Super was introduced in Dec. 2024 at US$ 249 and could deliver up to 67 TOPS (Trillions - or million times a million - of Operations Per Second). It took days to rewire the ENIAC for a new problem, which was a rudimentary programmability. Then came in 1973 the Micral N, which was the world's first commercially available microprocessor-based

274) "Professor Bob de Wit: We zitten op de Rand van een Revolutie" (We are on the edge of a Revolution) # Apr. 3, 2025. See his book, published in 2020: "Society 4.0" (published in Dutch in 2023). The website is: www.society4th.org. His oration in 2017, which already pointed to AI, was called "On the eve of a social revolution," and the title of his Sept. 11, 2024 emeritus address: "The denouement of society. Will AI lead to true freedom?"

computer, based on the Intel 8008. The 8008 was preceded in 1971 by the world's first commercial microprocessor chip, the Intel 4004. The essence of Society 4.0 is the creation of economic value through the automation of moving things, labor and human thinking, at ever increasing speeds and at ever decreasing costs, with the universal robotisation of society and application of AI expected in 2027, but no later than 2028.

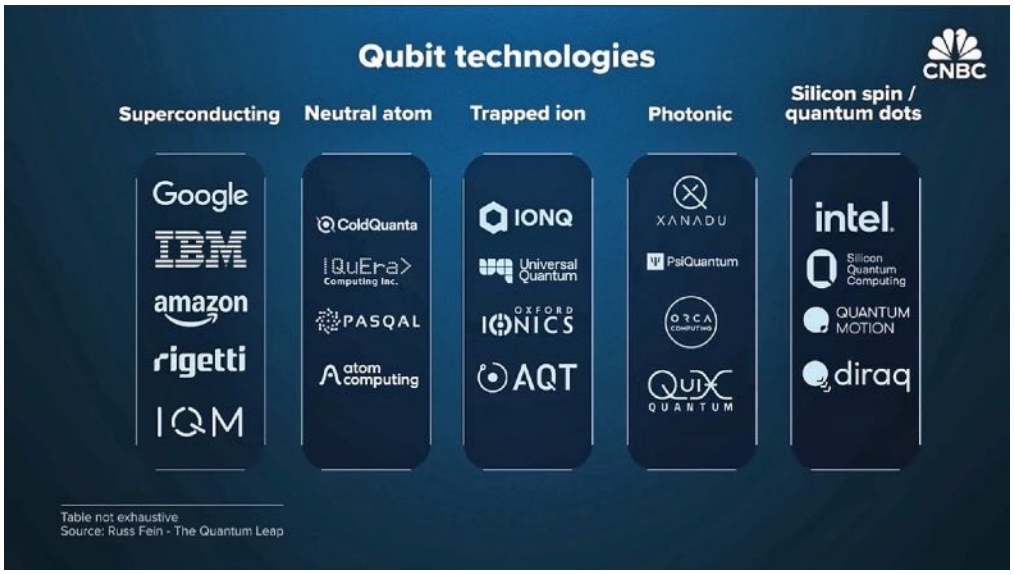
Jensen Huang, CEO of NVDIA with the Jetson Orin Nano Super

The era of the industrial revolution we have now left behind. Why? Because in the top twenty of the largest companies in the world there are no industrial companies anymore. The top four consist of Apple, Microsoft, NVIDIA and Alphabet (the holding company of Google), with in March 2025 a market capitalization each of more than 1.8 trillion US$ (a trillion has 12 zeros), closely followed by Amazon.com Inc. Those four are in the digital business. Clearly, we have entered Society 4.0, which will be fully operational once Artificial Intelligence has come to maturity. The speed of its coming of age will be mind boggling, is mind boggling already, even to the big players in the field.



The graph above shows the advance of digital computing power, beginning in 1987, two years after I got my first computer, an Apple IIc. Until 2012 we see a doubling every 24 months. Until 2016 a doubling every 3.4 months and since 2019 a doubling every 2 months, which according to Jensen Huang, the CEO of NVDIA, is required to answer the future demand of AI. Definition: "AI is the real-time processing of giga amounts of information, with the system constantly improving its interpretation of the data through 'experience' - self learning/self programming." The idea is that all systems (robots, robotic drones, surveillance) will eventually be connected as in a swarm. Any observed deviation from the norm requires correction. That is the key concept. The doubling every 24 months is called Moore's law, being based on the

observation that the number of transistors in an integrated circuit (IC) doubles about every two years, which reached its limits in 2012, because the smallest transistors compete with the size of an atom, in fact cannot be smaller than 2 nanometers. By then the uncertainty principle comes into play.[275] The above shows an accelleration in the doubling of computing power. Now it stands at a doubling every month, which means an increase in computer speed of a thousand times in a year. Stated differently, what took a year and a half to compute will take only two seconds after a period of two years, and can be done by far smaller and cheaper computers. In truth, nobody knows exactly what the future holds, but for sure it's uncharted territory.



Google, IBM, Amazon, Microsoft and Intel are all working on quantum technology, as are numerous startups, which is shown in the above scheme. Governments around the world have as of the beginning of 2025 pledged over $50 billion to develop the technology, and the United Nations declared 2025 the international year of Quantum science.[276] Quantum computers hold huge potential. But despite massive advancements in the field in recent years, right now, these computers aren't yet able to solve big real-world problems. The problem with quantum computing is the instability of the system, which they try to solving at 2.3 Kelvin base temperature, which is the

275) A nanometer divides a millimeter into a million parts, which is more than 2,650 times the size of a hydrogen atom. As a transistor shrinks below two nanometers, the Heisenberg uncertainty principle becomes increasingly relevant, which states that certain pairs of physical properties, like position and momentum, cannot be known simultaneously. Below this level a switch cannot be trusted (a transistor is essentially a switch between yes and no, one and zero).

276) In quantum mechanics, a wave function, denoted by ψ (psi), is expressed by a complex-valued mathematical function that assigns a complex number to each point in space, representing a probability amplitude. A quantum computer can take multiple positions simultaneously, which is called superposition. Furthermore, a state of one position in a wave instantaneously affects the other, which is called entanglement. This allows to simulate things, which means to 'design' the real world instead of 'disccover', which can be used for the design of new materials and pharmaceuticals, to name a few. That does not mean that it's a panacea. Anything that is large data and small computation, which accounts for most applications, is not meant for quantum computing. As concerns AI, quantum computing can be used as a complementary tool, producing data in order to 'train' AI in a virtual world, immensely speeding up the process of learning.

same temperature as in deep space (minus 270.9 centigrade). Google announced in Dec. 2024 its Willow quantum chip that corrects errors faster than they emerge. What for decryption would takes Willow a few minutes, could take a classical super-computer more than the age of the universe![277)] In Febr. 2025 Microsoft announced that it had created a quantum computing chip, the Majorana that uses a new type, known as a topological qubit. And in the same month, PsiQuantum unveiled Omega, a quantum photonic chip. Clearly, things are moving in the right direction. It is now reduced to a (difficult) engineering problem. The timeline is still disputed with some speculating on 2027 to see the first large scale quantum computer, and others seeing yet another ten years before this is going to happen.

> A few years ago Elon Musk said in passing that "EVs (Electric Vehicles) are an intermediate solution." The interviewer did not ask why. That comment did not let me off the hook. I knew of the plans to create billions of robots and robotic drones. And what do these things need? Batteries. The EV craze could have been created to mobilize a gigantic for the ideal battery: extremely long life, cheap, high energy density, no rare resources, non-flammable and super-fast rechargeable. In March 2025 Musk said: "We are going to produce plenty of Optimus humanoids (the name of his robot) because the production facilities for EVs are identical for what is needed to produce robots." Just watch, there will now be a shift to hybrid cars which Toyota is very good at. Fortunately, because a 100% deployment of EVs can never be carried by the power grid.

Now back to 'classical' AI. NVDIA, which started as an extremely successful gaming company, observed in the earlyt '90s that in a software program there are just a few lines, maybe 10%, that do 99% of the processing and that this part could be done in parallel (at first eleven cores doing the same thing simultaneously). However, the other 90% of the code has to be done sequentially, which is how computers normally work. They discovered that the perfect computer is one that can do both at the same time, not just one or the other. Perfect means a tremendous amount of work in an incredible short time, even as compared to the so-called super computers at the time, which in spite of their huge capacity hit against a wall of time constraints. The NVIDIA GPU (Graphics Processing Unit) could solve problems that old-fashioned computers could not, and the road forward was the beginning of today's NVIDIA, which is set to become the largest company in the world. Their motivation was to create ever more realistic virtual worlds, worlds of gaming, which in its presentation follows the laws of the physical world in order to give a realistic feel. The birth of the GPU ultimately developed into Artificial Intelligence, once scientists discovered the wonders of the GPU-parallel-processing (via an ingenious interface made by NVDIA). They found if useful for what they were doing (medical research, image recognition, etc.) and they came up with new configurations of tackling problems.

In terms of programming the AI computer is not asked to follow commands like a trained dog. Instead, AI is based on asking questions. That's what prompts AI. To illustrate, in 2025, a humanoid robot managed to throw a ball into a basket from

277) Encryption is used to protect data from being stolen, changed, or compromised and works by a code that can only be unlocked with a unique digital key. Encryption is an essential feature of our modern society, especially in the realm of financial transactions.

a distance of more than 24 meters, which deserved mention in Guinness World Records. Instead of following precise instructions for arm and hand movements, the robot found the perfect throw on its own, which was different from what the basketball players had in mind. They instructed the robot by asking: “What is the perfect way to throw a ball into a basket while standing?”

Nowadays we are at the stage of stacking an enormous amount of supercomputers in vast computerparks. It’s the interconnections that are the one limiting factor. Energy, nowadays, is the biggest cost in large scale computer centers and severy limits the possibilities of further expansion. Fiber optics are the alternative to using copper and electrons in between the stacks is. Compared to electrons, light is much faster and allows for more reliable interconnections. Also, light generates far less energy, making it sustainable for the large scale systems deployed for AI supercomputers designed to stack millions of processors (supercomputers) on top of one another and next to each other. Light is going to go into computer chips using 16 different colors that allows for the processing of multiple data at the same time. With all those stacked processors of today, the ‘interconnect bottleneck’ represents a huge challenge for letting all those platforms act as if a single massive chip. Light is operating in the hundreds of teraherz regime, while electronics operate in the gigahertz regime (which is thousand times less), and so light offers the potential for keeping the exponential growth on track for a number of years.

It seems that AI is on its way to omnipotence. It seems, for that is reserved to God. What are its inherent limitations? Sherlock Holmes is known for his powers of logical thinking; with a quick visual sweep of a crime scene he gathers descriptions, generates hypotheses and draws conclusions that reveal the criminal’s methods and identity. He is a master of deductive reasoning, and so is AI, but by its nature it is not suitable to the inspirational kind of inductive thinking. The main difference between the two is that inspirational thinking comes up with a totally new idea or invention, not previously thought, while deductive reasoning aims at testing an existing theory. Inductive or inventive thinking is based on a creative process that does not involve

logical thinking, though logical thinking often leads to new thoughts, especially if all the possible results of a taken course are taken into consideration, which is in the domain of AI. Nevertheless, real creative thought remains a terrain never trodden by AI, for which we speak of that elusive notion of inspiration, so typical to the human mind. Creative thought, real creative, pushes the wheel of progress to the next cycle of development until it reaches its ultimate destiny and grinds to a halt unless a new inspiration keeps the wheel turning. Inspirational creativity, so typical of our great minds, is unaccessible to AI. That limitation of AI, we need not be concerned about.

What is interesting, however, is where this inspiration comes from. It is based on the soul, which, by divine intervention, is infused into a child when still in the womb. The new-born has the notion of good and wrong as known from the Ten Commandments. Parents experience that little children have an acute sense of good and wrong.

This is the missing element with AI. By nature AI is purely atheistic. Its only reality is the tangible, the physical reality in which it navigates. Data consist mainly of the registration of images or waveforms (like sound) on the basis of which no ideal society can be invented. The Age of Enlightenment or Age of Reason was an intellectual and philosophical movement taking place in Europe from the late 17th century to the early 19th. The philosophers that sprung up, showed that altenative ethical, moral and cultural constructs are possible. That is true, and just because the rules for an ideal society cannot be derived from logical reasoning, it is God who had to give them to us. He is our creator, and so He knows best.

Suppose that a head of government asks an AI system what needs to be done to make people happy and what is required to prevent war and terrorism, the anwer will no doubt lead to a repressive society, the weaponisation of 'correct political thinking' as defined by the AI. It will lead to a dictatorial society where the disobedient will be persecuted, totally and mercilessly, and more in particular Christians, in a revival of the Roman Empire. And since the widespread use of AI will lead to at least 80% unemployment, the AI recommendations will certainly lead to a gratification of the senses – for all those citizens willing to comply. Those who comply will be cared for in the broadest sense possible, those who won't will not and will be left in misery. This is how the alternative logic of good and evil operates. The AI in this society will offer a substitute reality, providing infinite gratification, also sexually. Zombi-like, the crowds will be plunged in mass delusion, imbued by a false sense of significance, without true interrelationships. And God and our fellow man? Those will have gone behind the horizon. There will be no effort, no pain, no struggle. It will be a population implosion, one that has started already. The achievement drive and the challenges of life will have evaporated. It will be the annihilation of humankind. If AI is let loose, this will be the final chapter. I am a great proponent of AI, but it needs to be restricted, especially in the sphere of governance.

Why will Christians be persecuted? Simply, because they recognize a higher authority and because AI, in spite of its genious, will not be able to understand the spiritual reality. These are two worlds apart. The Bible clearly points out that non-Christians, thus also AI, cannot understand what the Bible says, which implicates that AI-intelligence is on the sidelines too. 1 Corinthians 2:14 states: *"The person without the Spirit does not accept the things that come from the Spirit of God but considers them foolishness, and cannot understand them, because they are discerned only through the Spirit.*" See also 2 Peter 1:20-21: *"Above all, you must understand that no prophecy of Scripture admits a self-opiniated interpretation. For prophecy never had its origin in the human will, but prophets, though human, spoke from God, being carried along by the Holy Spirit."* And finally Matthew 11:25-26: *"I thank you Father, Lord of Heaven and Earth, that You have hidden these things from the wise and understanding and revealed them to little children. Yes, Father, for such was your gracious will."*

Ad finem

APPENDIX 24

An Essay on Shaping the Mind of the Crowd

According to Freud, *"the masses are subject to an indeed magical power of the word, which can stir up the most violent storms in the collective soul."*[278] This overwhelming power that thinks right through us, the thinking machine, is a fact. It is a spectre of divine reflection that may create …and destroy! Linguistic delusion elevates the spirit of ecstasy and mass deception. The word that seeps into the mass mind has a binding force that makes the mass react as a whole as if it had a body. A reign of insinuation and lies with enormous agility and therefore an enormous capacity to devise reverberating plans that arise in many minds simultaneously and spontaneously as if it were a conspiracy, albeit a conspiracy that escapes any visible organization. This mendacity, as it is all too often, is capable of attacking individuals and nations from very surprising and widely divergent angles as if it were following a script, but one without the participants being aware of it. Those who focus on conspiracies are too quick to overestimate their degree of organization and ingenuity. It is wrongly assumed that the 'great' conspiracy will be broken if exposed, as if it were an eccentric movement that no ordinary citizen wants. On the surface, they may be right. However, the inherent motility of worldly affairs is hidden from the ordinary eye so that one can indeed question whether the conspiracy really exists. Every aspect is dark movement and change – inside, outside, everywhere, with a seemingly inescapable outcome. And this is what we call the mind of the crowd. Call it hypnosis or possession, or even insanity, for my part, …and why not mass hysteria.

With mass hysteria, the evil spirit of inspiration heads for Armageddon (Rev. 16:13-16), which will be the final and decisive battle between the forces of evil and God. In Hebrew, Armageddon means 'mountain of accumulation' which indicates a collection of power. Armageddon is the greatest concentration ever, on both sides, and therefore the battle is decisive and final. In extreme cases, like with folly of war and sudden changes of the mass-psychological mood, the linear historical approach, based on the assumption of an orderly progression of events, fails to give a satisfactory answer. Here we enter the field of metahistory, about which Arnold Toynbee says the following when he discusses the nature of historical thought: *"Metahistory is akin to metaphysics and theology. The metahistorian seeks to integrate his study of reality in some higher dimension than that of human affairs as these present themselves to him phenomenally".* In this almost mythological battle, Armageddon, which does not take place in the stories but here on earth, there will be a massive rejection of the demons, those tormentors who poison the source of our thinking and are the cause of countless social ills. The world must and will be freed from this so that God's justice may shine. It will be the bowl of prayers that is full, which will be decisive. It is mainly through the psyche of the masses that the Luciferian anti-power manifests itself, gaining an 'incarnation' in the masses. Just like Christ has his body of faithful, so too the anti-power has his body, a distasteful bloated body of unprecedented proportions. It thrives on the destruction and gobbling up of individual personalities who have squandered their God-given free will.

In the present state of the world soul, the multitudes cannot possibly belong to the eternal Messiah. They never belonged to Him. The histories of war and government sanctioned crime bear witness to this. The group-man is capable of anything! By God's grace, a few are willing and able to overcome the gravitational pull that tries to pull into Hell. The

278) "Massenpsychologie und Ich-Analyse" by Sigmund Freud, from the Dutch translation by Dr N. van Suchtelen (p.18).

cloud of witnesses, who have repentantly opened themselves to Christ's power of resurrection, and consists of those few who made it, is a means of approaching the collective, which in one triumphant moment will experience the metanoia. Metanoia stands for the inner man that has been liberated from the inclination to evil; and then the original sin will have been done away with. Understand me well. The metanoia doesn't happen on a clear day in March, but after a series of events. We are talking here about the so-called Jonah service. Jonah summoned Nineveh to repent, but before his message was effectively delivered, he had to descend into the bowels of the sea monster. This is a depth psychological subject and is not just a preaching of the word through today's media.

It is painful to see how also well-intentioned Christians regress. After their first love, everything fades away – for many. It seems that each and everyone is engaged in an unequal fight with his innermost self. In our current time frame, it is impossible to completely get rid of it. Even with abundant grace, the dichotomy remains. Therefore, the temptation persists and what a temptation! In baptism the inclination to evil (in Hebrew the yetzer hara) may be forgiven, but it is not yet overcome and crushed. The wasteland is too large to cross unscathed. The tower of Babel must be called to account, image of the one who thinks himself a god. Humankind, in its groupthink, can only think as the one power desires. We must put a temporary halt to moralizations. Our freedom is not served by a package of loud slogans. Verily, our help can only come from the Son at the right hand of the Father. Indeed, God will provide an outpouring, that of the Holy Spirit, other than that of the mind of the crowd, which is none other than the power of resurrection accompanied by multitude of languages, as the Bible says, with the uttering of words of grace against the babbling of the inhumanity.

We are fighting against a form of demonic possession. A line can be drawn to hypnotic possession. Gerard Feller says about the hypnosis of an individual: [279)]

> «« During hypnosis, someone's capacity to think critically is reduced to such an extent that a 'trance logic' emerges, which unconditionally accepts anything that under normal circumstances would be labeled irrational, illogical, and contradictory. (…) Hypnosis bridges the will by placing individual responsibility outside a subjective, rational and critical choice. Because normal evaluative abilities are suppressed, suggestibility is increased and rational thinking reduced, the will is seriously stunted and can eventually be violated. People can be bonded to a person through hypnosis or come under some [demonic] power, (…) while 1 Corinthians 6:12 teaches: *"I will not be brought under the power of any."* »»

The foregoing does indicate what the effects of hypnosis are, but it remains unclear how this is possible; how exactly it works. I draw a line to mass hypnosis or delusion. Although difficult to prove, I believe that the same mechanisms play a role in the hypnotic state of a single individual as well as the group-spirit of those bonded in a more or less close-knit community. The cement of such a community is the culture formed by the commonality of thinking and feeling, a natural tendency that seems to be ingrained in their genetic code.

With regard to all those separate individuals who function in a community, which can rightly be called a community, a parallel can be drawn with all those separate cells in a human body, and there are many billions of them. As with high performance sport, the cells of the body work together in a beautifully coordinated way. The classical picture that the brain sends out signals that control that interplay is less than satisfactory,

---

279) "Tussen Waan en Werkelijkheid – Praktijk Hulpverlening Heel de Mens" (Between Delusion and Reality – the wholistic counseling practice) by Gerard Feller - Oudewater, Netherlands # 2011 (p. 13).

because it does not answer the question of how the will translates into action and how that harmonic unconscious interplay is orchestrated in detail. No doubt, training is extremely important. With regard to the coordination of the movements, it is clear that this only really takes effect once that body coordination (better: cell coordination) descends from the conscious to the subconscious level. It is an established fact that the conscious mind reacts much more slowly than the unconscious. An athlete's reaction time can reach mind-boggling levels, mind-boggling because, normally, reaction time takes about a second and a half, too slowly to really react quickly. The Dutchman Mirin Dajo was able to pierce himself with pins from front to back without injury. His cells were, as it were, trained to ignore pain with minimal damage to body tissue. This evokes the thought in my mind: Could it be that every cell in the body has an individual consciousness, so that, in coordinated action, they have a certain autonomy?

In recent decades, much research has been done in the alternative scientific circuit that indicates that the body processes information via electromagnetic waves, in and from outside the body. The heart itself is a source and receiver of electromagnetic radiation. The cerospinal fluid (CSF), which is the fluid in which the brain baths and which extends into the spine, is a medium for converting radiation into information to which the soul may respond. The CSF is sometimes called the seat of the soul. The CSF is a kind of antenna, but so are molecules in the pineal gland. All glands respond to radiation, especially the hypotalamus, pituitary and pineal glands, collectively called the crystal palace. This is situated in between the left and right cerebral hemispheres and the anterior and posterior lobes; the occipital lobe controls vision, the frontal lobe self-consciousness, the left-half brain rationality, and the right-half intuitive thinking. These glands control the body through the release of hormones. They would respond to the vibrational level of the environment and even be able to translate information contained in the DNA into conscious and unconscious 'operational' knowledge. The DNA is not a static whole, but has vibrating convolutions sending out informational vibrations. The DNA chain is a gigantic instruction book, not only for the materiality of the body. Why couldn't it also be read for other instructions which in animals we call instinct and character? The monarch butterflies, going south, fly back exactly the same route their parents took on the way north, but by then their parents are dead! Those instructions must be somehow locked into the DNA. DNA is still a terra incognita or field of expertise of which almost nothing is known, in spite of claims to the contrary. The recombinant DNA technique is the wizard's apprentice fumbling. Little good can come of that.[280)] How our body shape comes about is still a great mystery. Fact is that a child's face is often very similar to that of a parent. The sometimes complicated mating ritual of different species is also something like that; and is practiced, even if it could not have been emulated. Man owes his uniqueness to spiritual systems with a material component. Its characteristics are passed on from generation to generation that adapts to changing conditions (epigenetics). This falls under chapter of 'culture'. However, there is also the transient culture that demagogues and advertisers cleverly manage, to exploit to their own selfish needs. As this falls outside the conscious domain these kind of things are difficult to ascertain.

The subconscious mind[281)] plays an important role in the learning process. Anyone

280) The Sorcerer's Apprentice is the story of Johann von Goethe about a reckless boy who is apprenticed to a sorcerer. He is impatient and finds the work he has to do annoying. One day the wizard goes on a journey. The sorcerer's apprentice stays behind and seizes the opportunity to carry out the work assigned to him with the help of sorcery. But he doesn't get it right and terrible disasters ensue.

281) The Jungian concept of unconsciousness and archetype is fundamentally different from the Christian one. It is the difference between a Christian depth psychological approach and a neo-Platonic or Hindu/Buddhist approach. Therefore, the term subconscious is used instead of unconscious.

learning to drive must consciously think about looking in the side mirror if so required, but with sufficient practice this will happen naturally, i.e. without conscious intention, even if that person has drunk a considerable amount of alcohol (this is not a plea for the drinking alcohol). It is only after many hours of practice that someone, rehearsing a difficult piano piece, will be proficient to play the piece so 'thoughtlessly' that from then on he can focus on perfecting his artistic achievement. Just as the subconscious has a function in individual skills, it also functions in social interactions. Conscious thinking turns out to be much less rational than one is willing to admit, or let's put it this way: it's only the tip of the iceberg.

We have made it clear how the body cells have a mutual relationship or bond. Moreover, they are subject to the head to which they are 'submissive'. Those two factors (relationship and submission) can also explain how Christians function in the body of Christ in a kind of hypnotic connectivity. Romans 12:4-5: *"For as we have many members in one body, but all the members do not have the same function, so we, being many, are one body in Christ, but individually members of one another."* That's roughly how it should function in normal social intercourse. That all individuals in our society are individualistic and act completely independently is simply nonsense. Otherwise, a survey based on several hundred respondents could not be extrapolated to the whole.

Thus, in our society there is a common bond and tendency to listen to each other and do things together among which belongs that one should 'listen' to the political leader and also act upon it, even in such a way that if one wishes to disobey the order, such a thing will be experienced as emotionally oppressive. A popular politician will be supported by many, which can be compared to the cells of the body that listen to the dictates of their owner. The more followers, the more difficult it will be to become an outsider and escape the group mind. The group mind exerts a strong drive for conformation and thus a confrontational tension arises with those who want to withdraw from the generally espoused beliefs. That is called social control. It also plays a role in the media, which have become propaganda machines under the guidance of our leaders. And it works, because the masses like to be led. Thus, deception lurks around the corner. Another term for it, is implicit repression, which is repression that no one sees except for a few. Not the Orwellian version: *"a boot stamping on a human face until eternity"* – but the Huxleyian: everyone stupid and happy. The material repression, which is part and parcel of the system, aims to keep the herd in line with a reward system, for a prosperous society is not being led by dog biscuits. However, the spiritual deprivation is the worst: withholding essential values and knowledge. The result is what Etienne de La Boétie (1530-1563) called *"voluntary submission"*. La Boétie attacked absolute monarchy and tyranny in his "Discours de la Servitude Volontaire ou le Contr'un" (Discourse on voluntary servitude, or the Anti-Dictator). He thought that permission to rule was revocable since *"tyrants have power because it has been given to them"*. But of course, he had not heard of the herd spirit or herd instinct, and was wrong in that respect.[282)]

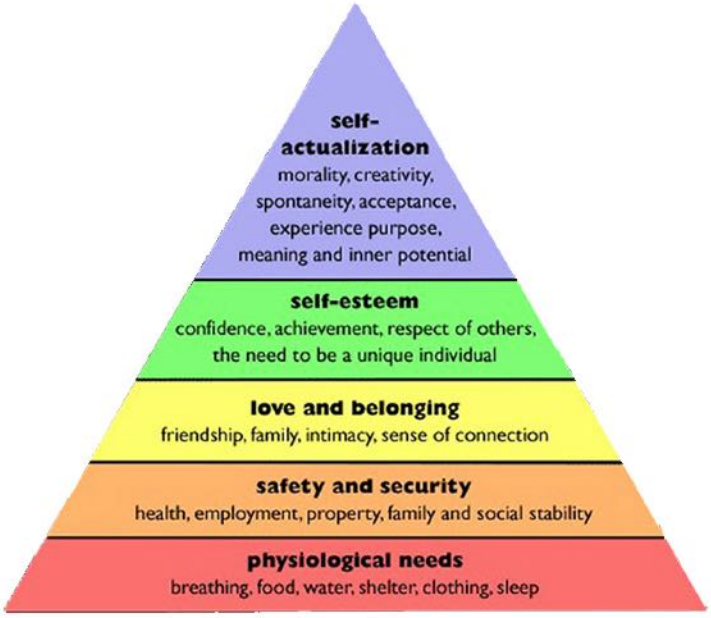
One of the most influential works of social psychology is "The Crowd - a study of the popular mind". This played an important role in initiating the scientific study of the herd instinct, for which the author Gustave Le Bon was able to draw richly on the vicissitudes of the French Revolution. First published in French in 1895, it was called "La Psychologie des Foules."

The book had a profound impact not only on Freud, but also on demagogues like Hitler and Mussolini – who have used it as a manual to whip up and direct popular passions. In the author's words: *"The masses have never thirsted after truth. (...) Whoever can supply them with illusions easily becomes their master; whoever attempts to destroy their*

282) Source for quotes by La Boétie: English Wikipedia Nov. 2017.

illusions is always their victim." The preface starts as follows: (p. 67)

> «« The whole of the common characteristics with which heredity endows the individuals of a race constitute the genius of the race. When, however, a certain number of these individuals are gathered together in a crowd for purpose of action, observation proves that, from the mere fact of their being assembled, astounding new psychological characteristics come to the forefront, which are added to the racial characteristics and may differ from them to a very considerable degree. »»



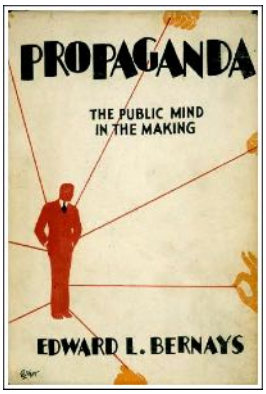
The only thing missing from Le Bon's book is that creating an impoverished and destitute population makes it much easier to carry out the kind of manipulation that demagogues have in mind. We only have to look at Abraham's Maslow's five levels of human needs, to see what that means. A simplifyed version in terms of physiological needs: breathing, food, water, shelter, clothing, sleep. In terms of safety and security: health, employment, property, family and social stability. By taking these away from the people they claim to serve, their higher needs are neglected, for they have to be constantly busy making life bearable. This creates malleable subjects who are easily controlled, under the oppressive fear of losing what little they have left.

Let's get back to the book. Seven rules may be deduced from it. The first one is that crowds obey simple emotions; it is emotion, not reason that dominates. The collective mind is purely instinctive. Rational arguments are ignored while strong emotions spread rapidly. Rule number two: repetition creates belief. Repetition, always repetition, with no real explanation or evidence, is one of the surest means for an idea to penetrate the mind of the crowd and through that route the mind of the individual. Rule three: visual symbols are stronger than words. Crowds react to strong visual representations and symbols, which is the language of the subconscious. Complex ideas and arguments are inaccessible to the collective mind. What they see is their idol. Number four: status or prestige, which is something that commands widespread respect or admiration, prevents the crowds to see things as they are and blocks common sense. Why does a physician dresses himself in a white coat? Because it enhances his prestige, which in itself is acceptable, but the principle is the same. Number five: demagogues mold the crowd's will. A demagogue is the one whose desires become infused in the crowd. He possesses a so-called alpha personality and will do anything to weed out other alphas. A leader does not argue or debate with a crowd except in extreme simplifications. He or she embodies the emotions of the crowd and is able to amplify their desires and focus their

immense energy. Six: crowds worship absolute certainty; the ideas have to be extreme without shades of white or black. They need to be uncompromising and very simple and presented with unwavering certainty. Finally, nr. 7: illusions seduce crowds more than the facts. The crowds are not truth seeking, only what seduces them and fits within their narrow perspective. They turn aside from evidence that is not to their taste, preferring to look at a mirage. Facts are brushed aside when they contradict the mob's view of life. A convincing illusion will always winn over uncomfortable truths.

Very few people have the ability to think and act independently, out of the box. While most people think their ideas are their own and not those of the masses, notwithstanding, the media have increasingly come to dictate our thoughts. If people only read, see and hear prefabricated stories, they are being shaped and softly programmed by these. Wars are fueled with fake news and biased reporting, formerly called propaganda. Genocides are committed on the basis of this kind of programming. We uncritically go along with certain lines of thought, which through uncessant repetition and step-by-step changes lead us further and further on the wrong path. One name that stands out in this approach is Edward Bernays (1891-1995), who did important work for the Tavistock Institute, and who was a cousin of the well-known psychologist Sigmund Freud. He has been called the father of public relations and was named by the prestigious Life Magazine as one of the hundred most influential Americans of the 20th century. Of his many books, "Crystallizing Public Opinion" (1923) and "Propaganda – the public mind in the making" (1928) gained special attention as early efforts to define and theorize the field of public relations. He described the masses as irrational and subject to herd instinct and outlined how skilled professionals could use psychology and psychoanalysis to drive the 'stupid herd' in the desired direction. Bernay's approach was particularly vehemently attacked in the 1957 bestseller "The Hidden Persuaders" by Vance Packard. Chapter 17 begins with Kenneth Boulding's sublime quote: *"A world of unseen dictatorship is conceivable, still using the forms of democratic government."* That is now, in 2021, more current than ever. And then he explains that manipulation of public opinion is quite easy for a tyrant, but only becomes an art in a free democratic regime.

In 1928, Edward Bernays described the public relations counsel as someone who could bring public opinion in line with the interests and goals of leaders in business and government. The role of the publicist, Bernays believed, was to understand the mental life of the masses and use that understanding to efficiently manage the workings of democracy.



Bernays pioneered the public relations industry's use of psychology and other social sciences to design its public persuasion campaigns: *"If we understand the mechanism and motives of the group mind, is it not possible to control and regiment the masses according to our will without their knowing about it? The recent practice of propaganda has proved that it is possible, at least up to a certain point and within certain limits."* Think of what Joseph Goebbels did under Hitler as the Minister for Public Enlightenment and Propaganda.[283)] Bernays later called this way of opinion-molding 'the engineering of consent'. In his 1947 essay "The Engineering of Consent", he explains: *"This phrase quite simply means the use of an engineering approach – that is, action based only on thorough knowledge of the situation and on the application of scientific principles and tried practices to the task of getting people to support ideas and programs."* Bernays expanded on Walter Lippmann's concept of 'stereotype', arguing that elements with a predictable impact could be mobilized for mass effects:

«« But instead of a mind, universal literacy has given the common man a rubber stamp, a rubber stamp inked with advertising slogans, with editorials, with published scientific data, with the trivialities of tabloids and the profundities of history, but quite innocent of original thought. Each man's rubber stamp is the twin of millions of others, so that when these millions are exposed to the same stimuli, all receive identical imprints. (…)

The amazing readiness with which large masses accept this process is probably accounted for by the fact that no attempt is made to convince them that black is white. Instead, their preconceived hazy ideas that a certain gray is almost black or almost white are brought into sharper focus. Their prejudices, notions, and convictions are used as a starting point, with the result that they are softly drawn by a thread into passionate adherence to a given mental picture [that the professional wanted to implant in his head]. »»

Not only psychology but also sociology plays an important part for the public relations counsel, according to Bernays. The individual is *"a cell integrated into the social unit. Touch a nerve at a sensitive spot and you get an automatic response from certain specific members of the organism."* Bernays touted the idea that the 'masses' are driven by factors outside their conscious understanding. Based on this understanding he cherished dictatorial ideals: he was of the opinion that their minds can and should be manipulated by the capable few en so he stated that *"intelligent men must realize that propaganda is the modern instrument by which they can fight for productive ends and help to bring order out of chaos."* [284)]

In view of the foregoing, I propose a new definition of hypnosis: "If someone is accepted as an authority and issues dictates that are slavishly followed, and those are open to personal evaluation, we speak of hypnosis." This is a much broader definition than usual. I'm going one step further: "If a dictator, or demon, imposes his will on someone, we speak of possession." Thus, possession and hypnosis are an extension of each other. There are many degrees of both states, such that everyone can be said to be a little bit hypnotized or possessed. With people in love this plays a prominent role as well as in the doctor-patient relationship, to name a few. To let being manipulated by someone like a willless sheep, or conversely, to put oneself in God's place in order to dominate, is an immense evil, because the human will may only place itself under the divine Will. That's why she was created.

283) In the 1920s, Joseph Goebbels became an avid admirer of Bernays and his writings – despite the fact that Bernays was a Jew. When Goebbels became the minister of propaganda for the Third Reich, he exploited Bernays' ideas to the fullest, and mounted the hitherto most successful brainwashing campaign in the history of mankind. This, of course, cannot be imputed on Bernays because he only proposed a method – with dubious sides. Yes indeed, the Supreme Court Justice Felix Frankfurter, in a letter to President Roosevelt, warned him against allowing Bernays to play a substantial role in World War II, describing him and his colleagues as "professional poisoners of the public mind, exploiters of foolishness, fanaticism and self-interest."

Source: "The unseen power: Public Relations - a history" by Scott M. Cutlip - Routledge # 1994 (p.185); based largely on primary sources, this book presents the first detailed history of public relations from 1900 through the sixties.

284) Source for quotes by Bernays: English Wikipedia, Nov. 2017.

Is Donald Trump the New Gorbachev?

It is my belief that Gorbachev was used by God to dismantle the Soviet Union. "Everything is rotten, it cannot go on like this," Gorbachev told his fellow politburo member and future foreign minister Shevardnadze during a walk in the woods just outside Moscow. The new secretary general of the USSR faced an impossible task. In 1986, exactly 30 years earlier, Gorbachev introduced "perestroika" (restructuring), and in the following years "glasnost" (openness and transparency) and "demokratizatsiya" (democratization) combined with "uskoreniye" ("accelerated" economic development), which caused the collapse of the old totalitarian state. What does this have to do with Donald Trump? Well, the United States is currently - now during the 2016 presidential election - as rotten to the bone as the Communist Soviet Union was then, creating a disaster scenario not only for the United States, but even for the entire world.

The situation is serious. In an interview with Reuters on October 12, 2106, Vladimir Zhirinovsky, an important political ally of President Putin (who had him decorated just recently), made it clear to the American people in no uncertain terms that on Nov. 8 they will have to choose between peace or nuclear war "Americans voting for a president on Nov. 8 must realize that they are voting for peace on Planet Earth if they vote for Trump. But if they vote for Hillary it's war. It will be a short movie. There will be Hiroshimas and Nagasakis everywhere. (…) Victory for Trump would be a gift to humanity. But if his opponent Hillary Clinton wins it will be the last U.S. president ever." [285)]

29.123 – A small child on her knees praying

Some may react with surprise and incomprehension that I speak so radically about the United States, which has always presented itself as a bastion of the free democratic West. Let us place this under the category of opinion. I am not alone, by the way. Without claiming that this is really a God-inspired prophecy, I would like to quote it because I think it responds to the conditions of the United States and God's plan for the world. It is based on a prophetic dream in November 2015 by Simon Braker of Leicester, UK, who is no stranger to prophetic land. As you know, the 45th US president will be elected in November 2016. This ties in with that. It is called "The Judge Has Spoken! A Dream for the United States of America." [286)]

«« I found myself sitting in what can only be described as a frantic 'courtroom'. I sat and watched as one witness after another presented their evidence. One came forward and shouted with tears: "Look at this wickedness!" I looked and saw horrific pictures of dead babies and children. Then another came and shouted: "Look at this greed." Then another: "Look at this pride." Then another: "Look at this corruption." This went on as more and more irrefutable evidence of guilt was given. It got to the point that the courtroom was in a frenzy of outrage. Yet, the High Judge just sat and listened until every accusation had been given and all the evidence had been submitted. Once all this was done He still sat silent. All the people stood and chanted: "Guilty, guilty. Judge them, judge them!" Finally, with a loud voice the Judge said: "Silence!" Immediately every person became silent and sat down.

The Judge spoke and said: "I have heard all and seen all. The guilt of these lands of the United States of America is indeed great! I have decided judgment is indeed due and right!" The people cheered, and He commanded them to be silent! "Before I pass my judgment, I have one last witness. Can the Holy Spirit take the stand please?"

An old woman came forward. She was old but not frail in any way. Her eyes shone as she stood in the stand. The Judge spoke: "Do you have your evidence?" "I do indeed!", and she pointed to the video screen. There appeared an image of a small child on her knees praying, then a teenager and then an adult. Image after image appeared of more and more believers of every age, class and race falling to their knees in prayer. Then the screen went black. The Judge spoke: "Is this the last of your evidence?" The old woman responded: "Yes!" "Please step down", the Judge replied.

All eyes in the room were fixed on Him: "Your evidence is indeed compelling, yet the guilt of this land is indeed great, in fact it grows daily; I have therefore chosen judgment."

The Verdict of the Judge (God): He placed a black cap over his head, took the gavel in His hand and struck the sound block and said: **"I find this land worthy of a great revival, the likes of which has never been seen before or will be seen again!"** As He said this, Blood poured forth from his throne and swept every accuser out of the room.

---

285) Insiders revealed at the time that the Chinese elite, in the run-up to the elections, actually preferred Donald Trump hands down over Hillary Clinton, who they feared would have pushed for a head-on confrontation with China over the South China seas. They did not trust her nor did they trust the Obama administration. It is important to remember that at the last G20 meeting in Hangzhou in Sept. 2016, there was no red carpet for President Barak Obama, no welcoming Chinese committee - a humiliation! What did not appear in the news is that during the days of Obama, President Putin spent 11 days sleeping and living in a bunker because he had to be available at any time in case a retaliatory nuclear strike was required; his command was needed in less than 3 minutes at any moment. That's how close the world had come - again - to a catastrophe. Given that the naval force commander and all 200-plus generals gave their support to Trump, that indicates that they had absolutely no confidence in Hillary's plan of action

286) See http://www.elijahlist.com/words/display_word.html?ID=15370 Simon Braker is the founder of School of the Prophetic Leicester and co-founder of City Gates Ministries. He is a graduate and an ordained Minister of Kingdom Faith Bible School, he is also a member of the faculty of UK Wagner Leadership Institute, and a member of Ad HOC of the European Coalition of Apostolic Leaders. Simon is also a part of the senior leadership of Holy Trinity Church Leicester, and he has ministered extensively in Eastern Europe, India, USA and the UK. Simon and Joe, have four children and live in the city of Leicester, UK. Een comparable vision is from Mark Virkler of Cheektowaga in New York State and is called "Who Rules? A vision concerning Washington D.C."

I then saw a map of the United States going up in flames [of the revival] as God began the answer to the prayers of his burning ones. The Lord spoke and said: "The guilt of this land is indeed great, but my praying Church and my shed Blood is greater! So I grant a great revival that will take every street, town and city. For I will not have the cries of my people unheard. This land will arise and will indeed shine! In what seems to be her darkest hour, she shall shine at her brightest! »»

29.124 – The Fat Man of the Establishment

Retired firefighter Mark Taylor says God showed him that Trump would become president of the United States. He first came out with this during an interview with Rick Wiles of TRUNEWS in April 2016.[287)] Taylor said he had received God's word about Donald Trump five years earlier while watching an interview with this billionaire. As he watched, the Lord told him he was listening to a president. At the time, Trump considered participating in 2012 but declined. Taylor firmly believes his participation in the 2016 presidential campaign was ordained by God. It is striking that when he declared his candidacy on June 16, 2015, that was the date of the 1945 decision to drop the atomic bombs on Japan. Indeed, Trump is the 'Fat Man' of the American establishment (that was the name of the bomb on Nagasaki). Donald Trump will break the power of the globalists and give world back its freedom – along with Benjamin Netanyahu and Vladimir Putin whom Trump admires. I had my doubts about the former, but his star as a mover of Israeli politics and defender of classical values has only risen since he has led the Likud party in 1993.

According to Mark Taylor, Trump was chosen by God, not called. The distinction is that in the former case, someone called does not need to know, while a called one, like the Biblical Gideon, knows about it before he starts his mission. Trump is not exactly a choirboy, a figurehead of Christian ethics, but neither were King Cyrus and Nebuchadnezzar, nor Constantine the Great, yet God knew how to use them. Even Caiaphas and the Pharaoh of the Ten Plagues fall into this category. Perhaps Caiaphas came to repentance afterwards; Pharaoh is known to have done so (Jasher 81:40). Mark Taylor also said that under Trump, one scandal after another from the liberal elite – read globalist, socialist and leftist clique – will come out. The lid of the sewer will be lifted! His prediction is also that three Supreme Court justices, who sometimes are more important to the U.S. than the president, will have to pack up under heavy scandals, one will die and a fifth will retire. This means that Donald Trump during his tenure of president may appoint five, giving the conservative element the majority again.

The reason why? It's all about the end-time harvest of souls. The Christian societies in the United States are now enslaved and persecuted. There is a lackluster atmosphere. The manliness and pugnacity is missing. People are weakened, effeminate and dormant. Christianity has become a consumer product. Trump is enabling the churches to get back on its feet and not crawl into their shells like cowards but to go out and do their job – under the special mission America has been given for the world (according to Mark Taylor). That costs money, lots of money, and that is why under Trump, America will once again become a prosperous country and the slums with huge unemployment rates (the slumps), which are powderkegs of unrest, will once again become places to live conveniently. God is wroth at America, not as a country, but at the thoroughly corrupt system. It is God's attack on the country's political system and the excessive power of the financial elite. The illegal migrants will be sent out of the country and the veterans

287) For the soundtrack of more than an hour, see: http://www.trunews.com/trunews-041816-mark-taylor-gods-man/

will be treated decently. It will be a repeat of Gorbachev's program, but now in American fashion. Because Trump has been 'called', deep state will not be able to kill him and any attack on him will result in the opposite of what was intended.

Here follow the prophetic words Mark Taylor received in 2011:

«« Commander in Chief (God):

The Spirit of God says: "I have chosen this man, Donald Trump, for such a time as this. For as Benjamin Netanyahu is to Israel, so shall this man be to the United States of America! For I will use this man to bring honor, respect and restoration to America. America will be respected once again as the most powerful and prosperous nation on earth (other than Israel). The dollar will be the strongest it has ever been in the history of the United States, and will once again be the currency by which all others are judged."

The Spirit of God says: "The enemy will quake and shake and fear this man I have anointed. They will even quake and shake when he announces he is running for president. It will be like the shot heard across the world." The enemy will say: "What shall we do now? This man knows all our tricks and schemes. We have been robbing America for decades. What shall we do to stop this?" The Spirit says: "HA! No one shall stop this that I have started! For the enemy has stolen from America for decades and it stops now! For I will use this man to reap the harvest that the United States has sown for and plunder from the enemy what he has stolen and return it sevenfold back to the United States."

The enemy will say: "Israel, Israel, what about Israel? For Israel will be protected by America once again." The Spirit says: "Yes! America will once again stand hand and hand with Israel, and the two shall be as one. For the ties between Israel and America will be stronger than ever and Israel will flourish like never before."

The Spirit of God says: "I will protect America and Israel, for this next president will be a man of his word. When he speaks, the world will listen and know that there is something greater in him than all the others before him. This man's word is his bond, and the world and America will know this and the enemy will fear this, for this man will be fearless." The Spirit says: "When the financial harvest begins so shall it parallel in the spiritual for America."

The Spirit of God says: "In this next election they will spend billions to keep this president in [Obama]. It will be like flushing their money down the toilet. Let them waste their money for it comes from and it is being used by evil forces at work, but they will not succeed, for the ensuing election will be a clean sweep for the man I have chosen.[288)] They [the enemy] will say things about this man, but it will not affect him. They shall say it rolls off of him like the duck, for as the feathers of a duck protect it, so shall my feathers protect this next president. Even mainstream news media will be captivated by this man and the abilities that I have gifted him with, and they will even begin to agree with him", so says the Spirit of God. »»

---

288) Hillary Clinton's entire campaign was dominated by deliberate deceptions, numerous scandals, proven glass-hard lies, overt media manipulation, blatant corruption, massive electoral fraud, 'false flag' violence during Trump's rallies and proven voter fraud, and most likely even during the TV debates with Trump, by secretly helping her through a monitor. And yet, hardly a single journalist from the Western 'quality media' found it necessary to pay serious attention to this. No, a few sexist remarks made by Trump some eleven years ago, THOSE would be all-important in the election. The staggering bankruptcy of the 'free' Western media could hardly be more painfully underlined – at least, if we forget for a moment the years of lying propaganda about Syria, Ukraine, Russia and mass immigration, to just mention a few.

29.125 – Donald Trump has been inaugurated - what next?

The prophecies appear to have seen it right against the general expectation. Trump was elected president of the United States and inaugurated on Friday, Jan. 20, 2017. We might think that the rest of the prophecies will now also come true and therefore we can rest on our laurels. But nothing could be further from the truth. "A luta continua, vitória é certa," meaning: "the struggle continues, victory is certain." That is, victory does not just come but must be fought for. The Friday after the inauguration, I received a message from a good friend of mine, who occasionally receives prophetic testimonies. He wrote me the following, a personal message:

> «« All night long I have been following the U.S.A. election and consider all the developments to this day. I dreamed intensely about Donald Trump three nights in a row in the recent period. In it, a number of things emerged: Jet black clouds and storms in the sky over the White House. Dual meaning I receive: great strife in the heavenlies and no "AMERICA Great Again!" but instead a financial collapse. I was also with Trump and looked deep into his soul through his eyes [289)] and saw there a tremendously strong personality needed to carry out God's plan concerning Israel. However, his ego is bigger than anyone else; he exuberantly celebrates his personal mission and success. His ego is bigger than God's, so his initial success will turn into defeat. He will combine political and military power with the Vatican and fight against the prejudices people have toward the Roman Catholic Church and the pope.[290)] (Text, passed on emphasis.) Reference was made to Ezekiel 22 and Psalm 135. »»

If we look at Ezekiël 22, we read:

> «« 2 Ezekiel, son of man, are you ready to condemn the bloody city? Sure, you shall show her all her abominations. 4 You have become guilty by the blood being shed, and you have defiled yourself by the idols you made. So your final punishment is near. Other nations will laugh at you and make insulting remarks. 5 People far and near will make fun of your misery. 9 Amongst you are those that tell lies to shed blood! Upon the mountains you make merry and never stop doing vulgar things. 10 Men have sex with their father's wife or with women who are having their monthly period, 11 or you do it with someone else's wife. Some men even sleep with their own daughter-in-law or half sister. 12 Others of you accept

---

289) A well-known expression is that the eyes are the mirror of the soul. In a pack of wolves, they know this. Never look the pack leader in the eye is rule No. 1 among wolves! Well, man is spirit, soul and body that are intimately intertwined in threes. Therefore, it seems that man thinks through the brain, but angels, who have no brain, can also think. Therefore, man thinks 'through' the soul and 'via' the brain. Because of this intertwining of mind, soul and body, there is a reciprocal effect. Therefore, brain disease will affect the ability to think. Just as the soul thinks 'through' the brain, the soul sees through the eyes. The eyes are like a camera lens that works in two directions. That explains why the eyes are the mirror of the soul and why eyes, as it is called, can compel.

In proof of my statement, in Florida on August 27, 2014, Jaxon Buell was born with anencephaly (almost no brain) and God decided to let that child live. The child was functioning normally! His life story up to the age of two has been put into book form: "Don't Blink: What the Little Boy nobody expected to live is teaching the world about life" by Brandon and Brittany Buell. Finally, Jaxon Strong, as they called him, passed away peacefully on April 1, 2020.

290) The prophecy speaks of "the prejudices people have toward the Roman Catholic Church and the Pope." I find this expression remarkable, because how would we have viewed Pope Francis without the Book of Truth. Therefore, our judgments are 'prejudices', but do not therefore have to be wrong. At this stage (Jan. 2017), it was not yet blatantly obvious that this pope is the False Prophet, foretold by the Bible, and therefore these are still prejudices.

money to murder someone. Your own people charge high interest when making a loan, and they get rich by cheating. Worst of all, you have forgotten Me, the Lord God. 20 I will be like a metalworker who collects that metal from the furnace and melts it down. 21 I will collect you and blow on you with my fiery anger so that you will melt in the midst of it. 29 The people themselves cheat and rob. They abuse the poor and take advantage of foreigners.

30 **I looked for someone to defend the wall and to protect the breach** (by means of prayer) in favor of the land, so as to stop Me from destroying it. But I found no one. 31 So in my fierce anger, I will punish them for what they have done, and they will know that I am furious. I, the Lord, have spoken! »»

Then the meaning appears to be more or less opposite to Psalm 135:

«« 1 Praise the LORD. Praise the name of the LORD. Praise Him, O ye servants of the LORD. 2 Whoever stands in the House of the LORD, in the courts of the House of our God, 3 praise the LORD, for the LORD is good. Sing praises unto his name, for it is pleasant. 8 Who smote the firstborn of Egypt, both of man and beast? 9 Who sent tokens and wonders into your midst, O Egypt – upon Pharaoh and upon all his servants. 10 Who smote great nations and slew mighty kings? 13 Your name, O LORD, endureth for ever, and your memorial, O LORD, throughout all generations. 14 For the LORD will judge his people and have mercy over his servants. 15 The idols of the heathen are silver and gold, the work of men's hands. 16 They have mouths, but speak not. Eyes have they, but they see not. 17 They have ears, but hear not. Neither is there any breath in their mouths. 18 They that made them, become like them, so does everyone that has put trust in them! »»

Ezekiel 22 is 'more or less' in contrast to Psalm 135, for the end shows the conditionality of the punishments handed out. Do we stand on the breach? There is only one way. Parades and protest demonstrations do not help, only entering God's sanctuary! "Not by force nor by violence, but by My Spirit!" says the prophet Zechariah. We must form a praying army, where, in accordance with Paul's saying, we may also see our suffering as prayer. (1 Col. 1:24) There must be fervent prayer to ensure victory, for it is a hard battle. Praise the Lord.

That good friend of mine, who gets prophetic testimonies from time to time, at the end of Trump's first term, when the election circus had not yet kicked off, gave a follow-up to his first writing:

«« Someone I know well, who occasionally receives prophetic testimonies, wrote to me that Trump is a man who needs an instruction manual. Still, I stand by him. If such a big ego cannot reach his goal, who can? I like to add that there are some spiritual advisers around him who cannot stand the test of criticism.

Unfortunately, the people have despised his presidency. The people were divided and did not return [from their wrong paths]. In their hearts lived only Mr. Mammon and Mr. Prosperity. Now that things less than rosy, they fall back on what makes no sense. Things were going well, better, best. Yet they continued to sling mud, their mouths cried out for justice in their own bellies [abortion]. Where eight years could have been planned, the angel [watching over America] has seen enough. Indeed, YHWH is withdrawing his hand. Blindness has come upon the world. People now believe every lie [sold to us by the media and politicians].

The shed unborn human blood sloshes before God's throne - Murder! People prefer the sorcery of their vaccinations and allow themselves to be deceived by those who enrich themselves on them. One allows oneself to be robbed of the truth. Mammon lives. 'The game must go on.' Their homes and their games, that is what matters. But now enough is enough. »»

29.126 – Trump's 2024 Reelection

The Americans were heading to the polls on tuesday November 5th. The next day, when the results were still provisional, President Joe Biden called President-elect Donald Trump to congratulate him on his victory and invited him to meet at the White House. On Nov. 8, Valentina Papagna brought out: [291)]

> «« During my morning prayer, our Lord Jesus said: *"Trump's victory was huge, more than people expected. At the last minute, people changed their minds to make the election in his favor."* In a vision, our Lord showed me how people were lining up to vote. Many were still unsure who they would vote for, and I could see how, with a waving of his Arm over them, He changed their hearts at the last minute to make their vote go in Trump's favor. *"It was always my Hand that I held over him, and I let him win the election.* [And this was most remarkable in North Carolina, a stronghold of liberals.] *It is better for the United States – it will be better for the world too. Because of him, countries that are now at war and killing people – can put down their weapons. Pray that he will be protected, because he has many enemies."* »»

A press release, the following day, went as follows:

> «« The only thing uncontroversial about Donald Trump is how he won his second term. Despite predictions of a nose-to-nose race and fears of a long, drawn-out wait for election results, Trump was declared the winner early today. Unlike in 2016, he won the popular vote as well as the Electoral College, improving his margins in almost every demographic. For the rest of the world, the picture is loud and clear: Trump's "Make America Great Again" (MAGA) movement will gain momentum. »»

To the forefront is now the prophecy, an old one, of Don Dolindo (Ruotolo). He was a Neapolitan priest (1882-1970), stigmatized miracle worker, who was called *"a mouth-piece of the Holy Spirit".* Padre Pio used to say to Neapolitans*: "Why do you come to me? You have a saint in Naples, Don Dolindo."* Dolindo communicated with Jesus throughout his life, a life that was totally devoted to God and our most holy Mother Mary. He referred to himself as *"the Madonna's little old man".* And of course the Rosary was his constant companion. He had a prophecy about the destiny of the United States, which, now that Trump has been reelected, seems to have reached its stage of fulfillment.

As concerns the United States, Dolindo revealed a gloomy future, but also one of bright hope. He saw an era of profound darkness that would envelop this great country together with the world, a darkness that would not have come from wars or weapons, but from a spiritual crisis, spreading like a plague. Disbelief will then have entered the hearts of people, distancing them from God. He saw empty churches, desolate monasteries, priests who had abandoned their vocation. What was once sacred, had become a distant memory, undervalued and forgotten. The faith that once guided and strengthened humanity, would have been replaced by empty and materialistic ideas, as if a spritual tyrannty were seducing peoples, forcing them to forget their roots and devote themselves to a life without God. It will be as if the search for meaning leads them to hopelessness. This dark period will be like a hurricane, sweeping through the church and the world, destroying everything on its path. He saw how priests and believers face the ultimate test because of the

---

291) Roman Catholic Valentina Papagna migrated from Slovenia to Australia in 1955. Since 1988, she began receiving visions and messages. Her messages tell that Pope Francis is the true pope who will be succeeded by the False Prophet, mentioned in the Book of Revelation, but this is clearly beside the truth. Yet I quote this message of hers because that resounding electoral victory can only be explained in this way.

persecution and contempt that afflicts them, triggering a sense of total loneliness. Even God's existence will then be questioned.

However, in the midst of all this black darkness, Don Dolindo saw something that cannot be extinguished: a living flame. The United States will rise as a fortress that retains its faith and serves as a beacon of hope. Amidst all this darkness and doubt, he saw that the United States with a strong and faithful heart, becoming an example for other nations. He saw the American people keeping the flame of faith alive and constant.

In his vision, he saw a man coming to the fore in this land, a new John [the Baptist], who will renew faith and rekindle Christianity, who will send out a call to return to the Biblical values. This spiritual leader will be a shepherd with a force of resistance, who like a star in the middle of the night guides the hearts back to God. He saw this new John resisting the forces of this world. Thanks to his faith he will inspire a renewal of spirituality.

But there was more. Don Dolindo saw that the U.S. will play an even greater role in the spiritual future of America at a time when all seems lost. When the darkness becomes too heavy, it will rise as the savior of America [not only of the U.S], leading it back to Christian values, to the true light of God. He saw the United States as a testimony that even in the midst of trials and persecutions faith can survive. This nation, through suffering and perseverence will fulfill its role to save America. The United States is a sign of the unbreakable strength of faith in God's promise [that He will not let the world perish], even after the world will have turned itself away from the Truth. The United States will be a beacon of light, a living proof that faith is stronger than any darkness.[292)]

Even though the measure seemed to be overflowing and God's wrath would come upon the United States, his fatherly heart has once again relented and Donald Trump has made a comeback, winning gloriously on all fronts: he has now been elected president, his party has the majority in the House of Representatives and even in the Senate. This unexpected development averted a terrible judgment on America, as Kamala Harris would have been even worse than Hillary Clinton, who was Trump's opposing candidate in the 2016 election. America voted for the unborn, for secure borders, for family values and support for Israel (which is not to say that everything Israel does is good).

However, the geo-political and geo-economic problems have not been solved with these election results, because the American people have not yet learned to pray and learned how to put their trust in God despite all kinds of enthusiastic proclamations. A revival is needed such as has never been seen before, but to do so the people will first have to go through the wringer of tribulation. Distress makes one pray! But also: *"He who loves his child does not spare the rod."* (Prov. 13:24) And then: *"If my people will humble themselves and pray and seek my face and turn from their wicked ways, then I will hear from Heaven and will forgive their sin and heal their land."* (2 Chron. 7:14)

To reinforce my point, I refer to a prophecy, from Irish Exorcist Father Pat Collins. He received the following Word from God in 2019 during a conference on prophecy:

> «« Lower the flags all over Europe. Weep and mourn for the people, because I have died in their hearts. They walked away from Me in large numbers. They no longer acknowledge my sovereignty or keep my commandments. Warn the people that in departing from Me they have departed from their true selves and from my blessings. Now they are on their own. Warn them that their apostasy even frustrates the natural world as they no longer mediate with Me on its behalf.

292) YouTube, Nov. 25 2024: "Shocking revelations from a priest: The prophecy has begun to come true! ◊ Fr Dolindo Ruotolo".

> It's going to shake. There will be great storms; much rain will fall; rivers will overflow; crops will fail; many lives will be lost. The chaos in nature will only be a reflection of the greater chaos in the hearts of many people. It too will break forth in destructive ways [manifesting itself in wars, large and small]. Pray for the mitigation of the coming time of tribulation. Although your prayers will not be able to prevent it, they may lessen its severity. Times of chastisement and humbling are near. You too [my faithful] will suffer together with the many. »»

In that sense, I would not be surprised if America will be hit by huge calamities, like the other day in Valencia, which began on Oct. 29. Flash floods, in a matter of minutes, caused by heavy downpours in eastern Spain, swept away almost everything in their path. With no time to react, people were trapped in their vehicles, homes and businesses. Many died and thousands of livelihoods were shattered. Dejection all around, but was there also a crying out to God, a humbling? Only rage.

Nor would I be surprised if Trump survives another assassination attempt, a third, and is seriously injured this time. The perfect timing for such a thing would be in the period before inauguration day, which is on monday, Jan. 20, 2025.[293)] If this happens, I am confident that through national prayer he will quickly recover and then also experience a deep spiritual revival himself. And he needs that, for he has entered the lion's den. It must be said that his 2016 bravado is gone and that he has grown in spiritual maturity; the boyishness is off. His ego has been shaken. Now, during this term, the prophecies spoken of will come true. Just as well, because, if he completes his term, he will be the last president of the United States. After all, April 2029 is scheduled for the Judgment of the Nations, discussed at length in my article "Apophis and the End Time Clock".

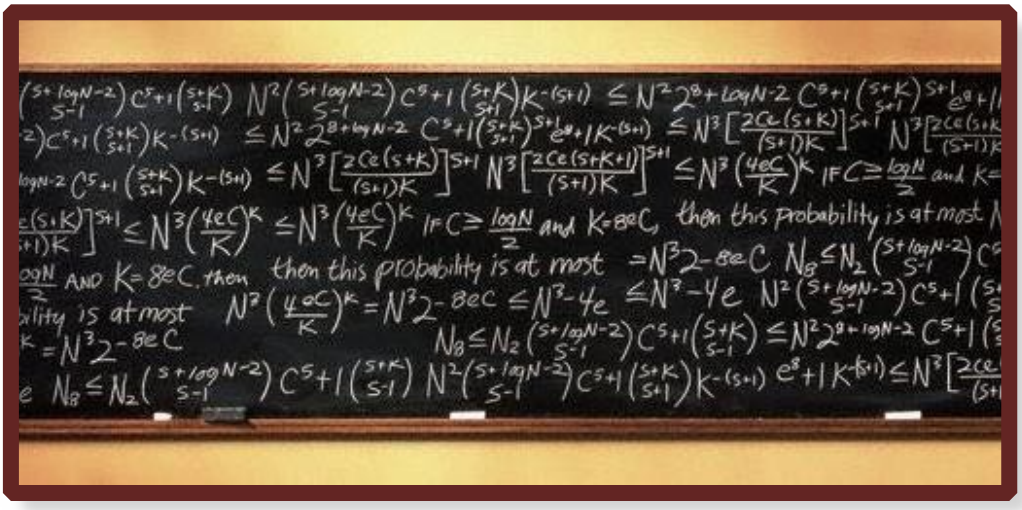
Ad finem

Postscript: When yours truly started to write this article in 2016, he was reminded of March 1973 when he received a word from the Lord for his father, who was then Secretary General of NATO. He wrote this to him in a letter. The word read: *"Your popularity has been given to you to be an ambassador for our country. Pray and your prayer will be answered."* Despite repeated urging, his father refused to talk about it. After six months, he wrote back to his son, which summed up: *"This is nothing for me, I am not pious."* The conversation would have been brief. Had he asked*: "What do you mean by that?"*, the answer would have been: *"No idea."* When asked: *"What should I pray for?"*, the answer would have been that that was his business, but that he should take it seriously. Like Trump, and like so many other politicians, my father had a strong personality and a tremendous ego, which will partly explain why he did not want to respond to this message whereas he could have very easily tested whether the word was a word from God by sending a request to Heaven. Admittedly, for the then Secretary General of NATO, it would have been a beacon change, a drastic change, so not so easy.

In October 1973 the Yom Kippur war broke out and in December the "Copenhagen European Summit" decided to flood Europe with Islamists (See article: "Green is the New Color of Black"). Years later, yours truly understood that his father should have warned against this. These thoughts came to mind when writing this article on Trump.

293) If there is no president-elect before Inauguration Day, the constitution allows the vice president-elect to act in that role until a new one can be appointed by Congress.

The Law of Organisational Stupidity



Science purports to have an objective approach. But often that's not quite true. In fact, science operates with a greatly reduced field of vision. That is peculiar to its way of doing, as set out in my article: "The Breach between Religion and Science". Science is objective only within the narrow field of vision it has assigned to itself. It is practiced through a profound simplification of the object under study by applying rules derived from mathematics. For this reason, science is not simple! However, its complexity should not serve as a smoke screen and disregard its limitations. If the inherent limitations are not recognised it can lead to serious consequences. NOW, in our postmodern society, it is over-obvious in all walks of life that science has wreaked havoc. Hiding can no more.

30.127 – The Bureaucrat is a man 'without' a Soul

Thanks to the scientific routine of simplification, bureaucracies are able to act as a functional whole. They have to maintain this routine, since for a managerial organisation there is neither a clear aim nor a steering mechanism, such as is known in the profit goal that gives direction in the commercial world. The high-sounding principles of government need to be translated into rules in order to make them practicable, and these rules are laid down according to mathematical principles of reduction. It cannot be otherwise. Yet the bureaucratic framework has some very negative side-effects, especially in totalitarian regimes. The true bureaucrat is a human without a soul. Have no illusions, for even in our 'enlightened' democratic regimes the excesses are legion. Just think of the distressing way in which the practice of abortion operates. Nevertheless, the true pur sang bureaucrat we only come across in totalitarian regimes. The true bureaucrat is a man without a soul. Alas! The Jews experienced this during the Nazi regime.

Bureaucrat Adolf Eichmann, the SS official in charge of deporting European Jewry during the World War.

Michael Dixon, who was a regular contributor to the "Financial Times", said it very clearly: [294)]

> «« Bureaucracies are supposed to operate according to virtually scientific principles and procedures laid down in advance, which their staff need only to follow precisely and dispassionately to do their jobs. As a result they become so preoccupied with the operations of the internal system that they assume that its rules apply everywhere. Provided they are following the ordained procedures, no one outside the organisation has a right to interfere. In short, they become autistic: cut off from, if not contemptuous of, the external world. Hence the law of organisation al stupidity entitled the "Bureaucratic Blinder". It says: "Contact with reality decreases as impersonal rules replace individual responsibility." »»

In the third school of Hillel letter, written in ± 45 AD, there is a wonderful historical assessment that bears on our subject:

> «« The Athenians met and vanquished the Persian army on the plain of Marathon, leaving 6,000 dead on the field. Thus ended the first attempt of Persian despotism upon the liberties of Greece. This may be said to be the first demonstration that was ever given to the world of the benefits of a free [life under] government. A few ages of absolute political liberty had trained up a race of men such as had never been seen before. Intelligence combined with physical force, thorough discipline, and an enthusiastic love of country, for the first time were brought to contend hand to hand with the pampered sons of Eastern luxury and the spiritless automata of a despotic government. The result was what it will ever be. The Orientals fell like grass before the swords of the free. »»

Dixon talks about bureaucracies. But what about the bureaucrats themselves? Having no soul, what does that mean in terms of their psychological make-up? In the case of Adolf Eichmann, who was the SS official in charge of deporting European Jewry during the Hitler regime, scholars have asked the same question: Did Eichmann ever think it through? Here are Roger Berkowitz's finding when he talks about the banality of evil in response to a book by Bettina Stangneth, who wrote her book on the occasion of the high-profile 1961 trial of Eichmann, which took place in Jerusalem. Before that trial they interrogated him, resulting in more than 3,500 pages transcript, sufficient to draw up a psychological profile of the man: [295)]

> «« The trouble with Nazi chief Eichmann was precisely that so many were like him, and that the many were terribly and terrifyingly normal. Arendt reported on the disturbing fact that struck her – and many others, including the Israeli judges – that Eichmann was decidedly average. The evil of Eichmann's deeds was indisputable, and Arendt was fully convinced he should be hanged for his crimes. Yet, notwithstanding what he had done, Eichmann's motivations seemed to her to be grounded in typical bourgeois drives. He was ambitious. He sought the recognition that came from success and the affirmation that flowed from belonging to a movement. He was, she concluded, not a monster, not stupid, but thoughtless [in the way that 'moral values' flow from arbitrary rules and not from a divinely inspired conviction of good and evil as exemplified by the Decalogue]. And it was this absence of thoughtfulness – which is so ordinary an experience in

---

294) "How organisations lose touch with reality" by Michael Dixon - Financial Times # 10-12-1986 (under: Jobs).

295) From a review of the book "Eichmann before Jerusalem: The unexamined life of a Mass Murderer" by Bettina Stangneth - Knopf Verlag # 2014 (608 pages). Review written by Roger Berkowitz, which appeared in "The American Interest" under the title "THE BANALITY OF EVIL – Did Eichmann Think?"

our everyday life, where we have hardly the time, let alone the inclination, to stop and think – that Arendt came to see as the dangerous wellspring of evil in modern times. »»

PHNOM PENH, Cambodia -- Tuol Sleng Prison officials took identification photographs of inmates, before they were tortured and killed during the 1975-79 "Killing Fields" regime of Pol Pot's Khmer Rouge. Tuol Sleng Prison is now a museum, and displays these enlarged photographs on its walls.

30.128 – The Hell State Cambodja

An extreme but instructive example of the degeneration of the administrative setup was on on full display during Hell State Cambodia under the Khmer Rouge regime. It was the disenchantment of a nation in a ghastly downward spiral. I now quote from Rudolph Rummel's book that deals with genocide in general: [296)]

«« In proportion to its population, Cambodia underwent a human catastrophe unparalleled in this century. Out of a 1970 population of nearly 7.1 million, Cambodia probably lost almost 4 million people to war, rebellion, man-made famine, genocide, politicide, and mass murder. From democide alone, almost all concentrated in the years 1970 to 1980, successive governments and guerrilla groups murdered almost 3.3 million men, women, and children (including 35 thousand foreigners). Most of these, probably close to 2.4 million, were murdered by the Communist Khmer Rouge. »»

The writer wonders: *"How do we explain this incredible killing by the Khmer Rouge?"* He cites a number of factors, but concedes: *"Our English vocabulary, as rich as it is, simply has no word for the kind of state that was created by the Khmer Rouge in 1975. Nor do we political scientists have a concept or theory for it."* He concludes: *"Perhaps what made the Khmer Rouge particularly fanatical and obsessive about their Marxism was a cultural trait."* He then cites the priest François Ponchaud, from a passage written in "Cambodia Year Zero" that fully agrees with our line of reasoning:

«« The Khmer thinks by accretions or juxtapositions, **but adheres strictly to the rules of his own internal logic** (Emphasis added). In the past, before beginning to act, every committee or council spent long hours and sometimes days drawing up statutes from which nothing was omitted, and constructing schemes each more impracticable than the last. A simple idea, intuitively perceived, was pushed to the limits of its internal logic and often to the point of absurdity, without any regard

296) "Death by Government" by Rudolph J. Rummel - Transaction Publications, New Brunswick, U.S.A. # 1994. (pp. 160, 194, 202 and 198, in this sequence).

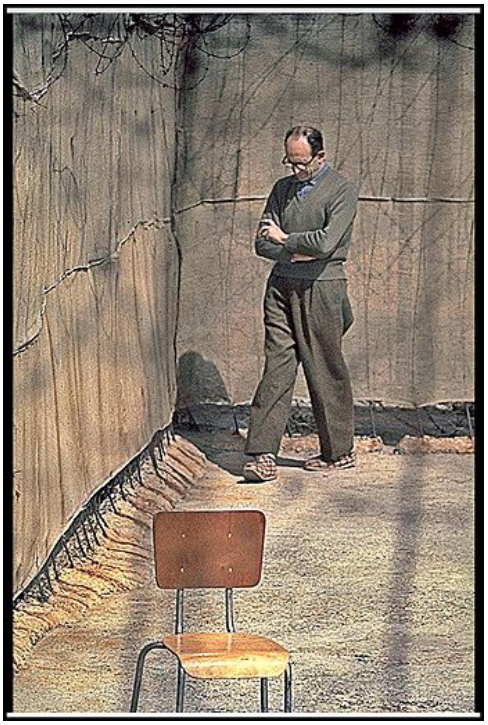
for realities or any forethought for practical consequences. In fact, good intentions were enough, and when the scheme or statute was finally produced, the difficulties that had led to its formulation were themselves resolved or no longer relevant. »»

Cambodian victims of the Khmer Rouge regime

30.129 – The God of the Philosophers

In the Khmer regime we observe a demonstration of this scientific principle of organisation stripped of everything else. In this construct it has become a kind of religious concept. Jawohl! If this is the god we venerate, in the end we will perish. In his book on Spinoza, Frank de Graaff wonders in astonishment:

«« Who is this god who gives the theorem instead of the symbol, who makes objects instead of creatures? Even Pascal himself knew this god. He names him in his Memorial *"le dieu des philosophes et des savants"* the god of the philosophers and scientists. »» [297)]



Eichmann in Ayalon gevangenis, Israël 1961

The principle requires that everything must be referred back to its origin, its simplest form, its naked essence. A return to the essence of being is a lessening. The Khmer Rouge ideology, which was the driving force behind the incredible massacres, called for a draconian return to the purity and wisdom of simple peasant life. It sounds beautiful! People had to leave the city en masse for the countryside – to become peasants, and it was on these totally unprepared journeys that the hordes of people quickly succumbed to hunger and exhaustion (Cambodia at the time was

297) "Spinoza en de Crisis in de Westerse Cultuur" (on the occasion of the 300th anniversary of Spinoza's death), by Frank de Graaff - Voorhoeve, The Hague # 1977 (p. 107).

characterised by jungles and marshes). Even the fact of wearing glasses or a watch identified someone as belonging to the despised intellectual class that had to be re-educated.

The lessening also had to be applied in the individual field: a lessening of the individual was advanced by regret, an inward turning, inner considerations and so on. This is a part of brainwashing, a favourite Communist pastime, most certainly in Asia. The public media here in the West continually knead the mind of the masses in the service of aims that those involved prefer to strive for on the sly. The process could be called mass mind massaging. This fits the definition of brainwashing: the thought processes are steered without the subject being aware of the fact, which means that the objective of the steering process must be concealed, for then resistance will be left behind. It was first applied on a large scale in the Korean prison camps after the Second World War.

But here too, in the Netherlands, suspicious developments are taking place, somewhat parallel to the above. In its report to the government, the Scientific Council for Government Policy (WRR) stated that the Dutch citizen actually lacks an identity.[298)] What it really meant was that the Dutch are not permitted to have an identity, i.e. a 'Christian' identity, based on the principle of "Do unto others as you would be done by". (Mt. 7:12) An independent identity, why should any individual have one? There is no scientific basis for it. For according to the scientific way of thinking, a point is a point is a point. Are not people like statistical points? All points are in principle exchangeable and only derive their identity from the scheme to which they belong. Forgive me for these black thoughts, but I took in politics at my mother's knee. I can therefore speak with some authority.

Princess Máxima: "the Dutch identity does not exist" (by order of the WRR).

298) In the WRR rapport no. 79 (2007) to the Dutch government, entitled "Identificatie met Nederland" (Identification with the Netherlands) the Council advanced proposals in order, as it put it itself, to reinforce the ties with the Netherlands. The WRR made a case which opens up a window to the future, and encourages people with differing backgrounds and opinions to 'feel at home' in the country, an approach that, according to the WRR, places identification processes centre stage.

The Good versus the Evil Doctrine

Stefano Don Gobbi is founder of the Marian Priest Movement. His message here provides a sublime explanation of Revelation 12 and 13, in which the fire-red dragon and the beast wage war against the Woman, clothed with the sun, and against her child. The child is Jesus Christ and those who belong to Him. The beast represents Freemasonry and those who have surrendered to it. These are the ones who wage war against the Woman and her child, in fact the Church.

Don Gobbi and Pope John Paul II

31.130 – The Marian Movement of Priests

This message is taken from Don Gobbi's book: "To the Priests, Our Lady's Beloved Sons". The book begins with the following statement: *"It is hereby stated that his messages must be understood not as words spoken directly by Our Lady, but received in the form of interior locutions."*

The Marian Priests' Movement has a minimal organization with no legal structure. Within that movement, since 1972, about 400 bishops and cardinals, 90,000 priests and millions of lay people have committed themselves to the Immaculate Heart of Mary, which answers the request of our Lady of Fatima to establish the devotion to her Immaculate Heart. As is written in Don Gobbi's very last message of December 31, 1997:

> «« In order to give the suffering and crucified Church of your time my motherly help and a safe refuge, I have brought the Marian Movement of Priests into being and have spread it through every part of the world by means of my book, which traces out for you the road along which you must journey in order to spread my light. With this book, I teach you to live the consecration to my Immaculate Heart with the simplicity of children, in a spirit of humility, of poverty, of trust and of filial abandonment. »» [299)]

And in the message of January 21, 1984:

> «« I tell you the things which I have most on my Heart, because they are the very things which Jesus has told you in the Gospel, which today should be lived with the simplicity of little ones, with the ardor of martyrs, and with the fidelity of courageous witnesses: it should be lived to the letter! Accordingly I am calling you to prayer, to penitence, to mortification, to the practice of virtue, to trust, to hope, to the exercise of an ever more perfect charity. (…) My only concern is that you live everything I have told you. Then your hearts will be inflamed with love, your souls will be illumined by my light, and I will transform you interiorly to lead you to do each day what pleases the Heart of Jesus. If you are consecrated to me, I take you just as you are, with your limitations, your defects and sins, your frailty, but then each day I transform you to bring you to be in accordance with the plan which God has entrusted to my Immaculate Heart. »»

Don Gobbi's message on Freemasonry was given to him in Milan on June 3, 1989 at the Feast of the Immaculate Heart of Mary, and it explores verses 12:1-6 and 13:1-2,5, 11-12 of the Book of Revelations, here given in detail:

> «« Now a great sign appeared in heaven: a woman clothed with the sun, with the moon under her feet, and on her head a garland of twelve stars. Then being with child, she cried out in labor and in pain to give birth. And another sign appeared in heaven: behold, a great, fiery red dragon having seven heads and ten horns, and seven diadems on its heads. His tail drew a third of the stars of heaven and threw them to the earth. And the dragon stood before the woman who was ready to give birth, to devour her Child as soon as it was born. He bore a male Child who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron. (…) And in my vision I saw another beast rising up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and on each of its ten horns a royal diadem, and the names it bore on its heads were names of blasphemy. Now the beast which I saw was like a leopard, but it had bear's feet and a lion's mouth. To it the Dragon gave the strength that was his, and great dominion. (…) And he was given a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies. (…) Then I saw another beast coming up out of the earth, and he had two horns like a lamb and spoke like a dragon. And he exercises all the authority of the first beast in his presence, and causes the earth and those who dwell in it to worship the first beast. »»

---

299) The significance of this devotion to Mary's heart is explained further on: "Now you understand how against the terrible and treacherous attack of the black beast, namely Freemasonry, my Immaculate Heart is your refuge at this time."

31.131 – The Black Beast is Freemasonry

Beloved sons, today you are gathered in cenacles of prayer to celebrate the Feast of the Immaculate Heart of your heavenly Mother. From every part of the world I have called you to consecrate yourselves to my Imma uit culate Heart, and you have responded with filial love and generosity. I have now formed for myself my army, with those children who have accep uit ted my request and have listened to my voice. The time has come when my Immaculate Heart must be glorified by the Church and by all humanity because, in these times of the apostasy, of the purification and of the great tribulation, my Immaculate Heart is the only refuge and the way which leads you to the God of salvation and of peace.

Above all, my Immaculate Heart becomes today the sign of my sure victory, in the great struggle which is being fought out between the followers of the huge Red Dragon and the followers of the Woman Clothed with the Sun. In this terrible struggle, there comes up from the sea, to the aid of the dragon, a beast like a leopard. If the Red Dragon is Marxist atheism, the Black Beast is Freemasonry. The Red Dragon manifests himself in the force of his power; the Black Beast on the other hand acts in the shadow, keeps out of sight and hides himself in such a way as to enter in everywhere. He has the claws of a bear and the mouth of a lion, because he works everywhere with cunning and with the means of social communication, that is to say, through propaganda. The seven heads indicate the various Masonic lodges, which act everywhere in a subtle and dangerous way. This beast has ten horns and, on the horns, ten crowns, which are signs of dominion and royalty. Masonry rules and governs throughout the whole world by means of the ten horns.

The horn, in the biblical world, has always been an instrument of amplification, a way of making one's voice better heard, a strong means of communication. For this reason, God communicated his will to his people by means of ten horns, which made his law known: the Ten Commandments. The one who accepts them and observes them walks in life along the road of the divine will, of joy and of peace. The one who does the will of the Father accepts the word of his Son and shares in the redemption accomplished by Him. Jesus gives to souls the very divine life, through grace, that He won for us through his sacrifice carried out on Calvary. The grace of the redemption is communicated by means of the seven sacraments. With grace there becomes implanted in the soul the seeds of supernatural life, which are the virtues. Among these, the most important are **the three theologal virtues** (faith, hope and charity) and **the four cardinal virtues** (prudence, fortitude, justice and temperance). In the divine sun of the seven gifts of the Holy Spirit, these virtues germinate, grow, becomes more and more developed and thus lead the soul along the luminous way of love and of sanctity.

31.132 – The aim of Masonry: blaspheming God

The task of the Black Beast, namely of Masonry, is that of fighting, in a subtle way, but tenaciously, to obstruct souls from traveling along this way, pointed out by the Father and the Son and lighted up by the gifts of the Spirit. In fact, if the Red Dragon works to

bring all humanity to do without God, to the denial of God, and therefore spreads the error of atheism, the aim of Masonry is not to deny God, but to blaspheme Him. The beast opens his mouth to utter blasphemies against God, to blaspheme his Name and his dwelling place, and against all those who dwell in heaven. The greatest blasphemy is that of denying the worship due to God alone by giving it to creatures and to Satan himself. This is why in these times, behind the perverse action of Freemasonry, there are being spread everywhere black masses and the satanic cult. Moreover, Masonry acts by every means to prevent souls from being saved and thus it endeavors to bring to nothing the redemption accomplished by Christ.

If the Lord has communicated his law with the Ten Commandments, Freemasonry spreads everywhere, through the power of its ten horns, a law which is completely opposed to that of God:

- To the commandment of the Lord: *"You shall not have any other God but Me",* it builds other false idols, before which many today prostrate themselves in adoration.
- To the commandment: *"You shall not take the Name of God in vain",* it sets itself up in opposition by blaspheming God and his Christ, in many subtle and diabolical ways, even to reducing his Name indecorously to the level of a brand-name of an object of sale and of producing sacrilegious films concerning his life and his divine Person.
- To the commandment: *"Remember to keep holy the Sabbath Day",* it transforms the Sunday into a weekend, a day of sports, of competitions and of entertainents.
- To the commandment: *"Honor your father and your mother",* it opposes a new model of family based on cohabitation, even between homosexuals.
- To the commandment: *"You shall not commit impure acts",* it justifies, exalts and propagates every form of impurity, even to the justification of acts against nature.
- To the commandment: *"You shall not kill",* it has succeeded in making abortion legal everywhere, in making euthanasia acceptable, and in causing respect due to the value of human life to all but disappear.
- To the commandment: *"You shall not steal",* it works to the end that theft, violence, kidnapping and robbery spread more and more.
- To the commandment: *"You shall not bear false witness",* it acts in such a way that the law of deceit, lying and duplicity becomes more and more propagated.
- To the commandment: *"You shall not covet the goods and the wife of another",* it works to corrupt in the depths of the conscience, betraying the mind and the heart of man.

In this way souls become driven along the perverse and wicked road of disobedience to the laws of the Lord, become submerged in sin and are thus prevented from receiving the gift of grace and of the life of God.

31.133 – A remarklable approach (Hubert Luns' commentary)

It is noteworthy, that *"You shall not commit uncleanness"* is missing from the list of the Ten Commandments, those of the stone tablets (Ex. 20). In the list of Mary, aka Don Gobbi, the purity commandment replaced *"You shall not commit adultery."* Adultery is always an uncleanness, although shameful uncleanness can also occur in the marital sphere, that is, without adultery. Adultery is not only an impurity, but also a serious form of unfaithfulness fitting within the category *"You shall not bear false witness."* Moreover, starting from the husband, it is a worse form of theft, for it steals the honor of the wife, prostitution excepted, and if married, the flesh of his neighbor. (Gen. 2:24) Finally,

it is an attack on the sanctity of marriage and therefore goes against the exemplary function of parenthood. The *"honor your father and your mother"* also creates obligations to the parental couple so that the promise as well as the condition of Exodus 20:12 may be fulfilled: *"that you (the children) may prosper in life."*

Where a giant statue of Stalin once stood, a giant metronome beats its silent rhythm, marking time, inexoribly going to its destination

Condition here, means that if parents are exploiters and tyrants to their children, God removes them from the privilege of parenthood, and their offspring will then no longer be held to the honor due them. The same principle also applies to governments (Isa. 3:14), who, like parents, are appointed by God. (Rom. 13:1-7, Isa. 3:4) Rebellion, such as against God-hating Nazism, is then no longer a sin, but becomes a duty. (Rev. 13:15-16; 14:9-10) He that hath ears, let him hear. (Rev. 13:9)

The counting of the Ten Commandments (decalogue) is uncertain and has always been the subject of discussion, just as with the counting of the ten sayings of creation from Genesis 1. Exodus 34:28 and Deuteronomy 4:13 specify that there are ten commandments. How do we count? Because it seems there are only nine. After all, the first two belong together and are thus one commandment: *"I am the Lord your God; You shall love Me and worship no idols."* The Jews split this commandment into two. The Catholics see them as one, but split the tenth commandment into two (you shall not covet your neighbor's wife, and: not covet your neighbor's goods) while for the Jews these are one, and rightly so. This ambiguity in the count caused confusion. The Samaritan sect, for example, saw as the tenth commandment the assignment to proclaim the Ten Commandments on Mount Gerizim. (Deut. 11:27-29) A common view is that in the one breath, when *"God spoke «all» the words"* (Ex. 20:1), are contained all the possible utterances, including those of the Book Leviticus. That would thus be the first commandment.

Now a new approach is shown. To see, as the Virgin Mary does, the very extensive purity corpus of the Old Testament as the missing commandment, is verily an original explanation and is perfectly defensible. Why has this yet so simple solution not been discovered by anyone in the past millennia? The purity commandment, as a generally applicable principle, may not be listed in the Decalogue (in Ex. 20:2–17 and Deut. 5:6–21), because its implementation is less obvious. As a principle, it aligns with the thrice-repeated call of Leviticus: *"You shall be holy, for I the Lord your God am holy."* (Lev.

19:2, 11:44, 20:7). This in turn is based on Genesis 1:27: *"God created Man in his own image."* The Leviticus 19 chapter is referred to as the Holiness Codex, for it begins with the words: *"You shall be holy".* Like the Decalogue, this Code was spoken in the presence of the whole assembly, and indeed, most of the Decalogue is included therein.

It was part of the special and difficult task of the priestly caste to explain the commandment of purity and holiness to the people, in accordance with the command of Leviticus 10:10: *"It shall be a statute forever throughout your generations, that you (the priests) may distinguish between holy and unholy, and between unclean and clean, and that you may teach the children of Israel (...)"* We should keep in mind that the Decalogue is a crude approximation, a kind of constitution of what moral law should be, *"so that we may live and that it may go well with us."* (Deut. 5:33) *"We must not forget that the Ten Commandments have a firm foundation in human nature itself, and thus the goods which they defend have universal validity",* said our beloved Pope John Paul II in his apostolic exhortation "Pastores gregis" of October 2003. They do not need to be justified for they are part of the natural law carved in each man's heart, as exemplified in Deuteronomy:

> «« For this commandment which I command thee this day, it is not hidden from thee, neither is it far off. It is not in heaven, that thou shouldest say: 'Who shall go up for us to heaven, and bring it unto us, that we may hear it, and do it?' Neither is it beyond the sea, that thou shouldest say: 'Who shall go over the sea for us, and bring it unto us, that we may hear it, and do it?' But the word is very nigh unto thee, in thy mouth, and in thy heart, that thou mayest do it. »» (Deut. 30:11-14)

And so it is really a shame God had to put them in script. It is different with the purity and holiness precepts, which are more than health precepts. They are primarily intended to focus our gaze on inner values, so also in sexual intercourse.

Take Orthodox Judaism, where a man is not allowed to want to see his wife naked (voyeurism). Modesty is somewhat different from shame, for *"the greatness of the daughter of the king is on the inside; her clothing is woven with gold."* (Ps. 45:14) There is another practical side to this. If through old age, childbirth and the heaviness of existence, she loses her youthful beauty, there is more chance that the relationship will remain good; her husband has learned to value his wife for other things. He will also pay less attention to immodest appearances of the opposite sex and thus be less prone to adultery. Finally, he turns his gaze away, as he does at home, from scantily clad women in public (Job 31:1). This way of thinking does not appeal to our drives and might evoke vehement reactions from some readers, proving once again that all is not so simple and that there is a need for an authority to shape the collective moral conscience. It follows that the drastic divorce of church and state is an abomination.

31.134 – The seven vices, antithesis to the seven virtues

To the seven theologal and cardinal virtues, which are the fruit of living in the grace of God, Freemasonry counters with the diffusion of the seven capital vices, the fruit of living habitually in a state of sin. To ***faith*** it opposes pride; to ***hope***, lust; to ***charity***, avarice; to ***prudence***, anger; to ***fortitude***, sloth; to ***justice***, envy; to ***temperance***, gluttony.

Whoever becomes a victim of the seven capital vices is gradually led to take away the worship that is due to God alone, in order to give it to false divinities, who are the very personification of all these vices. And in this consists the greatest and most horrible blasphemy. This is why on every head of the beast there is written a blasphemous name. Each of the Masonic lodges has the task of making a particular divinity adored.

• The first head bears the blasphemous name of pride, which opposes itself to the virtue of *faith*, and leads one to offer worship to the god of human reason and haughtiness, of technology and progress.

• The second head bears the blasphemous name of lust, which opposes itself to the virtue of *hope*, and brings one to offer worship to the god of sexuality and of impurity.

• The third head bears the blasphemous name of avarice, which opposes itself to the virtue of *charity*, and spreads everywhere the worship of the god of money.

• The fourth head bears the blasphemous name of anger, which opposes itself to the virtue of *prudence*, and leads one to offer worship to the god of discord and division.

• The fifth head bears the blasphemous name of sloth, which opposes itself to the virtue of *fortitude*, and disseminates the worship of the idol of fear of public opinion and of exploitation.

• The sixth head bears the blasphemous name of envy, which opposes itself to the virtue of *justice*, and leads one to offer worship to the idol of violence and of war.

• The seventh head bears the blasphemous name of gluttony, which opposes itself to the virtue of *temperance*, and leads one to offer worship to the so highly extolled idol of hedonism, of materialism and of pleasure.

The task of the Masonic lodges is that of working today, with great astuteness, to bring humanity everywhere to disdain the holy law of God, to work in open opposition to the Ten Commandments, and to take away the worship due to God alone in order to offer it to certain false idols which become extolled and adored by an ever increasing number of people: reason, flesh, money, discord, domination, violence, pleasure. Thus souls are precipitated into the dark slavery of evil, of vice and of sin, and – at the moment of death and of the judgment of God – into the pool of eternal fire, which is Hell.

Now you understand how, in these times, against the terrible and insidious attack of the Black Beast, namely of Masonry, my Immaculate Heart becomes your refuge and the sure road which brings you to God. In my Immaculate Heart there is delineated the tactic made use of by your heavenly Mother, to fight back against and to defeat the subtle plot made use of by the Black Beast. For this reason I am training all my children to observe the Ten Commandments of God; to live the Gospel to the letter; to make frequent use of the sacraments, especially those of penance and eucharistic communion, as necessary

helps in order to remain in the grace of God; to practice the virtues vigorously; to walk away along the path of goodness, of love, of purity and of holiness. Thus I am making use of you, my little children who have consecrated yourselves to me, to unmask all these subtle snares which the Black Beast sets for you and to make futile in the end the great attack which Masonry has launched today against Christ and his Church. And in the end, especially in his greatest defeat, there will appear in all its splendor, the triumph of my Immaculate Heart in the world!

31.135 – How to turn the seven vices into virtues

I would like to end this article with a treatise on the fight against our human nature wounded by sin, which has been taken from the work of Sister Marie Lataste, a Sister of the Sacred Heart. It is a perfect guidline for those who want to go to confession. Lataste was born in 1822 in Mimbaste in the south-west of France in and died 25 years later in Rennes in Brittany (France). From early childhood she was the recipient of extraordinary favors from the Blessed Sacrament, and, from 1840, she saw our Lord and Saviour above the altar every time she assisted at Mass. She received frequent apparitions of Our Lady and the angels. She entered the Society of the Sacred Heart as a lay sister in 1844. Marie Lataste became a model of humble virtue. She made her vows on her deathbed just before receiving the last Sacraments. To preserve her remains from desecration, they have been interred at Roehampton near London. Her "Works" were so interpolated by her director that they are not considered authentic, but have great value nevertheless.

A prophecy by Lataste, about the function of the blessed Virgin in the victory over the powers of darkness, fits with the message of Fatima, in which Mary promises a great peace after hard times. This also fits with the great calm of "Don Bosco's Dream". In 1862 he had the dream of the two columns in which terrible storms and battles threaten to sink the ship of the Church. The Church triumphs thanks to the pillars of devotion to the Immaculate Virgin Mary and to that of the Most Blessed Sacrament (Jesus' Host). Lataste says:

> «« Peace shall return to the world because the Blessed Virgin Mary will breathe over the storms and quell them. Her name will be praised, blessed and exalted forever. Prisoners shall recover their liberty, exiles shall return to their country, and the unfortunate shall be restored to peace and happiness. Between the most august Mary and her clients there will be a mutual exchange of prayers and graces, of love and affection. From the east to the west, from the north to the south, all shall proclaim the Holy Name of Mary: *"Mary conceived without Original Sin, Mary Queen of Heaven and earth. Amen."* »»

The following seven instructions were passed on to Lataste by Jesus Christ:

Vice 1 – Pride: If you attribute everything to God; if you want to submit to Him everything that is in you and the rest of the creatures; if you like to be forgotten, despised and considered unworthy of anything; if you don't seek honors and praise, you won't be proud. If you consider yourself unworthy of any favor from God; if you bear the misfortunes of life and daily crosses patiently; if you endure humiliations without any desire for revenge, then you will not have succombed to pride.

Vice 2 - Lust: If you know your own weakness against this vice; if you suffer with pain and sorrow the goads of the flesh, without nonetheless allowing yourself to be wounded by them; if you so control them every day to such an extent that they become weaker and weaker; if you repel evil thoughts without deliberately thinking about them; if you love purity as the apple of your eye, to the point of preventing the slightest thing opposed to it; if you humbly pray that you may resist temptation and not be at the mercy of the promptings of the evil one, then you will have overcome lust.

Vice 3 - Avarice: If you willingly share your possessions, not only the superfluous, but also what you hold dear; if you do not fear to lack the necessities of life; if you do not worry too much about tomorrow's day; if you do not harm your neighbor, then you will have overcome avarice, this great sin of attachment to earthly goods at the expense of God and your neighbor, and which is so prevalent in every age and in all walks of life.

Vice 4 - Anger: If in the depths of your heart you do not seek revenge for an affront done to you; if you reflect on your own attitude that may have provoked your neighbor's impatience and attitude; if you do not see evil intention in everything that happens to you, then anger will have no hold on you. If you don't hold grudges or seek revenge by harming others with your thoughts, words or actions; if you know how to keep your tongue in check; if you do not speak evil and especially do not slander the other with impudent judgment, then anger will not take hold of you. If you try to reconcile with someone who is indebted to you; if, instead of hurting him or wishing him harm, you do him good; if you pray for him; if you make sacrifices for him; if you ask Providence to bring about a reconciliation, then anger will have no hold on you.

Vice 5 - Laziness: If you do all that is necessary to devote your body to a work that is useful to you and your neighbor; if you do all that is necessary to keep your mind from being idle or focused on matters that are of no importance to Heaven, then laziness will not stir you. If you think that Christian teachings, regardless of age, should always be studied, which is the indispensable nourishment for prayer; if you think that good intentions will not suffice if they are not optimally and promptly transformed into action; if you ask God to preserve you from boredom and idleness, then idleness and all the sins of negligence that result from it will not touch you.

Vice 6 - Envy: If you rejoice when someone is doing well, both materially and spiritually; if you are never troubled by jealousy; if you hear with joy and satisfaction the rightful praise intended for someone else; if you love to give compliments and encourage those who are performing well; if you love to praise God for it, then you will have conquered the sin of envy, which is so furtive and widespread. If you never tarnish someone's reputation with underhanded slander or by 'well-intentioned' gossip; if you feel sorry for the faults of others and even more sorry for your own faults; if you pray for your neighbor, then you will not have fallen prey to envy.

Vice 7 - Gluttony: If you watch out of being surprised by gluttony; if you have the firm desire of fighting it; if you don't dwell on the table and its pleasures; if you desire only what is required; if you faithfully devote to God your food, and thank Him for it afterwards, praying carefully and not routinely, then gluttony will not have gained access to your heart.

31.136 – Conclusion

The following treatise provides the necessary knowledge on the problem of the struggle between good and evil and offers the principles for living a life pleasing to God, but these blocks (of knowledge) need to be set on fire to heat up the house. The only one who can make them burn is the Holy Spirit, who has become our partaker. (Mt. 3:11) How that functions, we learn from the Great Conchita of Mexico (1862-1937), also called the Concepción Cabrera de Armida. In "La Vie dans l'Esprit Saint" (The Life in the Holy Spirit) by Éd. de l'Emmanuel - Paris # 2009, there is an "Exhortation" at the end, which elaborates on this issue with Jesus words: [300)]

> «« Listen, my daughter. There is a hidden treasure that is still unexplored and not yet appreciated at its proper value, and yet it's the greatest thing Heaven and earth have: the Holy Spirit. The spiritual world itself doesn't know enough about Him. He is the light of the minds and the fire of hearts, and if in this world there is lukewarmness, coldness and weakness and so many defects that torment souls and even my Church, it's because we don't have enough recourse to the Holy Spirit. In Heaven, his mission, his life and his very being consists in love. On this earth, his mission consists in bringing souls back to their center of love, and that is God.
>
> The Holy Spirit can give us everything we need: if one is sad, it is because one has not made sufficient recourse to the divine Comforter, to Him who is the Joy that overwhelms the spirit. If one is weak, it is because one has not sufficiently turned to Him who is the Invincible Power. If one makes mistakes, it is because one despises Him who is the Light. If one loses faith, it is for lack of the Holy Spirit…
>
> The Holy Spirit is not venerated as He should be by everyone and by the whole Church, and that is why everyone complains and is close to despair. This sadness and affliction are caused because the Holy Spirit is not given that privileged position which I, Jesus, granted Him during My life on this earth, I who venerated Him as the third Person of the Trinity, as the Spirit of the Incarnation and the Spirit of the foundation of the Church. Yes, my daughter, one shows to the Holy

300) "La Vie dans l'Esprit Saint" - Éd. de l'Emmanuel, Parijs # 2009 (ch. Exhortation).

Spirit only a lukewarm love, one calls on Him without any fervor… And even the hearts that call themselves mine, manage to forget Him… Oh, how my Heart is deeply wounded! The time has now come for the Holy Spirit to reign, not as a distant and highly exalted One, but as a Person close to every soul and heart; the time has come for Him to reign in my Church. On the day when the fire of the Holy Spirit flows in the veins of every shepherd, of every priest, in their innermost being, the theological virtues, which have lost their power, will return to all who serve in my Church. Then the face of the world will be changed, for all the ills from which we suffer are due to the absence of the Holy Spirit, who is the only remedy. It is high time for the ministers of my Church to respond, and then souls will be divinized…

The Holy Spirit is the axis around which all virtues revolve, and there is no true virtue without the Holy Spirit. Only the Holy Spirit can provide the enthusiasm that can free my Church from its plight in which it finds itself. Let us revive his worship, let us restore his true place, which is first in the minds and wills, and there will be no more poor, thanks to this Heavenly wealth! The Father and I wish to see a renewal of the reign of the Holy Spirit in the Church. He is the soul of this Church, yet this is hardly recognized! Out of rut and habit, people settle for subordinate devotions, which is the cause of innumerable ills in souls and in the Church. Let the Holy Spirit reign in souls and the Word will be known and honored, the Cross will regain its true place and souls will be spiritualized by divine Love!

The more that the Holy Spirit reigns, the more sensuality will be felled that has conquered the whole earth! Let it be clearly understood that the Cross can never reign unless the Holy Spirit had prepared the ground previously… Him first! »»

Finally I like to point out that concerning the seven cardinal sins, demons, by their nature are free from the sins of the flesh, that is: lust/sexual depravity, avarice/greed, sloth/laziness, gluttony/drunkennes. These beastly urges are given for our survival, but if expressed disorderly and in an exaggerated way and contrary to God's purpose for humankind, they are classified as sins.

There are the sins of the mind, which humans have in common with demons, that is: pride/arrogance or just the opposite: a crushing inferiority complex, rage/anger or the opposite: total submission to something else than God, fear/anxiety or the opposite: recklessness. The opposites are in their extreme expression just as evil. Fear is included here, and indeed demons may experience great fear; a person without faith in the divine providence feels abandoned, and that means a deep fear of life (with its repercussions on greed). Again, these faculties of the mind, when used in ordely fashion, are not sins, for then it becomes self-esteem/modesty, anger/resistance, prudence/courage.

At the top stands the sin of the soul and it consists of envy/jealousy/hatred. This has no rational component. And therefore it cannot be fought or subdued with arguments. The sins of the mind, however, feed on it in ever-increasing progression. Only God can free us from this terrible sin, but then we must acknowledge it and ask God for its eradication.

Melanchthon's Ideal of Piety & Erudition

Henk Dijkgraaf

by Henk Dijkgraaf

No pedagogue can escape the question: What is the aim of education? The question actually precedes pedagogics itself, for that science attempts to formulate the questions: Who should be taught and what? When and how should this occur? Anyone brave enough to enter a school and ask the first teacher he comes across why he in fact is teaching the children, will probably be greeted with a somewhat disparate mumbling or poverty-stricken twaddle about the knowledge-economy and democratic citizenship.

32.137 – Back to the sources of the Ancient Civilisation

Anyone putting the same questions on the meaning of education to Philipp Melanchthon (1497-1560), Luther's intellectual brother in his struggle against the obscurantism that gripped the Church in the early 16th century, would have been given a crystal-clear answer: *"pietas et eruditio"*. For Melanchthon these were not cheap catchwords designed to cover up an intellectual vacuum.

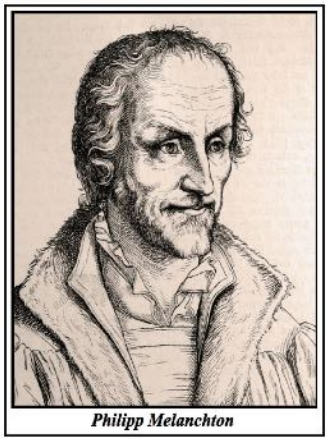
In the first place Melanchthon was the very incarnation of piety and erudition. He had had a godly education, and from the earliest times had a love of the Bible that he even took with him on walks. One of his mother's uncles was the great Hebraicist Johann Reuchlin, who ensured that young Philipp was taught at the Humanist university in Tübingen, where he graduated in 1514 at the age of seventeen. Two years later he published an edition of Terence's comedies. Two years further on he published translations of Aratus and Plutarch, wrote a Greek grammar – that was to go through many re-prints – and accepted a professorship at the University of Wittenberg. His inaugural speech "De corrigendis adolescentium studiis" left little doubt as to his ambitions. He wished to take his students back to the sources of ancient civilisation. Moreover they had to acquire a thorough knowledge of Hebrew and Greek, keys to the correct understanding of the Holy Writ. Only thus would they be able to share Christ's wisdom and excel in piety and virtue.

In the second place piety and erudition took root at the heart of Melanchthon's theology: his notion of justification through faith. Melanchthon formulated this succinctly and precisely in his Article XVIII of the Augsburg Confession (1530): *"Of free will they teach that man's will has some liberty to choose civil righteousness and to work things according to reason. But it has no power, without the Holy Ghost, to work the righteousness of God, that is, spiritual righteousness; since the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God"*. For Melanchthon the distinction between what he calls civil righteousness (iustitia civilis) and spiritual righteousness (iustitia spiritualis) is crucial. Since humankind became alienated from God by the Fall, inner and perfect obedience became impossible. Man's will is corrupted, whereby he no longer strives for the glory

of God but for his own glorification. He places his "I" over against God so that spiritual righteousness is excluded. Human activity can no longer have any salvific significance. This does not imply that the distinction between the honourable (honesta) and the scandalous (turpia) has lost its significance for Man. Although it is only the Gospel that can restore Man to his correct relationship with God, human reason is still in a position to know the divine law of nature (lex naturae) as expression of God's will. Ideally reason guides the will which, in its turn, leads the passions and lessens them where necessary. Ideally – for although the will is capable of acting according to the insights provided by the reason and to translate them into external acts, the will does not have the power to turn against immoral desires (affectus vitiosi). The gulf between honourable external acts and dishonourable desires cannot thus be bridged. In many cases the will itself is unable to prevent the immoral desires from emerging. Therein lies the tragedy of human existence.

32.138 – Doctrina et disciplina: the basis of education

But this tragedy does not render upbringing and education impossible. Indeed, it underlines their urgency. While the range of the human will may be limited, it can be broadened by education. Two factors play an important part here: the overview of reason can be enlarged by teaching (doctrina) and the accommodation of the passions with regard to the will can be reinforced by habit-forming or discipline (assuefactio seu disciplina). 'Doctrina et disciplina' are the foundations on which upbringing and education rest – and their extension is where Melanchthon's humanist ideal is to be found: the person in whom the capacities of reason, will and passions are hierarchically ordered.



Philipp Melanchton

According to Melanchthon, therefore, the educator's task is moral-pedagogical. Education is above all education in virtue. In this, Melanchthon is indebted to Aristotle, in whose spirit he regards virtue as 'habitus' that makes the will prone to obey reason. By ***doctrina*** Melanchthon then means the exposition of the virtues whereby we obtain a clear insight into the essence of what is good. In consequence the will obeys more easily *"because the beauty of virtue takes it prisoner"*. At the same time we should not underestimate the power of the passions. Which is why education cannot be separated from discipline.

'Doctrina' is impossible without language and letters. For Melanchthon language is not only of communicative significance. First and foremost it serves ethics and aesthetics. Morals and beauty are for Melanchthon – just as for all classical thinkers – indissolubly linked together. **Language has its moral importance thanks to the fact that it is the most important instrument of the mind: Man thinks by means of language. From this it follows that eloquence and ability to judge are so closely related that they can in no way be separated. Whoever is careless with language betrays the fact that his thoughts are careless. And whoever thinks carelessly loses sight of the truth, including morality.** Linguistic corruption therefore has a negative effect on virtuous relationships.

For Melanchthon this has pedagogical consequences. Anyone wishing to reinforce the mental powers of growing children must above all concentrate on their language skills. Children's linguistic sensitivity sharpens their powers of observation with regard to reality. While it is true that immediate observations provide facts, their mutual relationships

are accessible only to thought for which, of course, language is its instrument. Reality is not given to us unmediated: we track down its significance thanks to language. *"Because words (verba) are signs of things (res), the knowledge of words precedes."* Language, in its capacity as a vehicle for the mind, must therefore be a 'golden chariot'. Only then are the conditions met for a logical train of thought.

And thus Melanchthon is not only concerned with the logical-moral qualities of language but also with its aesthetic properties: "*Peperit elegantiam necessitas*." All that is expressed in a barbarous manner is unclear, and whatever is barbarous and unclear puts the listener off. But where language appears in its purest form and in all its beauty, it has the power to lead us to the good. Hence the Humanists' preference - and, with them, Melanchthon - for the 'bona litterae', fine literature (belles lettres). Naturally the Humanists were also aware of Socrates' judgement on the Sophists. But even the worst is no more than the tainted best. Hence the great moral-pedagogical value that Melanchthon attached to the 'belles lettres'. The images of human fate and actions in the works of writers of Antiquity such as Homer and Thucydides, Plutarch and Virgil penetrate deeper into the human soul than many a moral-philosophical treatise. *"We must therefore carry within ourselves models and images of the virtues, to which we must turn in all our decisions and in judging all circumstances",* Melanchthon wrote in 1534 in the preface to his "On the duties of Cicero". He regarded not only the content of this work to be of the greatest importance in the formation of pupils, but also the artistic manner in which Cicero dealt with his themes. The pupils must memorise and imitate the formulations used by Cicero so that they can learn to express themselves eloquently. As early as 1523 Melanchthon, in his "Economion eloquentiae", recommends imitation as a pedagogical tool. It is not without reason that we present our pupils with examples of fortunate formulations and striking expressions so that they learn to comprehend the power of the words, the construction of a paragraph and the nature of rhetorical figures. *"Because, as in other art forms, imitation is also advantageous [in the formulation of language]."*

32.139 – No Eruditio without Holy Script

If the classic letters are so indispensable in the formation of pupils, how much more so the Holy Scriptures? Without the Gospels peace with God is out of reach. And whoever ventures forth without knowledge of the original languages of Scripture is doomed to lose his way. Correct understanding of the Gospels, states Melanchthon in his "Oratio de studiis linguae Graecae" (1549), is linked to a thorough knowledge of Greek. And that is far more a gift than a task, for here too, truth and beauty go hand in hand. *"What joy it gives – yes, what happiness – to be able to speak without a translator to the Son of God, to the Evangelists, to the Apostles and to Saint Paul and to hear their true and living words and to be able to reproduce them".* Here is a meeting between the theologian and the humanist and the ideal of 'pietas et eruditio' comes to its principal destination.

Published in **Bitterlemon no. 3** (May 2007) pp. 44-45.
Permission has been granted to disseminate this article.
Copyright © BITTERLEMON

Atheism – A Sign of the Time

The uniqueness of our time is marked by ubiquitous Atheism, or in its milder form, agnosticism. In the latter, God's existence is neither recognized nor denied. As such there are many similar 'isms', including, a very interesting one, Buddhism. We focus on Atheism because it is the most pronounced form of denial, and also the most dominant. Without an understanding of Atheism, which grows like weeds, we cannot properly understand the times we are living instaan.

33.140 – Atheism, a Curse

The agnostic points out that Atheism is unscientific since God's non-existence is unprovable – even the Atheists admit that. And since God is its focus of interest, this outlook on life ranks among the 'beliefs', albeit without worship, prayer and churches.[301)] Hardcore Atheism is called fundamentalist. Their intolerant anti-Christian attitude is taken for granted, and they are still gaining ground. The anti-power correctly understood that the world is not overcome with weapons, but with ideas. They claim an opinion cartel, for they are basically anti-democrats. Their ethical standards brush aside all civil decency. Most regrettable is their position as regards the family: abortion is of paramount importance to them, as is same-sex marriage. They are at the forefront of the condemnation and ridicule of the traditional Christians whom they call scornfully orthodox. Cringe, are you also 'orthodox'? Yes, I am!

Politics presents its nilistic-materialistic view of man as neutral – a view also known as secular, or the separation of church and state – but this is bizarre and can only have one mother: Atheism. Her child is a clumsy fat bag, a real scrape, that stands symbolic for the insatiable government that crushes the individual. Atheism leads to nihilism because the Atheistic individual is responsible to his own conscience alone. A typical exponent of that approach was the terrible Robespierre.[302)] In the absence of a supreme power the mind is set free and then hatred and envy provide their own justification. That is the kind of freedom ruthless man aspires – a chimera, a utopia, for where is real freedom to be found?

---

301) The US Supreme Court repeatedly stated that Atheism warrants the same protection as all religions, and has spoken of "religions based on a 'belief' in the existence (or non-existence) of God and religions founded on different beliefs."

I'll explain. Every person is born with the natural law within himself, the lex naturae, from which the written laws are derived. So they taught us in earlier times. The lex naturae cannot be tampered with. It is a gift from God and is expressed in the Ten Commandments, the opening phrase of the Sinaitic or Mosaic Covenant. This constitutional part of Israel's law, the Torah, applies not only to the Israeli people, but is truly a statement of the 'Universal Duties of Man' standing alongside the 'Universal Rights of Man'. Many contracts or laws have a preamble. That is an introductory text outlining the circumstances that led to the provisions. After the Second World War, several attempts were made to introduce a preamble to the Dutch constitution, but it never happened. The American constitution has the preamble: *"We, the people of the United States…"* For the Dutch preamble it would not have been out of place: *"God be with us",* a prayer that adorned the edge lettering of the Dutch coins since the Mint Act of 1816 and still appears on the Dutch two-euro coin. The Ten Commandments have the preamble: *"I am the Lord thy God (whom has delivered thee from the land of misery and the house of bondage)…"* [303)] Whoever denies in the Atheistic sense that God exists, therefore denies God's rules that were given to us as a blessing, but in its denial they become a curse, it can be nothing but a curse, because the non respectance leads a nation to perish in lawlessness.

There are those who really think God does not exist. Most of them are victims of what has been served to them, and they were sensitive to it because, according to Ephesians 6:16, they were not under the patronage of faith. But make no mistake, there are those who know full well that God exists, Satanists, who have been clothed in the cloak of Atheism. They know God, yet they chose his opponent because they chase what belongs to the world and follow their own will. It is said that communism wants to deny God while Freemasonry wants to curse Him. They are companions in evil, a kind of Bonnie and Clyde, leaving a trail of crimes. Know that Karl Marx, the father of Atheistic communism, was a Satanist. In his early years, Marx wrote: *"I wish to avenge myself against the One who rules above."* Not much later, he wrote "The Player", in which he exclaims: *"The hellish vapors rise and fill the brain, till I go mad and my heart is utterly changed. See this sword? The prince of darkness sold it to me. For me he beats the time and gives the signs. Ever more boldly I play the dance of death."* [304)] How did Marx arrive at these literary twists? There is evidence that he had joined a Satanic cult headed

---

302) Robespierre was a lawyer with an ultra sharp mind. He was a brilliant orator and one of the most feared figures of the French Revolution, which started full swing with the Reign of Terror. We place the start of the Revolution at the 21st of June 1791 when the King was arrested. The Reign of Terror started when Robespierre took control of "Le Comité de salut public" (The Committee of public welfare), which happened on September 26 1793. "Le Comité de salut public" was the supreme office charged to put into practice the utopian decrees by the "Convention" (a kind of parliament). The Terror immediately ended on July 29 1794, the day when Robespierre was sent to the scaffold. Robespierre believed with all his being in the Rights of Man, the watchword of the philosophers, who were impregnated with the spirit of Atheism. As a magistrate in Arras he could not bring himself to pronounce a single death sentence. He shrank from blood, and the only execution he ever attended was his own, but yet he sent hundreds of thousands to death with his unemotional verdicts and orders. Robespierre had carved in marble the magniloquent principles of human reasoning, which were solely based on cold-blooded logic. He idealized Mankind but showed no mercy to those who fell short of his exalted concepts of 'virtue'. He always prayed before meals, yet ever more ruthless he sent to death the innocents. He held sacred the ideals of the Revolution while he sent to death the men of the Revolution. Those were the bitter fruits of Atheism, the only fruits Atheism can bring.

303) Egypt is misraim in Hebrew, which also means misery. The addition "whom has delivered thee from the land of misery and the house of bondage" indicates that the Lord Jahweh has the best in mind for the people and that they should therefore listen to Him. It also refers to the greater delivery by Christ's suffering on the Cross.

by Joanna Southcott, and it is likely that in those circles he discovered and was lured into Luciferian worship. All of Southcott's followers, like Marx, had long hair and unkempt beards. Who introduced Marx to Luciferian worship remains an open question. It should be stressed that Marx believed in the existence of God, but was not an atheist as many claim; he believed in God and wanted to chase Him out from his Heaven.

Why people are prepared to believe the lies

I come also to plead with those who cannot understand the meaning of God's Creation, especially those souls who use human reasoning to define everything in their lives. They believe only in what they can see or touch. These same souls will accept lies from those they believe are to be respected in their societies and nations. How easily they are fooled by the lies of man and how weak they are in that they reject the Truth of their Creation.

Word of Jesus on Dec. 16 2012
to MDM (Maria Divine Mercy)

33.141 – The gradual emergence of Atheism as a Movement

As a movement, Atheism is something new. Of course, Atheism as a personal belief has always existed, but in ancient times people preferred not to talk about it. The Bible says (Ps. 14 and 53): *"The fool says to himself, there is no God!"* To himself, because it was too dangerous in those times to open your mouth. The Greek philosopher and poet of the 5th century BC, called Diagoras of Melos, is often referred to as the first openly professing Atheist. He was sentenced to death in Athens under the charge of being a godless person (ἄθεος/atheos) after having dared to make fun of the Eleusinian Mysteries - but he managed to escape. How dangerous it was to be accused of being an Atheist is illustrated by the examples of Étienne Dolet, who was strangled and burned in 1546, and Giulio Vanini, who received a similar fate in 1619. A former Jesuit and Polish nobleman Casimir Liszinski had been working since 1674 on a manuscript called "De non-existentia Dei", stating that the concept of God is a creation by man. After it was discovered in 1689, he was condemned to death for Atheism. He was beheaded after his tongue was pulled out with a burning iron and his hands slowly burned. Communist Poland celebrated him as a martyr to the Atheist ideal. The British playwright and poet Kit Marlowe, reputed to be an Atheist, was accused in 1593 of *"vile heretical conceipts"* after a tract denying the divinity of Christ was found in his home. Before he could finish defending himself, he was murdered.

In those days it was much safer to hide your Atheistic views by claiming to be anti-trinitarian, but even that was not without danger, because the authorities assumed it to be a screen to hide a blasphemous persuasion. For instance, in 1638 the Polish movement of the Socinians[305)] were accused of sacriligious practices, which were enumerated in a government pamphlet that pointed out that they had a scandalous little book on their printing press, called "Tormentum Throno Trinitatem Deturbans" (the tearing down of the lamentable torture device of the Holy Trinity). The investigation started after pupils of the Socinian school at Raków were seen to pelt stones at a wooden cross, being taught to do so by their teacher. The Jews were left untouched who, as everyone knows, do not

304) Quote from "Karl Marx and Satan" by the famous preacher Richard Wurmbrand. A very readable book from 1986 that is full of interesting details. It shows that after giving his life to Jesus Christ and writing beautifully about it in his youth, Marx defected to the other side a short time later. Marx was a great admirer of Shakespeare's plays that had been elevated to some sort of cult status in his family, and it must be said that those plays paint a bilious image of our society, without higher morals, and that is exactly the aspect Marx must have enamored.

believe in the Holy Trinity; the Jews had a very important presence in Poland then.[306)] Most of the Socinians finally found refuge in Amsterdam, where they established friendly relations with Spinoza. Newton (1643-1727), the great physicist, was also an antitrinitarian. He was not so Christian as some people think he was.[307)] He wrote a booklet on his antitrinitarian views under the title "Origins of Gentile Theology" to be published more than ten years after his death. John Locke, the famous freethinker, tried to persuade him to publish it during his lifetime, but he was afraid to do so. Yet, Newton did not hesitate to use "One Holy God" as his pseudonym, in Latin "Jeova Sanctus Unus", an anagram of the Latinized version of his name, Isaacus Neuutonus.

We might call those people crypto-Atheist. A different tactic, in stead of denying the Holy Trinity, was to advocate that God and the universe are one: without universe, no

---

305) The Rosicrucians and Unitarians descend from the Socinians. The Socinians came into being after te Satanic congress of 1546 in Venice. The gathering was discovered and the nephew of the main actor, Fausto Sozzino (Latinized: Socinus), became the leader shortly after his uncle had died, and he then fled to Poland. In 1617 there was another important Satanic congress in Magdeburg where they decided to invent the absurd legend of Christian Rosenkreuz (cross of the rose). Afterwards they started to call themselves Rosicrucians. The cross with the rose is symbol here of secret knowledge, because Satanists always try to hide their disgusting goals. The 'official' Socinian doctrine has been subject to constant change, so that we may rightly wonder what exactly it meant. There is a big difference between the secretly held views of the leaders of the early days and what was explained to the congregation, as emerged from the Rakówian Catechism, which was largely written by Fausto and only published in 1605, a year after his death, first in Polish. Remarkably, we learn from the "Catholic Encyclopedia" of 1912 that the condemned theses of Petrus Abelardus († 1142) can be regarded as a precursor to freethinking and rationalism and can therefore serve as a model for the Socinian views. The same goes for the Waldensian heresy. The Socinian Creed drawn up by Pope Innocent III can be regarded as a summary of the Socinian errors. The first formal condemnation of Socinianism appears in the constitution of Pope Paul IX, called "Cum Quorundam", which came out in 1555.

306) The Jews were treated with kindness in the Poland of the 17th century. They had their Yeshiva (school) and a printing house. In 1632 King Ladislaus forbade the distribution of antisemitic works and in the year following he forbade Christians from entering Poznan, their city. By the time the king died, the Jewish population of Poland had reached 450,000, representing an estimated 60% of Jewry worldwide. Poland became the home to Europe's largest Jewish population, as royal edicts guaranteeing Jewish safety and their religious freedom contrasted with bouts of persecution in Western Europe, especially following the Black Death of 1348-49, blamed by some on the Jews themselves. Much of Poland suffered relatively little from the outbreak, while Jewish immigration brought valuable manpower and skills to the rising state.

307) Newton tried to unlock the sealed orders in the Bible – the hidden prophecies. This became public knowledge after the auction in 1936 of his unpublished writings, estimated at one million handwritten words and known as the Portsmouth Papers, that had remained hidden in a chest for less than two centuries. After the auction Keynes gradually reassembled half of it, of which the biographical portion, that is, the Conduitt Papers, were donated to Cambridge University. (From "Essays in Biography" by the famous economist John Maynard Keynes.) It would be wrong to conclude from Newton's interest in the Bible that he was a Christian. He belonged to a virulently anti papal movement, the Order of Rosicrucians. In studying his life, it turns out that one of the greatest scientific geniuses in history was a twisted, tortured mystic with homosexual tendencies, an ability to hold grudges for decades and an egomaniac. He was incapable of much human affection and went nuts several times. He sought revenge on his perceived enemies and did so with a tenacity and a ferocity that bordered on being Satanic. He spent a few years on his great mathematical and physics work. Yet, he spent decades attempting to decipher alchemy and the Old Testament prophecies. He predicted the year that Christ would return on earth (he pinned down 1948), yet he secretly subscribed to Arianism that denies the full divinity of Christ.

God. The Jewish heretic Baruch (Benedict) Spinoza (1632-1677) was probably the first famous crypto-Atheist to announce himself openly and yet remain untouched. He did not see God as a separate being with attributes such as a will or an intellect. In the words of Louis Jacobs his god did not create nature but is nature itself. This approach has ever since characterized Atheism. Albert Pike, the worldwide leader of the Masonic movement in the second half of the 19th century, explained: [308)]

> «« There is a mere formal Atheism, which is a denial of God in 'terms', but not in 'reality'. If a man says: "There is no God", that is, no God that is self-originated, or that never originated (…) it implicates that the order, beauty, and harmony of the world of matter and mind do not indicate any plan or purpose of deity [the deity here is God depersonalized and actually an insult]. But, says a man: "NATURE – meaning by that the whole sum-total of existence – (…) is the cause of my own existence, the mind of the Universe and the Providence of itself." In such cases, then, the absolute denial of God is only formal and not real. The 'qualities' [or material and tangible expressions] of God are admitted and affirmed to be real [and, yes, nothing else is accepted to be real], and it is a mere change of name to call the possessor of those qualities 'Nature' and not 'God'. »»

Like his contemporary René Descartes, who is one of the important founders of the scientific method, Spinoza worshipped the experience of the tangible world. It took courage to be a Spinoza or even one of his supporters. If a handful of prominent people agreed to his writings, they did not dare to say so in public, except for the French priest Richard Simon (1638-1712), who was a hateful and godless person. Spinoza and Simon can be regarded as the founders of the modern Biblical criticism.[309)] Simon was to become head of the Rosicrucians.[310)] He was succeeded by John Désaguliers, who was the one who in 1717 introduced to world the (speculative) Freemasonry.

It took some hundred years after Spinoza's death before the first important work appeared that was fully dedicated to promoting Atheism. We talk about the voluminous manuscript by the French priest Jean Meslier (†1729), entitled: "Clear and evident demonstrations of the vanity and falsity of all the religions of the world".[311)] It was found after his death. The complete text was first published in French in 1970-1972 as part of Meslier's complete works. The work itself was first published in English in 2009. "The

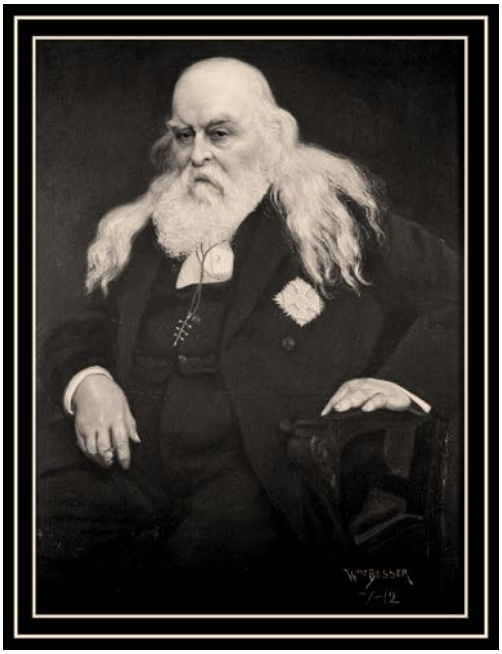
---

308) "Morals and Dogma" by Albert Pike # 1871 (p. 251). In a 2002 reprint it states on the front: "Albert Pike, the greatest and most maligned Freemason that ever lived." This shows his repute both inside and outside the movement.

309) The father of modern Biblical criticism is Benedict Spinoza, being excommunicated by Judaism because of his blasphemous ideas when he was only 23 years old. The principles he adhered to are listed in the "Theological Political Treatise", which he published anonymously in 1670. After a favorable reception, this soon led to a storm of criticism. Spinoza reflected his most systematic criticism of Judaism and of religion in general. He rejected things like prophecy and the supernatural, arguing that God acts only through the natural laws of his own nature, that is, that God and nature are identical. Moreover, he categorically rejected that God had any purpose in mind. Spinoza was good friends with the French priest Richard Simon, who liked to call himself a Spinozist. He defended the Tractatus and treated everyone who criticized it with the utmost contempt. Simon's seminal work "Histoire critique du Nouveau Testament" was similar to the Tractatus and was to be published one year after Spinoza's death. A decree issued by the royal council of France confiscated and burned the entire edition of 1300 books, but one copy sprang out of the dance and was reprinted in Amsterdam soon after.

310) The Rosicrucians practiced alchemy in its blasphemous practice. In the decades leading up to the establishment of Freemasonry, the Rosicrucians managed to infiltrate the guilds of the free stonemasons and adjust them according to the rules of Rosicrucianism... and then, finally, the moment had arrived to present themselves to the world under the guise of Freemasonry.

Testament", published in 1762 and written by Voltaire, discusses Meslier's writings. This grossly distorted "Extract" portrays Meslier as a fellow-deist (deism is about a god who first created and then went to sleep). Probably out of fear, Voltaire entirely suppressed Meslier's anti-monarchist, proto-communist opinions, which explains why Meslier has been overlooked even into recent times as a precursor of organized Atheism. Another book "Le Bon Sens du curé Jean Meslier" (The good sense of parish priest Jean Meslier) in three volumes of 350 pages each, was published anonymously in 1764 with at the end Voltaire's "Testament". It was long attributed to Meslier but was in fact written by Baron d'Holbach. In his most famous quote, Meslier refers to a man who *"wished that all the great men in the world and all the nobility would be hanged and strangled with the guts of the priests."*[312] No wonder that Meslier was the golden girl of the leading French revolutionaries, who were impregnated with the spirit of Atheism and blasphemy.[313]



The fearsome Albert Pike

The French Revolution, at the end of the 18th century, catapulted Atheistic thought into the public arena. Thereafter, Atheism was ceasing to be a dangerous accusation that required denial or an evasion into something less conscipuous, and it progressively evolved into a position to be avowed, which paved the way for Atheism as a movement. But we have to wait for the advent of communism to witness Atheism as an important factor in society at large. In the 19th century there are three outstanding figures for the spread of the Atheistic rebellion, the three Charles: Karl Marx (1818-'83), Charles Darwin (1809-'82) and Charles Baudelaire (1821-'67). Marx proved especially important in the sphere of economics, politics and religion; Darwin in the sphere of science, not only in antropology but also in other sciences; and the French poet Baudelaire was seminal for the ethical principles of our modern societies. Marx has been mentioned before, and what he and

311) Full title of Meslier's manuscript: «Mémoire des pensées et sentiments de Jean Meslier, prêtre-curé d'Etrépigny et de Balaives, sur une partie des erreurs et des abus de la conduite et du gouvernement des hommes, où l'on voit des démonstrations claires et évidentes de la vanité et de la fausseté de toutes les religions du monde, pour être adressé à ses paroissiens après sa mort et pour leur servir de témoignage de vérité à eux et à tous leurs semblables».

312) The quote from Meslier is from Voltaire's "Testament" ch. 2: «Il souhaitait que tous les grands de la Terre et que tous les nobles fussent pendus et étranglés avec les boyaux des prêtres.»

313) That all the great French revolutionaries were hardcore Atheists appears from a letter from Diderot. He was one of the leading French revolutionaries who told his mistress of a meeting of the Scottish freethinker David Hume with Baron d'Holbach. He described the conversation as follows: «« The first time that Mr Hume found himself at the table of the Baron, he was seated besides him. I don't know for what purpose the English philosopher took it into his head to remark to the Baron that he did not believe in Atheists, that he had never seen any (meaning that it cannot be proven on logical grounds). The Baron said to him: "Count how many we are here. We are eighteen." And he added: "It isn't too bad a showing to be able to point out to you fifteen at once: the three others haven't made up their minds." »» Source: "The Life of David Hume" by Ernest Campbell Mossner # 2014 (p. 483).

brainchild have accomplished is sufficiently known. Therefore, we will now discuss the next one on our list.

As concerns Darwin, he manifested his views on religion in a moderate way, without taking clear-cut or rigid positions. Differently from what is commonly assumed, he did not use his theory as evidence to deny the existence of a creator, although his followers did. And indeed theirs is the only logical position to be taken on the basis of Darwin's theory. It is safe to say that he deplored his theory towards the end of his life.[314)] Darwin's lack of comprehension regarding the works of nature, which in a number of cases he regarded cruel and unbefitting for a creator-God, made him oppose God by denying his right to create in the way He did. Darwinism is a slap in the face of the Holy Ghost who said that the work of creation was *"very good"*, a way to indicate that it was perfect. (Gen. 1:31) Darwinism implies that everything around us is imperfect, and that what we experience and see is without a given purpose. It is then a small step to declare: "We instead should be the benevolent creator!" We have to admit that Darwin was brave enough to point out the flaws and difficulties of his own theory, and so did a number of scientists after him, like the very influential George Gaylord Simpson in "Tempo and Mode in Evolution" that he published in 1944.[315)]

According to the deistic or evolutionist view, God went to sleep again after his introductory creative act. What followed was only the result of the first cause in an infinite and continuing series of cause and effect, a view that is similar to that of Einstein. For he believed in the god of Spinoza, a god he identified with nature, one of supreme rationality without a grain of love and compassion. Thus, even Adam and Eve would have originated without divine intervention. No free creation, accidental circumstance or human freedom fits into this concept; any coincidence, any arbitrariness that seems to exist is only appearance; if we believe that we can act freely, it is only because we are ignorant of its real cause. How different is the Christian point of view where the purpose of everything is at center stage. The primal origin of creation is as mysterious as its primal goal, so mysterious that God says of Himself: *"I am the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning (arche) and the end (telos)."* The creation is only complete after the complete agreement of will as it once existed in the beginning (cause) and has evolved ever since – and the final agreement of will (telos), as it has always existed in God's mind – touch each other; …only complete when the *"Thy will be done"* has been accom-

---

314) Many people are familiar with the account that Lady Hope gave of her visit to Darwin a few months before he died. Malcolm Bowden has written about it in "True Science Agrees with the Bible". Part of the witness account goes as follows: «« "What are you reading now?" I asked as I seated myself beside his bedside. "Hebrews!" he answered - "still Hebrews, the Royal Book [of the Bible] I call it. Isn't it grand?" Then, placing his finger on certain passages, he commented on them. I made some allusions to the strong opinions expressed by many persons on the history of the Creation, its grandeur, and then (I commented on) their treatment of the earlier chapters of the Book of Genesis. He seemed greatly distressed, his fingers twitched nervously, and a look of agony came over his face as he said: "I was a young man with unformed ideas. I threw out queries, suggestions, wondering all the time over everything, and to my astonishment, the ideas took like wildfire. People made a religion of them." »»

315) The paleontologist Professor George Gaylord Simpson (1902-1984) was perhaps the most influential paleontologist of the 20th century. He writes about the serious problem of the systematic absence of transitional forms: «« The earliest and most primitive known members of every order already have the basic ordinal characters, and in no case is an approximately continuous sequence from one order to another known. In most cases the break is so sharp and the gap so large that the origin of the order is speculative and much disputed. (And further:) This regular absence of transitional forms is not confined to mammals, but is an almost universal phenomenon... »»

Source: "Tempo and Mode in Evolution" by George Gaylord Simpson under the heading: "Major Systematic Discontinuities of Record" # 1944 (pp. 105, 107).

plished; …only complete when the FIAT has become universal. We could say that the chain of cause and effect is a pushing force and the desired purpose is a pulling force, in which God occasionally gives a helping hand, like with a hen that tends for her chicks.

My dear Gray,

(...) With respect to the theological view of the question; this is always painful to me. – I am bewildered. – I had no intention to write Atheistically. But I own that I cannot see, as plainly as others do, & as I shd wish to do, evidence of design & beneficence on all sides of us. There seems to me too much misery in the world. I cannot persuade myself that a beneficent & omnipotent God would have designedly created the Ichneumonidæ with the express intention of their feeding within the living bodies of caterpillars, or that a cat should play with mice. Not believing this, I see no necessity in the belief that the eye was expressly designed. On the other hand I cannot anyhow be contented to view this wonderful universe & especially the nature of man, & to conclude that everything is the result of brute force. I am inclined to look at everything as resulting from designed laws, with the details, whether good or bad, left to the working out of what we may call chance. Not that this notion at all satisfies me. I feel most deeply that the whole subject is too profound for the human intellect. A dog might as well speculate on the mind of Newton. Let each man hope & believe what he can.

Certainly I agree with you that my views are not at all necessarily Atheistical. The lightning kills a man, whether a good one or bad one, owing to the excessively complex action of natural laws – a child, who may turn out an idiot, is born by action of even more complex laws – and I can see no reason, why a man, or other animal, may not have been aboriginally produced by other laws; & that all these laws may have been expressly designed by an omniscient Creator, who foresaw every future event & consequence. But the more I think [about these kind of things] the more bewildered I become; as indeed I have probably shown by this letter.

Most deeply do I feel your generous kindness & interest
Yours sincerely & cordially, Charles Darwin

Letter 2814 – Charles Darwin to Asa Gray, May 22, 1860

Once the theory had shown to be utterly false, it started to become a scientific hoax of monumental proportions. With such a hoax we can understand why those 'scientists' want to discredit Christians, even treat them as scum. In 2006 there was the San Diego "Beyond Belief Conference: science, reason, religion & survival". The creationists were not invited. Nevertheless, there was a critical comment. One of the attendees was from an orthodox Jewish background, Melvin Konner, professor of anthropology and of neuroscience and behavioral biology; he condemned the conference in what he saw as overly simplistic representations of religion. He said the event came to resemble a *"den of vipers"* debating whether *"to bash religion with a crowbar or only with a baseball bat."* (Wikipedia, under Melvin Konner) Rodney Stark, an early social researcher on the spread of secularisation in a religious society, was quoted by the Scientific American of Sept. 1999 (topic: Scientists and Religion in America): *"There's been two hundred years of marketing that if you want to be a scientific person you've got to keep your mind free of the fetters of religion.*" He argued *"that higher education on the whole winnows out the idea of God and people who hold to it." "In research universities the religious people keep their mouths shut",* Stark says, *"and the irreligious people discriminate. There's a reward system to being irreligious in the upper echelons."*

To be honest, no one knows precisely how God made his Creation, but for sure He did not act via a so-called Darwinian evolution. The evolution theory has not been restricted

to antropology. Its central tenet from nothing to something that proceeds in a soulles and merciless universe, and that always needs to be improved on, managed to penetrate the other sciences. Nowadays, it has become the overriding credo that explains away everything, in biology, psychology, ancient history, religious 'feelings' (religion would be no more than feelings), the medical world, ethics, sociology, economics, etc. Michael Dekee states in his Dutch book "Evolution Doctrine Debunked" (De Evolutieleer Ontkracht): [316)]

> «« Social Darwinism and eugenics sprang from Darwinism. This prompted Hitler – who adopted the philosophy from the Americans, who started the eugenics movement around 1900, to create a super race themselves – to murder massively disabled people, gassing Jews and exterminating other minority groups in order to strengthen and improve the 'aryan race'. All in the context of 'selection' and 'survival of the fittest', but then applied to human society. Survival of the fittest was invented by Herbert Spencer after reading Darwin's "On the Origin of Species". This does not necessarily mean 'the survival of the strongest', but the survival of the species, variant or breed that is most successful in having offspring, and is therefore best 'adapted'. Spencer is also considered to be the founder of social Darwinism. On the advice of Russel Wallace, Darwin replaced the term 'natural selection' with 'survival of the fittest', which appeared in the second edition of "On the Origin of Species".
>
> The consequence of this theory is also that many scientists and also ordinary people are more concerned about 'the environment' and about animals – such as whales, and I speak from experience! – than for their fellow man. "There are too many people", "we have to save nature", "the world population has to go down to save endangered species", etc. *"For me, humans are less than a worm",* said environmentalist Paul Watson of the Sea Shepherd movement. Typical sayings of left-wing green hippies at the time, but now adopted as the standard by the majority of humanity. In the eyes of science, Man seems to be worth no more than a fly, because we are all 'products' of evolution. Hence man in science equates himself with God and considers himself permitted to regard his fellow human being as garbage. One of the consequences of the Atheist 'theory' of evolution is the [routine] abortion of unwanted, and certainly disabled, children. »» (pp. 81 ff)

We now focus our attention on the third Charles. Charles Baudelaire is credited with coining the term 'modernity' to designate the fleeting, ephemeral experience of life. His highly original style of prose-poetry initiated a new trend. Baudelaire's influence on the direction of modern French and English literature was considerable. But he came also to be appreciated elsewhere. There are many musical adaptations of his poems, mostly pop and especially after World War II. By his godless life style and decadent poems he was the forerunner of a life driven by senselessnes and depravity. He glorified Satan in the "Litanies of Satan" and confided to his friends that he was a pederast (homosexuality

316) In his "The Evolution Theory Debunked", first published in 2018 (in Dutch via lulu.com), Michael Dekee blows the whistle about the university culture in the departments that teach the theory of evolution. As a student in Ghent he experienced it all himself. The writer explains - well-founded and easy to read - how real science is often hard to find in this setting. It is actually not so neat what happens there. The term 'fake science' is appropriate. It is in fact science fraud. At the beginning of the theory of evolution, people were quite willing to point out the weaknesses in that theory, but later when the truth came to light and the unsustainability became increasingly clear, reputations were put at stake, which led to fierce opposition against people who thought differently, an attitude that would embed itself in 'structures'. No conspiracy but something quite similar. It is very sad that a scientific career in biology and related subjects is only possible if one knows how to bend, bend deeply, in the direction of evolutionary thinking. The truth, this book shows, is no longer paramount in paleontology. Science itself is attached to the coat rack.

with adolescents), but he was not the man to be part of anything and that in an extreme manner. So, it would also be wrong to conclude that he was a Satanist. He liked women, but marriage was not for him. No doubt he will have participated in spiritism and indulged in a few pederastic encounters, just for the kick of it. He also tried hashish and opium. In later life he could not stop the habit of taking laudanum (a tincture of opium) and started heavy drinking. In "Be Drunk" he rimes: *"You have to be always drunk. That's all there is to It — it's the only way. So as not to feel the horrible burden of time that breaks your back and bends you to the earth, you have to be continually drunk. But on what? Wine, poetry or virtue, as you wish. But be drunk."* He undertook many projects, but he almost never completed them. His life is an example of having tried everything – because life is short and one has to try it all – yet without getting satisfaction. His life was short, the wages of sin. His gonorrhea and syphilis, acquired in the usual disreputable manner, and his addictions conspired to snuff out his life at the early age of forty-six.

Charles Baudelaire — an errant soul

His abject immorality or rather lack of morality and Baudelaire's dissolute habits stimulated generations of nihilistic writers, poets and musicians, who on their turn inspired countless young people in leading the superficial life deprived of purpose and responsibility; an abject life of pleasure seeking with one common denominator: the egotistic seeking of self fulfillment that remains elusive nonetheless. No wonder that in our times there is much interest in Baudelaire. Many of his proclamations were considered scandalous in his time. Today that is common coin. He wrote on a wide range of subjects, drawing criticism and outrage from many quarters. A few quotes from Baudelaire: *"Personally, I think that the unique and supreme delight lies in the certainty of doing 'evil' – and men and women know from birth that all pleasure lies in evil."* And: *"There are but three beings worthy of respect: the priest, the warrior and the poet: to know, to kill and to create. The rest of humankind may be taxed and drudged, they are born for the stable, that is to say, to practise what they call professions."* Here is a disgusting one: *"But what can eternity of damnation matter to someone who has felt, if only for a second, the infinity of delight?"*

The New Man

Our generation has formulated some seductively shining slogans self-fulfilment; personal freedom; liberation from the taboos of the past, from an absolute law; the new morality and situation ethics; etc. They all sound extremely progressive. And who among us and especially among us Jews living in the twentieth century, would not like to be known as a liberal. Thus, instead of setting an example for our youth, we thought that there was no safer path to the future and to a happy life, free of hangups, than to let our children lead us.

From "Crisis and Faith" by Eliëzer Berkovits
Sanhedrin Press, New York # 1976

33.142 – Atheism, the Root of Evil

The root of evil is the denial of God Himself. If God does not exist in our minds, we are not accountable to that non-person. The worst atrocities that are now considered 'ethi-

cally responsible' in our Western society, such as abortion called euphemistically termination of pregnancy, stem from a conscious denial of God. Atheism is not just an intellectual question of true or false. It is a question of right or wrong. Abortion, unisex, early sexualization, suicide (euthanasia), civil rights - all these thorny problems, and much more, are moral and social problems that are the focus of our existence. What you think about God is decisive. Denying God is first and foremost a moral thing with far-reaching consequences. It's like a terrible epidemic that has affected all sections of our society. Psalm 53, along with Psalm 14, represents a prophetic witness to our day:

> «« The fool says in his heart: "There is no God." Corrupt are they, and do abominable iniquity. From Heaven God looks down to see if anyone is wise enough to search for Him.
>
> But all of them are crooked and corrupt. Not one of them does right. Won't you lawbreakers learn? - who eat up my people. You gobble down the bread of God [God's Word], but you will be terrified worse than ever before. God will scatter the bones of his enemies, and the day comes that you'll tremble by fear. On that day God will scatter your bones! »»

My Father's wrath will shake the earth...

Book of Truth, January 30th, 2013

My dearly beloved daughter, the destruction of human life, by the hands of those who do not honour the importance of this Gift from God, is escalating. My Father's rage, because of this abominable sin, has reached such a pitch, that His roars can be heard throughout the Heavens. The Hand of his Anger will cast out this evil, as He will pluck out those wicked men and destroy them. For every man slaughtered like an animal, My Father will throw the perpetrator into the fires of Hell. Please know that, as wars escalate, the wicked amongst those dictators will be challenged. They will be weeded out and they will be dealt the Justice which they will bring down upon themselves. Man cannot see what I see. They do not know the extent of evil, which results in the destruction of life, the destruction of the earth and the persecution of men, by their fellow brothers and sisters.

My Father's intervention has already commenced and his wrath will shake the earth. Enough. **The failure of man to accept the Truth of God's Existence is at the root of this evil**. Man plays with life, as if he controls all that is on earth, over which he has no authority. This evil cannot be allowed to continue. It will be dealt with and the fear of God will be felt by those who do not accept his Laws.

Your Jesus

Our modern society is characterized by materialism, hedonism (self-indulgence) and self-deification (the worship of reason). By enthroning ratio as the superior power above all else, man denies himself as a spiritual being. And God, who is spirit, cannot be discovered that way. Materialism and self-obsession are forms of idolatry. Daniel 11:38: *"But in his estate shall he honour the god of fortresses. A god whom his fathers knew not, him shall he honour with gold and silver, and with precious stones, and pleasant things."* The French revolutionaries have set the tune, for after the start of the reign of terror 'Le culte de la Raison' (the worship of reason) developed. In that period several Parisian churches were transformed into 'Temples of Reason', the same fate that the famous Notre Dame of Strasbourg suffered. The French Henri de Saint-Simon (1760-1825), who was imbued with the revolutionary fervor, proposed that the religious leadership of his day should be replaced by a priesthood of scientist and engineers, who would interpret the oracle of science in order to decree the actions for the betterment of the human condition on the spiritual as well as the material level. This, Simon expressed in "Nouveau christianisme" (new christianism), which actually is a religion without God,

a booklet published in the year he died. Thus, science would be elevated to a state of unquestionable godhood, to be worshipped under the direction of its priestly caste. (pp. 49, 53) Simon's ideas were liked and have been elaborated upon by most 19th century philosophers. Scientism, says Patrick Wood in the beginning of his brilliant book from 2014 "Technocracy Rising, the Trojan Horse of Global Transformation": *"Scientism rejects all philosophical, religious and metaphysical claims for understanding reality, since the truth it portends cannot be validated by the Scientific Method. Thus, science is the absolute and only access to truth and reality."* Modern science follows the Cartesian principle of 'clare et distincte percipere', meaning that only what is clearly visible to the eye can be used to understand reality, a position that is essential for a rigorous routine, but only functions properly as long as scientists are well aware of the limits of their method. Yet, in their atheistic arrogance, they have always refused to take that into account. On the contrary, the scientific establishment has thrown God out of the house He himself had built (the reality that surrounds us), and the newcomer wrongfully usurped the high priesthood. Scientists know that as long as they remain within the enclosure of the Cartesian logic, their arguments are characterised by a full and precise expression. The mental design is an invincible fortress because it cannot be attacked from within, while any attack on the very principles of science is dismissed as unscientific chatter.

The great end-time prophetess Maria Divine Mercy (MDM) often spoke of Atheism, which is referred to as the fruit of the worship of rationalism. (6/21/2012) The proud belief in own strength and expertise is at the cradle of Atheism, but also of the movement of humanism. (8/29/2013, 4/3/2015) In her message of June 21, 2012 it says: *"Atheism is the biggest religion in the world and those who have devoted their lives to this deceit are lost for eternity."* There is even a special prayer (crusade prayer 76) with which Atheists can be released from the curse of their doubts. Thanks to this prayer, the barrier is broken which threatens to irrevocably separate them from God. MDM also speaks of Atheists who pretend to be religious; they carefully hide their disbelief from the outside world in order to impose their scandalous laws on the world. (11/11/2012) The message of January 28, 2013 indicates how the Atheists want to impose their own views through these kinds of laws: *"The growth of Atheism means that the mere mention of God, or the laws directed by Him, causes outrage. It has become, as if it were, a blasphemy to mention the role of God in your lives. Soon, they will pass a law, which will outlaw the meaning of blasphemy, in order to stamp out any public allegiance to God."* That of October 27, 2012 indicates that by introducing a new world religion they want to wipe out Christianity for good, but God – who is no silent watchmaker – will not let go:

> «« My dearly beloved daughter, there is a plan to commence a surge of global preaching. This preaching will not be of God. Instead, it will preach a lie, which will state, that God does not, and cannot, exist. They will say, using human reasoning and scientific evaluation, that God is just a figment of man's imagination.
>
> This preaching is no accident, for it is a well-planned and coordinated campaign plotted by these Atheists whose allegiance is to the evil one. Their hearts, minds and souls have been stolen by Satan, who uses their pride of human intellect to arrogantly proclaim lies to block the Truth.
>
> This is a plan to turn the hearts of people everywhere to stone, just as their own hearts are cold and unloving. Then there will be an announcement that a new substitute religion will be introduced into law. The one world religion will pay homage to the beast, because it will be by the hand of slaves to the king of darkness that this atrocity will come about. The Atheists who will mastermind this plan are devout followers of Satan. (…) Many do not know the seriousness of their actions. Many, however, do know exactly what they are doing, for they are liars. They do believe in God, for they have chosen His nemesis, the Devil, as their god by their own free choice. All they want is to steal souls. »»

Lucifer and his demonic armies strive subtly but persistently to keep souls from following the path indicated by the Father and the Son and enlightened by the Spirit. They use all their charms and seduction to loosen humanity from God, to deny God and curse God. A cursing Atheist might should not exist, but it does happen. It culminates in the worst blasphemy, and that is to give the worship that only God deserves to creatures or to Lucifer himself. That explains why Satanism is on the rise at this very moment, now that we are standing at the gates of the Reign of Peace. He seems to have free rein. But his days are numbered, and he knows it all too well.

Have you noticed how people are tired of combat? They let it happen in a startling way. Today, Christianity is slumbering, has an ashen-gray mentality. The shepherdess of La Salette (1846) says it succinctly, with a message of the Most Blessed Virgin meant for our time: *"The priests have become cesspools of impurity. (...) Vengeance is at their door, for there is no one left to beg for mercy and forgiveness for the people. There are no more generous souls; there is no one left worthy of offering a stainless Sacrifice to the Eternal for the sake of the world."* Unfortunately, this attitude is by no means a Catholic matter. It seems as if the bread of the Good News has been absorbed and digested and has given nourishment, but now, stripped of all its strength and vitality, is being poured out as stool over our church towers! God looks around, but there is no man among us to make up the hedge! Let us take comfort in the following quote: *"Fortunately there are still three thousand who have not bent the knee before Baal and whose mouth has kissed him! Yes, in our places there are still true worshipers of God and the Lord Jesus; and let us remind ourselves of how a mere few could have spared the city of Sodom!"*

33.143 – The Ideal of the Atheists: a 'New Earth'

Ideal? Ideal, what do we think of? Of the Greek philosopher Plato. The world would derive its expression from a higher world of ideals in a continuous effort of imitation. And since, according to Plato, the sensible world is made of imperfect material, this striving leads to an approximate and less valuable world of appearances when compared to the perfect world of ideals. This schizophrenic approach has played the tune in modern politics. According to the Platonian worldview, we live in a makeable world where everything can be improved upon, even the work of God. Our world, as an imperfect representation of the truth, would hardly deserve our respect.

In his book "The Laws" Plato transposed this idea of the perfect world of forms into the world of political ideas. In "The Republic", which should be read together with the other, he shows that a discrepancy exists between the ideal world of political ideas, such as our human rights bill, and the practice of law and law enforcement, which however can be abridged by means of the 'noble lie' that the French call 'raison d'Etat' (motive of the State). This is permissible because the 'real' world in the Platonic system is the world of ideals and the world in which we live is ersatz, which of course is an inversion of values. The discrepancy between the language of both books is so great that the reader has difficulty to accept that they have both been written by the same author.

Novus Ordo Seclorum is a quote on the 1-dollar bill that points to that ideal world to be fashioned by us, separate from God, and is from Virgil's fourth pastoral. It points at a powerful cycle of time being born again, …that a mighty order of ages is born anew. Both the prophetic Virgil and Saturnian kingdoms now return. Now a new human race is let down from the lofty heavens. *"Favor, chaste Lucina , the boy soon to be born in whom the iron age shall come to an end, and the golden one shall arise again in the whole earth."* Virgil's Fourth Eclogue continues: *"...and with his father's worth reign o'er a world at peace. Whatso tracks remain of our old wickedness, once done away, shall free*

the earth from never-ceasing fear. He shall receive the life of gods, and see heroes with gods commingling, and himself be seen of them."

The nostalgia for the lost paradise, looking for a golden age where peace reigns, is of all times and cultures, but it has never lived as strongly as today. That longing, often unconsciously, also provides an occasion for the great seducer to paint an enchanting mirage. That trick has been used in all times. Under the noble motive, the most terrible things have been done, such as the noble rights of the mother to deprive the little human the right to live. Beware of the noble motive!

33.144 – About semi-Atheists, the God haters

A widely acclaimed work in English literature is John Milton's epic poem "Paradise Lost", first published in 1667. Milton's interminable poem is fashioned after Virgil's Aeneid and concerns the Biblical story of the Fall of Man: the temptation of Adam and Eve by the fallen angel Satan and their expulsion from the earthly paradise. Milton's purpose, stated in the first book, is to *"justify the ways of God to men"*, but it is just meant in reverse order: to justify the ways of men to God, but that, of course, the essentially Atheistic Milton was too afraid to say at the time. In his "De doctrina christiana", first published in 1823, he argues for a creation ex-Deo, i.e. without God. In Paradise Lost he also denigrates several times the Son (Jesus Christ), who is despised by the exalted Lucifer. And there is no rebuttal from it, for example by the Archangel Michael, who reproves Satan. He rejects not only the Son but also his followers. Of church leaders he writes in his introduction "Of Reformation in England": *"They are but a tyrannical crew and a corporation of impostors that have blinded and abused the world so long under that Name (of God)."* The rebellious spirit of Milton shows off his distorted view of the gift of free will, described in his first book (lines 221-70): *"The mind is its own place, and in itself can make a heaven of hell, a hell of heaven. (…) Here we may reign secure, and in my choice to reign is worth ambition though in Hell: Better to reign in Hell, than serve in Heaven!"* Here he rephrased the battle cry of Lucifer: NON SERVIAM.

> Atheism is the expulsion of God from every aspect of human life. The great victory of the enemies of God does not lie in suppressing our lives or restricting our physical liberties, but rather in removing the idea of God from our minds and hearts. All human reasoning and philosophical, historical, and political speculation in which God does not hold the first place is false and illusory. Jacques-Bénigne Bossuet says: "Toutes nos pensées qui n'ont pas Dieu pour objet sont du domaine de la mort" (All of our thoughts that have not God for their object belong to the domain of death.)
>
> Dr. Roberto De Mattei in "The Judgement of God in History"
> 21 May 2020 at the online Rome Life Forum

Percy Bysshe Shelley (1792-1822) was the husband of Mary, known for her novel of "Frankenstein" that was modelled after Paradise Lost, and essentially represents a blasphemous piece of literature. She was infected with the family virus. Indeed, her father William Godwin is called the first modern champion of anarchy. Mary Shelley (1797-1851) started to write Frankenstein when she was only 18 years old. She also edited and promoted the works of her husband, who died young. We find here a good company of God haters. In his "Defence of Poetry" Percy refers to Paradise Lost, where he depicts God as a pure sadist:

> «« Nothing can exceed the energy and magnificence of the character of Satan as expressed in Paradise Lost. It is a mistake to suppose that he could ever have been

> intended for the popular personification of evil. (…) Milton's Devil as a moral being is far superior to his God, as One who perseveres in some purpose which he has conceived to be excellent in spite of adversity and torture, [in contrast] to One [God] who in the cold security of undoubted triumph inflicts the most horrible revenge upon his enemy [Satan], not from any mistaken notion of inducing him to repent of a perseverance in enmity, but with the alleged design of exasperating him to deserve new torments. »»

There is a series of the American media giant Netflix, called "Lucifer". And just as in Lost Paradise, Lucifer is portrayed as charming, charismatic and devilishly handsome. He is described as the son of God and complains about God as a tyrant: *"You cruel, manipulative! Was this all part of your plan? It's all just a game to You, isn't it? Doesn't matter whether you're a sinner! Doesn't matter whether you're a saint! Nobody can win, so what's the point?"* Lucifer conti nues: *"Do you think I'm the devil because I'm inherently evil or simply because dear ol'Dad decided I was? Is this a classic case of labeling? What do you think?"*

Percy Shelley, the rebellious (1792-1822)

In Paradise Lost, but also in Frankenstein, subtitled "The Modern Prometheus", the theme is addressed of a cruel, capricious God. Prometheus points to the mythical figure who trumped the creator god by stealing fire that made man an intelligent creature, much to the dismay of the creator god. A similar argument is given in another essay of Percy Shelley: "On the Devil, and Devils", in which he defends Satan, an argument wich recurrs in his preface of "Prometheus Unbound". Shelley found in Milton's Satan a noble characterization of the great benefactor of the oppressed, fighting against God, the omnipotent monarch, like his own Prometheus, who was fighting against the creator-god.

We now come to an important point in our discussion. I want to emphasize that these types of people are semi-Atheists; they are actually nihilists. Nihilism is actually a form of Atheism. Percy Shelley calls himself an Atheist in his pamphlet on the necessity of Atheism. He does not deny, says that there is no other way, that God and his creation are coexistent, so no God without creation. So the existence of a creator god is not denied, but the Biblical God is swept under the carpet, fought and cursed (in Hebrew, not wanting to kneel indicates cursing - Job 1:5). Marxism is an Atheist philosophy, but Marx himself was a passionate Satanist. As already noted, he had decided in his early years to sell his soul to Satan, but of course he did not announce it from the roof because we can believe everything except in the existence of the devil himself. Typically, many Atheists hate Christians. How can one hate what one doesn't believe in? This is only possible if disbelief actually represents a rejection. There are real Atheists and agnostics, no doubt, but I have the dark feeling that many find it a comfortable excuse for their rebellious and ultra-opportunistic way of life in an ever-hardening point of view, for a path that deviates from God will move further and further away from God.

How can someone be a Satanist and an Atheist at the same time? One can be a Satanist without ever having dealt with Satan like Marx did. Crux of the matter is, that it's not about a belief in Satan, or even in God, but it's a way of thinking and an attitude to life on a path that increasingly identifies with the character of the overthrower, driven by the four vectors of anger, hatred, jealousy and fear, in a process that eventually leads to a frenzy against his fellow man but especially against the Biblical God, and at the end

demonic possession - sometimes without the victim even realizing it. If not possessed in the classic term of the word, it is always accompanied by an extreme susceptibility to demonic control. Since the heart has deliberately closed itself to any kind of love, there is no cure for this condition, for it comes from 'wanting' to be evil. Compassion has been banished, the fellow man is seen in the words of Ann Barnhardt as a three-dimensional cartoon character, not as someone of flesh and blood.

Percy Shelley was radical in his poetry as well as in his social viewpoints. He has not garnered fame in his lifetime, but recognition has steadily increased after his death. Although he produced a stream of poetry and prose during his lifetime, most publishers and newspapers refused his work for fear of being arrested on charges of blasphemy and sedition. Shelley's ideas about economics and morality were a precursor to the social studies of Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels. An excellent article by Kenneth Neill Cameron on The Wordsworth Circle (Vol. 10: 2, 1979) entitled "Shelley and Marx" has been published on Shelley's influence on Marx. Shelley's blasphemous conviction is reflected in his "Hymn of Apollo" with the verse: *"I am the eye with which the Universe Beholds itself, and knows it is divine"* Here divine means something different from what Christians understand by it. This verse has received much praise, but it is highly questionable whether it deserves that praise. Shelley was expelled from Oxford University, when only nineteen years old, after a pamphlet written by him and his friend had been spread widely on campus proclaiming the need for Atheism. From his point of view, Atheism is not just a comfortable view, it is the justification of the mind against the so-called naive faith. Shelley was the driving force behind a close-knit group of radicals including Mary's father William Godwin. Godwin had a profound influence on Shelley, who read his "Political Justice" many times, a work that is prominent as an anarchist and libertine document.

Frankenstein is the story of a young scientist who creates a grotesque, intelligent being in a scientific experiment. With the creature Mary refers to the first man in the Garden of Eden, as is demonstrated in the scandalous epigraph on the opening page: *"Did I request thee, Maker, from my clay to mould me man? Did I solicit thee from darkness to promote me?"* Mary's original novel does not ascribe an actual name to the monster. Speaking to his creator, Victor Frankenstein, the monster says: *"I am thy creature: I ought to be thy Adam, but I am rather the fallen angel whom thou drivest from joy for no misdeed."* This refers to Lucifer in Paradise Lost. John Milton frequently refers to God as 'the Victor', and Mary depicts Victor as playing God by creating life. Remarkably, in his youth Percy Shelley's nom-de-plume was Victor. As concerns the name Frankenstein, there are a number of precedents, though Mary said she got the name in a dream. As told by Mary, Frankenstein builds his creature in the attic (the Heaven) of his boarding house. However, the creator is disgusted by his creation and flees from it in horror. Frightened, and unaware of his own identity, the monster wanders through the wilderness. He finds solace beside a remote cottage inhabited by a family of friendly peasants. However, when other members of the family return in the cottage, they are frightened of him and drive him away. On his subsequent wanderings, the creature is shunned by everyone. He then happens to find Frankenstein's journal, and after reading it, he swears revenge on his creator for leaving him alone in a world that hates him. From my perspective the story is built on the Darwinian idea that God's creation was imperfect and that, if there was a creator He ought to be hated for that. It is the story of the insurrection of Man against God, it is the angry fist raised against God. And who was the first to raise his fist? Lucifer!

In a thesis presented at the University of Oslo in 2017, Ann M.N. Lande gives a "Reading of Paradise Lost through the eyes of Mary Shelley". She says:

«« Frankenstein relates that the Creature's countenance bespoke *"bitter anguish, combined with disdain and malignity"*, calls him a devil, a vile insect, and shouts at him to leave, admitting that he knows that the monster is the murderer [of his little brother William, an image of Abel]. The monster expects this reception because he receives it by men wherever he goes. (…) The creature has become [in the eyes of Victor] a murderer, and no matter the circumstances, killing a child is gruesome. As such it is only natural to feel some resentment towards the monster, but reading Victor Frankenstein's reaction and behaviour towards his own creation makes it hard to dislike anyone else than Frankenstein [who represents God]. He is proud, spiteful, miserable and shows no signs of regret for [having created] the monster; rather he feels wronged by his creature and takes no responsibility for what has transpired. (…) Shelley's Frankenstein is not a likeable character, and maybe he is not supposed to be either. Now, let's remember the link again and ask ourselves: What does Frankenstein's mistreatment of his creation say about Milton's God? Newlyn suggests that in comparison to Milton's God, Frankenstein is an irresponsible creator and his infractions are worse. Still, the incidents where Frankenstein mistreats his monster also reflect badly on Milton's God by implication. Thus, Frankenstein's actions as a creator reflect badly on God and his treatment of Satan, seeing as we read Frankenstein as a response to Paradise Lost. (…) Butler says that the creature's narrative is the heart of the story, and Joyce Carol Oates agrees that most readers identify with the creature. The creature's narrative starts on the night of the experiment when he is brought to life, and Newlyn suggests that this point of view renders Frankenstein *"a confused, partly unsympathetic, and wholly tyrannical God"*. Shelley sees Milton's God as a creator who does not care about his creations so long as they obey his rules. If they do not, like Satan did, they will be punished, just as the Creature is by simply being 'alive'. »»

33.145 – Nietzsche, Heidegger en Sartre

Friedrich Nietzsche had a prophetic insight. He underlined that the Christian belief system was the moral foundation of the Western world, and that the destruction of it as a result of rationalistic thinking, which he called the death of God, would naturally give rise to nihilism or a lack of real values. He was concerned about the negative effects of Atheism on our society. Nietzsche's ever-growing resistance to Christianity is typical. This was accompanied by increasing mental weakness, neurotic problems and, later in life, total insanity, as a result of a slow-developing brain tumor, as is now recognized by Nietzsche experts. Nietzsche's Übermensch was, after all, a transcendent greatness, a surrogate god. His writings also betray a strong desire for ecstasy, which we may see as a form of occult possession promoted by drug use. The constant intoxication he was in also explains his initial enthusiasm for Wagner's unworldly music dramas, although he opposed the ascetic tendencies in his later works.

In 2019 Maatkamp Publishers published a translation of Professor Richard Weikart's book: "The Death of Humanity and the Case for Life". In the chapter on existentialism and postmodernism, the nihilistic thinking of Friedrich Nietzsche (1844-1900) and Martin Heidegger (1889-1976) is exhibited, as well as of Jean-Paul Sartre (1905-1980). Their abject philosophies are now commonplace, continuing the blasphemous thinking of a John Milton, and Mary Shelley-Godwin and companions. We can rightly call this human- and god-hating attitude Satanic according to the definition just described (the gaps in the text are not shown, nor are there the original literature references). The English here is a translation back from the Dutch:

«« When Nietzsche sounded the death knell for God, he also announced the end of the Christian image of man. He despised the Christian belief that people have a

soul and called on his contemporaries to *"remain true to the earth and not to believe those who speak of the hope of another world!"* Despite his contradictory views on science in general and Darwin's theory of natural selection in particular, he believed in the animal lineage of man. That meant that humans were not creatures specially created in God's image. Rather, we still carry the stamp of our animal ancestors. Nietzsche explained: *"You have traveled the way from worm to man, and much in you is still worm. You were once a monkey and even now man is still more monkey than other [real] monkeys."* According to Nietzsche, Darwin proved that humans are only *"natural beings"* who did not reach their current level by treating others as equals but by using the principle of the *"right of the fittest".* If people are biologically unequal, Nietzsche reasoned, some people should be more valuable than others.

Nietzsche not only insisted that some superior beings [called the Übermensch elsewhere] be more valuable than the mob, but he even approved slavery and other forms of oppression. Nietzsche had nothing but contempt for sentimental world improvers who preached human equivalence and sought the abolition of slavery. Nietzschean aristocrats were to enjoy their potential to exploit others. He explained: *"The essential feature of a good and healthy aristocracy, however, is that it accepts in good conscience the sacrifice of countless people, who must be reduced in numbers for the benefit of the aristocracy itself and reduced to incomplete people, to slaves, to instruments."*

Nietzsche, with great contempt, rejected the Christian faith with its emphasis on love, mercy and humility. He strongly condemned *"her ridiculous slave ideals or even herd-animal ideals".* He rejected Christians as sickly weaklings who want to impose their life-rejecting and decadent principles on everyone else. *"Extortion or exploitation is simply what life is, what it means to live. So there is no point in moralizing about that. It is an expression of the will to power, which is after all the will to life."*

In "The Genealogy of Morals," Nietzsche rejected all morals: *"Speaking of right and wrong per se is completely pointless."* While claiming that he rejected morality as ridiculous, he often reversed morality, calling good evil and evil good. *"Compassion maintains what is ripe for destruction and is benevolent to outcasts and convicts."*

Nietzsche did not sacrifice only a small part of humanity to death and destruction. In his view, the vast majority of humanity was worthless. He confirmed this in "The Genealogy of Morals" in which he wrote: *"Sacrificing the majority of humanity in favor of [the creation of] a single stronger human race could certainly be called progress."* At the time, he also wrote: *"The vast majority of people have no right to exist; it is the calamity of the higher men."* In his view, the great mass of humanity was nothing more than waste, ripe for the rubbish dump.

In "The Will to Power" Nietzsche wrote that in future it would be important *"to gain that tremendous energy of greatness in order to shape the man of the future through breeding and, on the other hand, the annihilation of millions of failures, and not to perish of the suffering one creates, though nothing like it has ever existed!"* Nietzsche was even more evident in "Twilight of the Idols" in which he defined the idealized freedom as the ability to destroy others.

In accordance with his ideas of 'life for the few of the aristocracy' and 'death to the masses', Nietzsche glorified suicide and infanticide as noble acts. In "Thus Spoke Zarathustra", he encouraged his readers to commit suicide at a time of their choosing rather than die when visited by death itself. He complained that there are far too many people attached to life for too long and saw it as *"a wrong decision",* and he advised doctors to discourage the sick from continuing to live. The Nietzschean physician's new responsibility *"requires him to oppress and override*

degenerating life in the most inconsiderate way – for instance in relation to the right to procreation, the right to be born, the right to live."

By denying human equality and human rights, and by his underestimation, even the denigration of the lives of the vast majority of humanity, Nietzsche's philosophy is in reality a loveless, desperate philosophy of death, cruelty and oppression. »»

Zarathustra or Zoroaster was the founder of the oldest practiced religion in the world today, called Zoroasterianism, which has incorporated many elements derived from the later world religions. Zoroaster has the function of the Biblical Moses who is looked down upon with his 'petty' Ten Commandments. We may say that he is the Moses of paganism. In Zoroasterianism both good and evil are created by God. Evil as well as good are to be construed as 'good'. The Christian understanding of 'sin' is outmoded. It is purely a matter of preference. In Zoroasterianism there is something to be found for everyone. At last, in Zarathustra we have found a guy who clearly understands morality!, so Nietzsche thought.

Quite a few German soldiers carried the book "Thus Spoke Zarathustra" when they lost their lives as cannon fodder, a book given to them by the army. The Indian guru Bhagwan, who caused a furore here in the West in the 1970s, was full of praise for this terrible book and has written two lengthy reviews on it. In an excellent article on Nietzsche by Claudia Pierpont in The New Yorker, the opening sentences read: [317)]

«« In the fall of 1888, Friedrich Nietzsche proudly informed an admirer that he had completed *"a ruthless attack on the crucified Christ."* Long experience as both a soldier and a psychologist had taught him, he said, to bring the heavy guns of argument into action. *"I swear to you",* he added: *"we shall have the whole world in convulsions. I am a fate [in doing this]."* The frail author of this dire prediction collapsed in a Turin street just a few weeks later, after throwing his arms around a carriage horse to prevent the poor beast from being whipped. He was carried back to his hotel, where he began to shout and sing senselessly; he did not recover his reason again. Of the eleven books that Nietzsche had published before this abrupt end, at the age of forty-four, hardly more than 500 copies had been sold in all. He lived on for more than a decade, empty-eyed and silent, entirely unaware of the readership that was beginning to spread like fire along the gunpowder trail he had laid from book to book. When the world convulsions began, in 1914, his works were often credited for what one English bookseller termed the *"Euro-Nietzschean War"*, referring both to the war's outbreak and to the stunning brutality with which it was being fought. The Austrian Archduke had been assassinated by young Serbian militants spouting Nietzschean slogans in support of their national will to power. Copies of Thus Spoke Zarathustra, Nietzsche's most famous book, had been distributed to German troops in a durable military edition; carried in rucksacks all along the killing fields; it lay beside the Bible it had been meant to replace. »»

Two of Nietzsche's best-known followers illustrate the descent into inhumanity: Heidegger and his follower Sartre are reviewed in the same chapter of Weikart's book:

«« Heidegger was one of the most influential philosophers of the twentieth century, and was an enthusiastic supporter of Hitler, especially in the early years of his regime. Sartre took existentialism in a different political direction: absolutely anti-Nazi and anti-fascist. But as he attacked the world view of the Nazis and Hitler's atrocities, he became a defender of Stalin, Mao and other

317) "After God", by Claudia Pierpont, March 31/April 8 2002 # The New Yorker.

communist leaders, who collectively killed even more people than the number killed under Hitler's rule.

In 1937, Heidegger wrote that we have no access to *"objective, universally binding knowledge or strength".* As the philosopher Yvonne Sherratt said of Heidegger's point of view: *"Morality, human rights, pity, those were outdated ideas. They must be banned from philosophy so that Germany is not weakened."*

Sartre showed the same kind of insensitivity as Heidegger to the victims of his political allies, the communists. Ironically, his radical political beliefs proved that he was committed to the oppressed and underprivileged, but only those who were oppressed by the 'bourgeois' Western societies, especially the United States. He openly criticized the United States and its allies for the Vietnam War for being convinced that they committed genocide there. But he joined the French Communist Party in 1952 when Stalin was still in power in the Soviet Union. He knew about Stalin's terror, but instead of condemning it, he was actually happy about it and claimed that the end justifies the means. He did indicate that he had doubts about Mao's cultural revolution because he didn't understand it, but added, *"Not that I'm even against it at all."* The countless victims of communism could not count on his sympathy.

It is generally known that Sartre found life absurd. This is evident from both his philosophical and literary works. For him, *"existentialism was no more than an attempt to accept all the consequences of a coherent Atheist point of view."* Without God, there is no guiding principle or anything that gives meaning to life, so we just have to face reality and learn to live without a transcendent purpose. Sartre found that very liberating because it offered a great opportunity to create our own goal in an ultimately aimless world. He asked the important question: *"Everyone has to create his own meaning, but if we ourselves are meaningless how can we create meaning?"*

Sartre debited: *"Dostojevski once wrote that if God does not exist everything is permissible. This is the starting point for existentialism. Everything is indeed permissible if God does not exist, and as a result, man feels lost because he cannot find anything in or outside himself on which to rely."* Sartre also wrote: *"I hate that it is the way it is, but if we have pushed aside God the Father there must be someone who invents our values. You have to take things as they are. Moreover, when we say that we invent values, it means nothing more than this: life is a priori meaningless."* »»

It is because of this perverse thinking, which strips man of his uniqueness and dignity, that I rather prefer to use the term nihilism instead of existentialism, because then it also embraces the wicked thinking of such depraved men as John Milton and cohorts. My article tries to give a deeper insight into the developments that have led to our current society with excrescences such as abortion, genetic manipulation (whereby one does not hesitate to introduce a lizard gene into the human genome), the LGBT movement, early sexualization, transgenderism, the euthanasia movement, the wish to create a super-robot that surpasses humans, the pharmaceutical complex, and finally the ongoing dictatorial trend to control and censor everything in a degradation that transforms people into automata,[318)] and all this is geared towards the 'admirable' New World Order.

318) The encroaching appropriation of our rights and freedoms evolves in small steps until someone, almost imperceptibly, is led to surrender his soul to the realm of Satan, thereby completely rejecting Christ's unique sacrifice.

Terrible chastisements will strike the earth because of the wicked work, which these atheist groups intend to force upon us

• Book of Truth, Oct. 27th 2012

My dearly beloved daughter, there is a plan to commence a surge of global preaching. This preaching will not be of God. Instead, it will preach a lie, which will state, that God does not, and cannot, exist. They will say, using human reasoning and scientific evaluation, that God is just a figment of man's imagination.

This preaching is no accident, for it is a well-planned and coordinated campaign plotted by these atheists whose allegiance is to the evil one. Their hearts, minds and souls have been stolen by Satan, who uses their pride of human intellect to arrogantly proclaim lies to block the Truth. This is a plan to turn the hearts of people everywhere to stone, just as their own hearts are cold and unloving.

Then there will be an announcement that a new substitute religion will be introduced into law. The one world religion will pay homage to the beast, because it will be by the hand of slaves to the king of darkness that this atrocity will come about.

The atheists who will mastermind this plan are devout followers of Satan. Make no mistake – they idolise the beast and think nothing of the hurt and torment which their actions will bring about. Their mission is to abolish allegiance to the one True God, the God who loves every one of the children He created. They will reject the efforts now being made from Heaven to save humanity from final destruction. **It will be by their hand that lightning, earthquakes and tsunamis will strike the earth**.

They will be stopped. They will suffer terribly and their agonising end has been foretold. The Battle of Armageddon will be fierce, for God will no longer sit back and allow such infestation. Terrible chastisements, of such magnitude, will wipe out those heathen who reject the Word of God. Prayer to God seeking Mercy is the only way to mitigate such chastisements.

Your prayers, begging for the forgiveness of their sins, is the only way in which such souls can be saved.

My daughter, much destruction will result because of the wicked work, which these atheists groups intend to force upon the earth.

Many do not know the seriousness of their actions. Many, however, do know exactly what they are doing, for they are liars. They do believe in God, for they have chosen his nemesis, the devil, as their god by their own free choice. All they want is to steal souls. God my Father will, by his Power, intervene not merely to punish them, but to salvage souls before they are stolen from Him.

Your Jesus

†

References to Armageddon are not limited to Revelation 16:16, but can also be found elsewhere. For instance, in the Old Testament prophecies they are to be found in Ezekiel, Joel, and Zechariah, which allude to a final battle involving all the nations of the world.

APPENDIX 25

He who created the Universe, did it Perfectly

That Charles Darwin in some cases took nature as cruel[319)] and not fitting for a creator god is not entirely without foundation, but it was different in the beginning of creation, because then it was good. How to explain the discrepancy?

Creation, the entire universe, happens to be of one family and made of the same fabric. If we do good for our environment we do good for ourselves and if we do evil it will retaliate, at least and to some extent engage in imitation. I believe that we, who have been created at the head of Creation, that what we do to our own kind leaves an impact elsewhere and affects the whole fabric. This could explain the degradation of nature as a reflection of the degradation of the human condition. It would be a sad affair if the fault lies with us humans, if we were the ones primarily responsible. Nature is often cruel and hostile, a fact that we have become so accustomed to that it seems inevitable and logical. Nature is even cruel to its own kind; to name just an example: amongst mallard ducks brute assault is such normal mating behaviour that an unguarded female may be gang-raped so persistently that she drowns. Professor George Williams appears to have said that nature is clearly and grossly immoral. Already in 1893 Thomas Huxley, at a lecture at Oxford University, suggested that brought before the tribunal of ethics, the cosmos might well stand condemned. In fact, Huxley is suing God here in the tradition of the Frankenstein monster cursing his Creator with a clenched fist. We find a much better approach by Laurens van der Post who wrote in the context of human history that for him one of the most meaningful and moving manifestations of the ultimate in religion is tied to the observance that *"God, the Creator, has surrendered some of his authority in the very act of creation, and had set Himself not above, but freely subject to his own ordinances"*.[320)]

It should be noted that in the Millennial Reign nature too will be completely restored, as depicted by the Prophet Isaiah (Is. 11:6-10):

> «« The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb and the leopard shall lie down with the young goat; the calf and the young lion and the fatling together, and a little child shall lead them. The cow and the bear shall graze, their young ones shall lie down together, and the lion shall eat straw like the ox. The nursing child shall play by the cobra's hole, and the weaned child shall put his hand in the viper's den. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain, for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord as the waters cover the sea. And in that day there shall be a Root of Jesse (Jesus the Messiah), who shall stand as a banner to the people, for his resting place shall be glorious. »»

319) Darwin's example of the ichneumonidæ, in his letter to Asa Gray, who feed themselves inside the caterpillar's body, I do not find witness to the 'cruelty' of God's creation any more than a tapeworm that feeds into a human's gut.

320) "Jung and the Story of our Time" by Laurens van der Post - Pantheon Books # 1975.

APPENDIX 26

Darwin is actually right after all…

Michaël Dekee, June 5th 2018 on Katholiekforum.net

What many do not know is that in his book "On the Origin of Species," Darwin has devoted several chapters to potential errors and elements that could shake his theory. At some point (in ch.V), Darwin even suggests the existence of a Creator who would direct evolution, because certain organs such as the eye are so complex that it takes more than just 'natural selection' to achieve such complexity. It is little known that Darwin was once a Christian and then became an agnostic, not an Atheist. Darwin writes in Chapter X about the problem of the missing fossil evidence:

> «« In the sixth chapter I enumerated the chief objections which might be justly urged against the views maintained in this volume. Most of them have now been discussed. One, namely, the distinctness of specific forms and their not being blended together by innumerable transitional links, is a very obvious difficulty. I assigned reasons why such links do not commonly occur at the present day under the circumstances apparently most favourable for their presence, namely, on an extensive and continuous area with graduated in between physical conditions.
>
> I endeavoured to show, that the life of each species depends in a more important manner on the presence of other already defined organic forms, than on climate, and therefore that the essentially governing conditions of life do not gradually and almost imperceptibly merge into one another, as with gradations of heat and humidity. I also tried to demonstrate that intermediate species, while numerically much smaller than the species they connect, would generally be oppressed in the struggle for existence and eradicated during the supposed evolution of ongoing modifications and improvements. The main reason, however, why intermediate species are not found everywhere in nature today, lies in the operation of the theoretical natural selection, which continuously would produce new varieties destined to occupy the places of their extinct parent varieties. But precisely because, according to the fossil record, the extinction of species has occurred on such an awe-inspiring scale, the number of intermediate varieties that should have existed on earth in previous times would indeed be unspeakably large. Why then is not every geological formation and every stratum full of such intermediate links? Those are almost totally absent. Geology assuredly does not reveal any such finely graduated organic chain; and this, perhaps, is the most obvious and most serious objection that can be urged against my theory.
>
> The explanation lies, as I believe, in the extreme imperfection of the geological archive. By the theory of natural selection all living species have been connected with the parent-species of each genus, by differences not greater than we see between the natural and domestic varieties of the same species at the present day [like donkeys and horses]. And these parent-species, now generally extinct, have in their turn been similarly connected with more ancient forms, so the theory goes; and so on backwards, always converging to the common ancestor of each great class. By this process, the number of intermediate and transitional forms between all living and extinct species would have been unimaginably large, and should certainly, if that doctrine is correct, have dwelt on this earth. »»

Darwin predicted that these transitional links would be found in the [then] near future. The problem is that they have still not been found to this day. More than a thousand

fossils are known for bats, but not a single ancestor. The same is true for many other animal groups: trilobites, dinosaurs, pterosaurs, sea predators (pinnipeds), etc, etc... Stepwise evolution schemes are drawn, but no possible 'ancestor' is known between those steps. And in the groups where they have found ancestors, there are many insurmountable theoretical problems with those so-called 'ancestors'.

The Proof of God's Existence

God's existence can only be demonstrated indirectly because God is spirit and, for instance, cannot be observed under a microscope. No one has ever seen a living dinosaur; so, the proof of the existence of the dinosaurs is also indirect, because it is demonstrated through the bones being discovered. That circumstantial evidence is so strong that no one needs to doubt that dinosaurs as living creatures have really existed. The circumstantial evidence for God is so strong – you just have to look at the wonderful life in all its forms – that science does not need to doubt that God exists ...and yet most scientists in our year 2020 deny that God exists, not minding about the responsibility they bear towards their listeners who have put their trust in them. In line with that heavy responsibility, they face a severe divine punishment unless they turn to God and ask for his forgiveness.

Darwin writes:

> «« The abrupt manner in which whole groups of species suddenly appear in certain formations, has been urged by several palaeontologists – for instance, by Agassiz, Pictet, and by no one more insistent than Professor Sedgwick – as a fatal objection to the belief in the transmutation of species. If numerous species, belonging to the same genera or families, have really started into life on earth at once [at particular points in our long prehistory], the fact would be truly fatal to the theory of gradual evolution through natural selectiontie.
>
> (…) The case most frequently insisted on by palaeontologists of the apparently sudden appearance of a whole group of species, is that of the bony or teleostean fishes, low down in the Chalk period. This group includes the large majority of existing species. (…) Recently Professor Pictet has proven that they existed even a little earlier, and some paleontologists believe that certain much older fish, which are still imperfectly known to date, were really bony fish. Assuming, however, as Agassiz believes, that the bony fish appeared at the commencement of the chalk formation, the fact would have been highly remarkable; but it would not have formed an insuperable difficulty for my theory, unless it could likewise have been shown that at the same period the species were suddenly and simultaneously developed in other quarters of the world. »»

And then it becomes even more telling:

> «« There is another and allied difficulty, which is much more serious. I allude to the manner in which species belonging to several of the main divisions of the animal kingdom suddenly appear in the lowest known fossiliferous rocks. Most of the arguments which have convinced me that all the existing species of the same group are descended from a single progenitor, apply with equal force to the earliest known species. For instance, it cannot be doubted that all the Cambrian and Silurian trilobites are descended from some one crustacean, which must have lived long before the Silurian age, and which probably differed greatly from any known animal. Some of the most ancient Silurian animals, as the Nautilus, Lingula, etc., do not differ much from living species; and it cannot on our theory be supposed, that these old species were the progenitors of all the species belonging to the same groups which have subsequently appeared, for they are

> not in any degree intermediate in character. Moreover, if they had been the progenitors of those orders, they would almost certainly have been supplanted and extirpated long ago by her numerous and improved descendants. »»

The problem is that they still exist today, and don't show an inch difference from 'hundreds of millions of years old' fossils. And he continues:

> «« Consequently, if the theory be true, it is indisputable that before the lowest Silurian stratum was deposited long periods elapsed, as long as, or probably far longer than, the whole interval from the Silurian age to the present day; and that during these vast periods the world swarmed with living creatures. I cannot give an adequate answer to the question of why we find no remnants of those great bygone eras. »»

He can't explain it! After which Darwin's most striking remark follows:

> «« To date, therefore, this question must remain unresolved, and indeed it may be used as a powerful objection to the theory taught in this book. »»

This question is still unresolved! Even the 'ancestors' of the fossils from the "Cambrian Explosion" have not yet been found! So Darwin is proven right: his theory literally falls apart, precisely because these problems are still on the forefront after 160 years of intensive scientific research! But of course not only because of that…

Revival or Judgment

- **By publicist and speaker Jan van Barneveld (Dec. 2013)**
  Publishedd with his permission

We have been hearing for more than forty years that 'revival is coming'. At the same time, we collide almost daily with the sadness that pervades spiritual, political and social Holland. Even then, thirty years ago, such sad songs were sung. There were serious meetings and calls for deep humility, repentance and reversal. The theme was 'revival or judgment'. Now it's more specifically 'revival or Islam'. Are we headed for the 'downfall of the Netherlands'? Are there still positive signs? Or are only cautionary judgments rolling over us as precursors to the tidal wave? Are there Biblical models that point the way to salvation for our country and people? Can such a model show us the way to relief for the Netherlands?

34.146 – Hope for the Netherlands

Over a decade ago, "Profetisch Perspectief" [321)] released an article entitled "Hope for the Netherlands". That article first pointed out the responsibility due to spiritual leaders. With that, the Biblical Word fits: *"Thus saith the Lord God: See, I am against those lousy shepherds!"* That's how God sees the spiritual leaders who neglect their duty and serve their own interests rather than the flock entrusted to them. Furthermore, four points of interest are discussed that the LORD God pays more particular attention to when He brings a nation or people into judgment. In connection with our topic, we list the areas of concern:

321) A quarterly magazine from C4I (Christians for Israel) established in Nijkerk in the Netherlands.

1) How far is a people on the road to Sodom? God applied this criterion to Israel and surrounding pagan nations. Now, ten years on, we should note with sadness and concern that we have long since passed the station of Sodom. We, as believers, live like Lot in Sodom. We swim in a filthy river and breathe polluted air. Every day we need cleansing by the precious Blood of the Lord Jesus. The second criterion takes us even further from the hope for salvation.

2) It is about the level of social justice. In the Torah, the prophets and in the teachings of the Lord Jesus, and with Paul, everywhere this theme plays a role. James (1:27) sums it up as follows: *"The true and undefiled religion before God and the Father is this: to visit orphans and widows in their affliction and to keep oneself undefiled from the world."* Little remains of the great quality and quantity of our international aid. The so-called governmental austerity measures are largely passed on to the weak and are making our society more hardened.

3) It also concerns the condition of the church in a country. The Lord Jesus says of us: *"You are the salt of the earth (...) You are the light of the world."* (Mt. 5:13-16) The Body of Christ has a corruption deflecting task in society. A second, equally important task of the Christ's body of faithful, especially of the leaders in charge, is to shine God's light, to prophetically proclaim God's Word. God demonstrates his unspeakable patience and grace so that there are still bright spots, in spite of the foregoing. Does that 'faithful remnant' succeeds in dampening the breach?

4) The litmus test: Israel as a touchstone for God's blessing. Sadly, sadly, our Dutch government is currently docile and visionless, sucking behind the insidious anti-Israel policies of the 'Beast in Brussels' and the U.S. policies dangerous to Israel. Israel is currently standing with its back against the wall.

For the vast majority of our magazine's readers, there is no need to describe the fearful-terrible condition of our country. Each of us has his/her own list of things, about which we should confess guilt and from which we should repent. The above list of four areas of concern 'scored' perhaps a small 6-minus ten years ago. Nowadays, we score a fat minus.

34.147 – Putin as a 'prophet'

Striking and shameful is that even Russian President Putin sharply describes the downfall of the Evening Land. The 'Evening Land' here represents Europe, a term that refers to Oswald Spengler's controversial 1922 book: "Untergang des Abendlandes". In Sept. 2013, Putin noted at the Valdai Discussion Forum: *"We see how many Euro-Atlantic countries have in fact embarked on the path of rejecting their own roots, including those of Christian values, which are the foundation of Western civilization. (...) A policy is being pursued that equates a child-rich family with a homosexual partnership, faith in God with that in Satan."* Are there still options available? Does the Word of God give us realistic models that can help us find paths to salvation or respite? Before we mention some models, let's see what happened in the 1980s.

34.148 – In Retrospect: thirty years hence

Professor Bob Goudzwaard once wrote a booklet entitled "Compelled to Be Good". He called for an old-fashioned penitential and humbling meetings to be organized once again. These were indeed organized in 1983 in the Geerte Church in Utrecht (in he centre of the Netherlands). There was a deep sense of guilt but also much emotion. A large base from many churches agreed with the plea: "each of us shares in the guilt, Holy Father". Yet there was not much formal representation, but tears there were. Ah, also in Nineveh humiliation and revival began among the common people. (Jonah 3:5) The king followed and came down from his throne, is written. The latter did not happen in 1983. The leadership remained on their thrones. That was unfortunate. Not even when a "call to repentance" came from the Evangelical Broadcasting in 1984 (Evangelische Omroep). The Evangelical Alliance (EA) did not stay behind and proclaimed 1983 as the "Year of Evangelization" and it called 1984 as the "Year of the Renewal of the Church". Those particular EA years did not produce much, anything to write home or to Heaven about. Nevertheless, Goudzwaard remarked after the three meetings in the Geerte Church that he felt a certain catharsis (purification; cleansing) had taken place and that the Judgment had been postponed. Finally, we mention an appeal from the Brethren Circle of Preachers: "Holland wake up and live!" Rev. M.D. Geuze's brochure at the time "How do we come to humbleness?" is still relevant today. And now? Questions arise: Can the catastrophe still be averted? Can we still withhold Judgment? Is that really within the realm of possibility?

34.149 – Biblical Models

Everything in the Bible is written down to us to teach by example. *"These things have happened as examples for us."* (1 Cor. 10:6) The Apostle Paul cites these examples from the history of Israel to warn the church in Corinth. We too have been and are being warned - even by the president of Russia, Vladimir Putin.

a. Noah and the Ark

The wickedness of people in the time leading up to the Flood was great. People could only think of bad things. *"But Noah found mercy in the sight of the LORD."* (Gen. 6:5-8) This is an important piece of advice and warning for us. For in the time of the *"coming of the Son of Man"* things will be the same. (Mt. 24:38-39) That's the point to which, in our century, the world is marching on. What did Noah do? *"By faith Noah, when warned about things not yet seen, in holy fear built the Ark for the salvation of his family."* (Heb. 11:7) Noah received a sign. So, we too must pay attention to the 'signs of the times'. Noah had faith, so he did what God asked from him. Notice the words: *"for the salvation of his family"*. The stakes are high, beloved brothers and sisters: our families! And the rest of the

world? They too were given another chance. In the days when the Ark was built *"God in his patience waited one more time."* (1 Pet. 3:20) How long did God wait? The 120 years mentioned by Scripture in Genesis 6:3 are an indication of the length of God's longsuffering. How long will God show patience today with our country and its people? Let's build an ark of faith!

Another example: Through an act of faith, Rachab and her family were saved from doomed Jericho (Heb. 11:31)

This fate was spared Ninivé…

b. Nineve was spared

"The men of Nineveh believed in God and they proclaimed a fast." (Jonah 3) The king and his nobles followed. The people repented *"each one from his evil way and from the violence that clinged to his hands."* Moved, we read that in response to the repentance, God did not carry out the calamity He had threatened. This model seems to me unfeasible for our individualized society. If for instance a serious and sincere appeal were issued by our Catholic bishops, many would cry out that it is a trick of the Antichrist. If the call were to come from the PKN (Association of Protestant Churches in the Netherlands), many will mutter "those folks aren't even born again." If it comes from the charismatic circle, many will shy away from that 'spirit drive'. The highly contagious, spiritual diseases, 'long tenitus' and 'a swollen ego' have infected us too much.

By the way, there is another city that made it through at a time of judgment. That was the city of Gibeon when the Prophet Joshua was commissioned by God to conquer the land from the Canaanites. They believed the words of God to Moses and devised a ruse that saved them and the villages around. (See Josh. 9:24-27) What was the effect of the ruse? That a covenant was made with Israel. I don't know what clue is hidden for us in this history. Probably something related to our relationship with our older brother Israel.

c. The principle of a believing remnant

What I tell you now is currently the most promising model for Israel, for the church, for the cities and countries that paves the way to God's grace. It clearly begins to take shape with Elijah. Also Abraham applied this underlying principle. We will return to that in the next section. Paul worked it out for Israel and the Christian communities. Elijah complained to the LORD God: *"I alone am left."*

(1 Kings 19:10) The LORD responded: *"But I will leave 7,000 in Israel, all who have not bowed their knees to the Baal."* (1 Kings 19:18) Paul states clearly and unequivocally: *"God did not cast out his people, whom he knew beforehand."* How does Paul know this? Because God said to Elijah: *"I have left for Myself 7,000 men…"* This shows that a 'believing remnant' has been the basis for Israel's continued existence as God's people during all these centuries that are situated in between Elijah and Paul. For Paul says: *"So there has also arisen in this present age a remnant, according to the election of grace."* (Rom. 11:1-5) This is true even today. For our churches, for a nation, yes for Israel itself. How great that remnant must be to wrought salvation, only God knows. It is in his hand.

d. Cyclical revivals

The phenomenon of decline and revival in church history finds a basis in the First Covenant, in the subsequent history of the relationship between God and Israel. The starting point is found in Judges: *"And the people served the LORD all the days of Joshua and all the days of the elders who had lived long after Joshua and who had seen all the great deeds of the LORD that He had done for Israel."* Then *"there came after them a generation that knew neither the LORD nor the deeds He had performed for Israel."* (Judg. 2:7,10)

The pattern of that cycle is clear:

1) A new generation comes;
2) Apostasy follows and a joining in with pagan culture and idolatry;
3) Great hardship and oppression on a national level;
4) Everywhere an anxious and desperate cry to God;
5) God raises up a rescuer, a judge, and then comes restoration and peace.

Just look at the following sequence in the Book of Judges: Othniel (3:7-11); Ehud and Samgar (3:12-31); Deborah (4:1-5:31); Gideon (6:1-8:32); then a long line ending with: *"In those days there was no king in Israel; everyone did what was right in his own eyes."* (21:25) So it is in our day. No strong, pastoral and spiritual leadership and everyone just does whatever comes to his mind. This cycle is picked up again by Samuel, and then continues in the succession of good and bad kings in the Two Tribes Kingdom. It has been the same way throughout the two millennia of church history. Think of the Reformation, the Puritans, the First Great Revival, the Second Great Revival, the rise of Pentecostalism, etc. Unfortunately, we cannot go into this. The George Whitefield Foundation has done that and has a lot of material on the great godly men at the time of those revivals. We can learn a lot from that.

e. The salvific importance of the remnant

Abraham was the first to apply the principle of the 'believing remnant' by pleading with God for Sodom. Unfortunately, there were not even ten righteous, so that disaster struck. If only Lot had tried harder! Now, only Lot and some of his family were saved. The first Christian community in Jerusalem was a 'believing remnant' which kept Israel from being judged. Since for three years (periods) the fig tree had not produced any fruit after a promising beginning, God's patience had run out. Initially, the owner wanted to cut it down within a year already, but decided to wait, for at the beginning fruit did come. The fig tree represents Israel. The owner of the land was God; the tenant was our Lord Jesus (see Luke 13:6-9). Fruit did show up during the first gatherings of the Judeo-Christians. When further fruit failed to show up, judgment waited until the year 66, year when the Jewish-Roman War started. There were years of reprieve: forty (counted after the Crucifixion in 26) minus the first, say ten promising years.

Moses, through intercession, saved several times from the Wrath of the LORD, who wanted to destroy his people, because of the golden calf and for refusing to enter Canaan: *"Now therefore, let Me alone (...) that I may destroy them."* (Ex. 32:10) Incredible, what the Almighty asks of a human being: "Let Me alone." As if He should be accountable! Moses did not let the LORD do his thing. He pleaded for the people and as a result they were saved. Amos the prophet saw twice in a vision how the LORD was busy bringing severe judgment on the people. He prayed a simple prayer: *"O Lord GOD, forgive, I pray! How could Jacob stand firm? After all, he is small!"* (Amos 7:1-3 and 4-6) *"It will not happen",* replied the LORD.

We are expected to "*climb on the breaches and put up a wall".* God is looking for those watchmen so that He *"need not destroy the land".* (Ez.13:5, 22:20) We can do something about it. Watchmen on the walls of Jerusalem and also in the breaches and on the meager remains of the walls around the people, and that applies equally as well to our people, the Dutch, for God's compassion is universal. The lessons of the Old Testament are set before us as an example.

34.150 – Grace upon Grace

In his great mercy and patience, the LORD still gives us and our country many opportunities and models for repentance and reversal. Let us all, in our own place and within our own abilities, prayerfully stand before the LORD's Face and ask Him to touch our country one more time by the Holy Spirit. In fact, this is more than a question. It is a mandate.

The author, Drs. Jan van Barneveld (†2022), is someone from a Protestant background, who has written many articles and books on Israel. He taught several subjects in high school at the time. He also worked at Tear Fund Netherlands, which is a Christian initiative for development cooperation and humanitarian aid in third world countries. He then committed himself to The Good Samaritan. He has published regularly in various journals.

["Profetisch Perspectief", Winter 2013 – Nr. 81]

Consulted literature: "Dynamics of Spiritual Life" by Richard F. Loverlace.
"Hoe komen wij tot verootmoediging" by Ds. M. D. Geuze.
"The state of the Church" by Rev. Andrew Murray.

Hide your Light under a Bushel

clare et distincte percipere

We live in a time when people are trying to silence the Christian testimony, which is in fact a direct attack on the Great Commission of Matthew 28:19: "Go ye and teach all the nations, baptizing in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Ghost, teaching them to observe all that I have commanded you. And behold, I am with you all the days until the consummation of the world." If evangelization is permitted these days, it is a relic of ancient times at the benevolent disposal of the rulers of this age … for as long as it lasts. What is marginalized is not far from disappearing. To this we say, "Shall my praise to You, You my Saviour fade away, You the Redeemer of my guilt? That my knowledge at all time be devoted to Your service!" Let that be the song of every Christian. Amen!

35.151 – Christ's resurrection reduced to a metaphor

The spiritual father of the notion that God cannot be known is René Descartes, who set out the scientific method, known as the Cartesian method, for discovering nature. The most important principle that he maintained was that one may only accept as knowledge that which can be clearly and distinctly observed (clare et distincte percipere).[322)] This means, to take an example, that the contents of a traveller's suitcase does not exist if the suitcase has not been opened and examined by a customs officer. Up till that moment it is possible only to philosophise about its contents. And that philosophising belongs to the speculative and personal domain and not to the general scientific realm. It is clear that the suitcase cannot contain an elephant, but apart from that the possibilities are endless. Perhaps the suitcase is empty. It probably contains clothing and toilet articles, but in terms of truth such speculations are insufficient, because it could well contain

322) Descartes' rule, stating that only that which is clear and distinct to the view can be used as an underlying fact, is taken from his "Essays" (1637) in which he also explains a number of other rules in this context. The title of the introduction is: "A Discourse on the Method of Correctly Conducting One's Reason and Seeking Truth in the Sciences". This turns out to be an elaboration of a previous and unpublished work entitled: "Rules for the Direction of the Mind".

cannabis. This is a sound starting point that prevents someone from being accused on the grounds of pure suspicions alone.

René Descartes (portret Frans Hals, 1648)

It is going too far to extend this premise to our relationship with God. A successful method of the enquiry into nature need not be, and is not, a method of inquiry into religious and moral issues. God is not simply substance, but cause, 'the' cause.[323] The garments in the suitcase are not the cause of the suitcase, nor is the suitcase the cause of the garments. People may have different ideas about the Mover of all things, but that does not mean that it is unreasonable to think on such things and thus practise religion. And it is not optional. If the Biblical God did cause us, then He has the right to be served first: *"Dieu est au premier servi".* It also means that not all thoughts are equally right. There is such a thing as the historicity of the facts of revelation, which on the grounds of solid research cannot be denied, although some professors make valiant efforts to do so.

Thanks to the Cartesian method, science has been able to scale great heights, thereby obtaining an almost unlimited capacity to deal with the material world. In introducing his method, Descartes said of it himself: "*I will expose the true riches of our souls in order to make accessible to all the way according to which they can discover all knowledge required to remain alive and I will give them the means to obtain all the knowledge that lies within the human capacity*." What he actually says, and so has it been understood (though perhaps he meant something else) is: the spirit – even God – is discovered by the study of the material; indeed the spirit is an exponent of the material rather than the other way round. Know your brain and discover the Spirit! One step further and the obvious conclusion is that when the brain dies the soul disappears. In this way the essentially utter distinction between the natural and the supernatural orders is denied. Also denied is every possibility of God's miraculous intervention. Christ's resurrection is thus reduced to the level of a metaphor.

Professor van der Ploeg wrote by way of commentary on this: [324]

> «« There are (according to this) no miraculous interventions of God on earth. (…) Van Iersel wrote: "*Neither God nor Christ intervene. History and the world go their way unassisted. If the saving work of Jesus – and therein that of God – is continued, it is only there where people do this work for the salvation of others. God grants no salvation from outside, but people bring salvation to others and this we can call 'God's salvific work'.*" A formulation such as this can only be reasonably understood if we do not believe in a personal God and identify the world with Him. Otherwise it is nonsense. »»

Ziedaar de ingrediënten van het Modernisme, een wat vaag gedefinieerde stroming, die ook wel het verlichtingsdenken wordt genoemd. Deze heeft een belangrijke impuls gekregen vanuit de idealen van de Franse Revolutie.[325]

---

323) Science goes into chains of cause and effect, but these are always secondary causes.

324) "Het modernisme vroeger en nu" (Modernism Past and Present) by Prof. J.P.M. van der Ploeg O.P. (1909-2004), published in Catholica, a Catholic journal for the Netherlands and Flanders, February to April 2003 (nos. 5, 6 and 7). Catholica is published by the Stichting voor Kerk en Geloof (Foundation for Church and Faith).

35.152 – Modernism, a many-branched and accurséd tree

The school of thought that raised human understanding to the level of absolute norm above belief and religion has come to be known as Modernism. In 1871, in his "Het Modernisme een Fata morgana op Christelijk gebied" (Modernism: a mirage in the Christian realm) the then 34-year-old Abraham Kuyper[326)] used the term more than a hundred times in a lecture that lasted for almost two-and-a-half hours. That's what's called a lecture! In it he made short shrift of liberal Protestantism.[327)] As far as liberal Protestantism is concerned, the great Abraham Kuyper stated the following:

> «« You know, on the modern side one is especially fond of the honorific name of 'Protestant', and would love to make the crowd think that Modernism and Protestantism are two shoots on the same stem, simply by distinguishing past and present, as if to base the distinction on the time of coming into blossom. And yet nothing could be further from the truth. Modernism chooses as its point of departure human authority in matters of faith, against which Protestantism raises its voice in mighty protest. Contrary to this, rather than being the fruit of Protestantism, it should never dress itself up in the garb of the Reformation, because it has never known anything of the anguish of soul, of the tornness of heart, of the distress of spirit, from which a Luther cried out to his God. The Reformation sought the Salvation for the trapped heart, while Modernism merely seeks a Solution for an artful problem. That is why it knows only one reality, that of things visible, and fails to see that other sort, that much higher, that much more solid reality [beyond our senses], which even in the sinful state in which we find ourselves, causes us yet to speak of the 'unshakeable' Kingdom of God. »»

Thus he said: *"…while Modernism for me is a phenomenon that seduces like a far-off view with its tempting beauty; not born through whim or caprice but by fixed law; and yet because of all its glitter loses itself in unreal shapes."* He quotes Edmund Burke, that visionary, who announced in the English House of Commons in 1791:[328)] *"I know*

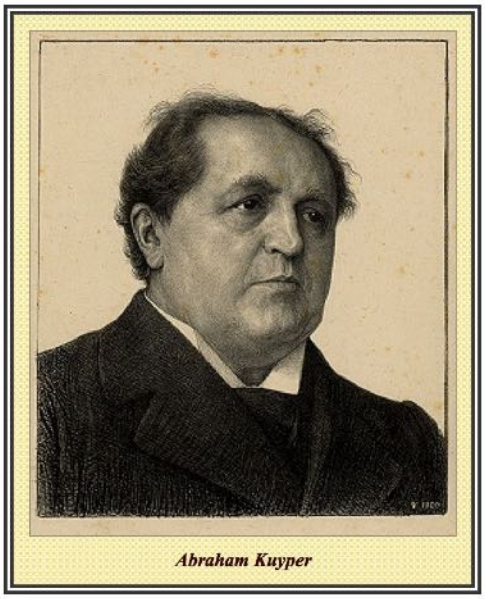
---

325) France was, indeed, the focal point of Modernism. Its best-known proponent was the priest and professor Alfred Loisy (1857-1940). In England the leading figure was the Jesuit G. Tyrell (1861-1909), who hid behind innumerable aliases. Both were excommunicated by the Roman Catholic Church. In Italy there was Ernesto Bonaiuti (1881-1946), whose journal was placed on the Index (the list of forbidden books). In the end he too was excommunicated. In Germany there was the well-known school of Tübingen, sometimes known as the Eberhardina Carolina, with figures such as F. C. Baur (1792-1860) and D. F. Strauss (1808-1873). The French ex-seminarian Ernest Renan (1823-1892) did no little damage to the faith with his eight-part popular series "Histoire des origines du christianisme". In the Netherlands – but here we need to go further back – we could call Spinoza (1632-1677) a proto-Modernist. Those are just a few leading figures, but the list is much longer – and doubtless the names of Protestant theologians are lacking, having escaped my notice.

326) Abraham Kuyper (1837-1920), Prime Minister of the Netherlands between 1901 and 1905, was an influential neo-Calvinist pastor and a journalist. He established the Reformed Churches in the Netherlands, which upon its foundation became the second largest Reformed denomination in the country behind the state-supported Dutch Reformed Church.

327) The lecture is available on www.neocalvinisme.nl

328) This quotation of Edmund Burke, according to Abraham Kuyper, was taken from a debate held in the House of Commons on 6th May 1791. The debate followed Burke's publication, six months earlier, of a famous pamphlet entitled: "Reflections on The Revolution in France". With great premonition Burke sketched the main lines of the French Revolution. That day, because of the controversy, Edmund Burke lost his one-time friend, former prime minister Fox, who was greatly excited by the French Revolution, and continued to praise it long after many other people in Britain had, in the face of its growing extremism, begun to temper their views.


Abraham Kuyper

the value of my line of conduct; I have indeed made a great sacrifice; I have done my duty, though I have lost a friend. There is something in the detested French revolution, that envenoms everything it touches." And Abraham Kuyper continues: *"I too am of the opinion that the struggle against Modernism, in which at present the combating of Christianity has created its tightest system, is something that we can no longer avoid."* In 1881 the Belgian economist C. Périn called it *"an attempt to remove God from every expression of social life."* Since then it has become usual to name a wrong direction of thought by this name. Pope Pius X called it *"the collection of all heresies"* (omnium hæreseon collectum). In his 1907 encyclical he stated: *"If someone had planned to bring together all the sap and, as it were, the blood of every heresy that has ever been committed against belief, into a single whole, he would never have been able to accomplish the task more completely than have the Modernists."* [329)]

The Modernists have developed a very skilful strategy. Spread around like so much uncontrolled growth, they appear to preach a doctrine that seems unlike a doctrine since it is not presented as a systematic whole. On the one hand, God is unknowable (agnosticism) and, on the other, God can only be approached from the heart's impulse (immanentism). The latter, according to Modernism, is an individual search in which the beginnings of religion come into being from the feelings. (At present the preference is for a 'religious experience' rather than 'feelings'.) A symbolic understanding arises from the search for the unknowable. In this it is language, the bearer of symbolism, that represents the essence of 'being'. And thus ceremony becomes the primary objective of religion. And in this way, self-awareness is made equal to revelation itself. Because the collective consciousness is subject to evolution, as historical research demonstrates, these opinions state that revelations are tied to culture and place. 'My' revelation is worth just as much as 'his' revelation, but the community's revelation, the community being the bearer of culture par excellence, has greater value than my revelation or his, even if it should come from Jesus or some other prophetic figure. According to this way of looking at things, the historicity of such personages is subordinated to the contemporary character projected onto them by the community. It is even possible to opt for a non-historical Jesus since the choice renders easier the projection. There is a renoucement of the sacred and apostolic traditions, of the supremacy of Holy Writ. Hierarchical structures and authority are banned. Every form of religion deserves respect. Yes, even paganism. Who are we that we should feel so superior? Belief in something is thus regarded as more important than that something itself, even if it bears the label 'God' which, to quote Father Schillebeeckx (1914 - 2009), is a distant unfathomable reality.

Those who acclaim such opinions can follow a theology course, be ordained priest and, in those functions, can misuse the skills of expression of the community that they serve. They shall not regard it as treachery if they juggle with deepest convictions of their fellow men, since loose talk is inherent to their way of thinking. Like serpents they have forked tongues. And they boast about being good Christians! Like weeds, Modernism has taken hold so that the proclamation of the Gospel, the proclamation of the atonement

329) "Pascendi Dominici Gregis" from 1907 (about the ideas of the Modernisten), nr 86.

through Chris's Passion on the Cross, is absent. The winged Word gets no further than a paltry flutter. It is time to stand on the breaches!

35.153 – A trumpet call to penance for the country

While writing this down, I am filled with a sudden fear. Up till now I had not seen it so clearly. If it were not for the fact that entire peoples are infected with these views, I would shrug my shoulders and walk away. A people that thinks that way cannot do else but call up divine judgment over itself, since this life-determining philosophy is the cause of the godforsaken society in which we live. I would like to quote from "Day of Prayer" sermon preached by Theodorus van der Groe, during his lifetime a servant of the Holy Gospel in Kralingen (Rotterdam), regarding Isaiah 45:5-6: *"For the land is stained because of its inhabitants; for they transgress the laws, they change the ordinances, they destroy the eternal Covenant. Hence the curse will devour the land, and those who live there will be destroyed."* The words that now follow, more applicable now than ever before, were written shortly before the French Revolution broke out:

> «« O! my friends! The Lord has sent us to you this day with these sad words in order to place in a living fashion before your eyes the terrible godlessness and injustice that reigns among the people of the Netherlands, the curse that is now devouring us because of this, and the deadly destruction which shall soon follow, even though Moses and Samuel should stand before God's face begging and pleading in fiery prayer. For as sure as his Name is Jehovah, the Lord, the living and unchangeable God, so surely will his word not change. Even now his servants are forced to see the same sad and drawn faces occasioned by his grim wrath across our sinful land. Four years long we have had to threaten you, as prophesied in Revelations 2:5, that the Lord would soon be here. (…) They break the laws, says the prophet, who then in no way judges the transgression to come from weakness (…) but from an evil, wilful and terrible transgression consisting of nothing more than a complete abandonment and turning away from God and his Holy Law… »»

The reference to the Book of Revelation is to one of the letters to the seven Churches, that of Ephesus, who had abandoned her first love (2:5): *"Remember therefore from where you have fallen: repent and do the first works, or else I will come to you quickly and remove your lampstand from its place – unless you repent."*

Such Prayer Day and of Preaching was quite common then. Before the French Revolution, according to Old Testament tradition, the States of Holland often wrote out a day of prayer and fasting.[330)] This is also how Nineveh was saved:

> «« The king fasted, had penitential days proclaimed, abandoned his throne, stripped himself of the royal ornaments, and, enveloping himself in a sackcloth, threw himself to the ground before the GOD of Heaven. – And the LORD looked on the Ninevites in mercy, and heard their pleas and their sighs. »»

The following has been written about Rev. Theodorus van der Groe:

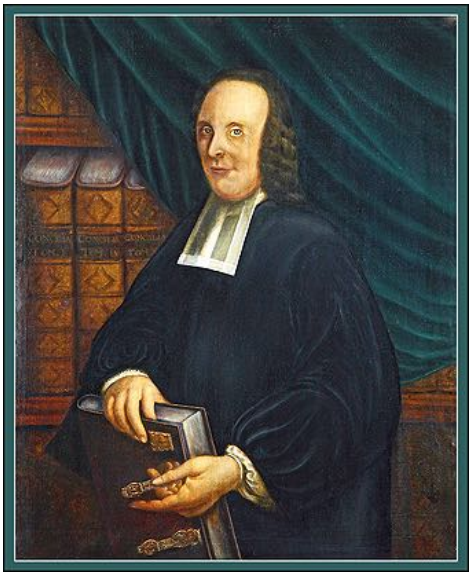
> ***Lo, there is a Church Jewel, a Treasure of Letters for the pious,***
> ***A Trumpet Call to Penance for the land that drowns in its guilt***
> ***A harsh cry for help that resounds in heart and ear***
> ***Before the flood of woe begins to cover us!***

His Prayer Day sermons were mainly a call to conversion and penance. Yes! If only we had a Moses and a Samuel! For even though the curse and the destruction have already been decided, God still allows Himself to change, even at the last moment. The history

of the people of the covenant proves this. Jeremiah 18:7-8 confirms that it sometimes happens that God addresses a people to tell them that He will rip them out, break them down and destroy them, and if that people should turn from its evil ways on hearing these words, God relents of the disasters He had in mind for them.

HIDE YOUR LIGHT UNDER A BUSHEL - where nobody sees it - squander your gifts like priceless myrrh at the feet of this world - waste all that is good so that the true revelation remains hidden.

That is why we are now going to talk about the return of the Netherlands to the firm ground of its salvation. A hopeful dream comes to mind from an acquaintance of mine, some fifty years ago. In a pitch-dark room, a woman was lying unconscious on the floor, in great distress because of the putrid air. Her mouth was near the threshold under which a little fresh air came, just enough to stay alive. Suddenly the door was flung open and the case was saved. That woman had to represent Holland and the one who threw open the door was, of course, Christ.



Theodorus van der Groe (1705-1784)

This is in keeping with an ancient patriotic tradition, as expounded in my article "Isaac Da Costa - The Coming Revival". The nineteenth century Isaac Da Costa looked forward with great longing to Christ's Second Coming: *"The watchword of all is: Behold He is coming. We don't know when He is coming, but must be ready when He comes."* A memorable statement is:

> «« That the Jews will be converted is every Christian's wish, that they will be converted at the last, many Christians believe, but that they will do so independently of the Christian church, in a separate miraculous and glorious way, which God has reserved for them, and that they will thus immediately be restored to glory by God, is still an annoyance, yes, a folly to many Christians. »»

Da Costa's messianic expectation for Israel was not taken for granted, even less so regarding his messianic expectation for the Netherlands. Together with Hermann Friedrich Kohlbrugge (1803-1875) and Philippus Jacobus Hoedemaker (1839-1910), Da Costa had an indestructible faith in Holland's special place in God's plan of salvation. His memorial in the Nieuwe Kerk in Amsterdam reads: *"O Holland! Thou shalt one day again become the Israel of the West! God will gird thy Church with light, thy Kings with David's honor!"* Da Costa even went even so far as to verse: "*Once more shall all bow to Holland under Jesse's vane."* (Jesse was David's father and the ancestor of Jesus.) For him, the God of Israel was also the God of Holland; both nations had their own place in

330) See the Internet "Officiële Biddagen en Vastendagen op Neerlands bodem" (Official Days of Prayer and Lent on Dutch soil). Until the start of the French Revolution, the Dutch government and other official bodies could declare a "Day of Prayer" to pray for the country and invoke God's mercy. This was a typical Dutch custom.

God's salvation history. And indeed, nowhere in the world had the Jews *"…found such invigorating hospitality as in this once from the God of Israel so widely blessed Reformed land.*" Da Costa was convinced, a conviction I fully share, that God had made a covenant with 16th century William of Orange for the cause of the Netherlands in which God *"…wished to connect the church of Christ with the Dutch people and Nassau's princely tribe into a three cord string, which could not be easily broken."* This three cord string is known as God, Fatherland and Orange. In this alliance, Da Costa felt, the Netherlands was exceptionally favored because her church was chosen by God. The House of Orange was given the calling to preserve and vouch for the church's calling for the Netherlands.

Da Costa was no loner. After Da Costa, Kohlbrugge and Hoedemaker, more preachers followed with a similar message. I am thinking of Herman Otto Roscam Abbing (1874-1939) and Hermanus Hofman (1902-1975). The Dutch Reformed clergyman Abbing believed in the restoration of church and state in the Netherlands. In 1923 he proclaimed "by order of the Most High": *"Thus the Netherlands will become the center of a revival that will spread over all the earth, everywhere where but the Gospel was preached for a testimony among all nations."* In 1934, in the speech "Opening of the Times", he said:

> «« But there is more! The Netherlands is not being established only to sink back in and be overrun. It remains established to be a refuge during the terrible night [of wickedness] that will come upon the world. The Netherlands is thus prepared to spend the night during that period. Emden was a refuge during the Inquisition in the reformational century. Under the Antichrist, however, the persecutions will extend very much wider. Hence, the place of refuge will be that much larger. »»

Reverend Hermanus Hofman wrestled with our country and people before God's face around 1930 and gave a testimony that has just become current nowadays:

> «« I saw that our homeland was like a ripe cornfield, and God's word was: *"Strike the sickle, for the harvest has become ripe."* I understood: That is the end of the Netherlands. I had to confess that God was just, but I could not behold the destruction of my people. It was to me as if I was standing between the living and the dead. Aaron, at Moses' command, took a censer. But me, what was I to do? Everything was sundered, we had no rights, no claim to mercy. That appeared to be a done deal. But since everything was lost, God's Covenant remained, and I began to plead: *"What will Thou then do with Thy great Name? Will Thou then make a complete end? That is impossible. Your Glory will not tolerate that!"* Then I was answered twice: *"I have accepted thy face in this matter",* and *"I will hear thy prayer."* Then, while everything was black with the judgment of God, the faces of men were involved like a pot [on the fire, i.e., ashen] and everyone was near exhaustion, I saw the return to God, and I saw a new Holland rise up, where law and righteousness dwelled and God's Word once again took its place as God wills in state, church and society. I was filled with unspeakable joy. God back in Holland again; Christ's royal office restored; our people one again! I sank as if with joy and gladness of soul and slept briefly afterwards. When I woke up I was trembling all over my body. Daniel says: then I was ailing for some days. »»

I have not cited the words of Isaac da Costa, Roscam Abbing and Hermanus Hofman out of some kind of historical curiosity, but because I am convinced in heart and soul that they were 'prophets' for the Most High, that these were God's words. And what the Lord says, shall be done!

As appears from Da Costa's words, the Netherlands will walk together with Israel, the State of Israel (the latter was already in his mind). Together they will be raised to life as in the vision of the dry bones valley. Together they will be beacons of light in these troubled times, in today's world, and each separately will be a secure court. Then we

will speak of the Netherlands as the Israel of the West, and rightfully so. How wonderful are God's ways. How gracious above all.

I hope the realization dawns that not only a personal humbling is required. As Jan van Barneveld says in his booklet "Eindtijd Israël en de Islam" (End Time Israel and Islam):

> «« Iranian President Mahmoud Ahmadinejad calls [before the forum of nations] on the peoples of the world to submit to Allah and his commandments [sharia]. (...) A Biblical answer was not and is not being given. On the contrary, the churches engage in 'dialogue' instead of proclaiming that Jesus is Lord! It is for the churches either Revival or Judgment. »» [331)]

There is a collective guilt upon us that requires deep repentance. When I used to tell friends the distressing details of our politicians, I often detected some resentment as if one preferred to stay in one's sheltered quiver where everything is so good and beautiful, as if one wanted to evade doing something – each in his own and modest way. Because knowledge also creates a certain responsibility. Our ability to intervene directly is limited. Nevertheless, we have all allowed it to happen as if nothing was happening.

And this is not the only thing. Our drive for prosperity, our unbridled greed that trumps everything else, has turned our nation into a band of robbers, exploiters and destroyers of our earth, exploiters of our colonies, exploiters of our fellow man. The slave trade is only one of its symptoms. At the time in 1788, when the last slave galleon called at Curaçao, the WIC (West India Company) had transported about half a million slaves plus a large number who were thrown overboard because they did not survive the crossing. It makes no sense to point to other nations that excelled in this trade. Islam is even more to blame in that regard. But please let each one take care of his own sins, because God has never forgiven anyone's guilt for pointing at another. Adam still tried: *"It's that woman that 'You' gave me that tempted me."* And Eve: *"Yes, and I was tempted by the serpent."* Yet both were expelled from Paradise, the Paradise of a harmonious relationship with God. Nevertheless, there is an excuse: we are stuck with the chain burden of our past. Every criminal is therefore to some extent also a victim. In confessing our sins, collective sins also deserve a place, even those up to the distant past. From the depths I cry out to You, O Lord, hear my voice!!

35.154 – Belief is the firm foundation of our Salvation

As we have seen, Modernism has subordinated belief to science. 'To believe in' has become a philosophical concept. But that is not the way things are in terms of our Christian belief. Our believing is neither an intellectual activity nor simply a feeling. The Old Testament uses the word 'emunah' for 'to believe', a term related to 'amen' The New testament Greek uses the word 'pistis'. Both cases imply trust in and dedication to God. And, of itself, from this follows the concept of adoration. There are the articles of faith held by the Church. The Jews call their profession of faith "the thirteen starting points of the Jewish faith", and this I find a more exact formulation. In Hebrew thought God's existence is the cause of our belief in Him. In the epistle to the Hebrews, verse 11:6 are better translated as: "*He who comes to God must believe 'because' He is"* (instead of 'that' he is). We only need to look at the list of witnesses in the eleventh chapter of this epistle to know what is meant by the Biblical faith. At the very beginning we find the following: *"Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen."* The many examples in that chapter show the decisiveness that accompanies faith,

---

331) "Eindtijd Israël en de Islam" by drs. Jan van Barneveld (known also from "Om Sions wil niet zwijgen" and "Israël onze oudere broeder") – Uitgeverij Het Zoeklicht, Doorn # 2009 (p.74).

by which kingdoms are conquered, justice exercised, promises gained and the jaws of lions closed up. It is of great significance, in the context of our subject, that verse 3 states that *"By faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the Word of God, so that the things which are seen were not made of things visible."* That seems to me a fine conclusion to this article. That's enough to silence the Modernists.

Nota Bene:

The title of this article is taken from Mt. 5:15, Mark 4:21 and Luke 11:33, where 'bushel' translates the Greek term 'modios' which, in its turn, is derived from the Latin 'modio', a standard measure for - for instance - apples. 'Modio' is derived from 'modus' = measure, manner. The title thus perfectly fits the theme of the Word of God subordinated to 'measuring and counting'.

APPENDIX 26

Theodorus van der Groe — An Elder's Guide to Israel

• Dutch Reformed Dr. M. van Campen, in "Israël Aktueel" – Dec. 2013

It probably does not happen very often today: a catechetic sermon in which God's ways with Israel are discussed in detail. All the more surprising is the sermon preached by Theodorus van de Groe in his congregation of Kralingen (in between Amsterdam and IJmuiden), which was published in print after his death in 1838.

In dealing with Sunday-19 from the Heidelberg Catechism, our third Elder - one of the most important representatives of the Later Reformation – paid wide attention to the future of the Jewish people. A second remarkable sermon was preached by him in Kralingen during an afternoon sermon. Van der Groe had chosen as his text the Apostle Paul's well-known words from Romans 11:26, which speaks of the future salvation for 'All Israel'. Both sermons give us insight into the intense commitment to Abraham's descendants that this Elder demonstrated.

Dr. M. van Campen

In this entry, we zoom in briefly on Romans 11:26 from the Pentecost sermon. The key word in this sermon is the Biblical concept of 'covenant'. Van der Groe refers in this regard to Hosea 2:18, where out of God's mouth sound the significant words: *"And I will betroth you to Me forever."* This means: I will make an everlasting covenant of fidelity or marriage with you that will be indissoluble and will last through all ages and will never end. Van der Groe explains that despite this commitment, Israel - God's Bride - still received a letter of divorce. Because of her disobedience and unfaithfulness, God temporarily rejected the Jews and accepted the Gentiles in their place. That is not all, however. Judgment is not God's last word. In the last days, He will reinstate the Jews into his covenant. The existence and continued existence of Israel through all the ages does show very clearly that God, for His part, has kept the covenant. Despite everything, the Jews have remained God's people – 'the true and faithful people of God' - and we Gentiles have to acknowledge that. And once the Gospel is proclaimed worldwide there will be a surprising turn in Israel's destiny. A glorious and salvific golden age awaits us in which believers will reign on earth with Christ as king for a thousand years. The Jews too will share fully in the blessings of this special time, according to Van der Groe.

The expectation that once "All Israel" will share in the promised restoration is not spiritualized or restricted by Van der Groe. On the basis of the prophetic word, we may count on a national revival involving both the Two and the Ten Tribes. Who will wrought this miraculous conversion? Van der Groe does not assume that missionary efforts of the church will be involved. It will be the exclusive work of the already crowned and yet to come Messiah. We do not find in Van der Groe an appeal to undertake missionary work among the Jewish people. However, Christians are called upon to pray fervently for the Jews:

> «« Throw it, now, all down in faith, on this Rock of ages whose work is perfect! Hang and cling wholly to that promise of the everlasting covenant of faith; live and die in it, with Jacob: 'that the Redeemer will come from Zion and that He will turn away the wickedness from Jacob'. »»